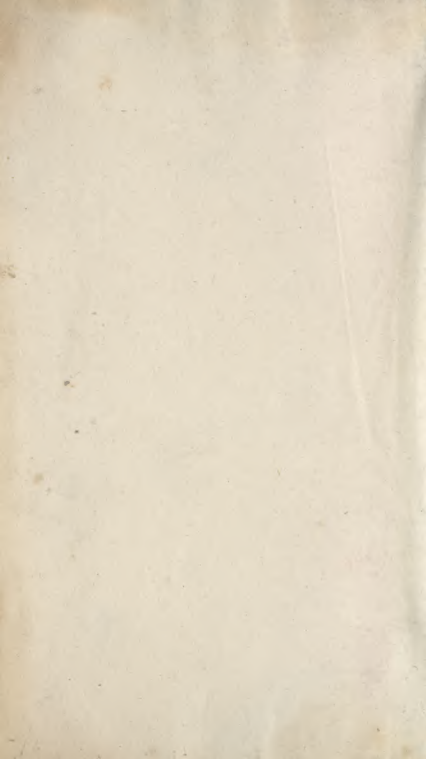


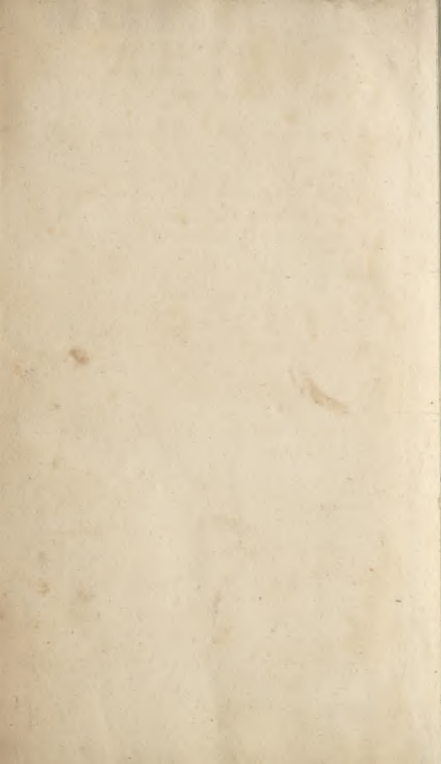


1  
ABS 1.87.95 F





ABS. 1.87.95



## COMMENTARY

UPON

The EPISTLE of PAUL the APOSTLE, to  
the GALATIANS.

first collected and gathered Word by Word out of his  
Preaching, and now out of *Latin* faithfully translated  
into *English* for the Unlearned.

herein is set forth most excellently the glorious Riches of God's  
Grace; and the Power of the Gospel; with the Difference between  
the Law and the Gospel, and the Strength of Faith declared; to the  
joyful Comfort and Confirmation of all true Christian Believers, e-  
specially such as inwardly being afflicted and grieved in Conscience,  
do hunger and thirst for Justification in Christ Jesus. For whose  
Cause most chiefly this Book is translated and printed, and dedicated  
to the same.

2 Cor. xii. 9. *My Strength is made perfect in Weakness.*

---

By Mr. MARTIN LUTHER.

---

To which is subjoin'd  
Three SERMONS by the same Author.

---




---

EDINBURGH.

Printed and Sold by WILLIAM GRAY at his House at Magdalen  
Chapel, within the Cowgate-Head. 1749.



To the Reader.

**T**HIS Book being brought unto me to peruse and to consider of, I thought it my Part not only to allow of it to the Print, but also to commend it to the Reader, as a Treatise most comfortable to all afflicted Consciences exercised in the School of Christ. The Author felt what he spake, and had Experience of what he wrote, and therefore able more lively to express both the Assaults and the Salving, the Order of the Battle, and the Mean of the Victory. Satan is the Enemy, the Victory is by only Faith in Christ, as John recordeth. If Christ justify, Who can condemn? saith St. Paul. This most necessary Doctrine the Author hath most substantially cleared in this his Commentary. Which being written in the Latin Tongue, certain godly learned Men have most sincerely translated into our Language, to the great Benefit of all such as with humbled Hearts will diligently read the same. Some began it according to such Skill as they had. Others godly affected, not suffering so good a Matter in handling to be marred, put to their helping Hands for the better framing and furthering of so worthy a Work. They refuse to be named, seeking neither their own Gain nor Glory, but thinking it their Happiness, if by any Means they may relieve afflicted Minds, and do good to the Church of Christ, yielding all Glory unto God, to whom all Glory is due.

Aprilis 28.

1575.

EDWINUS LONDON.



To all Afflicted Consciences, which grone for Salvation, and wrestle under the Croſs for the Kingdom of CHRIST, Grace, Peace and Victory in the LORD JESUS our Saviour.

**I**N few Words to declare what is to be said for the Commendation of this Work, altho' in few Words all cannot be expresse'd that may be said, yet briefly to signify that may suffice, this much we thought good to certify thee, godly Reader; that amongst many other godly *English* Books in these our Days printed and translated, thou shalt find but few, wherein either thy Time shall seem better bestowed, or thy Labour better recompensed to the Profit of thy Soul, or wherein thou mayest see the Spirit and Vein of *St. Paul* more lively represented to thee, then in the diligent reading of this present Commentary upon the Epistle of *St. Paul* to the *Galatians*. In which as in a Mirrour or Glass, or rather as *St. Stephen* in the Heavens being opened, thou mayest see and behold the admirable Glory of the Lord, and all the Riches of Heaven, thy Salvation freely, and only by Faith in Christ; his Love and Grace towards thee so opened, thy Victory and Conquest in him so proved, the Wrath of God so pacified, his Law satisfied, the full Kingdom of Life set open, Death, Hell, and Hell-gates, be they never so strong, with all the Power of Sin, Flesh and the World vanquished, thy Conscience discharged, all Fears and Terrors removed, thy spiritual Man so refreshed and set at Liberty, that either thy Heart must be heavier then Lead, or the reading hereof will lift thee up above thyself, and give thee to know that of Christ Jesus, that thyself shalt say thou never knewest before tho' before thou knewest him right well.

Such spiritual Comfort, such heavenly Doctrine, such Experience and Practice of Conscience herein is contained, such triumphing over Satan, and all his Power infernal, such Contempt of the Law compared with the Gospel, such an holy Pride and Exaltation of the believing Man (whom here he maketh a Person divine, the Son of God, the Heir of the whole Earth, Conqueror of the World, of Sin, of Death, and the Devil) with such Phrases and Speeches of high Contemplation, of Christ, of Grace, of Justification and of Faith (which Faith, saith he, transfigureth a Man into Christ, and coupleth him more neare unto Christ then the Husband is coupled to his Wife, and maketh a Man

more then a Man,) with such other mighty Voices, full of spiritual Glory and Majesty, as the like hath not been used lightly of any Writer since the Apostle's Time, neither durst he ever have used the same himself, had not great Experience and Exercise of Conscience by inward Conflicts and profound Agonies framed him thereunto, and ministred to him, both this Knowledge of Spirit and Boldness of Speech.

And this commonly is the working and proceeding of God's Vocation, ever to work Things by the contrary; of Infidelity to make Faith, of Poverty to make Riches, in Misery to shew Mercy, to turn Sorrow to Solace, Mourning to Mirth, from Afflictions to advance to Glory, from Hell to bring to Heaven, from Death to Life, from Darknes to Light, from Thralldom to Liberty, in Wilderiness to give Waters, the Barren to make Fruitful, of Things that be not to make Things to be, briefly to make all Things of nought, 1 Sam. i. Isa. xli. 2. 2 Cor. i. Thus began God first to work, thus he proceeded, thus he continueth, and so will unto the Worlds End. The first Seed of Promise next to Eve, was given to Sarah; Yet in what Case was Eve before she had the Promise? And in what Barrenness and Despair was Sarah before she enjoyed her wellbeloved Isaac? The like is to be said of the two Mothers of two most excellent Children, Samuel and John Baptist; And yet what Griefs and Sorrows past over their Hearts, being both past all Hope in Nature, before the Goodness of God did work? How long did Jacob the Patriarch serve in miserable Thralldom for his Rachel? In what excellent Glory was Joseph exalted; Yet what suffered he before of his Brethren, and how long Imprisonment? In what and how long Servitude were the Sons of Israel before Moses was sent unto them; and afterward in what Distress were they compassed on every Side when the Sea was forced to give them Place; After that again, What an excellent Land was promised and given unto them, flowing with Milk and Honey? But how were they scourged before in the Desert, and yet had not they the Land, but their Children? To overpass many Things here by the Way, What an excellent Work was it of God to set up David in his Kingdom? Also what excellent Promises were given to his Throne? Yet how hardly escaped he with Life? How did the Lord mortify and frame him to his Hand before he placed him in quiet? Infinite it were to recite all. Briefly, in all the Works of God this is usual to be-seen, that he worketh evermore most excellent Things by Instruments most humble, and which seem most furthest off. Which of all the Apostles did ever think when Christ was so humbled and crucified upon the Tree, that they should ever see him again? Altho' he foretold them of his rising before; insomuch that Thomas did scarcely believe when he with his Eyes saw him. What Man would ever have thought that Paul in the raging Heat of his persecuting Spirit, would have turned from a Peseutor to such a a Professor, from such Infidelity to such a Faith, insomuch that Ananias would scarcely believe the Lord when he told him? Such is the Omnipotency of the Lord our God, ever working lightly by the contrary, especially when he hath any excellent Thing to work to his own Glory.

After like Sort may we esteem also of *Martin Luther*, who being first a *Frier*, in what Blindness, Superstition and Darkeness, in what Dreams and Dregs of Monkish Idolatry he was drowned, his History declareth, Witnes recordeth, and this Book also partly doth specify. Whose Religion was all in Popish Ceremonies, his Zeal without Knowledge, understanding no other Justification but in Works of the Law and Merits of his own making, only believing the History (as many do) of Christ's Death and Resurrection, but not knowing the Power and Strength thereof. After he had thus continued a long Space, more pharisaical and zealous in these Monkish Ways then the common Sort of that Order; at length it so pleased Almighty God to begin with this Man, first to touch his Conscience with some Remorse and Feeling of Sin, his Mind with Fears and Misdoubts, whereby he was driven to seek further; so that by searching, seeking, conferring, and by reading of *St. Paul*, some Sparkles of better Knowledge began by little and little to appear, which after in Time grew up to a greater Increase. But here it happened to him as commonly it doth to all good Christians; the more that the true Knowledge of Christ increased, the more Satan the Enemy stirred with his fiery Darts, with Doubts and Objections, with false Terrors and subtle Assaults, seeking by all Means possible how to oppress the inward Soul which would fain take his rest in Christ. In these spiritual Conflicts and inward Wrestlings, how grievously he was incumbred, fighting against Incredulity, Error and Desperation, marvellous it is to consider, insomuch, that three Days and three Nights together he lay upon his Bed without Meat, Drink, or any Sleep, like a dead Man (as some do write of him) labouring in Soul and Spirit upon a certain Place of *St. Paul* in the third Chapter to the *Romans*, which was *Ad ostendendam Justitiam suam*; that is, to shew his Justice; thinking Christ to be sent to no other End but to shew forth God's Justice as an Executor of his Law, till at length being answered and satisfied by the Lord touching the right Meaning of these Words, signifying the Justice of God to be executed upon his Son, to save us from the Stroke thereof, he immediately upon the same started up from his Bed, so confirmed in Faith, as nothing afterward could appal him; besides other manifold and grievous Temptations (which I speak not of) of all Sorts and Kinds, except only of Avarice, with the which Vice only he was never tempted nor touched, as of him is written by them that were conversant with him.

In this meanwhile, during these Conflicts and Exercises of *Mr. Luther*, which notwithstanding did him no hurt, but rather turned to his more Furtherance in spiritual Knowledge, Pope *Leo* the Tenth sent a Jubily with his Pardons abroad thro' all Christian Realms and Dominions, whereby he gathered together innumerable Riches and Treasure. The Collector whereof promised to every one that would put ten Shillings in the Box, Licence to eat white Meats and Flesh in Lent, and Power to deliver what Soul he would out of Purgatory; and moreover full Pardon from all his Sins, were they never so hainous. But if it were but one Jote less then ten Shillings, they preached that it would profit him nothing. The Abomination whereof was so horrible, that when no

other Man durst speak, yet *Luther* could not of Conscience hold his Peace, but drawing out certain Articles, desired gently to dispute the Matter, writing withal a most humble Admonition to the Pope, submitting himself in most lowly Wise to his Censure and Judgment. But the Pope thinking great Scorn to be controlled of such a *Frier*, took the Matter so hot, that he and all his Cardinals, with all the Rabble of *Monks* and *Friers*, Bishops and Archbishops, Colledges and Universities, Kings and Princes, with the Emperor also himself, were all upon him. If the omnipotent Providence of the Lord from above had not sustained him, What was it for one poor *Frier* to have endured all these sharp Assaults of Satan, all the Violence of the whole World, having no less then the Sun, the Moon, and the Seven Stars (as they say) against him? Being hated of Men, impugned of Devils, rejected of Nations, by solemn Authority condemned, distressed with Infirmities, and with all Manner of T temptations tried and proved. And yet for all these T temptations such was his Life, that (as *Erasmus* writing to Cardinal *Wolsey* affirmeth) none of all his Enemies could ever charge him with any Note of just Reprehension. Again, such were his Allegations out of the Scripture, that *Roffensis* writing to *Erasmus*, confesseth himself to be astonished at them.

And thus much by the Way of Preface touching the Conflicts and Exercises of this Man. Which we thought good to insinuate to the Christian Reader for sundry Purposes: *First*, To note the merciful Clemency of Christ our Saviour, in calling so superstitious and idolatrous a *Frier* so graciously to such a Light of his Gospel, his Grace in justifying him, his Might in preserving him, his Help in comforting him, his Glory in prospering him, one against so many, and so prospering him, that the whole Kingdom of the Pope had no Power either to withstand him, or to maintain itself: *Secondly*, For this Respect also and Purpose, that the Reader considering the marvellous working of the Lord in this Man, may the better credit the Doctrine that he teacheth. And tho' his Doctrine as touching a little Circumstance of the Sacrament cannot be thoroughly defended, yet neither is that any great marvel in him, who being occupied in weightier Points of Religion, had no Leisure to travel in the searching out of this Matter, neither ought it to be any Prejudice to all the rest which he taught so soundly of the weightier Principles and Grounds of Christ's Gospel, and our Justification only by Faith in Christ. And yet in the same Matter of the Sacrament, notwithstanding that he differeth somewhat from *Zuinglius*, sticking too near to the Letter; yet he joineth not so with the *Papists*, that he leaveth there any Transubstantiation or Idolatry. Wherefore the Matter being no greater then so,

Hereof read more in the Apology of the Church of *England*, and in the Book of Monuments Fol. 992. Col. 2. nor directly against any Article of our Creed, let not us be so nice, for one little Wart to cast away the whole Body. It were doubtless to be wished, that in good Teachers and Preachers of Christ, there were no Defect or Imperfection. But he that can abide nothing with his Blemish, let him if he can, name any Doctor, or Writer (the

(the Scripture only except) *Greek* or *Latin*, old or new; either beyond the Alps, or on this Side the Alps, or himself also whatsoever, he be which hath not erred in some Sentence or else in some Exposition of holy Scripture. But if he cannot so do, then let him learn by himself to bear with other, to take the best and live the worst, (altho' there is no such Matter in this Book to be feared, forasmuch as we having a Respect to the Simple, have purposely sponged out, and omitted such stumbling Places being but few, which might offend) and to give God Thanks for any Thing that is good, and namely for this which he hath given to us by *Luther*, in opening to us his Grace, Mercy and Good-will in his Son, so excellently thro' the Preaching of this Man; who if he had not taught the Difference between the Law and the Gospel, and set out to us our Justification, Victory and Liberty by Faith only in Christ so plainly, so plentifully and so assuredly as he hath done, Who ever durst have been so bold to open his Mouth in such Words, or so confidently to stand in this Doctrine of Faith and Grace? For if there have been any since the Time of *Luther*, and be yet some, which openly defend that Works be necessary to Salvation, where he before so mightily hath taught the contrary; What then would these have done if *Luther* had not been? Who also did forewarn us of the same, prophesying that after his Time this Doctrine of Justification would be almost extinguished in the Church, as in certain Places Experience beginneth partly to prove.

Wherefore, so much as the Lord shall give us Grace, let us hold constantly the comfortable Doctrine of Faith and Justification, and not lose that the Lord so freely hath given, calling upon the Lord with all Obedience and Diligence, to give us Grace with St. *Paul*, not to refuse the Grace which he bestoweth upon us, nor to be offended with this joyful Doctrine, as many be. And therefore as our Duty was for our Part to set it abroad, so our Counsel is no less to every studious Reader thereof, to pray for Grace rightly to understand that he readeth. For else, unless the special Grace of Christ do help, hard it is to Flesh and Blood to comprehend this mystical Doctrine of Faith only. So strange it is to carnal Reason, so dark to the World, so many Enemies it hath, that except the Spirit of God from above do reveal it, Learning cannot reach it, Wisdom is offended, Nature is astonished, Devils do not know it, Men do persecute it. Briefly, as there is no Way to Life so easy, so is there none so hard; easy to whom it is given from above; hard to the carnal Sense not yet inspired. The Ignorance whereof is the Root of all Errors, Sects and Divisions, not only in all Christendom, but also in the whole World. The *Jew* thinketh to be saved by his *Mose*-Law, the *Turk* by his *Alcoran*, the Philosopher by his moral Vertues. Besides these cometh another Sort of People, not so ill as the *Jew*, nor so Heathen as the Philosopher, but having some Part of both, which refuse not utterly the Name of Christ, but with Christ do join, partly the Law of *Mose*; partly the moral and rational Discipline of Philosophy, and partly their own Ceremonies and Traditions, to make a perfect Way to Heaven. And these here in this Commentary are called

*Papists*, of the Pope their Author, being divided within themselves more then into a hundred divers Sects, Orders and Professions of *Cardinals, Friars, Monks, Nuns, Priests, Hermites*, and other Votaries. All which seem to spring up of no other Cause but only upon Ignorance of this Doctrine. And no marvel; for take away this Doctrine of Justification by Faith only in Christ, and leave a Man to his own Inventions. What End will there be of new Devices? Such a perilous Thing it is to err in the first Foundation; whereupon the higher ye build the greater is the Fall. And yet such Builders are not without their Props to hold up their Workmanship of Works against this Doctrine of justifying Faith, pretending for their Defence the Testimony of *St. James*, where he seems to attribute Justification to Works and not to Faith only.

Touching which Matter of Justification, for as much as in the Sequel of this Treatise the Author hath discoursed upon the same at large, it shall not be much needful to use many Words at this present. This briefly may suffice by the way of Preface, in a Word or two to advertise the Christian Reader, who so taking in Hand with Profit and Judgment to read this Book, that in him two Things are specially to be required; first to read it wholly together, and not by Pieces and Parts here and there, but to take it in order as it lieth, conferring one Place with another, whereby to understand the better the right Meaning of the Writer, how and in what Sense he excludeth good Works, and how not; how he neglecteth the Law, and how he magnifieth the Law. For as in Case of justifying before God, the free Promise of the Gospel admitteth no Condition, but Faith only in Christ Jesus; so in Case of dutiful Obedience, *Luther* here excludeth no good Works, but rather exhorteth thereunto, and that in many Places. Thus Times and Cases discreetly must be distinguished.

The second Thing to be required is, that in reading hereof, he that seeketh to take Fruit hereby, do bring such a Mind with him to the reading, as the Author himself did to the Preaching thereof; that is, he had need to have his Senses exercised somewhat in such spiritual Conflicts, and to be well humbled before with the Fear of God and inward Repentance, or else he shall hardly conceive the excellent Sweetness either of this Writer or any other. For albeit most true it is, that no greater Comfort to the Soul of Man can be found in any Book next to the holy Scripture, then in this Commentary of *Mr. Luther*; so this Comfort hath little Place, but only where the Conscience being in Heaviness hath need of the Physician's Hand. The other, who feel themselves whole and are not touched in the Soul with any Sorrow, as they little care for these Books, so have they little Understanding of this Doctrine when they read it. And this is the Cause in my Mind, why the Pope and his *Papists* have so little feeling and liking of *Luther's* Doctrine, and all because they commonly are never greatly vexed in Spirit with any deep Affliction, but rather deride them that are beaten down with such Conflicts and Tentations of Satan, as they did by *Luther*, whom because God suffered to be tried and exercised with the

Buffets

Buffets of the Enemy; they say therefore that he learned his Divinity of the Devil. But how he learned his Divinity, let us hear what he himself in this Book, Page 343. Line 14. confesseth, saying; *If we were outwardly exercised with Force and Subtility by Tyrants and Sectaries, and inwardly with Terrors and the fiery Darts of the Devil, Paul should be as obscure and unknown unto us, as he was in Times past to the World and yet is to the Papists, the Anabaptists, and other our Adversaries. Therefore the Gift of the Interpretation of the Scriptures and our Studies, together with our inward and outward Tentations, open unto us the Meaning of Paul, and the Sense of all the holy Scriptures.*

But let these ignorant *Papists* whosoever they be, taste a little the same, or like as *Luther* did, and then see what they will say. Experience giveth Demonstration. For how many of them do we see, for all their auricular Confession, which puffeth them up in all Security, but at length when they ly at the Point of Death, where Death on the one Side, and God's Justice on the other Side is before their Eyes, for the most Part either they despair, or else leaving all other Helps, they only stick to Faith and the Blood of Christ Jesus, and in very Deed many of them are glad to die *Lutherians* howsoever they hated *Luther* before. And what shall we say then of this Doctrine of *Luther*? If the *Papists* themselves be glad to die in it, Why are they unwilling to live in it? And if it be true at one Time, How can Alteration of Time make that false which is once true?

And therefore where these Men so stoutly withstand this Doctrine of Justification by Faith only, they are much deceived. And when they alledge *St. James* for them, that is soon answered if we rightly discern the Meaning of *St. James* and of *St. Paul*; of whom the one speaketh of Man's Righteousness or Justification only before Men, which is a true Demonstration of a true Faith or a true Believer before Man, rather than the working of true Justification before God. And so is it true which *St. James* saith, how that Faith without Works doth not justify. Whose Purpose is, not to shew us what maketh a Man just before God, but only to declare the necessary Conjunction of good Works in him that by Faith is justified. The other speaketh of Righteousness or Justification, not before Men, but only before God; meaning not to exclude good Works from true Faith, that they should not be done; but to teach us wherein the true Stay and Hope of our Salvation ought to be fixed, that is, in Faith only. And so it is true likewise that *St. Paul* saith, that Faith only without Works doth justify.

The which Proposition of *St. Paul* the better to understand and to join it with *St. James*, here is to be noted for the satisfying of the cavelling Adversary, that the Proposition is to be taken full and whole, as *St. Paul* doth mean it, so that with the right Subject we join the right *Predicatum*, as the School-men term it; that is, so that Faith on Christ in justifying, ever have Relation to the true penitent and lamenting Sinner. And so is the Article most true, that Faith only without Works doth justify. But whom doth it justify? The Wordling? The licentious Russian? The voluptuous Epicure? The carnal Gospeller? *Paul* mean-

eth no such Thing, but only the mourning and labouring Soul, the grieved Conscience, the repenting Heart, the mending Sinner. And in him the Proposition is true, according to the Doctrine of St. *Paul* *Credenti in eum qui justificat impium, Fides ejus imputatur ad Justitiam*: that is, *To him that believeth in him which justifieth the Ungodly, His Faith is counted for Righteousness*, Rom. iv. 3. Contrariwise, let Faith have Relation to the obdurate and wilful Rebel, who contrary to Conscience continueth and delighteth in Sin, and in him is true likewise that St. *James* saith *& non ex Fide tantum*, that is, *and not by Faith only*, James ii. 24. Meaning thereby, that Faith availeth not to Justification, but only in such Persons as have a Good-will and Purpose to amend their Lives; not that Repentance and turning from Iniquity doth save them; but that Faith in Christ worketh Justification in none but only in such as heartily repent and are willing to amend. So that; *Credite Evangelio, believe the Gospel*, Mark i. 15. hath ever, *agite penitentiam, repent and amend*, Matth. iii. 2. going withal. Not that Repentance saveth any Malefactor from the Law, but only sheweth the Person whom Faith in Christ doth save and justify. But of this enough, and more than greatly needed, especially seeing the Book itself here following will satisfy the Reader at large in all such Doubts to this Matter appertaining. And thus ceasing to trouble thee, gentle Reader, with any longer Preface, as we commend this good Work to thy godly Studies; so we commend both thee and thy Studies to the Grace of Christ Jesus the Son of God, heartily wishing and craving of his Majesty, that thou mayest take no less Profit and Consolation by reading hereof, then our Purpose was to do thee good in setting the same forth to thy Comfort and Edification, which the Lord grant. *Amen, Amen.*

The

## The Preface of MARTIN LUTHER upon the Epistle to the *Galatians*.



My self can scarcely believe that I was so plentiful in Words when I did publicly expound this Epistle of St. *Paul* to the *Galatians*, as this Book sheweth me to have been. Notwithstanding, I perceive all the Cogitations which I find in this Treatise by so great Diligence of the Brethren gathered together, to beminie; so that I must needs confess either all or perhaps more, to have been uttered by me in this publick Treatise. For in my Heart this one Article reigneth, even the Faith of Christ; from whom, by whom, and unto whom all my divine Studies Day and Night have Recourse to and fro continually. And yet I perceive that I could not reach any Thing near unto the Height, Breadth and Depth of such high and inestimable Wisdom; only certain poor and bare Beginnings, and as it were Fragments do appear: Wherefore I am ashamed that my so barren and simple Commentaries should be set forth upon so worthy an Apostle, and Elest Vessel of God. But when I consider again the infinite and horrible Profanation and Abomination which always hath raged in the Church of God, and yet at this Day ceaseth not to rage against this only and grounded Rock, which we hold to be the Article of our Justification (that is to say, how, not by ourselves, neither by our Works, which are less then ourselves, but by another Help, even the Son of God Jesus Christ, we are redeemed from Sin, Death, the Devil, and made Partakers of eternal Life;) I am compelled to cast of all Shame, and to be bold above Measure.

This Rock did Satan shake in Paradise, when he perswaded our first Parents that by their own Wisdom and Power they should be like unto God, *Gen. iii. 5.* forsaking true Faith in God, who hath given them Life, promised the Continuance thereof. By and by after, this Lier and Murderer, which will be always like unto himself, stirred up the Brother to the Murdering of his Brother, *Gen. iv. 8.* and for none other Cause, but for that his godly Brother by Faith had offered up a more excellent Sacrifice; and he offering up his own Works, without Faith, had not pleased God. After this, against the same Faith followed a most intolerable Persecution of Satan by the Sons of *Cain*, until God was constrained at once by the Flood to purge the whole World, *Gen. vi.* and to defend *Noah* the Preacher of Righteousness, *2 Pet. ii.*

5. This notwithstanding Satan continued his Seed in *Ham*, the third Son of *Noah*, *Gen. x. 6, &c.* But who is able to reckon up all Examples? After these Things the whole World waxed mad against this Faith, finding out an infinite Number of Idols and strange Religions, whereby every one (as *St. Paul* saith) walked his own Way, trusted by their Works, some to pacify and please a God, some a Goddes, some Gods, some Goddeses; that is to say, without the Help of Christ, and by their own Works, to redeem themselves from all Calamities and from their Sins, as all the Examples and Monuments of all Nations do sufficiently witness.

But those are nothing in comparison of that People and Congregation of God, *Israel*; which not only had the sure Promise of the Fathers, and afterward the Law of God given unto them, from God himself by his Angels, above all other; but always and in all Things were also certified by the Words, by the Miracles, and by the Examples of the Prophets. Notwithstanding even among them also Satan (that is to say, the mad and outrageous Opinion of their own Righteousness) did so prevail, that afterwards they killed all the Prophets, yea even Christ himself the Son of God the promised *Messiah*, for that they had taught that Men are accepted and received into the Favour of God, by Grace only and not by their own Righteousness. And this is the Sum of the Doctrine of the Devil and of the World from the Beginning; we will not seem to do evil, but yet whatsoever we do, that must God allow, and all his Prophets must consent to it, which if they refuse to do, they shall die the Death. *Abel* shall die, but *Cain* shall flourish. Let this be our Law (say they) and even so it cometh to pass.

But in the Church of the *Gentiles*, the Matter is and hath been so vehemently handled, that the Fury of the Jewish Synagogue may well seem to have been but a Sport. For they (as *St. Paul* saith) *did not know Christ their Anointed, and therefore they crucified the Lord of Glory.* But the Church of the *Gentiles* hath received and confessed Christ to be the Son of God, being made our Righteousness, and this doth she publickly record, read and teach. And yet notwithstanding this Confession, they that would be accounted the Church, do kill and persecute, and continually rage against those which believe and teach, and in their Deeds declare nothing else, but that Christ is the self-same Thing that they themselves (tho' with feigned Words and hypocritical Deeds) are constrained mauer their Heads, to allow and confess. For under the Name of Christ at this Day they reign. And if they could without the Name of Christ hold that Seat and Kingdom, no doubt but they would express him to be such a one openly as in their Hearts they esteem him secretly. But they esteem him a great deal less than the *Jews* do, which at the least think him to be *Thola*, that is to say, a Thief worthily hanged on the Cross. But these Men account him as a Fable, and take him as a feigned God among the *Gentiles*, as it may plainly appear at *Rome* in the Pope's Court, and almost throughout all *Italy*.

Because therefore Christ is made as it were a Mock amongst his Christians (for Christians they will be called) and because *Cain* doth

doth kill *Abel* continually, and the Abomination of Satan now chiefly reigneth, it is very necessary that we should diligently handle this Article, and set it against Satan, whether we be rude or eloquent, learned or unlearned. For this Rock must be published abroad, yea tho' every Man should hold his Peace, yet even of the very Rocks and Stones themselves. Wherefore I do most willingly herein accomplish my Duty, and am contented to suffer this long Commentary and full of Words, to be set forth for the stirring up of all the Brethren in Christ, against the Slights and Malice of Satan, which in these Days is turned into such extreme Madnes against this healthful Knowledge of Christ now revealed and rised up again, that as hitherto Men have seemed to be possessed with Devils and stark mad, even so now the Devils themselves do seem to be possessed of far worse Devils, and so rage even above the Fury of Devils ; which is indeed a great Argument that that Enemy of Truth and Life doth perceive the Day of Judgment to be at Hand, which is the horrible Day of his Destruction, but the most comfortable Day of our Redemption, and shall be the End of all his Tyranny and Cruelty. For not without Cause is he disquieted, when his Members and Powers are so assailed ; even as a Thief or an Adulterer, when the Morning appeareth and discloseth his Wickedness, is taken tardy and apprehended for the same. For who ever heard (to pass over the Abominations of the Pope) so many Monsters to burst out at once into the World, as we see at this Day in the *Anabaptists* alone ? In whom Satan breatheth out as it were the last Blast of his Kingdom, thro' horrible Uprores setting them every where in such a Rage, as tho' he would by them suddenly, not only destroy the whole World with Seditions, but also by innumerable Sects swallow up and devour Christ wholly with his Church.

Against the wicked Lives and Opinions of others he doth not so rage ; *to wit*, against Whoremongers, Thieves, Murderers, perjured Persons, Rebels against God, Unbelievers : No, to these rather he giveth Peace and Quietness ; these he maintaineth in his Court with all Manner of Pleasures and Delights, and giveth to them all Things at Will ; Even like as sometime in the Beginning of the Church, he did not only suffer all the Idolatries and false Religions of the whole World to be quiet and untouched, but also mightily maintained, defended and nourished the same. But the Church and Religion of Christ alone he vexed on every Side. After this, permitting Peace and Quietness to many *Hereticks*, he troubled only the Catholick Doctrine. Even so likewise at this Day he hath no other Business in Hand but this only (as his own and always proper unto himself) to persecute and vex our Saviour Christ ; which is our perfect Righteousness without any of our Works,

The Article of Justification must be diligently taught.

The Rage of Satan, a sure Argument that the Day of Judgment is at Hand.

The Outrages of the *Anabaptists*.

Christ wholly

The Devil troubleth not those that are dead and buried in Sin, but those that are Godly and hate Sin.

Works, as it is written of him; *Thou shalt bruise his Heel*, Gen. iii. 15.

But I do not set forth these my Meditations so much  
For whose against these Men, as for my Brethren, which will en-  
Cause specially that shew themselves thankful in the Lord for this my  
ally *Luther* Travail, or else will pardon my Weakness and Temerity.  
setteth forth But of the Wicked I would not in any wise they should  
this Work, be liked or allowed; but rather that thereby both they  
and who and their god might be the more vexed, seeing with  
they be that my great Travail they are set forth only for such as St.  
only under- *Paul* writeth this Epistle unto; that is to say, the trou-  
stand this bled, afflicted, vexed, tempted (for they only understand  
Doctrine. these Things) and miserable *Galatians* in the Faith.

Who so are not such, let them hear the *Papists*, *Monks*,  
*Anabaptists*, and such other Masters of profound Wisdom and of their  
own Religion, and let them stoutly condemn our Doctrine and our Do-  
ings. For at this Day the *Papists* and *Anabaptists* conspire together  
against the Church in this one Point (tho' they dissemble in Words)  
that the Work of God dependeth upon the Worthiness of  
The Digni- the Person. For thus do the *Anabaptists* teach, that  
ty of God's Baptism is nothing except the Person do believe. Out-  
Word and of this Principle must needs follow, that all the Works  
the Sacra- of God be nothing, if the Man be nothing. But Baptism  
ments de- is the Work of God, and yet an evil Man maketh it  
pend not not to be the Work of God. Moreover hereof it must  
upon the follow, that Matrimony, Authority, Liberty and Bon-  
Worthiness dage are the Works of God; but because Men are evil,  
or Unwor- therefore they are not the Works of God. Wicked Men  
thiness of have the Sun, the Moon, the Earth, the Water, the  
the Minister. Air and all other Creatures which are subject unto Man

but because they be wicked and not godly, therefore the  
Sun is not the Sun, the Moon, the Earth, the Water are not that which  
they are. The *Anabaptists* themselves had Bodies and Souls before they  
were rebaptized; but because they were not godly, therefore they had  
not true Bodies and true Souls. Also their Parents were not lawfully  
married (as they grant themselves) because they were not rebaptized;  
therefore the *Anabaptists* themselves are all Bastards, and their Parents were  
all Adulterers and Whoremongers, and yet they do inherit their Parents  
Lands and Goods, altho' they grant themselves to be Bastards and un-  
lawful Heirs. Who seeth not here in the *Anabaptists*, Men not posses-  
sed with Devils, but even Devils themselves possessed with worse Devils.

The *Papists* in like Manner until this Day do stand upon Works  
and the Worthiness of Man, contrary to Grace, and so (in Words at  
the least) do strongly assist their Brethren the *Anabaptists*. For these  
Foxes are tied together by the Tails, altho' by their Heads they seem  
to be contrary. For outwardly they pretend to be their great Enemies,  
when as inwardly notwithstanding they think, teach and defend indeed  
all one Thing against our Saviour Christ, who is our only Righteous-  
ness. Let him therefore that can hold fast this one Article, and let us  
suffer

suffer the rest which have made Ship-wrack thereof, to be carried whether the Sea or Winds shall drive them, until either they return to the Ship, or swim to the Shore.

The Conclusion and End of his Complaint is, to hope for no Quietness or End of Complaint, so long as Christ and Belial do not agree, *One Generation passeth away, and another Generation cometh*, Eccles. i. 4. If one Heresy die, by and by another springeth up; for the Devil doth neither slumber nor sleep, I myself, which (altho' I be nothing) have been now in the Ministry of Christ about twenty Years, can truly witness that I have been assailed with more then twenty Sects, of the which some are already destroyed, other some (as the Parts and Members of Worms or Bees that are cut asunder) do yet pant for Life. But Satan the god of all Dissention, stirreth up daily new Sects; and last of all (which of all other, I should never have fore seen or once suspected) he hath raised up a Sect of such as teach that the ten Commandments ought to be taken out of the Church, and that Men should not be terrified with the Law, but gently exhorted by the Preaching of the Grace of Christ, that the Saying of the Prophet *Micah* might be fulfilled; *Let no Man strive, nor reprove another*, Hosea iv. 4. *They shall not prophesy unto them*, Micah ii. 6. As tho' we were ignorant, or had never taught that afflicted and broken Spirits must be comforted by Christ; but the hard-hearted *Pharisees*, unto whom the Grace of God is preached in vain, must be terrified by the Law. And they themselves also, are forced to devise and imagine certain Revelations of God's Wrath against the Wicked and Unbelievers. As tho' the Law were or could be any Thing else but a revealing of God's Wrath against Impiety. Such is the Blindness and Presumption of these frantick Heads, which even by their own Judgment do condemn themselves. Wherefore it becometh the Ministers of God's Word to be surely perswaded (if they will be accounted faithful and wise in the Day of Christ) that the Word of St. Paul is not spoken in vain, or prophesied of a Matter of no Importance; to wit, *That there must be Heresies, that they which are approved may be made manifest*, 1 Cor. xi. 19. Yea I say, let the Minister of Christ know, that so long as he teacheth Christ purely, there shall not be wanting perverse Spirits, yea even of our own and among ourselves, which shall seek by all Means possible, to trouble the Church of Christ. And herewithal, let him comfort himself, *that there is no Peace between Christ and Belial*, 2 Cor. vi. 15. *or between the Seed of the Serpent, and the Seed of the Woman*, Gen. iii. 15. Yea let him rejoice in the Troubles which he suffereth by these Sects and seditious Spirits, continually springing up one after another. For this is our rejoicing, *Even the Testimony of our Conscience*, 2 Cor. i. 12. that we be sound standing and fighting in the Behalf of the Seed of the Woman, against the Seed of the Serpent. Let him bite us by the Heel and spare not. We again will not cease to crush his Head, by the Grace and Help of Christ the principal Bruiser thereof, who is blessed for ever.

The Church  
shall never  
be quiet in  
this World.

An Exhortation to  
Ministers.

**Fifty Discommodities that rise of Man's own Righteousness, proceeding of Works, gathered out of this Epistle to the *Galatians*.**

**CHAP. I.**

**T**O bring Men from the Calling of Grace.

2 To receive another Gospel.

3 To trouble the Minds of the Faithful.

4 To pervert the Gospel of Christ.

5 To be accursed.

6 To obey human Traditions.

7 To please Men.

8 Not to be the Servant of Christ.

9 To build upon Men and not upon God.

10 That the most excellent Righteousness of the Law is nothing.

11 To destroy the Church of God.

**CHAP. II.**

12 To teach a Man to be justified by Works, is to teach to be justified by Impossibility.

13 To make the Righteous in Christ Sinners.

14 To make Christ a Minister of Sin.

15 To build up Sin again when it is destroyed.

16 To be made a Transgressor.

17 To reject the Grace of God.

18 To judge that Christ died in vain.

**CHAP. III.**

19 To become foolish *Galatians*.

20 To be bewitched.

21 Not to hear the Truth.

22 To crucify Christ again.

23 To hold that the Spirit is received by Works.

24 To forsake the Spirit, and to end in the Flesh.

25 To be under the Curse.

26 To set the Testament of Men above the Testament of God.

27 To make Sin to abound.

28 To be shut under Sin.

29 To serve beggarly Ceremonies.

**CHAP. IV.**

30 That the Gospel is preached in vain.

31 That all is vain whatsoever the faithful do work or suffer.

32 To be made a Servant, and the Son of the Bond-woman.

33 To be cast out with the Son of the Bond-woman, from the Inheritance.

34 That Christ profiteth nothing.

35 That we are Debtors to fulfil the whole Law.

**CHAP. V.**

36 To be separate from Christ.

37 To fall from Grace.

38 To be hindered from the good Course of Well-doing.

39 That this Persuasion of the Doctrine of Works, cometh not of God.

40 To have the Leaven of Corruption.

41 That Judgment remaineth for him which teacheth this Doctrine.

42 To bite and consume one another.

43 That this Doctrine is accounted among the Works of the Flesh.

**CHAP. VI.**

44 To think thyself to be something, when thou art nothing.

45 To glory in others then in God.

46 Carnally to please the carnally minded.

47 To hate the Persecution of the Cross.

48 Not to keep the Law itself.

49 To glory in the Master and Teacher of carnal Things.

50 That nothing profiteth, and whatsoever a Man doth is in vain.



After that Mr. *Luther* had once publickly expounded this Epistle, he took in Hand to interpret the same again, in such Sort as in this Treatise hereafter doth ensue, the Cause whereof he doth declare in few Words following.

**H**ave taken in Hand, in the Name of the Lord, yet once again to expound this Epistle of Paul to the Galatians; not because I do desire to teach new Things, or such as ye have not heard before, especially since that by the Grace of Christ, Paul is now thoroughly known unto you; but for that (as I have often forewarned you) this we have to fear as the greatest and nearest Danger, lest Satan take from us this Doctrine of Faith, and bring into the Church again the Doctrine of Works and Mens Traditions. Wherefore it is very necessary that this Doctrine be kept in continual Practise and publick Exercise both of reading and hearing. And altho' it be never so well known, never so exactly learned, yet the Devil, which continually rangeth about seeking to devour us, is not dead. Likewise our Flesh and old Man is yet alive. Besides this, all Kinds of Temptations vex and oppress us on every Side; wherefore this Doctrine can never be taught, urged and repeated enough. If this Doctrine be lost, then is also the Doctrine of Truth, Life and Salvation, lost and gone. If this Doctrine flourish, then all good Things flourish, Religion, the true Service of God, the Glory of God, the right Knowledge of all Things which are necessary for a Christian Man to know. Because therefore we would be occupied and not be idle, we will there now begin where we made an end, according to the Saying of the Son of Syrach: When a Man hath done what he can, he must begin again, Eccl. xviii. v.

## The Argument of the Epistle of St. *PAUL* to the *GALATIANS*.



IRST of all, it becometh that we speak of the Argument of this Epistle; that is to say, what Matter St. *Paul* here chiefly treateth of. The Argument therefore is this.

St. *Paul* goeth about to establish the Doctrine of Faith, Grace, Forgiveness of Sins, or Christian Righteousness, to the End that we may have a perfect Knowledge and Difference between Christian Righteousness, and all other Kinds of Righteousness. For there be divers Sorts of Righteousness. There is a political or civil Righteousness, which Emperors, Princes of the World, Philosophers and Lawyers deal withal. There is also a ceremonial Righteousness, which the Traditions of Men do teach. This Righteousness Parents and School Masters may teach without Danger, because they do not attribute unto it any Power to satisfy for Sin, to please God, or to deserve Grace; but they teach such Ceremonies as are only necessary for the Correction of Manners and certain Observations concerning this Life. Besides these, there is another Righteousness, which is called the Righteousness of the Law, or of the Ten Commandments, which *Moses* teacheth. This do we also teach after the Doctrine of Faith.

There is yet another Righteousness, which is above all these; to wit, the Righteousness of Faith or Christian Righteousness, the which we must diligently discern from the other afore rehearsed; for they are quite contrary to this Righteousness, both because they flow out of the Laws of Emperors, the Traditions of the Pope, and the Commandments of God, and also because they consist in our Works, and may be wrought of us either by our pure natural Strength (as the *Papists* term it) or else by the Gift of God. For these Kinds of Righteousness are also the Gift of God, like as other good Things are which we do enjoy.

The Righteousness of Faith aply called the passive Righteousness, because it consisteth in suffering and receiving; like as the Righteousness of the Law is called the active Righteousness, because it consisteth in doing and working.

fore it seemeth good unto me to call this Righteousness of Faith or Christian-Righteousness, the passive Righteousness.

This is a Righteousness hidden in a Mystery, which the World doth not know, yea Christians themselves do not thoroughly understand it, and can hardly take hold of it in their Tentations. Therefore it must be diligently taught and continually practised. And who so doth not understand or apprehend this Righteousness in Afflictions and Terrors of Conscience, must needs be overthrown. For there is no Comfort of Conscience so firm and so sure as this passive Righteousness is.

But Man's Weakness and Misery is so great, that in the Terrors of Conscience and Danger of Death, we behold nothing else but our Works, our Worthiness and the Law; which when it sheweth unto us our Sin, by and by our evil Life passeth to Remembrance.

The Infir-  
mity of Man  
in Tempta-  
tions.

Then the poor Sinner with great Anguish of Spirit groaneth, and thus thinketh with himself: Alas, How desperately have I lived? Would to God I might live longer, then would I amend my Life. Thus Man's Reason cannot restrain itself from the Sight and Beholding of this active or working Righteousness, that is to say, her own Righteousness; nor lift up her Eyes to the Beholding of the passive or Christian Righteousness, but resteth altogether in the active Righteousness; so deeply is this Evil rooted in us.

On the other Side, Satan abusing the Infirmary of our Nature, doth increase and aggravate these Cogitations in us. Then can it not be but that the poor Conscience must be more grievously troubled, terrified and confounded. For it is impossible that the Mind of Man of itself should conceive any Comfort, or look up unto Grace only in the Feeling and Horrour of Sin, or constantly reject all disputing and reasoning about Works. For this is far above Man's Strength and Capacity, yea, and above the Law of God also. True it is, that of all Things in the World, the Law is most excellent; yet is it not able to quiet a troubled Conscience, but increaseth Terrors, and driveth it to Desperation; *For by the Law, Sin is made above Measure sinful*, Rom. vii. 5.

The Law  
cannot com-  
fort us in  
Afflictions.

Wherefore the afflicted and troubled Conscience hath no Remedy against Desperation and eternal Death, unless it take hold of the Forgiveness of Sins by Grace, freely offered in Christ Jesus, that is to say, this passive Righteousness of Faith or Christian Righteousness. Which if it can apprehend, then may it be at quiet, and boldly say: I seek not this active or working Righteousness; altho' I know that I ought to have it, and alse to fulfil it. But be it so that I had it, and did fulfil it indeed; yet notwithstanding I cannot trust unto it, neither dare I set it against the Judgment of God. Thus I abandon myself from all active Righteousness, both of mine own and of God's Law, and embrace only that passive Righteousness, which is the Righteousness of Grace, Mercy, and Forgiveness of Sins. Briefly, I rest only upon that Righteousness which is the Righteousness of Christ and of the Holy Ghost.

Like as the Earth engendreth not Rain, nor is able by her own Strength, Labour and Travel to procure the same, but receiveth it of the mere Gift of God from above; so this heavenly Righteousness is given us of God without our Works or Deservings. Look then how much the Earth of itself is able to do in getting and procuring itself seasonable Showers of Rain to make it fruitful; even so much and no more are we able to do by our Strength and Works in winning this heavenly and eternal Righteousness, and therefore shall never be able to attain unto it, unless God himself by mere Imputation and by his unspeakable Gift do bestow it upon us. The greatest Knowledge then, and the greatest Wisdom of Christians is, not to know the Law, to be ignorant of Works and of the whole active Righteousness, especially when the Conscience wrestleth with the Judgment of God. Like as on the contrary, amongst those which are not of the Number of God's People, the greatest Point of Wisdom is, to know and earnestly to urge the Law and the active Righteousness.

The Law is not given to a righteous Man; but to the lawless and disobedient. But it is a Thing very strange and unknown to the World, to teach Christians to learn to be ignorant of the Law, and so to live before God, as if there were no Law; notwithstanding except thou be ignorant of the Law, and be assuredly perswaded in thine Heart that there is now no Law nor Wrath of God, but altogether Grace and Mercy for Christ's Sake thou canst not be saved; for by the Law cometh the Knowledge of Sin. Contrariwise, Works and the keeping of the Law must be so straightly required in the World, as if there were no Promise or Grace; and that because of the stubborn, proud, and hard-hearted, *Rom. iii. 11. 12.* before whose Eyes nothing must be set but the Law, that they may be terrified and humbled. For the Law is given to terrify and kill such, and to exercise the old Man; and both the Word of Grace and of Wrath, must be rightly divided according to the Apostle, *2 Tim. ii.*

Here is then required a wise and faithful Disposer of the Word of God which can so moderate the Law, that it may be kept within his Bounds. He that teacheth that Men are justified before God by the Observation of the Law, passeth the Bounds of the Law, and confoundeth these two Kinds of Righteousness, active and passive, and is but an ill Logician, for he doth not rightly divide. Contrariwise, he that teacheth forth the Law and Works to the old Man, and the Promise of Forgiveness of Sins, and God's Mercy to the new Man, divideth the Word well. For the Flesh or the old Man, must be coupled with the Law and Works; the Spirit or new Man must be joined with the Promise of God and his Mercy. Wherefore when I see a Man that is bruised enough, already oppressed with the Law, terrified with Sin, and thirsting for Comfort, it is Time that I should remove out of his Sight the Law and the active Righteousness, and that I should set before him by the Gospel the Christian and passive Righteousness, which excluding Moses with the Law, offereth the Promise made in Christ, who came for the Afflicted, and for Sinners. Here is Man raised up again, and

and conceiveth good Hope, neither is he any longer under the Law, but under Grace. How not under the Law? According to the new Man, to whom Law doth not pertain. For the Law hath his Bounds unto Christ, as Paul saith afterwards; *The Law continueth unto Christ, Rom. x. 4.* who being come, *Moses ceaseth with his Law, Circumcision, the Sacrifices, the Sabbaths, yea and all the Prophets.*

This is our Divinity, whereby we teach how to put a Difference between these two Kinds of Righteousness, active and passive; to the End that Manners and Faith, Works and Grace, Policy and Religion should not be confounded, or taken the one for the other. Both are necessary, but both must be kept within their Bounds: Christian Righteousness pertaineth to the new Man, which is born of Flesh and Blood. Upon this old Man, as upon an Ass, there must be laid a Burden that may press him down, and he must not enjoy the Freedom of the Spirit of Grace, except he first put up in him the new Man by Faith in Christ (which notwithstanding is not fully done in this Life,) then may he enjoy the Kingdom, an inestimable Gift of Grace.

This I say, to the End that no Man should think we reject or forbid good Works, as the *Papists* do most falsely slander us, neither understanding what they themselves say, nor what we teach. They know nothing but the Righteousness of the Law, and yet they will judge of that Doctrine which is far above the Law, of which it is impossible that the carnal Man should be able to judge. Therefore they must needs be offended, for they can see no higher then the Law. Whatsoever then is above the Law, is to them a great Offence. But we imagine, as it were, two Worlds, the one heavenly and the other earthly. In these we place these two Kinds of Righteousness, being separate the one far from the other. The Righteousness of the Law is earthly, and hath to do with earthly Things, and by it we do good Works. But as the Earth bringeth not forth Fruit except first it be watered and made fruitful from above; even so by the Righteousness of the Law, in doing many Things we do nothing, and in fulfilling of the Law we fulfil it not, except first without any Merit or Work of ours, we be made righteous by the Christian Righteousness, which nothing pertaineth to the Righteousness of the Law, or to the earthly and active Righteousness. But this Righteousness is heavenly; which (as I said) we have not

Good Works  
not forbid-  
den.

of ourselves, but receive it from Heaven; which we work not, but which by Grace is wrought in us, and apprehended by Faith; whereby we mount up above all Laws and Works. Wherefore like as we have born (as St. Paul saith) the Image of the earthly Adam; so let us bear the Image of the heavenly, 1 Cor. xv. 49. which is the new Man in a new World, where is no Law, no Sin, no Remorse or Sting of Conscience, no Death, but perfect Joy, Righteousness, Grace, Peace, Life, Salvation and Glory.

Christian  
Righteous-  
ness not  
wrought by  
us, but  
wrought in  
us.

Why  
we are not  
under the Law, but under Grace, is because we are born again, and have a new Man within us, who is not under the Law, but under Grace.

Why, do we then nothing? Do we work nothing for the obtaining of this Righteousness? I answer, nothing at all. For this is perfect Righteousness, to do nothing, to hear nothing, to know nothing of the Law, or of Works; but to know and believe to this only, that Christ is gone to the Father, and is not now seen; that he sitteth in Heaven at the Right-hand of his Father, not as a Judge, but made unto us of God, Wisdom, Righteousness, Holiness and Redemption: Briefly, that he is our High-Priest, intreating for us, reigning over us and in us by Grace. In this heavenly Righteousness, Sin can have no Place; for there is no Law; and where no Law is, there can be no Transgression, *Rom. iv. 15.*

Seeing then that Sin hath here no Place, there can be no Anguish of Conscience, no Fear, no Heaviness. Therefore St. John saith; *He that is born of God, cannot sin*, 1 John v. 18. But if there be any Fear or Grief of Conscience, it is a Token that this Righteousness is withdrawn, that Grace is hidden, and that Christ is darkened and not of Sight. But where Christ is truly seen indeed, there must needs be full and perfect Joy in the Lord, with Peace of Conscience, which most certainly thus thinketh: Altho' I am a Sinner by the Law, and under the Condemnation of the Law, yet I despair not, yet I die not, because Christ liveth, who is both my Righteousness and my everlasting Life. In that Righteousness and Life I have no Sin, no Fear, no Sting of Conscience, no Care of Death. I am indeed a Sinner as touching this present Life; and the Righteousness thereof, as the Child of Adam; where the Law accuseth me, Death reigneth over me, and at length would devour me. But I have another Righteousness and Life above this Life, which is Christ the Son of God, *Rom. viii. 9, 10, 11, &c.* who knoweth no Sin nor Death, but is Righteousness and Life eternal; by whom this my Body being dead and brought into Dust, shall be raised up again, and delivered from the Bondage of the Law and Sin, and shall be sanctified together with the Spirit.

So both these continue whilst we here live. The Flesh is accused, exercised with Temptations, oppressed with Heaviness and Sorrow, bruised by his active Righteousness of the Law; but the Spirit reigneth, rejoiceth, and is saved by this passive and Christian Righteousness, because it knoweth that it hath a Lord in Heaven at the Right-hand of his Father, who hath abolished the Law, Sin, Death, and hath trodden under Foot all Evils, led them captive, and triumphed over them in himself, *Col. ii. 15.*

The Drift of St. Paul therefore in this Epistle, goeth about diligently the Apostle gently to instruct us, to comfort us, to hold us in the perfect Knowledge of this excellent and Christian Righteousness. For if the Article of Justification be once lost, then is all true Christian Doctrine lost. And as many as are in the World that hold not this Doctrine, are either Jews, Turks, Papists or Hereticks. For between the Righteousness of the Law and Christian Righteousness, there is no Mean. He then that strayeth from this Christian Righteousness, must needs fall in-

to the Righteousness of the Law, that is to say, when he hath lost Christ, he must fall into the Confidence of his own Works.

Therefore do we so earnestly set forth and so often repeat this Doctrine of Faith or Christian Righteousness, that by this Means it may be kept in continual Exercise, and may be plainly discerned from the active Righteousness of the Law. Otherwise we shall never be able to hold the true Divinity (for by this only Doctrine the Church is built, and in this it consisteth;) but by and by we shall either become Canonists, Observers of Ceremonies, Observers of the Law, or *Papists*, and Christ so darkned, that none in the Church shall be either rightly taught or comforted. Wherefore, if we will be Teachers and Leaders of others, it behoveth us to have a great Care of these Matters, and to mark well this Distinction between the Righteousness of the Law, and the Righteousness of Christ. And this Distinction is easy to be uttered in Words; but in Use and Experience it is very hard, altho' it be never so diligently exercised and practised, for that in the Hour of Death, or in other Agonies of the Conscience, these two Sorts of Righteousness do incounere more near together, than thou wouldest wish or desire. Wherefore I do admonish you, especially such as shall become Instructors and Guiders of Consciences, and also every one a Parr, that ye exercise yourselves continually by Study, by Reading, by Meditation of the Word, and by Prayer, that in the Time of Temptation ye may be able to instruct and comfort both your own Consciences and others, and to bring them from the Law to Grace, from the active and working Righteousness, to the passive and received Righteousness; and to conclude, from *Moses* to Christ. For the Devil is wont in Affliction and in the Conflict of Conscience, by the Law to make us afraid, and to lay against us the Guilt of Sin, our wicked Life past, the Wrath and Judgment of God, Hell and eternal Death, that by this Means he may drive us to Desperation, make us Bond-slaves to himself, and pluck us from Christ. Furthermore, he is wont to set against us those Places of the Gospel, wherein Christ himself requireth Works of us, and with plain Words threatneth Damnation to those that do them not, *Heb.* iv. 8. Now, if here we be not able to judge between these two Kinds of Righteousness, if we take not hold of Christ by Faith sitting at the Right hand of God, who maketh Intercession unto the Father for us wretched Sinners, then are we under the Law, and not under Grace, and Christ is no more a Saviour, but a Law-giver; so that now there remaineth no more Salvation, but certain Desperation and everlasting Death, except Repentance follow.

Let us then diligently learn to judge between these two Kinds of Righteousness, that we may know how far we ought to obey the Law. Now, we have said before, that the Law in a Christian ought not to pass his Bounds, but ought to have Dominion only over the Flesh, which is in Subjection unto it, and remaineth under the same. When it is thus, the Law, is kept within his Bounds. But if it shall presume to creep

See what we  
fall into  
when we  
neglect this  
Doctrine, or  
want true  
Z-eal to ad-  
vance the  
same.

creep into thy Conscience, and there seek to reign, see thou play the cunning Logician, and make the true Division. Give no more to the Law than is convenient, but say thou; O Law, thou wouldest climb up into the Kingdom of my Conscience, and there reign and reprove it of Sin, and wouldest take from me the Joy of my Heart which I have by Faith in Christ, and drive me to Desperation, that I might be without all Hope, and utterly perish. This thou dost besides thine Office; keep thyself within thy Bounds, and exercise thy Power upon the Flesh, but touch not my Conscience, for I am baptized, and by the Gospel am called to the Partaking of Righteousness and everlasting Life, to the Kingdom of Christ, wherein my Conscience is at rest, where no Law is, but altogether Forgiveness of Sin, Peace, Quietness, Joy, Health and everlasting Life. Trouble me not in these Matters, for I will not suffer thee so intolerable a Tyrant and cruel Tormentor to reign in my Conscience, for it is the Seat and Temple of Christ the Son of God, 1 Cor. vi. 19. who is the King of Righteousness and Peace, and my most sweet Saviour and Mediator; he shall keep my Conscience joyful and quiet in the sound and pure Doctrine of the Gospel, and in the Knowledge of this Christian and heavenly Righteousness.

When I have this Righteousness reigning in my Heart, I descend from Heaven as the Rain making fruitful the Earth, that is to say, I come forth into another Kingdom, and I do good Works, how and whensoever Occasion is offered; if I be a Minister of the Word, I preach, I comfort the broken hearted, I administer the Sacraments; if I be an Householder, I govern my House and my Family, I bring up my Children in the Knowledge and Fear of God; if I be a Magistrate, the Charge that is given me from above I diligently execute; if I be a Servant, I do my Master's Business faithfully; to conclude, whosoever he be that is assuredly perswaded that Christ is his Righteousness, doth not only cheerfully and gladly work well in his Vocation, but also submitteth himself thro' Love to the Magistrates and to their Laws; yea tho' they be severe, sharp and cruel, and (if Necessity do so require) to all Manner of Burdens and to all Dangers of this present Life, because he knoweth that this is the Will of God, and that this Obedience pleaseth him. As far as concerning the Argument of this Epistle whereof Paul treateth, taking Occasion of false Teachers which had darkned this Righteousness of Faith amongst the *Galatians*, against whom he setteth himself in defending and commending his Authority and Office, &c.



A

# COMMENTARY

U P O N

The EPISTLE of PAUL the APOSTLE to  
the GALATIANS.

## CHAP. I.

Verse 1. *Paul an Apostle (not of Men, neither by Man, but by Jesus Christ, and God the Father, who raised him from the Dead.)*



OW that we have declared the Argument and Sum of this Epistle to the *Galatians*, we think it good before we come to the Matter itself, to shew what was the Occasion that St. Paul wrote this Epistle. He had planted among the *Galatians* the pure Doctrine of the Gospel, and the Righteousness of Faith; but by and by after his Departure,

The Occasion of writing this Epistle to the *Galatians*.

there crept in certain false Teachers, which overthrew all that he had planted and truly taught among them. For the Devil cannot but furiously impugn this Doctrine with all Force and Subtily, neither can he rest so long as he seeth any Spark thereof remaining. We also for this only Cause that we preach the Gospel, do suffer of the World, the Devil and his Ministers, all the Mischief that they can work against us, both on the Right-hand and on the left.

The Devil hateth the Gospel, and stirreth up wicked Men against it.

The Doctrine of the Gospel. For the Gospel is such a Doctrine as teacheth a far higher Matter then is the Wisdom, Righteousness, and Religion of the World, that is to say, free Remission of Sins thro' Christ, &c. It leaveth those Things in their

Degree to be as they are, and commendeth them as the good Creatures of God. But the World preferreth these Creatures before the Creator, and moreover by them would put away Sin, be delivered from Death, and deserve everlasting Life. This doth the Gospel condemn. Contrariwise the World cannot suffer those Things to be condemned, which it most esteemeth and best liketh of, and therefore it chargeth the Gospel that it is a seditious Doctrine and full of Errors, that it overthroweth Common-wealths, Countries, Dominions, Kingdoms and Empires, and therefore offendeth both against God and the Emperor, abolisheth Laws, corrupteth good Manners, and setteth all Men at Liberty to do what they list. Wherefore with just Zeal and high Service to God (as it would seem) it persecuteth this Doctrine, and abhorreth the Teachers and Professors thereof, as the greatest Plague that can be in the whole Earth.

The Effect of the Gospel. Moreover, by the preaching of this Doctrine, the Devil is overthrown, his Kingdom is destroyed, the Law, Sin and Death (wherewith, as most mighty and invincible Tyrants, he hath brought all Mankind in Subjection under his Dominion) are wrested out of his Hands, briefly, his Prisoners are translated out of the Kingdom of Darkness into the Kingdom of Light and Liberty, *Col. i. 13.* Should the Devil suffer all this? Should not the Father of Lies employ all his Force and subtil Policies, to darken, to corrupt, and utterly to root out this Doctrine of Salvation and everlasting Life? Indeed St. Paul complaineth in this and all other his Epistles, that even in his Time the Devil shewed himself a cunning Workman in this Business.

We thought good to shew here by the Way, that the Gospel is such a Doctrine as condemneth all Manner of Righteousness, and preacheth the only Righteousness of Christ, and to them that embrace the same, it bringeth Peace of Conscience and all good Things; and yet notwithstanding, the World hateth and persecuteth it most bitterly.

The Authority of the false Apostles. I said before that the Occasion why St. Paul wrote this Epistle was for that by and by after his Departure, false Teachers had destroyed those Things among the *Galatians*, which he with long and great Travail had builded. And these false Apostles being of the Circumcision and Sect of the *Pharisees*, were Men of great Estimation and Authority, which bragged among the People that they were of that holy and chosen Stock of the *Jews*, that they were *Israelites*, of the Seed of *Abraham*, *John viii. 33. Rom. iv. 4, 5, 6.* that they had the Promises and the Fathers; and finally, that they were the Ministers of Christ, and the Apostles Schollars, with whom they had been conversant and had seen their Miracles, and perhaps had also wrought some Signs or Miracles themselves: For Christ witnesseth that the Wicked also do work

work Miracles, *Matth. vii. 22.* Moreover these false Apostles by all the crafty Means they could devise, defaced the Authority of *St. Paul*, saying, Why do ye so highly esteem of *Paul*? Why have ye him in so great Reverence? Forsooth he was but the last of all that were converted unto Christ. But we are the Disciples of the Apostles, and were familiarly conversant with them. We have seen Christ working Miracles, and heard him preach. *Paul* came after us, and is inferiour unto us; and it is not possible that God should suffer us to err which are of his holy People, the Ministers of Christ, and have received the Holy Ghost. Again, we are many and *Paul* is but one, and alone, who neither was conversant with the Apostles, nor hath seen Christ; yea he persecuted the Church of Christ a great while. Would God (think ye) for *Paul's* Sake only, suffer so many Churches to be deceived?

When Men having such Authority come into any Country or City, by and by the People have them in great Admiration, and under this Colour of Godliness and Religion, they do not only deceive the simple, but also the learned, yea, and those also which seem to be somewhat confirmed in the Faith, especially when they brag (as these did) that they are the Offspring of the Patriarchs, the Ministers of Christ, the Apostles Schollars, &c. Even so the Pope at this Day, when he hath no Authority of the Scripture to defend himself withal, useth this one Argument continually against us, *The Church, the Church*: Thinkest thou that God is so offended, that for a few Heretickes of *Luther's* Sect, he will cast off his whole Church? Thinkest thou that he would leave his Church in Error so many hundred Years? And this he mightily maintaineth, that the Church can never be overthrown. Now, like as many are moved with this Argument at this Day; so in *Paul's* Time these false Apostles thro' great bragging and setting forth of their own Praises, blinded the Eyes of the *Galatians*, so that *Paul* lost his Authority among them, and his Doctrine was brought into Suspicion.

The Argument of the Papists against us.

Against this vain bragging and boasting of the false Apostles, *Paul* with great Constancy and Boldness setteth his Apostolick Authority, highly commending his Vocation, and defending his Ministry. And (altho' elsewhere he never doth the like) he will not give Place to any, no not to the Apostles themselves, much less to any of their Schollars. And to abate their *Pharisaical* Pride and shameless Boldness, he maketh Mention of the History done in *Antioch*, where he withstood *Peter* himself. Besides this, not regarding the Offence that might rise thereof, he saith plainly in the Text, that he was bold to accuse and reprove *Peter* himself the chief of the Apostles, who had seen Christ, and had been most familiarly conversant with him. I am an Apostle (saith he) and such an one as pass not what others are; yea, I was not afraid to chide the very Pillar of all the rest of the Apostles. ¶ And to conclude, in the first two Chapters he doth in a Manner, nothing

With how great Constancy *Saint Paul* defendeth his Vocation and Authority against the false Apostles.

¶ The Sum of the two first Chapters.

elle but set out his Vocation, his Office and his Gospel, affirming that it was not of Men, and that he had not received it by Man, but by the Revelation of Jesus Christ : Also, that if he, yea, or an Angel from Heaven should bring any other Gospel, then that which he had preached, he should be holden accursed.

### *The Certainty of Calling.*

The Minister of God must be sure of his Calling.

**B**Ut what meaneth *Paul* by this his boasting ? I answer : This common Place serveth to this End, that every Minister of God's Word should be sure of his Calling, that before God and Man he may with a bold Conscience glory herein, that he preached the Gospel as one that is called and sent : Even as the Ambassador of a King glorieth and vaunteth in this, that he cometh not as a private Person, but as the King's Ambassador, and because of this Dignity that he is the King's Ambassador, he is honoured, and set in the highest Place : Which Honour should not be given unto him, if he came as a private Person. Wherefore let the Preacher of the Gospel be certain that his Calling is from God. And it is expedient that according to the Example of *Paul*, he should magnify this his Calling, to the End, that he may win Credit and Authority among the People ; like as the King's Ambassador magnifieth his Office and Calling. And thus to glory, is not a vain, but a necessary kind of glorying, because he glorieth not in himself, but in the King which hath sent him, whose Authority he desireth to be honoured and magnified.

The glorying of *Paul* as touching his Vocation necessary and holy.

The Preachers are to be received as Messengers from God, by whose Ministry God himself speaketh.

Likewise when *Paul* so highly commendeth his Calling, he seeketh not his own Praise, but with a necessary and a holy Pride he magnifieth his Ministry, as to the *Rom. xi. 13.* he saith, *In as much as I am the Apostle of the Gentiles, I magnify mine Office ;* That is to say, I will that Men receive me, not as *Paul of Tarsus*, but as *Paul* the Apostle or Ambassador of Jesus Christ. \* And this he doth of Necessity to maintain his Authority, that the People in hearing this, might be more attent and willing to give ear unto him. For they hear not only *Paul*, but in *Paul* Christ himself, and God the Father sending him out in his Message ; whose Authority and Majesty, like as Men ought religiously to honour, so ought they with great Reverence to receive and to hear his Messengers bringing his Word and Message.

This is a notable Place therefore, wherein *Paul* so glorieth and boasteth as touching his Vocation, that he despiseth all others. If any Man after the Manner of the World should despise all others in respect of himself, and attribute all unto himself alone, he should not only shew himself a very Fool, but also grievously offend. But this Manner of boasting is necessary,

cessary, and pertaineth not to the Glory of *Paul*, but to the Glory of God, whereby is offered unto him the Sacrifice of Praise and Thanksgiving. For by this boasting, the Name, the Grace, and the Mercy of God is made known unto the World. Thus therefore he beginneth his Epistle.

### Verse 1. *Paul an Apostle not of Men, &c.*

Here in the very beginning he toucheth those false Teachers, which boasted themselves to be the Disciples of the Apostles, and to be sent of them, but despised *Paul* as one that was neither the Apostles Schollar, nor sent of any to preach the Gospel, but came in some other Way, and of his own Head thrust himself into that Office. Against those *Paul* defendeth his Calling, saying, My Calling seemeth base to your Preachers: But whosoever they be which have come unto you, are sent either of Men or by Man; That is to say, they have entred either of themselves being not called, or else called by others. But my Calling is neither of Men nor by Man, but it is above all Manner of Calling that can be made by the Apostles, for it is by Jesus Christ and by God the Father, &c.

Where he saith of *Men*, I mean such as call and thrust in themselves when neither God nor Man calleth Of Men.  
or sendeth them, but they run and speak of themselves;  
as at this Day certain Phantastical Spirits do, which either lurk in Corners and seek Places where they may pour out their Poison, and come not into publick Congregations, or else they resort thither where the Gospel is planted already. These I call such as are sent of Men. But where he saith, *by Man*, understand such as By Man.  
have a divine Calling, but yet by Man as by Means.  
God calleth then two Manner of Ways: By Means, and A double  
without Means. He calleth us to the Ministry of his Calling, by  
Word at this Day, not immediately by himself, but by Means and  
other Means, that is to say, by Man. But the Apostles without  
were called immediately of Christ himself, as the Prophets Means.  
in the old Time were called of God himself. Therefore  
when *Paul* saith, *Not of Men, neither by Man*, he beateth down the  
false Apostles. As tho' he would say; Albeit those Vipers brag never  
so much, What can they brag more then that they are either come *from*  
*Men*, that is to say, of themselves without any Calling, or, *by Man*,  
that is to say, sent of others? I pass not upon any of these Things, nei-  
ther ought you to regard them. As for me, I am called and sent neither  
of Men, nor by Man, but without Means, that is, *to wit*, by Jesus Christ  
himself, and my Calling is like in all Points to the Cal-  
ling of the Apostles, and I am indeed an Apostle. *Paul* The Calling  
therefore handleth this Place of the Calling of the Apostles of the Apo-  
effectually. And elsewhere he separateth the Degree of stles.  
Apostleship from others, as in the first to the *Cor. chap.*  
xii. and in the fourth to the *Ephesians*, where he saith, *And God hath*  
*ordained some in the Church, as first Apostles, secondly Prophets, thirdly*  
*Teachers,*

Who be Apostles.

*Teachers, &c.* setting Apostles in the first Place: So that they be properly called Apostles which are sent immediately of God himself without any other ordinary Means.

The Calling of *Matthias*.

So *Matthias* was called only of God. For when the other Apostles had appointed two, they durst not choose the one nor the other, but they cast Lots and prayed that God would shew which of them he would have. *Acts i.*

23, 24. For seeing he should be an Apostle, it behoveth that he should be called of God.

So was *Paul* called to be an Apostle of the *Gentiles*, *Acts ix. 15.* Hereof the Apostles are also called Saints.

The Apostles Saints.

For they are sure of their Calling and Doctrine, and have continued faithful in their Office; and none of them became a cast away saving *Judas*, *Matth. 27. 5.* because their Calling is holy.

The Certainty of Calling.

This is the first Assault that *Paul* maketh against the false Apostles, which ran when no Man sent them. Calling therefore is not to be despised. For it is not enough

They which be not called, do kill and destroy.

for a Man to have the Word and pure Doctrine, but also he must be assured of his Calling, and he that entrencheth without this Assurance, entrencheth to no other End but to kill and to destroy. For God never prospereth the Labour of those that are not called. And altho' they teach some good

and profitable Matters, yet they edify not. So our Phantastical Spirits at this Day have the Words of Faith in their Mouths, but yet they yield no Fruit, but their chief End and Purpose is to draw Men to their false and perverse Opinions. They that have a certain and holy Calling, must sustain many and great conflicts: As they must do whose Doctrine is pure and sound, that they may constantly abide in their lawful Calling, against the infinite and continual Assaults of the Devil and Rage of the World. Here what should he do whose Calling is uncertain and Doctrine corrupt?

This is therefore our Comfort, which are in the Ministry of the Word, that we have an Office which is heavenly and holy, to the which we being lawfully called, do triumph against all the Gates of Hell. On

What Danger they be in, which have no lawful calling.

the other Side, it is an horrible Thing when the Conscience saith, This hast thou done without any lawful calling. Here such Terror shaketh a Man's Mind which is not called, that he would wish he had never heard the Word which he teacheth. For by his Disobedience he maketh all his Works evil, were they never so good, in so much that even his greatest Works and Labours become his greatest Sins.

We see then how good and necessary this boasting and glorying of our Ministry is. In Times past when I was but a young Divine, me thought *Paul* did unwisely in glorying so oft of his Calling in all his Epistles: But I did not understand his Purpose. For I knew not that the Ministry of God's Word was so weighty a Matter. I knew nothing of

of the Doctrine of Faith and a true Conscience indeed, for that there was no Certainty taught either in the Schools or Churches, but all was full of Sophistical Subtilties of the Schoolmen. And therefore no Man was able to understand the Dignity and Power of this holy and spiritual Boasting of the true and lawful Calling, which serveth first to the Glory of God, and secondly to the advancing of our Office, and moreover to the Salvation of ourselves, and of the People. For by this our Boasting we seek not the Estimation in the World, or Praise among Men, or Money, or Pleasures, or Favour of the World: But for as much as we be in a Divine Calling, and in the Work of God, and the People have great Need to be assured of our Calling, that they may know our Word to be the Word of God, therefore we proudly vaunt and boast of it. It is not then a vain, but a most holy Pride against the Devil and the World, and Humility before God.

The Profit that cometh by the extolling and magnifying of our Calling.

A holy Pride.

Verse 1. *And God the Father, who raised him from the Dead.*

Paul is so enflamed here with Zeal, that he cannot tarry till he come to the Matter itself, but forthwith in the very Title he bursteth out, and uttereth what he hath in his Heart. His Intent in this Epistle is, to treat of the Righteousness that cometh by Faith, and to defend the same: Again, to beat down the Law and the Righteousness that cometh by Works. Of such Cogitations he is full, and out of this wonderful and exceeding great Abundance of the excellent Wisdom and Knowledge of Christ in his Heart, his Mouth speaketh. This Flame, this great burning Fire of the Heart cannot be hid, nor suffer him to hold his Tongue: And therefore he thought it not enough to say that he was an Apostle sent by Jesus Christ, but also addeth, *by God the Father, who raised him from the Dead.*

The Sum of the Epistle to the Galatians.

But it seemeth here that the adding of these Words, *And God the Father, &c.* is not necessary. But because (as I said) Paul speaketh out of the Abundance of his Heart, his Mind burneth with Desire to set forth even in the very Entry of this Epistle the unsearchable Riches of Christ, and to preach the Righteousness of God, which is called the Resurrection of the Dead. Christ who liveth and is risen again, speaketh out of him, and moveth him thus to speak: Therefore not without Cause he addeth, that he is also an Apostle, *by God the Father, which hath raised up Jesus Christ from the Dead.* As if he should say; I have to deal with Satan and with those Vipers the Instruments of Satan, which go about to spoil me of the Righteousness of Christ, who was raised up by God the Father from the Dead: By the which alone we are made Righteous, by the which also we shall be raised up at the Last-day from Death to everlasting Life. But they that in such Sort go about to o-

verthrow

verthrow the Righteousness of Christ, do resist the Father and the Son and the Work of them both.

Thus *Paul*, even at the first Entrance, bursteth out into the whole Matter whereof he intreateth in this Epistle. For (as I said) he treateth of the Resurrection of Christ, who rose again to make us righteous, *Rom. iv. 24, 25.* and in so doing he hath overcome the Law, Sin, Death, and all Evils. Christ's Victory then is the overcoming of the Law, of Sin, our Flesh, the World, the Devil, Death, Hell, and all Evils: And this his Victory he hath given unto us. Altho' then that these Tyrants and these Enemies of ours do accuse us and make us afraid; yet can they not drive us to Despair, nor condemn us. For Christ whom God the Father hath raised up from the Dead, is our Righteousness and Victory. *But Thanks be to God, which giveth us the Victory, thro' our Lord Jesus Christ, 1 Cor. xv. 57.*

Christ's Victory is ours.

But mark how fitly and to the Purpose *Paul* here speaketh. He saith not, by God which hath made Heaven and Earth, which is Lord of Angels, which commandeth *Abraham* to go out of his own Countrey, which sent *Moses* to *Pharaoh* the King, which brought *Israel* out of *Egypt*, (as the false Apostles did) who boasted of the God of their Fathers, the Creator, Maintainer and Preserver of all Things, working Wonders among his People: But *Paul* had another Thing in his Heart, namely the Righteousness of Christ, and therefore he speaketh Words that make much for this Purpose, saying, *I am an Apostle, not of Men, neither by Man, but by Jesus Christ, and God the Father, who raised him from the Dead.* Ye see then with what Fervency of Spirit *Paul* is led in this Matter, which he goeth about to establish and maintain against the whole Kingdom of Hell, the Power and Wisdom of the World, and against the Devil and his Apostles.

Verse 2. *And all the Brethren which are with me,*

This maketh much for the stopping of the Mouths of these false Apostles. For all his Arguments tend to the advancing and magnifying of his Ministry, and contrariwise to the discrediting of theirs. As if he should thus say; Altho' it be enough, that I thro' a Divine Calling am sent as an Apostle by Jesus Christ, and God the Father, which hath raised him up from the Dead, yet lest I should be alone, I add over and besides (which is more then needeth) all the Brethren which are not Apostles, but Fellow-soldiers; they write this Epistle as well as I, and bear Witness with me that my Doctrine is true and godly. Wherefore we be sure that Christ is present with us, and that he teacheth and speaketh in the Midst of us and in our Church. As for the false Apostles, if they be any Thing, they be but sent either of Man, or by Man; but I am sent of God the Father, and of Jesus Christ, who is our Life and Resurrection; *John xi. 25.* My other Brethren are sent from God, howbeit by Man, that is, *to wit*, by me. There-

Therefore lest they might say, that I only set myself proudly against them, I have my Brethren with me all of one Mind, as faithful Witnesses, which think, write, and teach the self-same Thing that I do. Why he saith, and all the Brethren.

Verse 2. *Unto the Churches of Galatia.*

*Paul* had preached the Gospel throughout all *Galatia*, and albeit he had not wholly converted it unto Christ, yet he had many Churches in it, into the which the false Apostles, Satans Ministers had crept. So likewise at this Day the Phantastical Anabaptists come not to those Places where the Adversaries of the Gospel bear Rule; but where Christians and good Men are, which love the Gospel. With such they wind in themselves even in the Dominions of Tyrants and Persecuters of the Gospel: Where they, creeping into Houses under crafty Pretence, pour out their Poison to the Subversion of many: But why go they not rather into the Cities, Countries, and Dominions of Papists, and there profess and maintain their Doctrine in the Presence of wicked Princes, Bishops, and Doctors in the Universities, as we by God's Help and Assistance have done? These tender Martyrs will adventure no Peril, but they resort thither where the Gospel hath an Harbour already, where they may live without Danger in great Peace and Quietness. So the false Apostles would not endanger themselves to come to *Jerusalem* to *Caiaphas*, or, to *Rome* to the Emperor, or to other Places where no Man had preached afore, as *Paul* and the other Apostles did: But they came into *Galatia*, which was won unto Christ already by the Labour and Travail of *Paul*, and into *Asia*, *Corinth*, and such other Place, where good Men were and professed the Name of Christ, persecuting no Man, but suffering all Things quietly. There might the Enemies of Christ's Cross live in great Security and without any Persecution.

And here we may learn that it is the Lot of all godly Teachers, that besides the Persecution which they suffer of the Wicked and unthankful World, and the great Travail which they sustain in planting of Churches, they are compelled to suffer that Thing which they of long Time before had purely taught, to be quickly overthrown of Phantastical Spirits, who afterwards reign and rule over them. This grieveth godly Ministers more then any Persecution of Tyrants. Therefore let him not be a Minister of the Gospel which is not content to be thus despised, or is loth to bear this Reproach: Or if he be, let him give over his Charge to another. We also at this Day do find the same Thing to be true by Experience. We are miserably contemned and vexed outwardly by Tyrants, inwardly by those whom we have restored to Liberty by the Gospel, and also by false Brethren. But this is our Comfort and Glory, that being called of God, we have a Promise of ever-

Sectaries shun the Cross, and therefore they resort to those Places where they may do most harm and be out of Danger.

The Condition of all godly Preachers.

The Comfort of faithful Teachers labouring under the Cross. lasting

The constant  
Faith of Lu-  
ther.

lasting Life, and look for that Reward, which Eye hath not seen, nor Ear heard, nor have entred into the Heart of Man, 1 Cor. ii. 9. And when the chief Shepherd shall appear, ye shall receive a Crown of Glory that fadeeth not away, 1 Pet. v. 4. who here also in this World will not

suffer us to perish for Hunger.

Jerome moveth here a great Question, why Paul calleth those Churches, which were no Churches. Is it (saith he) because Paul writeth to the *Galatians*, that were perverted and turned back from Christ and from Grace, unto *Moses* and the Law? Hereunto I answer, that Paul calleth them the Churches of *Galatia*, by putting a Part for the whole, which is a common Thing in the Scriptures. For writing in like Manner to the *Corinthians*, he rejoiceth on their Behalf, that the Grace of God was given them in Christ, namely, that they were made rich thro' him in all Utterance and Knowledge: And yet many of them were misled by false Apostles, and believed not the Resurrection of the Dead.

Albeit then that the *Galatians* were fallen away from the Doctrine of Paul, yet did Baptism, the Word, and the Name of Christ remain among them.

The Word  
and Sacra-  
ments are  
not polluted  
by our Un-  
godliness.

There were also some good Men that were not revolted, which had a right Opinion of the Word and Sacraments, and used them well. Moreover these Things could not be defiled thro' them that were revolted. For Baptism, the Gospel, and other Things are not therefore made unholy, because many are polluted and unholy, and have an Evil Opinion of them: But they abide holy and the same that they were, whether they be among the Godly or the Ungodly; by whom they can neither be polluted, nor

made holy.  
and Manners  
but not afore

By our good or evil Conversation, by our good or evil Life they be polluted or made holy in the Sight of the Heathen, God. Wherefore wheresoever the Substance of the Word

The Seat of  
Antichrist.

and Sacraments remaineth, there is the holy Church, altho' Antichrist there reign, who (as the Scripture witnesseth) sitteth not in a Stable of Fiends, or in a Swine-sty, or in a Company of Infidels, but in the highest and holiest Place of all, namely, in the Temple of God, 2 Thess. ii. 4.

fore altho' spiritual Tyrants reign, yet there must be a Temple of

God, and the same must be preserved under them. There-

The Church  
dispersed  
thro' the  
World.

fore I answer briefly to this Question, that the Church is universal throughout the whole World, wheresoever the Gospel of God and the Sacraments be. The *Jews*, the *Turks*, and other vain Spirits are not the Church, because they fight against these Things, and deny them. Hitherto

as touching the Title or Inscription of this Epistle. Now followeth the Salutation or Greeting of Paul.

Verse 3. Grace be to you, and Peace from God the Father, and from our Lord Jesus Christ.

I hope

I hope ye are not ignorant what *Grace* and *Peace* mean-  
eth, seeing that these *Termes* are common in *Paul*, and now  
not obscure or unknown. But for as much as we take in  
Hand to expound this *Epistle* (which we do, not because it is needful,  
or for any *Hardness* that is in it, but that our *Consciences* may be con-  
firmed against *Heresies* yet to come) let it not be tedious unto you, if  
we repeat these *Things* again, that elsewhere and at other *Times* we  
teach, preach, sing, and set out by writing. For if we  
neglect the *Article* of *Justification*, we lose all together.  
Therefore most necessary it is chiefly and above all *Things*,  
that we teach and repeat this *Article* continually: Like  
as *Moses* saith of his *Law*; for it cannot be beaten into  
our *Ears* enough or too much: Yea, tho' we learn it  
and understand it well, yet is there none that taketh hold  
of it perfectly, or believeth it with his whole *Heart*; so frail a *Thing* is  
our *Flesh*, and disobedient to the *Spirit*.

The greeting of the *Apostle* is strange unto the *World*,  
and was never heard of before the preaching of the *Gospel*. And these two *Words* *Grace* and *Peace* comprehend  
in them whatsoever belongeth to *Christianity*. *Grace* re-  
leaseth *Sin*, and *Peace* maketh the *Conscience* quiet.  
¶ The two *Fiends* that torment us, are *Sin* and *Conscience*.  
But *Christ* hath vanquished these two *Monsters*, and tro-  
den them under *Foot*, both in this *World* and in the  
*World* to come. This the *World* doth not know, and  
therefore it can teach no *Certainty* of the overcoming of  
*Sin*, *Conscience* and *Death*. † Only *Christians* have this  
*Kind* of *Doctrine*, and are exercised and armed with it,  
to get *Victory* against *Sin*, *Despair* and everlasting *Death*.  
And it is a *Kind* of *Doctrine* neither proceeding of *Free-*  
*will*, nor invented by the *Reason* or *Wisdom* of *Man*, but  
given from above. Moreover these two *Words*, *Grace*  
and *Peace*, do contain in them the whole *Sum* of *Chri-*  
*stianity*. *Grace* containeth the *Remission* of *Sins*; *Peace*  
a quiet and joyful *Conscience*. But *Peace* of *Conscience*  
can never be had, unless *Sin* be first forgiven. But *Sin* is not forgiven  
for the fulfilling of the *Law*; for no *Man* is able to satisfy the *Law*;  
but the *Law* doth rather shew *Sin*, accuse and terrify the *Conscience*,  
declare the *Wrath* of *God*, and drive to *Desperation*. Much less is *Sin*  
taken away by the *Works* and *Inventions* of *Men*, as wicked *Worship-*  
*pings*, strange *Religions*, *Vows* and *Pilgrimages*. Finally, there is no  
*Work* that can take away *Sin*, but *Sin* is rather increased by *Works*.  
For the *Justiciaries* and *Meritmongers*, the more they labour and sweat  
to bring themselves out of *Sin*, the deeper they are plun-  
ged therein. For there is no *Means* to take away *Sin*  
but *Grace* alone. Therefore *Paul* in all the *Greetings* of  
his *Epistles*, setteth *Grace* and *Peace* against *Sin* and an  
evil *Conscience*. This *Thing* must be diligently mark-

*Grace*,  
*Peace*.

The *Article*  
of *Justifica-*  
*tion* must be  
continually  
taught.

The greeting  
of the *Apo-*  
*stle* strange  
and unheard  
of to the  
*World*.

¶ *Sin* and *Con-*  
*science*, two  
*Fiends* vex-  
ing and tor-  
menting us.

† The *Doc-*  
*trine* of  
*Christians*.

*Grace* and  
*Peace* what  
they bring.

*Sin* is not re-  
leased, but  
by *Grace* a-  
lone.

ed. The Words are easy; but in Temptation it is the hardest Thing that can be, to be certainly perswaded in our Hearts that by *Grace* alone, all other Means either in Heaven or in Earth set apart, we have Remission of Sins and Peace with God.

The World understandeth not this Doctrine, and therefore it neither will nor can abide it, but condemneth it as heretical and wicked. It braggeth of Free-will, of the Light of Reason, of the Soundness of the Powers and Qualities of Nature, and of good Works, as Means whereby it could deserve and attain Grace and Peace, that is to say, Forgiveness of Sins and a quiet Conscience. But

Only by Grace is the Conscience quieted. it is impossible that the Conscience should be quiet and joyful, unless it have Peace thro' Grace, that is to say, thro' the Forgiveness of Sins promised in Christ. Many have carefully laboured by finding out divers and sundry religious Orders and Exercises for this Purpose, to attain Peace and Quietness of Conscience; but by so doing they have plunged themselves in more and greater Miseries; for all such Devices are but Means to increase Doubtfulness and Despair. Therefore there shall be no Rest to my Bones or thine, unless we hear the Word of Grace, and cleave unto it stedfastly and faithfully; then shall our Conscience undoubtedly find Grace and Peace.

The Apostle doth fitly distinguish this Grace and Peace from all other Kinds of Grace and Peace whatsoever. He wisheth to What Peace Paul wisheth to Christians the *Galatians* Grace and Peace, not from the Emperor, or Kings and Princes; for these do commonly persecute the Godly, and rise up against the Lord and Christ his Anointed, *Psal. ii. 2.* nor from the World, (for in the World, saith Christ, ye shall have Trouble) but from God our Father, &c. which is as much to say, as he wisheth unto them a heavenly Peace. So Christ saith, My Peace I leave with you, my Peace I give unto you: Not as the World giveth, give I unto you, John xiv. 27.

Peace of the World. The Peace of the World granteth nothing but the Peace of our Goods and Bodies. So the Grace or Favour of the World giveth us leave to enjoy our Goods, and casteth us not out of our Possessions. But in Affliction and in the Hour of Death, the Grace and Favour of the World cannot help us, they cannot deliver us from Affliction, Despair and Death. But when the Grace and Peace of God are in the Heart, then is Man strong, so that he can neither be cast down with Adversity, nor puffed up with Prosperity, but walketh on plainly and keepeth the high Way. For he taketh Heart and Courage in the Victory of Christ's Death; and the Confidence thereof beginneth to reign in his Conscience over Sin and Death, because thro' him he hath assured Forgiveness of his Sins; which after he hath once obtained, his Conscience is at rest, and by the Word of Grace is comforted. So then a Man being comforted and heartned by the Grace of God, that is, by Forgiveness of Sins and by this Peace of Conscience, is able valiantly to bear and overcome all

Troubles,

Troubles, yea, even Death itself. This *Peace* of God is not given to the World, because the World never longeth after it nor understandeth it, but to them that believe; and this cometh to pass by no other Mean, then by the only *Grace* of God.

*A Rule to be observed, that Men ought to abstain from the curious searching of GOD's Majesty.*

**B**Ut why doth the Apostle add moreover in this Salvation, *And from our Lord Jesus Christ?* Was it not enough to say, *And from God our Father?* Why then doth he couple *Jesus Christ with the Father?* Ye have oftentimes heard of us, how it is a Rule and Principle in the Scriptures diligently to be marked, that we must abstain from the curious searching of God's Majesty, which is intollerable to Man's Body, and much more to his Mind. *No Man* (saith the Lord) *shall see me and live*, Exod. xxxiii. 20. The *Pope*, the *Turks*, the *Jews*, and all such as trust in their own Merits, regard not this Rule, and therefore removing the Mediator Christ out of their Sight, they speak only of God, and before him only they pray, and do all that they do.

As for Example, the *Monk* imagineth thus, These Works which I do please God, God will regard these my Vows, and for them will save me. The *Turk* saith, If I keep the Things that are commanded in the † *Alcoran*, God will accept me, and give me everlasting Life. The *Jew* thinketh thus, If I keep those Things which the Law commandeth, I shall find God merciful unto me, and so shall I be saved. So also a Sort of fond Heads at this Day, bragging of the Spirit of Revelations, of Visions, and such other monstrous Matters I wot not what, do walk in Wonders above their Reaches. These new *Monks* have invented a new Cross and new Works, and they dream that by doing them they please God. To be brief, as many as know nat the Article of Justification, take away Christ the Mercy-seat, and will needs comprehend God in his Majesty by the Judgment of Reason, and pacify him with their own Works.

But true Christian Divinity (as I give you often warning) setteth not God forth unto us in his Majesty, as *Moses* and other Doctrines do; it commandeth us not to search out the Nature of God, but to know his Will set out to us in Christ, whom he would have to take our Flesh upon him, to be born and to die for our Sins, and that this should be preached among all Nations. *For after that, in the Wisdom of God, the World by Wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the Foolishness*

Why this is added, *And from our Lord Jesus Christ.*

The Merit-mongers seeking to justify themselves by their Works; shut out Christ, and will have to do with God alone.

† The *Alcoran* is a Book containing the *Turks* Religion, received from *Mahomet* a false Prophet that was among them.

The Will of God is to be sought in Christ.

*Foolishness*

*Foolishness of Preaching to save them that believe,* 1 Cor. i. 21. Wherefore, when thy Conscience standeth in the Conflict, wrestling against the Law, Sin and Death in the Presence of God, there is nothing more dangerous then to wander with curious Speculations in Heaven, and there to search out God in his incomprehensible Power, Wisdom and Majesty, how he created the World, and how he governeth it. If thou seek thus

to comprehend God, and wouldst pacify him without Christ the Mediator, making thy Works a Means between him and thyself, it cannot be but that thou must fall as *Lucifer* did, and in horrible Despair lose God and all together. What God is in his own Nature. For as God is in his own Nature unmeasurable, incomprehensible and infinite, so is he to Man's Nature intolerable.

Wherefore if thou wouldst be in Safety and out of Peril of Conscience and Salvation, bridle this climbing and presumptuous Spirit, and so seek God as *Paul* teacheth thee, 1 Cor. i. 23, 24. *We* (saith he) *preach Christ crucified unto the Jews a Stumbling-block, and unto the Greeks; Foolishness. But unto them which are called, both Jews and Greeks, Christ, the Power of God, and the Wisdom of God.* Therefore begin thou there where Christ

began, namely, in the Womb of the Virgin, in the Manger, and at his Mother's Breasts, &c. For to this End Where the Will of God is to be sought. he came down, was born, was conversant among Men; suffered, was crucified and died, that by all Means he might set forth himself plainly before our Eyes, and fasten the Eyes of our Hearts upon himself, that he there-

by might keep us from climbing up into Heaven, and from the curious searching of the Divine Majesty.

Whensoever thou hast to do therefore in the Matter of Justification, and disputest with thyself how God is to be found that justifieth and accepteth Sinners, where and in what Sort he is to be sought; then know thou that there is no other God besides this Man Christ Jesus. Embrace him and cleave to him with thy whole Heart, setting aside all curious Speculations of the Divine Majesty: For he that is a Searcher of God's Majesty shall be overwhelmed of his Glory, *Prov.* xxv. 27. I know by Experience what I say. But these vain Spirits which so deal with

God that they exclude the Mediator, do not believe me. Christ the Way, the Truth, and the Life. Christ himself saith, *I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life: No Man cometh unto the Father but by me,* John xiv. 6. Therefore besides this Way Christ, thou shalt find no Way to the Father, but wandering; no Verity, but Hypocrisy and lying; no Life, but eternal Death.

Wherefore mark this well in the Matter of Justification, that when any of us all shall have to wrestle with the Law, Sin, Death and all other Evils, we must look upon no other God, but only this God incarnate and clothed with Man's Nature.

But out of the Matter of Justification, when thou must dispute with *Jews, Turks, Papists, Hereticks, &c.* concerning the Power, Wisdom and Majesty of God, then employ all thy Wit and Industry to that End, and

and be as profound and as subtil a Disputer as thou canst; for then thou art in another Vein. But in the Case of Conscience, of Righteousness and Life (which I wish here diligently to be marked) against the Law, Sin, Death and the Devil, or in the Matter of Satisfaction, of Remission of Sins, of Reconciliation and of everlasting Life, thou must withdraw thy Mind wholly from all Cogitations and searching of the Majesty of God, and look only upon this Man Jesus Christ, who setteth himself forth unto us to be a Mediator, and saith, *Come unto me all ye that labour, and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest*, Matth. xi. 28. Thus doing thou shalt perceive the Love, Goodness and Sweetness of God; thou shalt see his Wisdom, Power and Majesty sweetned and tempered to thy Capacity; yea and thou shalt find in this Mirrour and pleasant Contemplation, all Things according to that Saying of *Paul* to the *Colossians*, *In Christ are hid all the Treasures of Wisdom and Knowledge. For in him dwelleth all the Fulness of the God-head bodily*, Col. ii. 3. — 9. The World is ignorant of this, and therefore it searcheth out the Will of God, setting aside the Promise in Christ, to his great Destruction. *For no Man knoweth the Father, save the Son, and he to whomsoever the Son will reveal him*, Matth. xi. 27.

And this is the Cause why *Paul* is wont so often to couple Jesus Christ with God the Father, even to teach us what true Christian Religion is, which beginneth not at the highest as other Religions do, but at the lowest. It will have us to climb up by *Jacob's* Ladder, *Gen. xxviii. 12.* whereupon God himself leaneth, whose Feet touch the very Earth, hard by the Head of *Jacob*. Wherefore whensoever thou art occupied in the Matter of thy Salvation, setting aside all curious Speculations of God's unsearchable Majesty, all Cogitations of Works, of Traditions, of Philosophy, yea and of God's Law too, run straight to the Manger and embrace this Infant, and the Virgins little Babe in thine Arms, and behold him as he was born, sucking, growing up, conversant among Men, teaching, dying, rising again, ascending up above all the Heavens, and having Power above all Things. By this Means shalt thou be able to shake off all Terrors and Errors, like as the Sun driveth away the Clouds. And this Sight and Contemplation will keep thee in the right Way, that thou mayest follow whither Christ is gone. Therefore *Paul* in wishing *Grace and Peace*, not only from God the Father, but also from Jesus Christ, teacheth, first that we should abstain from the curious searching of the Divine Majesty (for no Man knoweth God, *John viii. 19.*) and to hear Christ, who is in the Bosom of the Father, and uttereth to us his Will, who also is appointed of the Father to be our Teacher, to the End that we should all hear him.

The afflicted Conscience wrestling with the Judgment of God, is raised up only by Faith in Christ.

Christian Divinity, beginneth at Christ lying in the Lap of the Virgin *Mary*.

*Christ is God by Name.*

Christ God.

**T**He other Thing that *Paul* teacheth here, is a Confirmation of our Faith, that Christ is very God. And such like Sentences as this is, concerning the God-head of Christ, are to be gathered together and marked diligently, not only against the *Arrians* and other Hereticks which either have been or shall be hereafter, but also for the Confirmation of our Faith. For The Devil Satan will not fail to impugn in us all the Articles of an Adversary our Faith, ere we die. He is a most deadly Enemy to to Faith. Faith, because he knoweth that *this is the Victory that overcometh the World*, 1 John v. 4. Wherefore it standeth us in hand to labour that our Faith may be certain, and may increase and be strengthened by diligent and continual Exercise of the Word and fervent Prayer, that we may be able to withstand Satan.

The Power  
of the Fa-  
ther and of  
Christ e-  
qual.

Now that Christ is very God, it is manifestly declared in that *Paul* attributeth the same Things equally unto him, which he doth unto the Father, namely, Divine Power, as the giving of Grace, the Forgiveness of Sins, Peace of Conscience, Life, Victory over Sin, Death, the Devil and Hell. This were by no Means lawful for him to do, nay it were Sacrilege this to do, except he were very God according to that Saying, *And my Glory will I not give to another*, Isa. xlii. 8. Again, no Man giveth that to others, which he himself hath not. But seeing Christ giveth Grace, Peace, and the Holy Ghost, delivereth from the Power of the Devil, from Sin, and Death, it is certain that he hath an Infinite and Divine Power equal in all Points to the Power of the Father.

How Christ  
giveth Grace  
and Peace.

Neither doth Christ give Grace and Peace, as the Apostles gave and brought the same unto Men by preaching of the Gospel; but he giveth it as the Author and Creator. The Father createth and giveth Life, Grace, Peace, and all other good Things. The self-same Things, also the Son createth and giveth. Now, to give Grace, Peace, everlasting Life, to forgive Sins, to make righteous, to quicken, to deliver from Death and the Devil, are not the Works of any Creature, but of the Divine Majesty alone; the Angels can neither create nor give these Things. Therefore these Works pertain only to the Glory of the Sovereign Majesty, the Maker of all Things. And seeing *Paul* doth attribute the self-same Power of creating, and giving all these Things unto Christ equally with the Father, it must needs follow that Christ is verily and naturally God.

The Works  
of Christ are  
Divine and  
proper to  
God.

Many such Arguments are in *John*, where it is proved and concluded by the Works which are to be attributed Son, as well as to the Father, that the Divinity of the Father, and of the Son, is all one. Therefore the Gifts which we receive of the self-same Father, God head of the Father, and of the Son.

Father, and which we receive of the Son are all one. For else *Paul* would have spoken otherwise, after this Manner : Grace from God the Father, and Peace from our Lord Jesus Christ. But in knitting them both together, he attributeth them equally, as well to the Son as to the Father. I do therefore so diligently admonish you of this Thing, because it is dangerous least among so many Errors, and in so great Variety and Confusion of Sects, there might step up some *Arrians*, *Eunomians*, *Macedonians*, and such other Hereticks, that might do harm to the Churches with their Subtility.

Indeed the *Arrians* were sharp and subtil Fellows, They granted that Christ hath two Natures, and that he is called very God of very God, howbeit in Name only : Christ (said they) is a most noble and perfect Creature above the Angels, whereby God afterward created Heaven and Earth, and all other Things. So *Mahomet* also speaketh honourably of Christ. But all this is nothing else but goodly Imaginations and Words pleasant and plausible to Man's Reason, whereby the Phantastical Spirits do deceive Men, except they take good heed. But *Paul* speaketh otherwise of Christ. Ye (saith he) are rooted and established in this Belief, namely, That Christ is not only a perfect Creature, but very God, who doth the self-same Things that God the Father doth. He hath the Divine Works, not of a Creature, but of the Creator, because he giveth Grace and Peace : And to give them, is to condemn Sin, to vanquish Death, and to tread the Devil under Foot. These Things no Angel can give ; but seeing they are attributed unto Christ, it must needs follow that he is very God by Nature.

Verse 4. *Who gave himself for our Sins.*

*Paul* in a Manner in very Word handleth the Argument of this Epistle. He hath nothing in his Mouth but Christ, and therefore in every Word there is a Fervency of Spirit and Life. And mark how well and to the Purpose he speaketh. He saith not, which hath received our Works at our Hands, nor, which hath received the Sacrifices of *Moses* Law, Worshippings, Religions, Masses, Vows, and Pilgrimages ; but hath given. What? Not Gold, nor Silver, nor Beasts, nor paschal Lambs, nor an Angel, but himself. For what? Not for a Crown, not for a Kingdom, not for our Honours, or Righteousness, but for our Sins. These Words are very Thunder-claps from Heaven against all Kinds of Righteousness : Like as is also this Sentence of *John*, Behold the Lamb of God which taketh away the Sin of the World, *John* i. 29. Therefore we must with diligent Attention mark every Word of *Paul*, and not slenderly consider them or lightly pass them over, for they are full of Consolation, and confirm fearful Consciences exceedingly.

But how may we obtain Remission of our Sins? *Paul* answereth, that the Man which is called Jesus Christ the Son of God hath given himself for them. These are excellent and most comfortable Words, and are

Promises of the old Law, that our Sins are taken away by no other Mean, then by the Son of God delivered unto Death. With such Gun-shot and such Artillery must the Papacy be destroyed, and all the Religions of the Heathen, all Works, all Merits, and superstitious Ceremonies. For if our Sins may be taken away by our own Works, Merits and Satisfaction, What needed the Son of God to be given for them? But seeing he was given for them, it followeth, that we cannot put them away by our own Works.

Again, by this Sentence it is declared, that our Sins are so great, so infinite and invincible, that it is impossible for the whole World to satisfy for one of them: And surely the Greatness of the Ransom (namely, Christ the Son of God, who gave himself for our Sins) declareth sufficiently, that we can neither satisfy for Sin, nor have Dominion over it. The Force and Power of Sin is set forth and amplified exceedingly

by these Words, *Who gave himself for our Sins*. Therefore here is to be marked the infinite Greatness of the Price bestowed for it, and then will it appear evidently, that the Power of it is so great, that by no Means it could be put away, but that the Son of God must needs be given for it. He that considereth these Things well, understandeth that this one Word *Sin*, comprehendeth God's everlasting Wrath, and the whole Kingdom of Satan, and that it is a Thing more horrible than can be expressed; which ought to move us and make us afraid indeed. But we are careless, yea we make Light of Sin, and a Matter of nothing; which altho' it bring with it the Sting and Remorse of Conscience, yet notwithstanding we think it not to be of such Weight and Force, but that by some little Work or Merit we may put it away.

This Sentence therefore witnesseth, that all Men are Servants and Bond-slaves to Sin, and (as *Paul* saith in another Place) Sin a mighty Tyrant, holding all Men in Captivity and Thralldom. are sold under Sin, *Rom. vii. 14*. And again, that Sin is a most cruel and mighty Tyrant over all Men; which cannot be vanquished by the Power of any Creatures, whether they be Angels or Men, but by the Sovereign and Infinite Power of Jesus Christ, who hath given himself for the same.

Furthermore this Sentence setteth out to the Consciences of all Men which are terrified with the Greatness of their Sins, a singular Comfort. For albeit Sin be never so invincible a Tyrant; yet notwithstanding, soasmuch as Christ hath overcome it thro' his Death, it cannot hurt them that believe in him. Moreover, if we arm ourselves with this Belief, and cleave with all our Hearts unto this Man Jesus Christ, then is there a Light opened and a sound Judgment given unto us; so as we may most certainly and freely judge of all Kinds of Life. For when we hear that Sin is such an invincible Tyrant, thus incontinent by a necessary Consequence we infer: Then what do the *Papists, Monks, Nuns, Priests, Mahometists, Anabaptists*, and all such as trust in their Works,

The Judgment of the Godly.

which

which will abolish and overcome Sin by their own Traditions, Works preparative, Satisfactions, &c. Here forthwith we judge all those Sects to be wicked and pernicious; whereby the Glory of God and of Christ is not only defaced, but also utterly taken away, and our own advanced and established.

But weigh diligently every Word of *Paul*, and specially mark well this Pronoun, *Our*. For the Effect altogether consisteth in the well applying of the Pronouns, which we find very often in the Scriptures, wherein also there is ever some Vehemency and Power. Thou wilt easily say and believe that Christ the Son of God was given for the Sins of *Peter*, of *Paul*, and of other Saints, whom we account to have been worthy of this Grace. But it is a very hard Thing that thou which judgest thyself unworthy of this Grace, shouldst from thy Heart say and believe, that Christ was given for thine invincible, infinite and horrible Sins. Therefore generally and without the Pronoun, it is an easy Matter to magnify and amplify the Benefit of Christ, namely, That Christ was given for Sins, but for other Mens Sins which are worthy. But when it cometh to the putting to of this Pronoun *Our*, there our weak Nature and Reason starteth back, and dare not come near unto God, nor promise to herself that so great a Treasure should be truly given unto her, and therefore she will not have to do with God, except first she be pure and without Sin. Wherefore altho' she read or hear this Sentence, *Who gave himself for our Sins*, or such like, yet doth she not apply this Pronoun (*Our*) unto herself, but unto others which are worthy and holy, and as for herself, she will tarry till she be made worthy by her own Works.

This then is nothing else, but that Man's Reason fain would that Sin were of no greater Force and Power, then she herself dreameth it to be. Hereof it cometh that the Hypocrites being ignorant of Christ, altho' they feel the Remorse of Sin, do think notwithstanding that they shall be able easily to put it away by their good Works and Merits, and secretly in their Hearts they wish that these Words, *Who gave himself for our Sins*, were but as Words spoken in Humility, and would have their Sins not to be true, and very Sins indeed, but light and small Matters. To be short; Man's Reason would fain bring and present unto God a feigned and a counterfeit Sinner, which is nothing afraid, nor hath any feeling of Sin. It would bring him that is whole, and not him that hath need of a Physician, and when it feeleth no Sin, then would it believe that Christ was given for our Sins.

The whole World is thus affected, and especially they that would be counted more holy and religious than others, as *Monks*, and all *Iusticiaries*. These confess with their Mouth that they are Sinners and they confess also that they

There is a great Vehemency always to be marked in Pronouns.

The Weakness of Faith in us.

Reason doth extenuate and lessen Sin.

The Hypocrites would that these Words of *Paul* were rather spoken to shew his Humility then the Greatness of our Sins, for that they cannot hear.

The Picture of the *Justiciaries* and such as seek Righteousness by Works.

commit Sins daily, howbeit not so great and many, but that they are able to put them away by their own Works: Yea, and besides all this, they will bring their Righteousness and Deserts to Christ's Judgment-Seat, and demand the Recompence of eternal Life for them at the Judges Hand. In the mean while notwithstanding (as they pretend great Humility) because they will not vaunt themselves to be utterly void of Sin, they setn certain Sins,

that for the Forgiveness thereof, they may with great Devotion pray with the *Publican*, *God be merciful to me a Sinner*, Luke xviii. 13. Unto them these Words *St. Paul*, for our Sins, seem to be but light and trifling. Therefore they neither understand them, nor in Temptation when they feel Sin indeed, can they take any Comfort of them, but are compelled flatly to despair.

This is then the chief Knowledge and true Wisdom of The chief Christians, to count these Words of *Paul*, that Christ Wisdom of was delivered to Death, not for our Righteousness or Christians. Holiness, but for our Sins (which are very Sins indeed great, many, yea infinite and invincible) to be most true, effectual and of great Importance. Therefore think them not to be small, and such as may be done away by thine own Works: Neither yet despair thou for the Greatness of them, if thou feel thyself oppressed therewith, either in Life or Death: But learn here of *Paul* to believe that Christ was given, not for feigned or counterfeited Sins, nor yet for small Sins, but for great and huge Sins; not for one or two, but for all, not for vanquished Sins (for no Man, no nor Angel is able to overcome the least Sin that is) but for invincible Sins. And except thou be found in the Number of those that say, *Our Sins*, that is, which have this Doctrine of Faith, and teach, hear, learn, love and believe the same, there is no Salvation for thee.

Labour therefore diligently, that not only out of the Time of Tentation, but also in the Danger and Conflict of Death, when thy Conscience is thoroughly afraid, with the Remembrance of thy Sins past, and the Devil assaulteth thee with great Violence, going about to overwhelm thee with Heaps, Floods, and whole Seas of Sins, to terrify thee, to draw thee from Christ, and to drive thee to Despair: That then I say, thou mayst be able to say with sure Confidence; Christ the Son of God was given, not for the Righteous and Holy, but for the Unrighteous and Sinners. If I were righteous and had no Sin, I should have no Need of Christ to be my Reconciler. Why then, O thou peevish holy Satan, Wilt thou make me to be holy, and to seek Righteousness in myself, when in very deed I have nothing in me but Sins, and most grievous Sins? Not feigned or trifling Sins, but such as are against the first Table; *To wit*, great Infidelity, Doubting, Despair, Contempt of God, Hatred, Ignorance, and Blaspheming of God, Unthankfulness, abusing of God's Name, neglecting, loathing, and despising the Word of God, and such like: And moreover, these carnal Sins against the second Table;

Table; as not to yield Honour to my Parents, not to obey the Magistrates, to covet another Man's Goods, his Wife, and such like: Albeit that these be light Faults in respect of those former Sins. And admit that I have not committed Murder, Whoredom, Theft, and such other Sins against the second Table, in Fact; yet I have committed them in Heart, and therefore I am a Transgressor of all God's Commandments, and the Multitude of my Sins is so great that they cannot be numbred; for I have sinned above the Number of the Sands of the Sea.

Besides this, Satan is such a cunning Jugler, that he can make of my Righteousness and good Works, great Sins. For so much then as my Sins are so weighty, so infinite, so horrible and invincible, and that my Righteousness doth nothing further me, but rather hinder me before God; therefore Christ the Son of God was given to Death for them, to put them away, and so save all Men which believe. Herein therefore consisteth the Effect of eternal Salvation, namely, in taking these Words to be effectual, true and of great Importance. I say not this for nought, for I have oftentimes proved by Experience, and I daily find what an hard Matter it is to believe (especially in the Conflict of Conscience) that Christ was given, not for the holy, righteous, worthy, and such as were his Friends, but for wicked Sinners, for the unworthy, and for his Enemies, which have deserved God's Wrath and everlasting Death.

Let us therefore arm ourselves with these and such like Sentences of the Holy Scripture, that we may be able to answer the Devil (accusing us and saying, Thou art a Sinner, and therefore thou art damned) in this Sort, because thou sayest I am a Sinner, therefore will I be righteous and saved. Nay (saith the Devil) thou shalt be damned. No (say I) for I fly unto Christ, *who hath given himself for my Sins.* Therefore Satan thou shalt not prevail against me in that thou goest about to terrify me in setting forth the Greatness of my Sins, and so to bring me into Heaviness, Distrust, Despair, Hatred, Contempt and blaspheming of God. Yea rather, in that thou sayest, I am a Sinner, thou givest me Armour and Weapon against thyself, that with thine own Sword I may cut thy Throat, and tread thee under my Feet, for Christ died for Sinners. Moreover thou thyself preachest unto me the Glory of God: For thou puttest me in Mind of God's fatherly Love towards me wretched and damped Sinner; *For God so loved the World, that he gave his only begotten Son; that whosoever believeth in him, should not perish, but have everlasting Life,* John iii. 16. Also as often as thou objectest that I am a Sinner, so often thou callest me to Remembrance of the Benefit of Christ my Redeemer, upon whose Shoulders, and not upon mine, ly all my Sins; *For the Lord hath laid on him the iniquity of us all.* — *For the Transgression of my People was he stricken,* Isa. liii. 6, — 8. Wherefore when thou sayest I am a Sinner, thou dost not terrify me, but comfort me above Measure.

Satan is wont to change Righteousness into Sins.

How we must answer the Devil disputing with us.

Who so knoweth this one Point of cunning well, shall easily avoid all the Engines and Snares of the Devil, who by putting Man in Mind of his Sins, driveth him to Despair, and destroyeth him, unless he withstand him with his cunning and with this heavenly Wisdom, whereby only Sin, Death and the Devil are overcome. But the Man that putteth not away the Remembrance of his Sin, but keepeth it still, and tormenteth himself with his own Cogitations, thinking either to help himself by his own Strength and Policy, or to tarry the Time till his Conscience may be quieted, falleth into Satan's Snares and miserably afflicteth himself, and at length is overcome with the Continuance of the Temptation; for the Devil will never cease to accuse his Conscience.

The true Definition of Christ.

Against this Temptation we must use these Words of *Paul*, in the which he giveth a very good and a true Definition of Christ in this Manner: Christ is the Son of God and of the Virgin, delivered and put to Death for our Sins. Here if the Devil alledge any other Definition of Christ, say thou, The Definition and the Thing defined are false; therefore I will not receive this Definition. I speak not this without Cause; for I know what moveth me to be so earnest that we should learn to define Christ out of the Words of *Paul*. For indeed Christ is no cruel Exactor, but a Forgiver of the Sins of the whole World. Wherefore if thou be a Sinner (as indeed we are all) set not Christ down upon the Rainbow as a Judge (for so shalt thou be terrified and despair of his Mercy) but take hold of his true Definition, namely, That Christ the Son of God, and of the Virgin is a Person, not that terrifieth, not that afflicteth, not that condemneth us of Sin, not that demandeth an Account of us for our Lives evil passed; but hath given himself for our Sins, and with one Oblation hath put away the Sins of the whole World, hath fastned them upon the Cross, and put them clean out by himself, *Col. ii. 14.*

Learn this Definition diligently, and especially so exercise this Pronoun (*our*) that this one Syllable being believed, may swallow up all thy Sins; that is to say, that thou mayest know assuredly that Christ hath taken away the Sins, not of certain Men only, but also of thee, yea, and of the whole World. Then let not thy Sins be Sins only, but even thy own Sins indeed; that is, *to wit*, believe thou that Christ was not only given for other Mens Sins, but also for thine. Hold this fast, and suffer not thyself by any Means to be drawn away from this most sweet Definition of Christ, which rejoiceth even the very Angels in Heaven; that is to say, that Christ according to the proper and true Definition, is no *Moses*, no

Law giver, no Tyrant, but a Mediator for Sins, a free Giver of Grace, Righteousness and Life; who gave himself, not for our Merits, Holiness, Righteousness and godly Life, but for our Sins. Indeed Christ doth interpret the Law, but that is not his proper and principal Office.

These Things, as touching the Words, we know well enough and can talk of them; but in Practice and in the Conflict, when the Devil goeth

goeth about to deface Christ, and to pluck the Word of Grace out of our Hearts, we find that we do not yet know them well, and as we should do. He that at that Time could define Christ truly, and could magnify him and behold him as his most sweet Saviour and High Priest, and not as a strait Judge, this Man had overcome all Evils, and were already in the Kingdom of Heaven. But this to do in the Conflict, is of all Things the most hardest. I speak this by Experience; for I know the Devil's Subtilties, who at that Time not only goeth about to fear us with the Terror of the Law, yea and also of a little Mote maketh many Beams, that is to say, of that which is no Sin he maketh a very Hell (for he is marvelous crafty both in aggravating Sin, and in puffing up the Conscience even in good Works), but also is wont to fear us with the very Person of the Mediator, into the which he transformeth himself, and laying before us some Place of the Scripture or some Saying of Christ, suddenly he stricketh our Hearts and sheweth himself unto us in such Sort, as if he were Christ indeed, leaving us sticking so fast in that Cogitation, that our Conscience would swear it were the same Christ whose Saying he alledged. Moreover, such is the Subtilty of the Encmy, that he will not set before us Christ entirely and wholly, but a Piece of Christ only, namely, That he is the Son of God, and Man born of the Virgin; and by and by patcheth thereto some other Thing, that is to say, some Saying of Christ wherewith he terrifieth the impenitent Sinners, such as that is in *Luke xiii. 5. Except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish*; and so corrupting the true Definition of Christ with his Poison, he bringeth to pass that albeit we believe him to be Christ the true Mediator, yet in very deed our troubled Conscience feeleth and judgeth him to be a Tyrant and a Judge. Thus we being deceived by Satan, do easily lose that sweet Sight of our High Priest and Saviour Christ; which being once lost, we shun him no less then the Devil himself.

WhatSnares  
Satan layeth  
for us.

And this is the Cause why I do so earnestly call upon you, to learn the true and proper Definition of Christ out of these Words of *Paul, Who gave himself for our Sins*. If he gave himself to Death for our Sins, then undoubtedly he is no Tyrant or Judge which will condemn us for our Sins, he is no Caster down of the Afflicted, but a Raisher up of those that are fallen, a merciful Reliever and Comforter of the heavy and broken hearted; else should *Paul* lie in saying, *Who gave himself for our Sins*. If I define Christ thus, I define him rightly, and take hold of the true Christ, and possess him indeed. And here I let pass all curious Speculations touching the Divine Majesty, and I stay myself in the Humanity of Christ, and so I learn truly to know the Will of God. Here is then no Fear, but altogether Sweetness, Joy, Peace of Conscience and such like. And herewithal there is a Light opened, which sheweth me the true Knowledge of God, of myself, of all Creatures, and all the Iniquity of the Devil's Kingdom. We teach no new Thing, but we repeat and establish old Things, which

This Sentence is diligently to be urged,  
*Who gave himself for us.*

the Apostles and all godly Teachers have taught before us. And would to God we could so teach and establish them, that we might not only have them in our Mouth, but also well grounded in the Bottom of our Heart, and especially that we might be able to use them in the Agony and Conflict of Death.

*Verse 4. That he might deliver us from this present evil World.*

Why *Paul* calleth the World present and evil.

The World the Kingdom of the Devil.

of the World are we.

Sins are not taken away by Works.

That the Ungodly with all their Gifts do serve the Devil.

his Kingdom.

In these Words also *Paul* handleth yet more effectually the Argument of this Epistle. He calleth this whole World, which hath been, is, and shall be, *the present World*, to put a Difference between this and the everlasting World to come. Moreover he calleth it evil, because that whatsoever is in this World, is subject to the Malice of the Devil reigning over the whole World. For this Cause the World is the Kingdom of the Devil. For there is in it nothing but Ignorance, Contempt, Blasphemy, Hatred of God, and Disobediencie against all the Words and Works of God. In and under this Kingdom

Here again you see that no Man is able by his own Works, or his own Power to put away Sin, because this present World is evil, and as *St. John* saith, *is set upon Mischief*. As many therefore, as are in the World, are the Bond-slaves of the Devil, constrained to serve him,

and do all Things at his Pleasure. What availed it then to set up so many Orders of Religion for the abolishing of Sin? To devise so many great and most painful Works, as to wear Shirts of Hair, to beat the Body with Whips till the Blood followed, to go on Pilgrimages to *St. James* in Harness, and such other like? Be it so that thou dost all these Things, yet notwithstanding this is true, that thou art in this present evil World, and not in the Kingdom of Christ. And if

thou be not in the Kingdom of Christ, it is certain that thou belongest to the Kingdom of Satan, which is this evil World. Therefore all the Gifts either of the Body or of the Mind which thou enjoyest, as Wisdom, Righteousness, Holiness, Eloquence, Power, Beauty and Riches, are but the slavish Instruments of the Devil, and with all these thou art compelled to serve him and to advance

*First*, With thy Wisdom thou darknest the Wisdom and Knowledge of Christ, and by thy wicked Doctrine leadeest Men out of the Way, that they cannot come to the Grace and Knowledge of Christ. Thou setteest out and praiseest thine own Righteousness and Holiness; but the

the Righteousness of Christ by which only we are justified and quickned, thou dost hate and condemn as wicked and devilish. To be brief, by thy Power thou destroyest the Kingdom of Christ, and abusest the same to root out the Gospel, to persecute and kill the Ministers of Christ, and so many as hear them. Wherefore if thou be without Christ, this thy Wisdom is double Foolishness, thy Righteousness double Sin and Impiety, because it knoweth not the Wisdom and Righteousness of Christ: Moreover it darkneth, hindreth, blasphemeth and persecuteth the same: Therefore *Paul* doth rightly call it the evil or wicked World: For when it is at the best, then is it worst. In the religious wise and learned Men the World is at the best, and yet in very deed in them it is double Evil. I overpass those gross Vices which are against the second Table, as Disobedience to Parents, to Magistrates, Adulteries, Whoredoms, Covetousness, Thefts, Murders, and Maliciousness, wherein the World is altogether drowned; which notwithstanding are light Faults if ye compare them with the Wisdom and Righteousness of the Wicked, whereby they fight against the first Table. This white Devil which forceth Men to commit spiritual Sins, that they may sell them for Righteousness, is far more dangerous than the black Devil, which only enforceth them to commit fleshly Sins, which the World acknowledgeth to be Sins.

By these Words then, *That he might deliver us, &c.* *Paul* sheweth what is the Argument of this Epistle, to wit, that we have Need of Grace and of Christ, and that no other Creature, neither Man nor Angel, can deliver Man out of this present evil World. For these Works are only belonging to the Divine Majesty, and are not in the Power of any, either Man or Angel, that Christ hath put away Sin, and hath delivered us from the Tyranny and Kingdom of the Devil, that is to say, from this wicked World, which is an obedient Servant and a willing Follower of the Devil his God. Whatsoever that Murderer and Father of Lies either doth or speaketh, that the World, as his most loyal and obedient Son, diligently followeth and performeth. And therefore it is full of the Ignorance of God, of Hatred, Lying, Errors, Blasphemy, and of the Contempt of God: Moreover of gross Sins, as Murders, Adulteries, Fornications, Thefts, Robberies, and such like, because he followeth his Father the Devil, who is a Liar, and a Murderer. And the more wise, righteous and holy that Men are without Christ, so much the more hurt they do to the Gospel. So we also that were religious Men, were double wicked in the Papacy, before God did lighten us with the Knowledge of his Gospel,

They that know not Christ, the more wise and righteous they are, the more do they hate and persecute the Gospel.

The white Devil.  
Spiritual Whoredom the most abominable.

Christ only can deliver us out of this present World.

The World obeyeth his Prince the Devil.

What Sins are in the World.

spel, and yet notwithstanding under the Colour of true Piety and Holinefs.

Let these Words then of *Paul* remain as they are indeed, true and effectual, not coloured or counterseit, namely, *That this present World is evil*. Let it nothing at all move thee, that in a great Number of Men there be many excellent Virtues, and that there is so great a Shew of Holinefs in Hypocrites. But mark thou rather what *Paul* saith: Out of whose Words thou mayst boldly and freely pronounce this Sentence against the World, that the World with all his Wisdom, Power and Righteousness, is the Kingdom of the Devil, out of the which God alone is able to deliver us by his only begotten Son.

Therefore let us praise God the Father and give him hearty Thanks for this his unmeasurable Mercy, that hath delivered us out of the Kingdom of the Devil, ( in the which we were holden Captives ) by his own Son, when it was impossible to be done by our own Strength. And let us acknowledge together with *Paul*, that all our Works and Righteousness ( with all which we could not make the Devil to stoop one Hair-breadth ) are but loss and dung. *Phil. iii. 8*. Also let us cast under our Feet, and utterly abhor all the Power of Free-will, all Pharisaiical Wisdom and Righteousness, all religious Orders, all Masses, Ceremonies, Vows, Fasting, and such like, as a most filthy defiled Cloath, *Isa. lxiv. 6*. and as the most dangerous Poison of the Devil. Contrariwise let us extol and magnify the Glory of Christ, who hath delivered us by his Death, not from this World only, but from this evil World.

The Kingdom of the World.

*Paul* then by this Word *Evil*, sheweth that the Kingdom of the World, or the Devil's Kingdom is the Kingdom of Iniquity, Ignorance, Error, Sin, Death, Blasphemy, Desperation, and everlasting Damnation. On the other Side, the Kingdom of Christ is the Kingdom of Equity, Light, Grace, Remission of Sins, Peace, Consolation, Saving-health, and everlasting Life, into the which we are translated by our Lord Jesus Christ, to whom be Glory World without End. So be it.

The Kingdom of Christ.

**Verse 4.** *According to the Will of God, and our Father.*

Here *Paul* so placeth and ordereth every Word, that there is not one of them but it fighteth against those false Apostles for the Article of Justification. Christ (saith he) hath delivered us from this wicked Kingdom of the Devil and the World. And this hath he done according to the Will, good Pleasure and Commandment of the Father. Wherefore we be not delivered by our own Will or Cunning, nor by our own Wisdom or Policy, but for that God hath taken Mercy upon us, and hath loved

loved us: Like as it is written also in another Place, *Herein is Love; not that we loved God, but that he loved us, and sent his Son to be the Propitiation for our Sins*, 1 John iv. 10. That we then are delivered from this present evil World, it is of mere Grace, and no Desert of ours. *Paul* is so plentiful and so vehement in amplifying and extolling the Grace of God, that he sharpeneth and directeth every Word against the false Apostles.

There is also another Cause why *Paul* here maketh mention of the Father's Will, which also in many Places of Saint *John's* Gospel is declared, where Christ commending his Office, calleth us back to his Fathers Will, that in his Words and Works we should not so much look upon him, as upon the Father. For Christ came into this World and took Man's Nature upon him, that he might be made a Sacrifice for the Sins of the whole World, and so reconcile us to God the Father, that he alone might declare unto us how that this was done thro' the good Pleasure of his Father, that we by fastning our Eyes upon Christ, might be drawn and carried straight unto the Father.

It is a great Consolation to know that Christ is given for us by the Will of his Father.

For we must not think (as before we have warned you) that by the curious searching of the Majesty of God, any Thing concerning God can be known to our Salvation, but by taking hold of Christ, who according to the Will of the Father hath given himself to Death for our Sins. When thou shalt acknowledge this to be the Will of God thro' Christ, then Wrath ceaseth, Fear and Trembling vanisheth away, neither doth God appear any other then merciful, who by his determinate Counsel would that his Son should die for us, that we might live thro' him. This Knowledge maketh the Heart chearful, so that it stedfastly believeth that God is not angry, but that he so loveth us poor and wretched Sinners, that he gave his only begotten Son for us. It is not for nought therefore, that *Paul* doth so often repeat and beat into our Minds, that Christ was given for our Sins, and that by the Goodwill of the Father. On the contrary Part, the curious searching of the Majesty of God and his dreadful Judgments, namely, how he destroyed the whole World with the Flood, how he destroyed *Sodom*, and such other Things, are very dangerous; for they bring Men to Desperation, and cast them down Head-long into utter Destruction, as I have shewed before.

### Verse 4. Of God and our Father.

This Word OUR, must be referred to both, that the meaning may be this, of our God and of our Father. Then is Christ's Father and our Father all one. So in *John* xx. 17. Christ saith to *Mary Magdalene*, Go to my Brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father, and your Father, to my God, and your God. Therefore God is our Father, and our God, but thro' Christ. And

God is a common Father both to Christ and to us.

this is an Apostolick Manner of Speech, and even *Paul's* own Phrase, who indeed speaketh not with such picked and gay Words, but yet very fit and to the Purpose, and full of burning Zeal.

*Verse 5. To whom be Glory for ever and ever, Amen.*

The *Hebrews* are wont in their Writings to intermingle Praise and giving of Thanks. This Custom the *Hebrews* and Apostles themselves do observe. Which Thing may very often be seen in *Paul*. For the Name of the Lord ought to be had in great Reverence, and never to be named without Praise and Thanksgiving. And thus to do is a certain Kind of Worship and Service of God. So in worldly Matters, when we mention the Names of Kings, or Princes, we are wont to do it with some comely Gesture, Reverence and Bowing of the Knee; much more ought we, when we speak of God, to bow the Knee of our Heart, and to name the Name of God with Thankfulness and great Reverence.

*Verse 6. I marvel,*

Ye see here how *Paul* handleth the *Galatians*, which were fallen away and seduced by the false Apostles. He doth not at the first set upon them with vehement and rigorous Words, but after a very fatherly Sort, not only patiently bearing their Fall, but also in a Manner excusing the same. Furthermore he sheweth towards them a motherly Affection, and speaketh them very fair, and yet in such Sort, that he reproveth them notwithstanding; howbeit with very fit Words and wisely framed to the Purpose. Contrariwise he is very hot and full of Indignation against those false Apostles their Seducers upon whom he layeth the whole Fault: And therefore forthwith, even in the Entrance of his Epistle, he bursteth out into plain Thunderings and Lightnings against them. *If any Man (saith he) preach any other Gospel unto you, then that ye have received, let him be accursed,* Gal. i. 9. And afterwards in the v. Chapter and 10. Verse he threatneth Damnation unto them, *But he that troubleth you, shall bear his Judgment, whosoever he be.* Moreover he curseth them with horrible Words, saying, *I would they were even cut off which trouble you,* Gal. v. 12. These are dreadful Thunder-claps against the Righteousness of the Flesh or the Law.

He might have handled the *Galatians* more uncourteously, and have envied against them more roughly after this Manner; Out upon this Backsliding, I am ashamed of you, your Unthankfulness grieveth me, I am angry with you; or else thus tragically have cried out against them, O ungracious World! O wicked Dealings! &c. But for as much as his Purpose is to raise up them that were fallen, and with a fatherly Care to call them back again from their Error to the Purity of the Gospel,

spel, he leaveth those rough and sharp Words, especially in the first Entrance, and most gently and mildly he speaketh unto them. For seeing he went about to heal them that were wounded, it was not meet that he should now further vex their green Wound by laying to it a sharp and a fretting Plaister, and so rather hurt the wounded than heal them. Therefore of all the sweetest and mildest Words, he could not have chosen any one more fit then this, *I marvel*, whereby he signifieth both that it grieved him, and also displeased him that they had fallen away from him.

The Apostle useth gentle Speech towards those that are fallen, that thro' his Mildness, he may revoke them and win them again.

And here *Paul* is mindful of his own Rule, which he giveth hereafter in the vi. Chapter and 1 Verse, where he saith, *Brethren, if a Man be overtaken in a Fault, ye which are spiritual, restore such an one in the Spirit of Meekness, considering thyself, lest thou also be tempted.* This Example must we also follow, that we may shew ourselves to bear like Affection towards such as are misled, as Parents bear towards their Children, that they may perceive our fatherly and motherly Affection towards them, and may see that we seek not their Destruction but their Welfare. But as for the Devil and his Ministers, the Authors of false Doctrine and Sects, against them we ought by the Example of the Apostle to be impatient, proud, sharp, and bitter, detesting and condemning their false Juglings and Deceits with as much Rigour and Severity as may be. So Parents when their Child is hurt with the Biting of a Dog, are wont to pursue the Dog only, but the weeping Child they bemoane, and speak fair unto it, comforting it with most sweet Words.

How the Weak and such as are fallen, ought to be handled.

The Spirit therefore that is in *Paul*, is wonderful cunning in handling the afflicted Consciences of such as are fallen. Contrariwise the Pope (because he is led with a wicked Spirit) breaketh out violently like a Tyrant, and rappeth out his Thunder-claps and Cursings against the miserable and terrified in Conscience: Which Thing may be seen in his Bulls, and especially in that Bull touching the Lord's Supper. The Bishops also do their Duty never a whit better. They teach not the Gospel, they are not careful for the saving of Men's Souls, but only they seek Lordship and Sovereignty over them, and therefore their Speakings and Doings are altogether to maintain and support the same. In like Manner are all the vain glorious Doctors and Teachers affected.

The Study of Bishops to maintain their Lordship and Sovereignty.

### Verse 6. *That so soon*

Ye see how *Paul* complaineth, that to fall in Faith, is an easy Matter. In respect whereof he warneth the Faithful in another Place, *Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth, take heed lest he fall.* 1 Cor. x. 12. We also do daily prove by Experience, how hardly the Mind conceiveth and retaineth a Sound and stedfast Faith: Also with what great Difficulty

Difficulty a perfect People is gotten to the Lord. A Man may labour half a score Years ere he shall get some little Church to be rightly and religiously ordered, and when it is so ordered, there creepeth in some Mad-brain, yea and a very unlearned Ideot, which can do nothing<sup>e</sup> else but speak slanderously and spitefully against sincere Preachers of the Word, and he in one Moment overthroweth all, Whom would not this wicked and outrageous Dealing move ?

We by the Grace of God have gotten here at *Wittenberg* the Form of a Christian Church. The Word among us is purely taught, the Sacraments are rightly used, Exhortations and Prayers are made also for all Estates; and to be brief, all Things go forward prosperously. This most happy Course of the Gospel some mad Head would soon stop, and

That which  
in long Time  
of godly  
Preachers is  
builded up,  
of one wick-  
ed Teacher  
is quickly  
destroyed.

in one Moment would overturn all that we in many Years with great Labour have builded: Even so it befel to *Paul* the elect Vessel of Christ. He had won the Churches of *Galatia* with great Care and Travail, which the false Apostles in a short Time after his Departure overthrew, as this and diverse others of his Epistles do witness. So great is the Weakness and Wretchedness of this present Life, and we so walk in the midst of Satan's Snares, that one fantastical Head may destroy and utterly overthrow in a short Space, all that which many true Ministers, labouring Night and Day, have builded

up many Years before. This we learn at this Day by Experience to our great Grief, and yet we cannot remedy this Enormity.

Seeing then that the Church is so soft and so tender a Thing, and is so soon overthrown, Men must watch carefully against these fantastical Spirits; who when they have heard two Sermons, or have read a few Leaves in the Holy Scriptures, by and by they make themselves Masters and Controllers of all Learners and Teachers, contrary to the Authority of all Men. Many such also thou mayest find at this Day among handy crafts Men, bold

and malapert Fellows, who because they have been tried by no Tensions, did never learn to fear God, nor had any Taste or Feeling of Grace. These for that they are void of the Holy Ghost, teach what liketh themselves best, and such Things as are plausible and pleasant to the common People. Then the unskilful Multitude, longing to hear News, do by and by join themselves unto them; yea and many also which think themselves well seen in the Doctrine of Faith, and after a Sort have been tried with Temptations, are seduced by them.

Since that *Paul* therefore by his own Experience may teach us, that Congregations which are won by great Labour, are easily and soon overthrown, we ought with singular Care to watch against the Devil ranging every where; lest he come while we sleep, and sow Tares among the Wheat; for tho' the Shepherds be never so watchful and diligent, yet is the Christian Flock in Danger of Satan.

For

For Paul (as I said) with singular Study and Diligence had planted Churches in *Galatia*, and yet he had scarcely set his Foot (as they say) out of the Door, but by and by the false Apostles overthrew some, whose Fall afterward was the Cause of great Ruins in the Churches of *Galatia*. This so sudden and so great a Loss, no doubt was more bitter unto the Apostle then Death itself. Wherefore let us watch diligently, *first*, every one for himself, *secondly*, all Teachers, not only for themselves, but also for the whole Church, that we enter not into Tentation.

Verse 6. *Ye are removed away*

Here once again he useth not a sharp, but a most gentle Word, He saith not, *I marvel* that ye so suddenly fall away, that ye are so disobedient, light, inconstant, unthankful, but that ye are so soon removed: As if he should say, Ye are altogether Patients or Sufferers; for ye have done no Harm, but ye have suffered and received Harm. To the Intent therefore that he might call back again those Backsliders, he rather accuseth those that did remove, then those that were removed, and yet very modestly he blameth them also, when he complaineth that they were removed: As if he would say, Albeit I embrace you with a fatherly Affection, and know that ye are deceived, not by your own Default, but by the Default of the false Apostles; yet notwithstanding I would have wished, that ye had been grown up a little more in the Strength of sound Doctrine. Ye took not hold enough upon the Word, ye rooted not yourselves deep enough in it, and that is the Cause that with so light a Blast of Wind, ye are carried and removed. *Jerome* thinketh that *Paul* meant to interpret this Word [*Galatians*] by alluding to the *Hebrew* Word *Galath*, which is as much to say, as fallen or carried away: As though he would say, Ye are right *Galatians* both in Name and in Deed, that is to say, fallen or removed away.

Some think that the *Germanes* are descended of the *Galatians*: Neither is this Divination perhaps untrue. For the *Germanes* are not much unlike to them in Nature. And I myself also am constrained to wish to my Countrymen more Stedfastness and Constancy: For in all Things that we do, at the first brunt we be very hot, but when the Heat of our Affections is allayed, anon we become more slack, and look with what Rashness we begin Things, with the same we give them over and utterly reject them.

At the first when the Light of the Gospel, after so great Darkness of Mens Traditions began to appear, many were zealously bent to Godliness; they heard Sermons greedily, and had the Ministers of God's Word in Reverence. But now when Religion is happily reformed with so great Increase of God's Word, many which before seemed to be earnest Disciples, are become Contemners and very Enemies thereof, who not only cast off the Study and Zeal of

The Nature and Disposition of the *Germanes*.

This may well be said of us *English-Men*, for our Heat is soon cooled, and that may appear by our cold

Proceedings at this Day.

of God's Word and despise the Ministers thereof, but also hate all good Learning, and become plain Hogs and Belly-gods, worthy (doubtless) to be compared unto the foolish and inconstant *Galatians*.

**Verse 6.** *From him that called you into the Grace of Christ.*

A double Exposition upon this Place.

The Drift and Purpose of *Paul* in this whole Epistle.

This Place is somewhat doubtful, and therefore it hath a double Understanding. The first is, *From that Christ that hath called you in Grace*: The other is, *From him, that is to say from God which hath called you in the Grace of Christ*. I embrace the former: For it liketh me, that even as *Paul* a little before made Christ the Redeemer, who by his Death delivered us from this present evil World, also the Giver of Grace and Peace equally with God the Father; so he should make him here also the Caller in Grace: For *Paul's* special Purpose is, to beat into our Minds the Benefit of Christ by whom we come

unto the Father.

There is also in these Words, *From him that called us into Grace*, a great Vehemency; wherein is contained withal a contrary Relation: As if he would say, Alas! how lightly do you suffer yourselves to be withdrawn and removed from Christ, which hath called you; not as *Moses* did to the Law, Works, Sins, Wrath and Damnation, but altogether to Grace. So we also complain at this Day with *Paul*, that the Blindness and Perverseness of Men is horrible, in that none will receive the Doctrine of Grace and Salvation. Or if there be any that receive it, yet they quickly slide back again and fall from it, whereas notwithstanding it bringeth with it all good Things, as well ghostly as bodily, namely, Forgiveness of Sins, true Righteousness, Peace of Conscience, and everlasting Life. Moreover it bringeth Light and sound Judgment of all Kinds of Doctrine and Trades of Life. It approveth and establisheth civil Government, House-hold Government, and all Kinds of Life that are ordained and appointed of God. It rooteth up all Doctrines of Error, Sedition, Confusion and such like, and it putteth away the Fear of Sin and Death, and to be short, it discovereth all the subtil Sights and Works of the Devil, and openeth the Benefits and Love of God towards us in Christ. What (with a Mischief) means the World to hate this Word, this glad Tidings of everlasting Comfort, Grace, Salvation and eternal Life, so bitterly, and to persecute it with such hellish Outrage?

What good Things the Doctrine of Grace bringeth with it.

The World hateth the Light, and loveth Darknes.

*Paul* before called this present World evil and wicked, that is to say, the Devil's Kingdom: For else it would acknowledge the Benefit and Mercy of God; for as much as it is under the Power of the Devil, therefore doth it most spitefully hate and persecute the same, loving Darknes,

*Paul* before called this present World evil and wicked, that is to say, the Devil's Kingdom: For else it would acknowledge the Benefit and Mercy of God; for as much as it is under the Power of the Devil, therefore doth it most spitefully hate and persecute the same, loving Darknes,

ness, Errors and the Kingdom of the Devil, more then the Light, the Truth, and the Kingdom of Christ, *John* iii. 19. And this it doth not thro' Ignorance or Error, but thro' the Malice of the Devil. Which Thing hereby may sufficiently appear, in that Christ the Son of God by giving himself to Death for the Sins of all Men, hath thereby gained nothing else of this perverse and damnable World, but that for this his inestimable Benefit, it blasphemeth him and persecuteth his most healthful Word, and fain would yet still nail him to the Cross, if they could. Therefore not only the World dwelleth in Darkness, but it is Darkness itself, as it is written in the first of *John*.

What Re-  
compence  
the World  
rendreth un-  
to Christ for  
his Benefits.

*Paul* therefore standeth much upon these Words, *From Christ which hath called you.* As tho' he would say, My preaching was not of the hard Laws of *Moses*, neither taught I that ye should be Bond-slaves under the Yoke; but I preached the only Doctrine of Grace and Freedom from the Law, Sin, Wrath, and Damnation: That is to say, That Christ hath mercifully called you in Grace, that ye should be Free-Men under Christ, and not Bond-Men under *Moses*, whose Disciples ye are now become again by the Means of your false Apostles, who by the Law of *Moses* called you not unto Grace, but unto Wrath, to the Hating of God, to Sin and Death. But Christ's Calling bringeth Grace and saving Health. For they that be called by him, instead of the Law that worketh Sorrow, do gain the glad Tidings of the Gospel, and are translated out of God's Wrath into his Favour, out of Sin into Righteousness, and out of Death into Life. And will you suffer yourselves to be carried, yea and that so soon and so easily another Way, from such a living Fountain, full of Grace and Life? Now, if *Moses* call Men to God's Wrath and to Sin by the Law of God, Whither shall the Pope call Men by his own Traditions? The other Sense, That the Father calleth in the Grace of Christ, is also Good; but the former Sense concerning Christ, serveth more fitly for the comforting of afflicted Consciences.

*Moses* cal-  
leth unto  
Wrath, but  
Christ cal-  
leth to Grace.

### Verse 6. *Unto another Gospel.*

Here we may learn to espy the crafty Slights and Subtilties of the Devil. No *Heretick* cometh under the Title of Errors and of the Devil, neither doth the Devil himself come as a Devil in his own Likeness, especially that white Devil which we spake of before. Yea even the black Devil, which forceth Men to manifest Wickedness, maketh a Cloke for them to cover that Sin which they commit or purpose to commit. The Murderer in his Rage seeth not that Murder is so great and horrible a Sin as it is indeed, for that he hath a Cloke to cover the same. Whoremongers, Thieves, covetous Persons, Drunkards, and such other have, wherewith to flatter themselves and cover their Sins. So the black Devil also cometh out disguised and counterfeit in all his Works

Satan chang-  
eth himself  
into an An-  
gel of Light.

and Devices. But in spiritual Matter, where Satan cometh forth not black, but white in the Likeness of an Angel or of God himself, there he passeth himself with most crafty Disimulation and wonderful Sights, and is wont to set forth to Sale his most deadly Poison for the Doctrine of Grace, for the Word of God, for the Gospel of Christ.

For this Cause *Paul* calleth the Doctrine of the false Apostles Satan's Ministers, a Gospel also, saying, *Unto another Gospel*, but in Derision. As tho' he would say, Ye *Galatians* have now other Evangelists and another Gospel: My Gospel is now despised of you, it is now no more in Estimation among you.

*Paul's* Doc-  
trine con-  
demned by  
the false A-  
postles.

Hereby it may easily be gathered, that these false Apostles had condemned the Gospel of *Paul* among the *Galatians*, saying, *Paul* indeed hath begun well, but to have begun well it is not enough; for there remain yet many higher Matters. Like as they say in *Acts* xv. 1. *It is not enough for you to believe in Christ or to be baptized, but it behoveth also that ye be circumcised: For except ye be circumcised after the Law of Moses, ye cannot be saved.* This is as much to say, as Christ is a good Workman, which hath indeed begun a Building, but he hath not finished it, for this must *Moses* do.

The Nature  
of Hereticks  
lively paint-  
ed out.

So at this Day, when the Phantastical *Anabaptists* and others cannot manifestly condemn us, they say, These *Lutherans* have the Spirit of Fearfulness, they dare not frankly and freely profess the Truth, and go thorough with it. Indeed they have laid a Foundation, that is to say, They have well taught Faith in Christ, but the Beginning, the

Midst and the  
End hath not  
given it unto  
them, but hath  
left it unto us.

Midst and the End must be joined together: to bring this to pass, God hath not given it unto them, but hath left it unto us. So these perverse and devilish Spirits extol and magnify their cursed Doctrine, calling it the Word God, and so under the Colour of God's Name,

The Devil  
will not be  
black in his  
Ministers.

they deceive many. For the Devil will not be ugly and black in his Ministers, but fair and white. And to the End he may appear to be such a one, he setteth forth and decketh all his Words and Works with the Colour of Truth, and with the Name of God. Hereof is sprung

that common  
all Mischief.

Proverb among the *Germanes*, *In God's Name beginneth*

The Devil  
doth more  
hurt on the  
Right-hand  
then on the  
Left.

Wherefore let us learn, that this is a special Point of the Devil's cunning, that if he cannot hurt by persecuting and destroying, he doth it under a Colour of correcting and building up. So now a Days he persecuteth us with Power and Sword, that when we are once taken away and dispatched, he may not only deface the Gospel, but utterly overthrow it. But hitherto he hath prevailed nothing, for he hath slain many, who have constantly confessed this our Doctrine to be holy and heavenly, thorough whose Blood the Church is not destroyed, but watered. Forasmuch therefore as he could

could prevail nothing that Way, he stirreth up wicked Spirits and ungodly Teachers, which at the first allow our Doctrine, and teach the same with a common Consent together with us. But afterwards they say that it is our Vocation to teach the first Principles of Christian Doctrine, and that the Mysteries of the Scripture are revealed unto them from above by God himself, and that they are called for this Purpose, that they should open them to the World. After this Manner doth the Devil hinder the Course of the Gospel, both on the Right-hand and on the Left, but more on the Right-hand (as I said before) by building and correcting, then on the left by persecuting and destroying. Wherefore it behoveth us, to pray without ceasing, to read the holy Scriptures, to cleave fast unto Christ and his holy Word, that we may overcome the Devil's Subtilties, with the which he assaileth us both on the Right-hand and on the Left, *For we wrestle not against Flesh and Blood, but against Principalities, against Powers, against the Rulers of the Darkness of this World, against spiritual Wickedness in high Places,* Eph. vi. 12.

By what Means pure and sound Doctrine is preserved.

Verse 7. *Which is not another; but there be some that trouble you,*

Here again he excuseth the *Galatians*, and most bitterly reproveth the false Apostles. As tho' he would say, ye *Galatians* are born in Hand, that the Gospel which ye have received of me is not the true and sincere Gospel, and therefore ye think ye do well to receive that new Gospel, which the false Apostles teach, and seemeth to be better then mine. I do not so much charge you with this Fault, as those Disturbers which trouble your Consciences, and pull you out of my Hand. Here you see again, how vehement and hot he is against those Deceivers, and with what rough and sharp Words he painteth them out, calling them Troublers of the Churches, which do nothing else but seduce and deceive innumerable poor Consciences, giving Occasions of horrible Mischiefs and Calamities in the Congregations. This great Enormity we also at this Day are constrained to see, to the great Grief of our Hearts, and yet are we no more able to remedy it, then *Paul* was at that Time.

The Troublers of the Church.

This Place witnesseth, that those false Apostles had reported *Paul* to be an unperfect Apostle, and also a weak and erroneous Preacher. Therefore he again here calleth them Troublers of the Churches, and Overthrowers of the Gospel of Christ. Thus they condemned each other. The false Apostles condemned *Paul*, and *Paul* again the false Apostles. The like contending and condemning is always in the Church; especially when the doctrine of the Gospel flourisheth, to wit, That wicked Teachers do persecute, condemn and oppress the Godly:

How the false Apostles had slandered *Paul*.

Contentions always in the Church.

And on the other Side, that the Godly do reprove and condemn the Ungodly.

The *Papists* and the Phantastical Spirits, do at this Day hate us deadly, and condemn our Doctrine as wicked and erroneous. Yea, moreover they ly in wait for our Goods and Lives. And we again do with a perfect Hatred detest and condemn their cursed and blasphemous Doctrine. In the mean Time the miserable People are at no Stay, waving hither and thither, as uncertain and doubtful to which Part they may lean, or whom they may safely follow. For it is not given to every one to judge Christianly of such weighty Matters. But the End will shew which Part teacheth truly, and justly condemn the other. Sure it is that we persecute no Man, oppress no Man, put no Man to Death, neither doth our Doctrine trouble Men's Consciences, but delivereth them out of innumerable Errors and Snares of the Devil. For the Truth hereof we have the Testimony of many good Men, who give Thanks unto God, for that by our Doctrine, they have received certain and sure Consolation to their Consciences. Wherefore like as *Paul* at that Time was not to be blamed that the Churches were troubled, but the false Apostles: So at this Day it is not our Fault, but the Fault of the *Anabaptists* and such Frantick Spirits, that many and great Troubles are in the Church.

Mark here diligently, that every Teacher of Works and of the Righteousness of the Law, is a Troubler of Every one and of the Consciences of Men. And who which teacheth that the Church and of the Consciences of Men. And who would ever have believed that the *Pope*, *Cardinals*, *Bishops*, *Monks*, and that whole Synagogue of Satan, specially the Founders of those holy religious Orders (of which Works do justify, is a Troubler of Men's Consciences. Number, nevertheless God might save some by Miracle) were Troublers of Men's Consciences: Yea verily they be yet far worse then were those false Apostles. For the false Apostles taught, that besides Faith in Christ, the Works of the Law of God were also necessary to Salvation. But the *Papists* omitting Faith, have taught Men Traditions and Works not commanded of God, but devised by themselves without and against the Word of God: And these have they not only made equal with the Word of God, but also exalted them far above it. But the more holy the *Hereticks* seem to be in outward Shew, so much the more Mischief they do. For if the false Apostles had not been indued with notable Gifts, with great Authority, and a Shew of Holiness, and had not vaunted themselves to be Christ's Ministers, the Apostles, Disciples, and sincere Preachers of the Gospel. They could not so easily have defaced *Paul's* Authority, and led the *Galatians* out of the Way.

Now, the Cause why he setteth himself so sharply against them, calling them the Troublers of the Church is, for that besides Faith in Christ, they taught that Circumcision. Why *Paul* calleth the false Apostles Troublers of the Churches.

cumcision and the keeping of the Law was necessary to Salvation. The which Thing *Paul* himself witnesseth in the 5 Chapter following: And *Luke* in the xv. of the *Acts* and 1 Verse declareth the same Thing in these Words, *And certain Men which came down from Judea, taught the Brethren, and said, Except ye be circumcised after the Manner of Moses, ye cannot be saved.* Wherefore the false Apostles most earnestly and obstinately contended that the Law ought to be observed. Unto whom the stiff-necked *Jews* forthwith joined themselves, and so afterwards easily perswaded such as were not stablished in the Faith, that *Paul* was not a sincere Teacher, because he regarded not the Law, but preached such a Doctrine as did abolish and overthrow the Law. For it seemed unto them a very strange Thing, that the Law of God should be utterly taken away; and the *Jews* which had always until that Time been counted the People of God, to whom also the Promises were made, should now be rejected. Yea it seemed yet a more strange Thing unto them, that the *Gentiles* being wicked Idolaters, should attain to this Glory and Dignity, to be the People of God without Circumcision, and without the Works of the Law, by Grace only and Faith in Christ.

These Things had the false Apostles amplified and set forth to the uttermost, that they might bring *Paul* into more Hatred among the *Galatians*. And to the End they might set them the more sharply against him, they said that he preached unto the *Gentiles* Freedom from the Law, to bring into Contempt, yea and utterly to abolish the Law of God and the Kingdom of the *Jews*, contrary to the Law of God, contrary to the Custom of the *Jewish* Nation, contrary to the Example of the Apostles, and to be short, contrary to his own Example: Wherefore he was to be shunned as an open Blasphemer against God, and a Rebel against the whole Common-weal of the *Jews*, saying, that they themselves ought rather to be heard, who besides that they preached the Gospel rightly, were also the very Disciples of the Apostles, with whom *Paul* was never conversant. By this Policy they defamed and defaced *Paul* among the *Galatians*, so that by this their perverse Dealing, of very Necessity *Paul* was compelled with all his Might to set himself against these false Apostles; whom he boldly reproveth and condemneth, saying, that they are Troublers of the Churches and Overthrowers of Christ's Gospel, as followeth.

The false Apostles brag of their own Doings, and dispraise other Mens.

Verse 7. *And would pervert the Gospel of Christ.*

That is to say, they do not only go about to trouble you, but also utterly to abolish and overthrow Christ's Gospel. For these two Things the Devil practiseth most busily. First, He is not contented to trouble and deceive many by his false Apostles, but moreover he laboureth by them utterly to overthrow the Gospel, and never resteth till he hath brought it to pass. Yet such Perverters

The false Apostles trouble and overthrow the Gospel of Christ,

The most wicked Teachers, would be counted the most holy.

The Righteousness of the Law, and the Righteousness of Grace are contrary.

of the Gospel can abide nothing less, 'then to hear that they are the Apostles of the Devil; nay rather they glory above others in the Name of Christ, and boast themselves to be the most sincere Preachers of the Gospel. But because they mingle the Law with the Gospel, they must needs be Perverters of the Gospel. For either Christ must remain and the Law perish, or the Law must remain and Christ perish; for Christ and the Law can by no Means agree and reign together in the Conscience. Where the Righteousness of the Law ruleth, there cannot the Righteousness of Grace rule. And again, where the Righteousness of Grace reigneth, there cannot the Righteousness of the Law reign; for one of them must needs give Place unto the other. And if thou canst not believe that God will forgive thy Sins for Christ's Sake, whom he sent into the World to be our High Priest; How then I pray thee, wilt thou believe that he will forgive the same for the Works of the Law, which thou couldst never perform; or for thine own Works, which (as thou must be constrained to confess) be such, as it is impossible for them to countervail the Judgment of God?

They that mingle the Righteousness of the Law and Grace together, are Subverters of the Gospel of Christ.

Wherefore the Doctrine of Grace can by no Means stand with the Doctrine of the Law. The one must needs be refused and abolished, and the other confirmed and stablished. For as *Paul* saith here, to mingle the one with the other, is to overthrow the Gospel of Christ. And yet if it come to debating, the greater Part overcometh the better. For Christ with his Side is weak, and the Gospel but a foolish Preaching. Contrariwise, the Kingdom of the World, and the Devil the Prince thereof, are strong. Besides that, the Wisdom and Righteousness of the Flesh carry a goodly Shew. And by this Means the Righteousness of Grace and Faith is lost, and the other Righteousness of the Law and Works advanced and maintained.

But this is our Comfort that the Devil with all his Limbs, cannot do what he would. He may trouble many, but he cannot overthrow Christ's Gospel. The Truth may be assailed, but vanquished it cannot be, *For the Word of the Lord endureth for ever.*

It seemeth to be a light Matter, to mingle the Law and the Gospel, Faith and Works together; but it doth more Mischief then Man's Reason can conceive. For it doth not only blemish and darken the Knowledge of Grace, but also it taketh away Christ with all his Benefits, and it utterly overthroweth the Gospel, as *Paul* saith in this Place. The Cause of this great Evil is our Flesh; which being plunged in Sins, seeth no Way how to get out but by Works, and therefore it would live in the Righteousness of the Law, and rest in the Trust and Confidence of her own Works. Wherefore it is utterly ignorant of the Doctrine of Faith and Grace,

Grace, without the which notwithstanding it is impossible for the Conscience to find Rest and Quietness.

It appeareth also by these Words of *Paul*, *And would pervert the Gospel of Christ*, that the false Apostles were exceeding bold and shameless, which with all their Might set themselves against *Paul*. Wherefore he again, using the Spirit of Zeal and Fervency, and being fully perswaded of the Certainty of his Calling, setteth himself strongly against them, and wonderfully magnifieth his Ministry, saying,

*Verse 8. But tho' we, or an Angel from Heaven, preach any other Gospel unto you, than that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed.*

Here *Paul* casteth out very Flames of Fire, and his Zeal is so fervent that he beginneth also almost to curse the Angels. Altho' saith he, that we ourselves, even I and my Brother *Timothy* and *Titus*, and as many as teach Christ purely with me, (I speak not now of those Seducers of Consciences) *yea or if an Angel from Heaven preach unto you, &c.* notwithstanding I would rather that I myself, my Brethren, yea and the very Angels from Heaven also, should be holden accursed, then that my Gospel should be overthrown. This is indeed a vehement Zeal, that he dare so boldly curse not only himself and his Brethren, but also even an Angel from Heaven.

The vehement Zeal of *Paul* against the false Apostles.

The Greek Word *Anathema*, in Hebrew *Herem*, signifieth a Thing accursed, execrable and detestable; which hath nothing to do, no Participation or Communion with God. So saith *Joshua*, *Cursed be the Man before the Lord, that riseth up and buildeth this City Jericho*, Josh. vi. 26. And in *Leviticus* it is written, *None devoted, which shall be devoted of Men, shall be redeemed; but shall surely be put to Death*, Lev. xxvii. 29. So God had appointed *Amalech*, and certain other Cities accursed by God's own Sentence, should be utterly rased and destroyed. This is then the Mind of *Paul*: I had rather that myself and other my Brethren, yea and an Angel from Heaven should be accursed, then that we or others should preach any other Gospel then that which we have preached already. So *Paul* first curseth himself; for cunning Artificers are wont first to find Fault with themselves, that they may the more freely and sharply afterwards reprove others.

*Paul* therefore concludeth, that there is no other Gospel besides that, which he himself had preached. But he preached not a Gospel which he had himself devised, but the same which God promised before by his Prophets in the Holy Scriptures, Rom. i. 2. Therefore he pronounceth himself and others, yea even an Angel from Heaven, to be undoubtedly accursed, if they teach any Thing contrary to the former Gospel. For the Voice of the Gospel once sent forth, shall not be called back again till the Day of Judgment.

The Gospel of *Paul*.

Verse 9. *As we said before, so say I now again, If any Man preach any other Gospel unto you, than that ye have received, let him be accursed.*

He repeateth the self-same Thing; only changing the Persons. Before he cursed himself, his Brethren, and an Angel from Heaven. Here if there be any (saith he) besides us, which preach unto you any other Gospel then that ye have received of us, let them also be accursed. Therefore he plainly excommunicateth and curseth all Teachers in general, himself, his Brethren, an Angel, and moreover all others whatsoever, namely, all those false Teachers his Adversaries.

The Vehemency of *Paul* against the false Apostles. Here appeareth an exceeding great Fervency of Spirit in the Apostle, that he dare curse all Teachers throughout the whole World and in Heaven, which pervert his Gospel and teach any other. For all Men must either believe that Gospel which *Paul* preached, or else they must be accursed and condemned. Would to God this terrible

An horrible Sentence against the *Papists*. Sentence of the Apostle might strike a Fear into their Hearts that seek to pervert the Gospel of *Paul*; of which Sort at this Day (the more it is to be lamented) the World is full.

The changing of Persons is here to be marked. For *Paul* speaketh otherwise in his first cursing then he doth in the second. In the first he saith, *But tho' we, or an Angel from Heaven, preach any other Gospel unto you, than that which we have preached unto you: In the second, than that ye have received.* And this he doth of Purpose, lest the *Galatians* should say, We, O *Paul* do not pervert the Gospel that thou hast preached unto us; we understood thee not rightly, but the Teachers that came after thee, have declared unto us the true Meaning thereof. This (saith he) will I in no Case admit. They ought to add nothing, neither to correct it; but that which you heard of me, is the sincere Word of God, let this only remain. Neither do I desire myself to be any other Manner of Teacher then I was, nor you other Disciples. Wherefore if ye hear any Man bringing any other Gospel then that ye have heard of me, or bragging that he will deliver better Things then ye have received of me, let him and his Disciples be both accursed.

The Contents of the two first Chapters. The first two Chapters in a Manner contain nothing else but Defences of his Doctrine, and Confutations of Errors; so that until he cometh to the End of the second Chapter, he toucheth not the chiefest Matter which he handleth in this Epistle, namely, the Article of Justification. Notwithstanding, this Sentence of *Paul* ought to

admonish us, that so many as think the Pope to be Judge of the Scripture are accursed. Which Thing the Popish School-men have wickedly taught, standing upon this Ground: The Church hath allowed four Gospels only; therefore there are  
The Argument of the *Papists* to prove, that the Church is above the Scripture.

are but four ; for if it had allowed more, there had been more. Now seeing the Church might receive and allow such and so many Gospels as it would, therefore the Church is above the Gospel ; a goodly Argument forsooth. I approve the Scripture, *Ergo*, I am above the Scripture. *John Baptist* acknowledgeth and confesseth Christ, and pointeth to him with his Finger, therefore he is above Christ. The Church approveth the Christian Faith and Doctrine, therefore the Church is above them. For the overthrowing of this their wicked and blasphemous Doctrine ; thou hast here a plain Text like a Thunder-bolt, wherein *Paul* subjecteth both himself and an Angel from Heaven, and Doctors upon Earth, and all other Teachers and Masters whatsoever under the Authority of the Scripture. For they ought not to be Masters, Judges, or Arbiters, but only Witnesses, Disciples and Confessors of the Church, whether it be the *Pope*, *Luther*, *Augustine*, *Paul*, or an Angel from Heaven. Neither ought any Doctrine to be taught or heard in the Church, besides the pure Word of God, that is to say, the holy Scripture. Otherwise accursed be both the Teachers and Hearers together with their Doctrine.

The Word of God must only be taught in the Church.

### Verse 10. *For do I now perswade Men, or God?*

These Words are spoken with the same Vehemency of Spirit that the former were. As if he should say, Am I *Paul* so unknown amongst you, which have preached so openly in your Churches ? Are my bitter Conflicts, and so many sharp Battles against the *Jews*, yet unknown unto you ? It appeareth (I think) sufficiently unto you by my Preaching, and by so many and so great Afflictions which I have suffered, whether I serve Men or God. For all Men see that by this my Preaching I have not only stirred up Persecution against me in every Place, but have also procured the cruel Hatred both of mine own Nation and of all other Men. I shew therefore plainly enogh, that I seek not by my Preaching the Favour or Praise of Men, but to set forth the Benefit and Glory of God.

What Reward *Paul* received for his Labour.

What the Ministers of God ought to seek.

Neither do we seek the Favour of Men by our Doctrine. For we teach that all Men are wicked by Nature and the Children of Wrath, *Eph. ii. 3.* We condemn Man's Free-will his Strength, Wisdom and Righteousness and all Religions of Man's own devising. And to be short, we say that there is nothing in us that is able to deserve Grace and the Forgiveness of Sins : But we preach, that we obtain this Grace by the free Mercy of God only for Christ's Sake. For so the Heavens shew forth the Glory of God and his Works, *Psal. xix. 1.* condemning all Men generally with their Works. This is not to preach for the Favour of Men and of the World. For the World can abide nothing less then to hear his Wisdom, Righteousness, Religion and Power condemned. And to speak against those mighty

The Sum of the Doctrine of the Gospel.

and

and glorious Gifts of the World, is not to flatter the World, but rather to procure Hatred and Indignation of the World. For if we speak against Men, or any Thing else that pertaineth to their Glory, it cannot be, but that cruel Hatred, Persecutions, Excommunications, Murders and Condemnations must needs follow.

If then (saith *Paul*) they see other Matters, Why see they not this also, that I teach the Things that are of God, and not of Men? That is to say, That I seek no Man's Favour by my Doctrine, but I set out God's Mercy offered unto us in Christ. For if I sought the Favour of Men, I would not condemn their Works. Now for as much as

I condemn Men's Works, that is to say, because I shew God's Judgment out of his Word (whereof I am a Minister) against all Men, how that they are Sinners, Unrighteous, Wicked, Children of Wrath, Bond-slaves of the Devil and Damned, and that they are not made righteous by Works or by Circumcision, but by Grace only, and Faith in Christ: Therefore I procure unto myself the deadly Hatred of Men. For they can abide nothing less, then to hear that they are such: Nay, rather they would be praised for wise, righteous and holy. Wherefore this witnesseth sufficiently, that I teach not Man's Doctrine. After the same Manner Christ speaketh also in *John vii. 7.* *The World cannot hate you; but me it hateth, because I testify of it, that the Works thereof are evil.*

And in *John iii. 19.* *And this is the Condemnation, that Light is come into the World, and Men loved Darkness rather than Light, because their Deeds were evil.*

Now, that I teach the Things which are of God (saith the Apostle) hereby it may sufficiently appear, that I preach the only Grace, the Mercy, the Goodness and the Glory of God. Moreover, he that speaketh (as Christ saith) those Things which his Lord and Master hath commanded him, and glorifieth not himself, but him whose

Messenger he is, bringeth and teacheth the true Word of God. But I teach those Things only which are commanded me from above: Neither glorify I myself, but him that sent me. Besides that, I stir up against myself the Wrath and Indignation of both the *Jews* and *Gentiles*, therefore my Doctrine is true, sincere, certain, and of God, neither can there be any other, (much less any better) then this my Doctrine is. Wherefore, whatsoever Doctrine else teacheth not as mine doth, that all Men are Sinners, and are justified by Faith only in Christ, must needs be false, wicked, blasphemous, accursed and devilish: And even such also are they which teach or receive it.

So we with *Paul* do boldly pronounce all such Doctrine to be accursed as agreeth not with ours. For neither do we seek by our Preaching the Praise of Men, or the Favour of Princes or Bishops, but the Favour of God alone, whose only Grace and Mercy we preach, despising and treading under Foot whatsoever is of ourselves. Whosoever he be then which shall teach any other Gospel, or that which is contrary to ours,

let us be bold to say that he is sent of the Devil, and hold him accursed.

Verse 10. *Or do I seek to please Men?*

That is, do I serve Men or God; he hath always a Glance at the false Apostles. These (saith he) must needs seek to please and to flatter Men: For by this Means they seek, that they again may glory in their Flesh. Moreover, because they will not bear the Hatred and Persecution of Men, they teach Circumcision, only to avoid the Persecution of the Cross, as followeth in the

The false Apostles seek to please Men.

*v Chapter.*

So at this Day ye may find many which seek to please Men, and to the End they may live in Peace and Security of the Flesh, they teach the Things which are of Men, that is to say, wicked Things, or else they allow the Blasphemies and wicked Judgments of the Adversaries, contrary to the Word of God against their own Conscience, that they may keep still the Favour of Princes and Bishops, and enjoy their Goods. But we, because we endeavour to please God and not Men, do stir up against us the Malice of the Devil and Hell itself: We suffer the Reproaches and Slanders of the World, Death and all the Mischiefs that can be devised against us.

Teachers of Men's Traditions seek to please Men.

The Reward of Godly Teachers.

So saith Paul here, I seek not to please Men, that they may praise my Doctrine, and report me to be an excellent Teacher, but I desire only that my Doctrine may please God: And by this Means I make Men my mortal Enemies. Which Thing I find by Experience to be most true: For they requite me with Infamy, Slander, Imprisonment and Sword. Contrariwise the false Apostles teach the Things that are of Men, that is to say, such Things as be pleasant and plausible to Man's Reason, and that to the End they may live in ease, and purchase the Favour, Goodwill and Praise of the People. And such Men find that they seek for: For they are praised and magnified of Men. So saith Christ also in *Matth. vi.* *That Hypocrites do all Things to be praised of Men.* And in *John v. 44.* he sharply reproveth such, *How can ye believe (saith he) which receive Honour one of another, and seek not the Honour that cometh from God only?* The Things which Paul hath hitherto taught, are in a Manner Examples only. In the mean Time notwithstanding he is very earnest every where in proving his Doctrine to be sincere and sound. Therefore he exhorteth the *Galatians* that they forsake it not for any other Doctrine.

The Reward of false and Ungodly Teachers.

Verse. 10. *For if I yet pleased Men, I should not be the Servant of Christ.*

These

These Things are to be referred to the whole Office and Ministry of *Paul*, to shew what a Contrariety there was between his Conversation before in the *Jewish Law*, and his Conversation now under the Gospel. As if he would say, Do ye think that I go about still to please Men, as I did in Times past? So he speaketh afterwards in the *v Chapter* and *11 Verse*, *If I yet preach Circumcision, why do I yet suffer Persecution?* As tho' he would say, Do ye not see and hear of my daily Conflicts, great Persecutions and Afflictions? After I was converted and called to the Office of Apostleship, I never taught Man's Doctrine, neither sought I to please Men, but God alone. That is to say, I seek not by my Ministry and Doctrine the Praise and Favour of Men, but of God.

Here again is to be marked, how maliciously and craftily the false Apostles went about to bring *Paul* into Hatred among the *Galatians*. They picked out of his Preachings and Writings certain Contradictions (as our Adversaries at this Day do out of our Books) and by this Means they would have convinced him that he had taught contrary Things. Wherefore they said that there was no Credit to be given unto him, but that Circumcision and the Law ought to be kept: Which Thing he himself also by his Example had allowed, because he had circumcised *Timothy*, *Acts xvi. 3.* according to the Law had purified himself with other four Men in the Temple at *Jerusalem*, *Acts xxi. 26.* and had shaven his Head at *Cenchrea*, *Acts xviii. 18.* These Things they craftily surmised, that *Paul* by the Commandment and Authority of the Apostles was constrained to do; Which notwithstanding he had kept as indifferent, bearing with the Infirmary of the weak Brethren (which yet understood not the Christian Liberty,) lest they should be offended. To whose Cavillations thus he answereth: How true it is which the false Apostles forge against me for the overthrowing of my Gospel, and setting up of the Law and Circumcision again, the Matter itself sufficiently declareth. For if I would preach the Law and Circumcision, and commend the Strength, the Power, and the Will of Man, I should not be so odious unto them, but should please them.

Verses 11, 12. *But I certify you, Brethren, that the Gospel which was preached of me, is not after Man. For I neither received it of Man, neither was I taught it but by the Revelation of Jesus Christ.*

Here is the principal Point of all this Matter; which containeth a Consultation of his Adversaries, and a Defence of his Doctrine, to the End of the second Chapter. Upon this he standeth, this he urgeth and with an Oath confirmeth, that he learned not his Gospel of any Man, but received it by the Revelation of Jesus Christ. And in that he sweareth, he is constrained so to do, that the *Galatians* may

The chief Purpose of *Paul* in this Disputation.

may believe him, and also, that they should give no Ear to the false Apostles; whom he reproveth as Liars, because they had said that he learned and received his Gospel of the Apostles.

Where he saith that his Gospel is not after Man, he meaneth not, that his Gospel is not earthly (for that is manifest of itself, and the false Apostles bragged also that their Doctrine was not earthly but heavenly,) but he meaneth that he learned not his Gospel by the Ministry of Men, or received it by any earthly Means (as we all learn it, either by the Ministry of Men, or else receive it by some earthly Means; some by hearing, some by reading, and some by writting;) but he received the same only by the Revelation of Jesus Christ. If any Man list to make any other Distinction, I am not against it. Here the Apostle sheweth by the Way, that Christ is not only Man, but that he is both God and very Man, when he saith that he received not his Gospel by Man.

*Paul's Doctrine was not after Man.*

*Christ both God and Man*

Now Paul received his Gospel in the Way as he was going to Damascus, where Christ appeared unto him and talked with him. Afterwards also he talked with him in the Temple at Jerusalem, but he received his Gospel in the Way, as Luke reciteth the Story in Acts ix. 6. *Arise, (saith Christ) go into the City, and it shall be told thee what thou must do.* He doth not bid him go into the City, that he might learn the Gospel

*Where Paul received the Gospel.*

of Ananias: But Ananias was bid to go and baptize him, to lay his Hands upon him, to commit the Ministry of the Word unto him, and to commend him unto the Church, and not to teach him the Gospel, which he had received afore (as he glorieth in the same Place) by the only Revelation of Jesus Christ. And this Ananias himself confesseth, saying, *Brother Saul, the Lord even Jesus that appeared to thee in the Way that thou camest hath sent me, that thou mightest receive thy Sight, and be filled with the Holy Ghost.* Therefore he received not his Doctrine of Ananias, but being already called, lightened and taught of Christ in the Way, he was sent to Ananias that he might also have the Testimony of Men, that he was called of God to preach the Gospel of Christ.

This Paul was constrained to recite, to put away the Slander of the false Apostles, who laboured to bring him into Hatred among the Galatians, saying, that Paul was inferior to the rest of the Apostles Schollars; who had received of the Apostles, that which they taught and kept; whose Conversation also they had seen a long Time, and that Paul himself had also received the same Things of them, altho' he did now deny it. Why, then would they rather obey an inferior, and despise the Authority of the Apostles themselves, who were not only the Fore-Elders and Teachers of the Galatians, but also of all the Churches throughout the whole World?

This Argument, which the false Apostles grounded upon the Authority of the Apostles, was strong and mighty, whereby the Galatians were suddenly overthrown, especially from the Authority of the Apostles.

*The Argument of the false Apostles taken*

ally in this Matter. I would never have believed, had I not been taught by these Examples of the Churches of *Galatia*, of the *Corinthians* and others, that they which had received the Word of God in the Beginning with such Joy (among whom were many notable Men) could so quickly be overthrown. O good Lord, what horrible and infinite Mischiefe may one only Argument easily bring? Which so pierceth a Man's Conscience when God withdraweth his Grace, that in one Moment he loseth altogether. By this Subtility then the false Apostles did easily deceive the *Galatians*, being not fully established and grounded, but as yet weak in the Faith.

Moreover, the Matter of Justification is bricke; not So great is the Weakness even of the Godly that they are hardly drawn to God's Promises, tho' they be most certain. of itself (for of itself it is most sure and certain) but in respect of us; whereof I myself have good Experience, For I know in what Hours of Darknes I sometimes wrastle. I know how often I suddenly lose the Beams of the Gospel and Grace, as being shadowed from me with thick and dark Clouds. Briefly I know in what a slippery Place even such also do stand, as are well exercised, and seem to have sure Footing in Matters of Faith. We have good Experience of this Matter, for we are able to teach it unto others, and this is a sure Token that we understand it. But when in the very Conflict we should use the Gospel, which is the Word of Grace, Consolation and Life, there doth the Law, the Word of Wrath, Heaviness and Death prevent the Gospel and beginneth to rage, and the Terrors which it raiseth up in the Conscience; are no less then was that horrible Shew in the Mount *Sinai*, *Exod. xix. 18.* So that even one Place of the Scripture containing some Threatning of the Law, overwhelmeth and drowneth all Consolations besides, and so shaketh all our inward Powers, that it maketh us to forget Justification, Grace, Christ, the Gospel and altogether.

The Office  
of the Law.

The Con-  
flicts of the  
Godly.

Therefore in respect of us, it is a very bricke Matter, because we are bricke. Again, we have against us even the one half of ourselves; That is to say, Reason; and all the Powers thereof. Besides all this the Flesh resisteth the Spirit, *Gal. v. 17.* which cannot believe assuredly that the Promises of God are true. It fighteth therefore against the Spirit, and (as *Paul* saith) *it holdeth the Spirit Captive*, *Rom vii. 23.* so that it cannot believe so stedfastly as it would. Wherefore we teach continually that the Knowledge of Christ and of Faith is no Work of Man, but simply the Gift of God, who as he createth Faith, so doth he keep it in us. And even as he first giveth Faith unto us thro' the Word, so afterwards he exerciseth, increaseth, strengthneth and maketh perfect the same in us by the Word. Therefore the greatest Service that a Man can do unto God, and the very Sabbath of Sabbaths, is to exercise himself in true Godliness, diligently to read and hear the Word. Contrariwise there

there is nothing more dangerous then to be weary of the Word. He therefore that is so cold, that he thinketh himself to know enough, and beginneth by little and little to loath the Word, that Man hath lost Christ and the Gospel, and that which he thinketh himself to know, he attaineth only by || bare Speculation: And he is like unto a Man, (as St. *James* saith) *Who beholding his natural Face in a Glasse, goeth his Way, and straightway forgetteth what Manner of Man he was,* James i. 23, 24.

Wherefore let every faithful Man labour and strive with all Diligence to learn and to keep this Doctrine: And to that End let him use humble and hearty Prayer, with continual Study and Meditation of the Word. And when we have done never so much, yet shall we have enough to keep us occupied. For we have to do with no small Enemies, but strong and mighty, and such as are in continual War against us, namely, our own Flesh, all the Dangers of the World, the Law, Sin, Death, the Wrath and Judgment of God, and the Devil himself, who never ceaseth to tempt us inwardly by his fiery Darts, and outwardly by his false Apostles, to the End that he may overthrow, if not all, yet the most Part of us.

This Argument therefore of the false Apostles had a goodly Shew and seemed to be very strong; which also at this Day prevaieth with many, namely, that the Apostles, the holy Fathers and their Successors have so taught, that the Church so thinketh and believeth: Moreover that it is impossible that Christ should suffer his Church so long Time to err. Art thou alone (say they) wiser then so many holy Men? Wiser then the whole Church? After this Manner the Devil being changed into an Angel of Light, setteth upon us craftily at this Day by certain pestiferous Hypocrites, who say, we pass not for the Pope, we abhor the Hypocrisy of *Monks* and such like; but we would have the Authority of the holy Church to remain untouched. The Church hath thus believed and taught this long Time. So have all the Doctors of the Primitive Church, holy Men, more ancient and better learned then thou. Who art thou, that darest dissent from all these, and bring unto us a contrary Doctrine? When Satan reasoneth thus, conspiring with the Flesh and Reason, then is thy Conscience terrified and utterly despaireth, unless thou constantly return to thyself again, and say, Whether it be *Cyprian, Ambrose, Augustine, either St. Peter, Paul or John*, yea or an Angel from Heaven that teacheth otherwise, yet this I know assuredly, that I teach not the Things of Men, but of God; that is to say, I attribute all Things to God alone, and nothing to Man.

What Inconveniences follow the loathing of God's Word || Speculation is a naked Knowledge without Practise.

The Doctrine of true Godliness is kept by Prayer and earnest Study of the Word.

The Enemies of the Godly.

The Reason which at this Day is used against us and prevaileth with many.

An Angel of

The Devil's Argument.

When

Doctor *Staupitius* a Favourer of *Luther's* Doctrine, when he began to preach.

The Doctrine of the Gospel attributeth all Things unto God, and nothing to Man

When I first took upon me the Defence of the Gospel, I remember that Doctor *Staupitius* a worthy Man, said thus unto me, This liketh me well that this Doctrine which thou preacheſt, yieldeth Glory and all Things else unto God alone, and nothing unto Man; for unto God there cannot be attributed too much Glory, Goodneſs, Mercy, &c. This Saying did then greatly comfort and confirm me. And true it is, that the Doctrine of the Gospel taketh from Men all Glory, Wiſdom, Righteouſneſs, &c. and giveth the ſame to the Creator alone, who made all Things of nothing. We may alſo more ſafely attribute too much unto God then unto Man. For in this Caſe I may ſay boldly; Be it ſo that the Church, *Auguſtine* and other Doctours, alſo *Peter* and *Apollo*, yea even an Angel from Heaven, teach a contrary Doctrine, yet my Doctrine is ſuch, that it ſetteth forth and preacheth the Grace and Glory of God alone, and in the Matter of Salvation it condemneth the Righteouſneſs and Wiſdom of all Men. In this I cannot offend, becauſe I give both to God and Man, that which properly and truly belongeth to them both.

But thou wilt ſay, *The Church is holy, The Fathers are holy*: It is true; notwithſtanding, albei the Church be holy, yet it is compelled to pray, *Forgive us our Trefpaſſes*, Matth. vi. 12. So, tho' the Fathers be holy, yet are they ſaved thro' the Forgiveneſs of Sins. Therefore neither am I to be believed, nor the Church, nor the Fathers, nor the Apoſtles, no nor an Angel from Heaven, if we teach any Thing againſt the Word of God, *but let the Word of God abide for ever*; for elſe this Argument of the falſe Apoſtles had mightily prevailed againſt *Paul's* Doctrine. For indeed it was a great Matter, a great Matter I ſay, to ſet before the *Galatians* the whole Church, with all the Company of the Apoſtles againſt *Paul* alone, but lately ſprung up and of ſmall Authority. This was therefore a ſtrong Argument and concluded mightily: For no Man ſaith willingly that the Church erreth; and yet it is neceſſary to ſay that it erreth, if it teach any Thing beſides or againſt God's Word.

The Error of *Peter*. *Peter* the chief of the Apoſtles taught both in Life and Doctrine beſides God's Word, therefore he erred and was deceived. Neither did *Paul* diſſemble that Error, (al tho' it ſeemed to be but a light Fault) becauſe he ſaw it would turn to the Hurt of the whole Church, but *withſtood him even to his Face, becauſe he was to be blamed*, Gal. ii. 11. Therefore neither is the Church, nor *Peter*, nor the Apoſtles, nor Angels from Heaven to be heard, unleſs they bring and teach the pure Word of God.

The *Papiſts* Argument againſt us. This Argument even at this Day is not a little prejudicial to our Cauſe. For if we may neither believe the Pope,

Pope, nor the Fathers, nor *Luther*, nor any other, except they teach us the pure Word of God, Whom shall we then believe? Who in the mean while shall certify our Consciences which Part teacheth the pure Word of God, we or our Adversaries; for they brag, that they also have the pure Word of God and teach it. Again, we believe not the *Papists*, because they teach not the Word of God, neither can they teach it. Contrariwise, they hate us most bitterly, and persecute us as most pestilent *Hereticks* and Seducers of the People. What is to be done in this Case? Shall it be lawful for every Phantastical Spirit, to teach what himself listeth, seeing the World can neither hear nor abide our Doctrine? For altho' we glory with *Paul*, that we teach the pure Gospel of Christ, yet we profit nothing, but are compelled to hear, that this our glorying is not only vain, rash and arrogant, but also devilish and full of Blasphemy. But if we abase ourselves and give Place to the Rage of our Adversaries, then both the *Papists* and *Anabaptists* wax proud. The *Anabaptists* will vaunt that they bring and teach some strange Thing which the World never heard of before. The *Papists* will set up again and stablish their old Abominations. Let every Man therefore take heed, that he be most sure of his Cal-  
A Preacher  
 ling and Doctrine, that he may boldly say with *Paul*, *But* must be sure  
*tho' we, or an Angel from Heaven, preach any other Gospel* of his Calling  
*unto you, than that which we have preached unto you, let him* and Doctrine  
*be accursed,* Gal. i. 8.

Verſes 13, 14. *For ye have heard of my Conversation in Time paſt, in the Jews Religion, how that beyond Measure I persecuted the Church of God and waſted it: And profited in the Jews Religion, above many my Equals in mine own Nation,*

This Place hath in it no ſingular Doctrine. Notwithſtanding *Paul* alledgeth here his own Example, ſaying, I have defended the Traditions of the *Phariſees* and the *Jewiſh* Religion more conſtantly then ye and all your falſe Teachers. Wherefore if the Righteouſneſs of the Law had been any Thing worth, I had not turned back from it; in the keeping whereof notwithſtanding before I knew Chriſt, I did ſo exerciſe myſelf, and ſo profit therein, that I expelled many of my Companions of mine own Nation. The Zeal of  
 Moreover I was ſo zealous in Defence of the ſame, that *Paul*.  
 I persecuted the Church of God extremely and waſted it. Having received Authority from the chief Priests; and when they were put to Death, I gave my Voice againſt them. And I puniſhed them oft in every Synagogue, and compelled them to blaſpheme; and being exceedingly mad againſt them, I persecuted them even unto ſtrange Cities, Acts xxvi.

Verse 14. *Being more exceedingly zealous of the Traditions of my Fathers.*

He calleth not here the Traditions of the Fathers, the *Pharisaical* or human Traditions; for in this Place he treateth not of the *Pharisaical* Traditions, but of a far higher Matter, and therefore he calleth even that holy Law of *Moses*, the Father's Traditions; that is to say, received and left as an Inheritance from the Fathers. For these (saith he) *when I was in the Jewish Religion, I was very zealous*. He speaketh after the same Manner to the *Philippians*, *As touching the Law, (saith he) a Pharisee, concerning Zeal, persecuting the Church, touching the Righteousness which is in the Law, blameless*, Phil. iii. 5, 6. As tho' he would say, Here I may glory, and may compare with the whole Nation of the *Jews*, yea even with the best and holiest of all those which are of the Circumcision; let them shew me if they can, a more zealous and earnest Defender of *Moses's* Law, then I have been. This Thing (O ye *Galatians*) ought to have perswaded you, not to believe these Deceivers, which magnify the Righteousness of the Law, as a Matter of great Importance, whereas, if there were any Cause to glory in the Righteousness of the Law, I have more Cause to glory then any other.

In like Manner say I of myself, that before I was lightned with the Knowledge of the Gospel, I was as zealous for the *Papistical* Laws and Traditions of the Fathers, as ever any was, most earnestly maintaining and defending them as holy and necessary to Salvation. Moreover, I endeavoured to observe and keep them myself as much as was possible for me to do, punishing my poor Body with fasting, watching, praying, and other Exercises, more then all they which at this Day do so bitterly hate and persecute me, because now I take from them the Glory of justifying by Works and Merits. For I was so diligent and superstitious in the Observation hereof, that I laid more upon my Body then without Danger of Health it was able to bear. I honoured the Pope of mere Conscience and Unfeignedly, not seeking after Prebends, Promotions and Livings: But whatsoever I did, I did it with a single Heart, of a good Zeal, and for the Glory of God. But those Things which then were gainful unto me, now with *Paul* I count to be but Loss, for the Excellency of the Knowledge of Jesus Christ my Lord, Phil. iii. 8. But our Adversaries, as idle Bellies and tried with no Tentations, believe not that I and many others have endured such Things: I speak of such as with great Desire sought for Peace and Quietness of Conscience, which notwithstanding in so great Darkness is was not possible for them to find.

Verſes 15, 16, 17. *But when it pleaſed God, who ſeparated me from my Mother's Womb, and called me by his Grace, to reveal his Son in me, that I might preach him among the Heathen; immediately I conferred not with Fleſh and Blood: Neither went I up to Jeruſalem, to them which were Apoſtles before me; but I went into Arabia, and returned again unto Damafcus.*

This is the firſt Journey of Paul. And here he witneſſeth, that ſtraight Way, after he was called by the Grace of God to preach Chriſt among the *Gentiles*, he went into *Arabia* without the Advice of any Man, to that Work whereunto he was called. And this Place witneſſeth by whom he was taught, and by what Means he came to the Knowledge of the Goſpel and to his Apoſtleſhip. *When it had pleaſed God,* (ſaith he.) As if he would ſay, I have not deſerved it, becauſe I was zealous of the Law of God without Judgment, nay, rather this fooliſh and wicked Zeal ſtirred me up, that God ſo permitting, I fell Head-long into more abominable and outrageous Sins. I perſecuted the Church of God, I was an Enemy to Chriſt, I blaſphemed his Goſpel, and to conclude, I was the Author of ſhedding much innocent Blood. This was my Deſert, in the Miſt of this cruel Rage I was called to ſuch inſtimable Grace. What, was it becauſe of this outrageous Cruelty? No forſooth. But the abundant Grace of God, who calleth and ſheweth Mercy to whom he will, pardoned and forgave me all thoſe Blaſphemies: And for theſe my horrible Sins (which then I thought to be perfect Righteouſneſs and an acceptable Service unto God) he gave unto me his Grace, the Knowledge of his Truth, and called me to be an Apoſtle.

The firſt Journey of Paul.

Paul's Merit of Deſert

We alſo are come at this Day to the Knowledge of Grace by the ſelf ſame Merits. I crucified Chriſt daily in my Monkiſh Life, and blaſphemed God thro' my falſe Faith wherein I then continually lived. Outwardly I was not as other Men, Extortioners, Unjuſt, Whoremongers; but I kept Chaſtity, Poverty and Obedience. Moreover, I was free from the Cares of this preſent Life. I was only given to faſting, watching, praying, ſaying of Maſſes and ſuch like. Notwithſtanding in the mean Time I ſoftred under this cloked Holineſs and Truſt in mine own Righteouſneſs, continual Miſtruſt, Doubtfulneſs, Fear, Hatred and Blaſphemy againſt God. And this my Righteouſneſs was nothing elſe, but a filthy Puddle, and the very Kingdom of the Devil. For Satan loveth ſuch Saints, and accounteth them for his dear Darlings, who deſtroy their own Bodies and ſouls, and deprive themſelves of all the Bleſſings of God's Gifts.

By what Deſerts we obtain Grace.

What Manner of Saints the Devil loveth.

Gifts. In the mean Time notwithstanding, Wickedness, Blindness, Contempt of God, Ignorance of the Gospel, Prophanation of the Sacraments, blaspheming and treading of Christ under Foot, and the Abuse of all the Benefits and Gifts of God do reign in them at the full. To conclude, such Saints are the Bond-slaves of Satan, and therefore are driven to speak, think and do whatsoever he will, altho' outwardly they seem to excel all others in good Works, in Holiness and Strickness of Life.

Such we were under the Popedom; verily no less (if not more) contumelious and blasphemous against Christ and his Gospel then *Paul* himself, and especially I; for I did so highly esteem the Popes Authority, that to dissent from him even in the least Point, I thought it a Sin worthy of everlasting Death. And that wicked Opinion caused me to think that *John Hus* was a cursed *Heretick*, yea and I accounted it an hainous Offence, but once to think of him; and I would myself in Defence of the Popes Authority have ministred Fire and Sword, for the burning and destroying of that *Heretick*, and thought it

Publicans and Sinners are far better then Merit-mongers. an high Service unto God so to do. Wherefore if you compare Publicans and Harlots with these holy Hypocrites, they are not evil. For they when they offend have Remorse of Conscience, and do not justify their wicked Doings; but these Men are so far from acknowledging their Abominations, Idolatries, wicked Well-worshippings and Ceremonies to be Sins, that they affirm the same to be Righteousness, and a most acceptable Sacrifice unto God, yea they adore them as Matters of singular Holiness, and thro' them do promise Salvation unto others, and also sell them for Money, as Things available to Salvation.

This is then our goodly Righteousness, this is our high Merit which bringeth unto us the Knowledge of Grace; to wit, That we have so deadly and so devilishly persecuted, blasphemed, troden under Foot, and contemned God, Christ, the Gospel, Faith, the Sacraments, all godly Men, the true Worship of God, and have taught

The *Papists* a bloody Generation. and stablished quite contrary Things. And the more holy we were, the more were we blinded, and the more did we worship the Devil. There was not one of us, but he was a Blood-sucker, if not in Deed, yet in Heart.

### Verse 15. *But when it pleased God,*

As tho' he would say; it is the alone and inestimable Favour of God, that not only he hath spared me so wicked and so cursed a Wretch, such a Blasphemer, a Persecutor, and a Rebel against God, but besides that, hath also given unto me the Knowledge of Salvation, his Spirit, Christ his Son, the Office of an Apostle and everlasting Life. So God beholding us guilty in the like Sins, hath not only pardoned our Impieties and Blasphemies, of his mere Mercy for Christ's Sake, but hath also overwhelmed us with great Benefits and spiritual Gifts. But many of us are not only unthankful unto God for this his inestimable Grace, and as it is written,

2 Pet. i. 9. do forget the cleansing of their old Sins, but also opening again a Window to the Devil, they begin to loath his Word, and many also do pervert and corrupt it, and so become Authors of new Errors. The Ends of these Men are worse then the Beginnings, *Matth. xii. 45.*

*Verse 15. Who separated me from my Mother's Womb,*

This is an *Hebrew Phrase.* As if he said: Which had sanctified, ordained and prepared me. That is, God had appointed, when I was yet in my Mother's Womb, that I should so rage against his Church, and that afterward he would mercifully call me back again from the Midst of my Cruelty and Blasphemy, by his mere Grace, into the Way of Truth and Salvation. To be short, when I was not yet born, I was an Apostle in the Sight of God, and when the Time was come, I was declared an Apostle before the whole World.

Thus *Paul* cutteth off all Deserts, and giveth Glory to God alone, but to himself all Shame and Confusion. As tho' he would say, All the Gifts both small and great, as well spiritual as corporal, which God purposed to give unto me, and all the good Things which at any Time in all my Life I should do, God himself had before appointed when I was yet in my Mother's Womb, where I could neither wish, think nor do any good Thing. Therefore this Gift The Deserts also came unto me by the mere Predestination and free of St. *Paul*. Mercy of God before I was yet born. Moreover, after I was born, he supported me, being loaden with innumerable and most horrible Iniquities. And that he might the more manifestly declare the unspeakable and inestimable Greatness of his Mercy towards me, he of his mere Grace forgave my abominable and infinite Sins, and moreover replenished me with such Plenty of his Grace, that I did not only know what Things are given unto Christ, but preached the same also unto others. Such are the Deserts and Merits of all Men, and especially of those old Dotards, who exercise themselves wholly in the stinking Puddles of Man's own Righteousness.

*Verse 15. And called me by his Grace,*

Mark the Diligence of the Apostle. *He called me,* (saith he) How, was it for my *Pharisaical* Religion, or for my blameless and holy Life, for my Prayers, Fasting and Works? No. Much less then for my Blasphemies, Persecutions, Oppressions? *How then, by his mere Grace only?*

*Verse 16. To reveal his Son in me,*

You hear in this Place, what Manner of Doctrine is given and committed to *Paul*; to wit, the Doctrine of the Gospel, which is the Revelation of the Son of God. This is a Doctrine quite contrary to the Law, which revealeth

*Paul's Doctrine.*

not the Son of God, but it sheweth forth Sin, it terrifieth the Conscience, it revealeth Death, the Wrath and Judgment of God, and Hell. The Gospel therefore is such a Doctrine, as admitteth no Law; yea it must be separate as far from the Law, as there is Distance between Heaven and Earth. This Difference in itself is easy and plain, but unto us it is hard and full of Difficulty. For it is an easy Matter to say that the Gospel is nothing else but the revealing of the Son of God, or the Knowledge of Jesus Christ, and not the revealing of the Law. But in the Agony and Conflict of Conscience to hold this fast and to practise it indeed, it is a hard Matter, yea to them also that be most exercised therein.

**The Definition of the Gospel.** Now, if the Gospel be the revealing of the Son of God (as *Paul* defineth it in this Place,) then surely it accuseth not, it seareth not the Conscience, it threatneth not Death, it bringeth not to Despair, as the Law doth; but it is

a Doctrine concerning Christ, which is neither Law nor Work, but our Righteousness, Wisdom, Sanctification and Redemption,

**The Papists** have turned the Gospel into the Law of Charity, and Christ into *Moses*. *1 Cor. i. 30.* Altho' this Thing be more clear then the Sun Light, yet notwithstanding the Madnes and Blindnes of the *Papists* hath been so great, that of the Gospel they have made a Law of Charity, and of Christ a Law-maker, giving more straight and heavy Commandments then *Moses* himself. But the Gospel teacheth, that Christ came not to set forth a new Law, and to give Commandments as touching Manners; but that he came to this

End, that he might be made an Oblation for the Sins of the whole World, and that our Sins might be forgiven, and everlasting Life given unto us for his Sake, and not for the Works of the Law, or for our own Righteousness. Of this inestimable Treasure freely be-

**The Gospel** is not learned by any Study of Man, but is taught from above by God himself. Wherefore it is a Kind of Doctrine that is not learned or gotten by any Study, Diligence or Wisdom of Man, nor yet by the Law of God, but is revealed by God himself (as *Paul* saith in this Place) first by the eternal Word; then by the Working of God's Spirit inwardly. The Gospel therefore is a divine Word that came down from Heaven and is revealed by the Holy Ghost, (who was also sent for the same Purpose) yet in such Sort notwithstanding that the outward Word must go before. For

*Paul* himself had no inward Revelation, until he had heard the outward Word from Heaven, which was this, *Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?* Acts ix. 4. First therefore he heard the outward Word, then afterwards followed Revelations, the Knowledge of the Word, Faith, and the Gifts of the Holy Ghost.

**Verse 16.** *That I might preach him among the Heathen;*

It pleased God (saith he) *to reveal his Son in me.* To what Purpose? Not only that I myself should believe in the Son of God, but also that I should preach him among the *Gentiles.* *Paul the Apostle of the Gentiles.* And why not among the *Jews*? Lo, here we see that *Paul* is properly the *Apostle of the Gentiles*, albeit he preached Christ among the *Jews* also.

*Paul* comprehendeth here in few Words (as he is wont) his whole Divinity, which is to preach Christ among the *Gentiles*: As if he would say, I will not burden the *Gentiles* with the Law, because I am the Apostle and Evangelist of the *Gentiles*, and not their Law-giver. Thus he directeth all his Words against the false Apostles. As tho' he would say, O ye *Galatians*, ye have not heard the Righteousness of the Law or of Works to be taught by me; for this belongeth to *Moses* and not to me *Paul*, being the Apostle of the *Gentiles*. For my Office and Ministry is to bring the Gospel unto you, and to shew unto you the same Revelation which I myself have had. Therefore ought you to hear no Teacher that teacheth the Law. For among the *Gentiles* the Law ought not to be preached but the Gospel; not *Moses*, but the Son of God; not the Righteousness of Works, but the Righteousness of Faith. This is the Preaching that properly belongeth to the *Gentiles*.

Verse 16. *Immediately I conferred not with Flesh and Blood:*

*Paul* here making Mention of *Flesh and Blood*, speaketh not of the Apostles. For by and by he addeth, *Neither went I up to Jerusalem, to them which were Apostles before me.* But this is *Paul's* Meaning, that after he had once received the Revelation of the Gospel from Christ, he consulted not with any Man in *Damascus*, much less did he desire any Man to teach him the Gospel: Again, that he went not to *Jerusalem*, to *Peter* and the other Apostles to learn the Gospel of them, but that forthwith he preached Jesus Christ in *Damascus*, where he received Baptism of *Ananias*, and Imposition of Hands; for it was necessary for him to have the outward Sign and Testimony of his Calling. The same also writeth *Luke*, *Acts ix.*

Verse 17. *Neither went I up to Jerusalem, to them which were Apostles before me, but I went into Arabia, and returned again unto Damascus.*

That is, I went into *Arabia* before I saw the Apostles or consulted with them, and forthwith I took upon me the Office of Preaching among the *Gentiles*; for thereunto I was called, and had also received a Revelation from God. He did not then receive his Gospel of any

Man, or of the Apostles themselves, but was content with his heavenly Calling, and with the Revelation of Jesus Christ alone. The Confutation of the Argument of the false Apostles. Wherefore this whole Place is a Confutation of the false Apostles Argument, which they used against *Paul*, saying, That he was but a Schollar and a Hearer of the Apostles, who lived after the Law; and moreover that *Paul* himself also had lived according to the Law, and therefore it was necessary that the *Gentiles* themselves should keep the Law and be circumcised. To the End therefore that he might stop the Mouths of these Cavilleers, he rehearseth this long History: Before my Conversion (saith he) I learned not my Gospel of the Apostles, nor of any other of the Brethren that believed, (for I persecuted extremely, not only this Doctrine, but also the Church of God, and wasted it,) neither after my Conversion; for forthwith I preached not *Moses* with his Law, but Jesus Christ at *Damascus*, consulting with no Man, neither as yet having seen any of the Apostles.

*Verses 18, 19. Then after three Years I went up to Jerusalem, to see Peter, and abode with him fifteen Days. But other of the Apostles saw I none, save James the Lord's Brother.*

*Paul* granteth that he was with the Apostles, but not with all the Apostles. Howbeit he declareth that he went up to *Jerusalem* to them, not commanded, but of his own Accord, not to learn any Thing of them, but to see *Peter*. The same Thing *Luke* also writeth in *Acts* ix. 27. that *Barnabas* led *Paul* to the Apostles, and declared to them, how that he had seen the Lord in the Way, and that he spake unto him, also that he had preached boldly at *Damascus* in the Name of Jesus. This Witness beareth *Barnabas* of him. All his Words therefore are so framed, that they prove his Gospel not to be of Man. Indeed he granteth that he had seen *Peter* and *James* the Brother of our Lord, but none other of the Apostles besides these two, and that he learned nothing of them.

He granteth therefore that he was at *Jerusalem* with the Apostles; and this did the false Apostles only report. He granteth moreover that he had lived after the Manner of the *Jews*, but yet only *Paul* became among the *Jews*. And this is it which he saith in the all Things to all Men. *1 Cor. ix. 19, 20, ——— 22. For tho' I be free from all Men, yet have I made myself Servant unto all, that I might gain the more. To the Jews, I became as a Jew, that I might gain the Jews: ——— I am made all Things to all Men, that I might by all Means save some.* He granteth therefore that he was at *Jerusalem* with the Apostles, but he denieth that he had learned his Gospel of them. Also he denieth that he was constrained to teach the Gospel as the Apostles had prescribed. The whole Effect then of this Matter

Matter lieth in this Word, *to see* : I went (saith he) *to see* Peter, and not to learn of him. Therefore neither is *Peter* my Maller, nor yet *James*. And as for the other Apostles, he utterly denieth that he saw any of them.

But why doth *Paul* repeat this so often, that he learned not his Gospel of Men, nor of the Apostles themselves? His Purpose is this, to perswade the Churches of *Galatia* which were now led away by the false Apostles, and to put them out of all doubt, that his Gospel was the true Word of God, and for this Cause he repeateth it so often. And if he had not prevailed herein, he could never have stopped the Mouths of the false Apostles. For thus they would have objected against him ; we are as good as *Paul*, we are the Disciples of the Apostles as well as he ; moreover, he is but one alone, and we are many ; therefore we excel him, both in Authority and in Number also.

Why *Paul* glorieth so much that he hath not learned his Gospel of any Man.

Here *Paul* was constrained to glory, to affirm and swear, that he learned not his Gospel of any Man, neither received it of the Apostles themselves. For his Ministry was here in great Danger, and all the Churches likewise which had used him as their chief Pastor and Teacher. The Necessity therefore of his Ministry and of all the Churches required, that with an holy Pride he should vaunt of his Vocation, and of the Knowledge of the Gospel revealed unto him by Christ, that their Consciences might be thoroughly perswaded that his Doctrine was the true Word of God. Here had *Paul* a weighty Matter in Hand ; namely, that all the Churches in *Galatia* might be kept in sound Doctrine ; yea, the Controversy was indeed, as touching Life and Death everlasting. For if the pure Word of God be once taken away, there remaineth no Consolation, no Life, no Salvation. The Cause therefore why he reciteth these Things, is to retain the Churches in true and sound Doctrine. His Purpose is therefore to shew by this History, that he received the Gospel of no Man. Again, that he preached for a certain Time, namely the Space of 3 or 4 Years, both in *Damascus* and *Arabia*, by Revelation from God, before he had seen any of the Apostles, even the self-same Gospel that the Apostles had preached.

Verse 20. *Now the Things which I write unto you, behold, before God I lie not.*

Wherefore addeth he an Oath ? Because he reporteth an History he is constrained to swear, to the End that the Churches might believe him, and also that the false Apostles should not say, Who knoweth whether *Paul* speaketh the Truth or no ? Here you see that *Paul* the elect Vessel of God, was in so great Contempt among his own *Galatians*, to whom he had preached Christ, that it was necessary for him to swear that he spake the Truth. If this happened then to the Apostles, to have so mighty Adversaries, that they

*Paul* swear-eth.

they durst despise them and accuse them of lying, What marvel is it if the like at this Day happen unto us, which in no Respect are worthy to be compared with the Apostles? He sweareth therefore in a Matter (as it seemeth) of no Weight, that he speaketh the Truth, namely, that he tarried not with *Peter* to learn of him, but only to see him; but if you weigh the Matter diligently, it is very weighty and of great Importance, as may appear by that is said afore. In like Manner we swear after the Example of *Paul*, in this wise, *God knoweth that we lie not, &c.*

**Verse 21.** *Afterwards I came into the Regions of Syria and Cilicia;*

*Syria* and *Cilicia* are Countries near situate together. This is it that he still goeth about to perswade, that as well before he had seen the Apostles as after, he was always a Teacher of the Gospel, and that he received it by the Revelation of Christ, and was never any Disciple of the Apostles.

**Verses 22, 23, 24.** *And was unknown by Face unto the Churches of Judea, which were in Christ. But they had heard only, That he which persecuted us in Times past, now preacheth the Faith which once he destroyed. And they glorified God in me.*

The Testimony of all the Churches in *Judea* for *Paul*.

This he addeth for the Seque and Continuance of the History, that after he had seen *Peter*, he went into *Syria* and *Cilicia*, and there preached, and so preached that he win the Testimony of all the Churches in *Judea*. As tho' he would say, I appeal to the Testimony of all the Churches, yea even of those which are in *Judea*. For the Churches do witness, not only in *Damascus*, *Arabia*, *Syria* and *Cilicia*, but also *Judea*, that I have preached the same Faith which I once withstood and persecuted. And they glorified God in me; not because I taught that Circumcision and the Law of *Moses* ought to be kept, but for the preaching of Faith, and for the edifying of the Churches by the Ministry of the Gospel. Ye therefore have the Testimony not only of the People of *Damascus* and of *Arabia*, but also of the whole Catholick or universal Church of *Judea*.



## C H A P. II.

Verse 1. *Then fourteen Years after, I went up again to Jerusalem,*

**P**AUL taught that the *Gentiles* were justified by Faith only, without the Works of the Law. This Doctrine when he had published abroad among the *Gentiles*, he cometh to *Antioch*, and declareth to the Disciples what he had done. Then they which had been trained up in the old Customs of the Law, rose against *Paul* with great Indignation, for that he preached to the *Gentiles* Liberty from the Bondage of the Law. Whereupon followed great Dissention, which afterwards stirred up new Troubles. *Paul* and *Barnabas* stood strongly to the Truth, and testified, saying, † Wheresoever we preached among the *Gentiles*, the Holy Ghost came and fell upon those which heard the Word: And this was done throughout all the Churches of the *Gentiles*, but we preached not Circumcision, neither did we require the Keeping of the Law, but we preached only Faith in Jesus Christ, and at his preaching of Faith, God gave to the Hearers the Holy Ghost. The Holy Ghost therefore doth approve the Faith of the *Gentiles* without the Law and Circumcision. For if the Preaching of the Gospel and Faith of the *Gentiles* in Christ had not pleased him he had not come down in a visible Shape upon the Uncircumcised, which heard the Word. Seeing then by the only Hearing of Faith he came down upon them, it is certain that the Holy Ghost by this Sign hath approved the Faith of the *Gentiles*. For it doth not appear that this was ever done before at the teaching of the Law.

Then the *Jews* and many of the *Pharisees* which did believe, and notwithstanding bare yet a great Zeal to the Law, earnestly striving to maintain the Glory thereof, set themselves fiercely against *Paul* (who affirmed that the *Gentiles* were justified by Faith only without the Works of the Law) contending that the Law ought to be kept, and that the *Gentiles* ought to be circumcised; for other-

*Paul's* Doctrine.

Contention of such as were turned from the *Jews* against *Paul*.

† The Declaration of *Paul* and *Barnabas*, as touching those Things which were done among the *Gentiles*.

What they answer to *Paul* in this Disputation, which are so earnest for the Law.

wise

wife they could not be saved. And no marvel; for the very Name of the Law of God is holy and dreadful. The *Heathen* Man, which never knew any Thing of the Law of God, if he hear any Man say;

This Doctrine is the Law of God, he is moved therewith. They that were converted from the *Jews*, hardly forsook the Law. How then could it be but the *Jews* must needs be moved, and vehemently contend for the Maintenance of the Law of God, which even from their Infancy had been nursed and trained up therein?

We see at this Day how obstinate the *Papists* be in defending their Traditions and Doctrines of Devils. Wherefore it was much less to be marvelled, that the *Jews* did so vehemently and zealously strive for the Maintenance of their Law, which they had received from God. Custom is of such Force, that whereas Nature is of itself inclined to the Observation of the Law, by long Continuance it so confirmeth Nature, that now it becometh a double Nature.

Therefore it was not possible for the *Jews* which were newly converted to Christ, suddenly to forsake the Law; who tho' they had received the Faith of Christ, thought it necessary notwithstanding to observe the Law. And with this their Weakness God did bear for a Time, until the Doctrine of the Gospel might be plainly discerned from the Law. So he bare with the Infirmary of *Israel* in the Time of King *Ahab*, when the People halted between two Religions. He bare also with our Weakness, whilst we were under the Blindness of the Pope; for he is Long-suffering and full of Mercy. But we must not abuse this Goodness and Patience of the Lord, nor continue still in our Weakness and Error, since the Truth is now revealed by the clear Light of the Gospel.

Moreover, they that stood against *Paul*, affirming that the *Gentiles* ought to be circumcised, had to say for themselves, first the Law and Custom of the Country, then the Example of the Apostles, and last of all the Example of *Paul* himself who had circumcised *Timothy*. Wherefore if *Paul* in his Defence said, that he did not this of Necessity, but for Christian Love and Liberty, least they which were weak in Faith should be offended, Which of them would believe him? Hereunto all the People would answer: Since it is evident that thou hast circumcised *Timothy*, thou mayst say what thou wilt; notwithstanding thou hast done it. For this is a Matter far passing all Men's Capacity, and therefore they could not understand it. Moreover, no Defence can serve when a Man hath lost the Favour of the People, and is fallen into such deadly Hatred and Contempt. *Paul* therefore seeing this Contention and these Clamours daily to increase more and more, and being also warned by Revelation from God, after fourteen Years, (besides those wherein he had preached in *Damascus* and *Arabia*) goeth up again to *Jerusalem*, to confer his Gospel with the other Apostles; yet not for his own Cause, but for the Peoples Sake.

Now,

Now, this Contention touching the Observation of the Law, exercised *Paul* a long Time after, and wrought him much trouble. But I do not think that this is the Contention which *Luke* speaketh of in the xv. of the *Acts*, which happened (as it appeareth) by and by after the Beginning of the Gospel. But this History which *Paul* here mentioneth, seemeth to be done long after, when *Paul* had now almost eighteen Years preached the Gospel.

**Verse 1.** *With Barnabas, and took Titus with me also.*

He joineth unto himself two Witnesses, *Barnabas* and *Paul* taketh *Titus*; *Barnabas* was *Paul's* Companion in preaching to the *Gentiles* Freedom from the Servitude of the Law. He was also a Witness of all those Things which *Paul* did, and had seen the Holy Ghost given unto the *Gentiles* which were circumcised and free from *Moses's* Law, by the only preaching of Faith in Jesus Christ, and he only stuck to *Paul* in this Point, that it was not necessary that the *Gentiles* should be burdened with the Law, but that it was not enough for them to believe in Christ. Wherefore by his own Experience he testified with *Paul* against the *Jews*, that the *Gentiles* were made the Children of God, and saved by Faith alone in Christ Jesus, without the Law or Circumcision.

*Titus* was not only a Christian, but also the chief Overseer in *Crete*: For unto him *Paul* had committed the Charge of governing the Churches there, *Tit. i.* And this *Titus* was a *Gentile*.

**Verse 2.** *And I went up by Revelation,*

For unless *Paul* had been admonished by Revelation, he had not gone up to *Jerusalem*. But because God warned him by a special Revelation, and commanded him to go up, therefore he went. And this he did to bridle, or at least to appease the *Jews* that believed and yet obstinately contended about the Keeping of the Law, to the End that the Truth of the Gospel might the more be advanced and confirmed.

**Verse 2.** *And communicated unto them that Gospel*

You hear then that at length, after eighteen Years he went up to *Jerusalem* and conferred with the Apostles touching his Gospel.

**Verse 2.** *Which I preach among the Gentiles,*

For among the *Jews* he suffered the Law and Circumcision for a Time, as the other Apostles did, *I am made all Things unto all Men*, (saith he) *1 Cor. ix. 22.* Yet never holding the true Doctrine of the Gospel, which he preferred all Things above Place unto it.

preferred above the Law, Circumcision, the Apostles, yea and an Angel from Heaven. For thus saith he unto the *Jews*, thro' this Man was preached unto you the Forgiveness of Sins: And he addeth very plainly And by him all that believe are justified from all Things, from which ye could not be justified by the Law of Moses, Acts xiii. 38, 39. For this Cause he teacheth and defendeth the Doctrine of the Gospel so diligently every where, and never suffereth it to come in Danger. Notwithstanding he did not suddenly break out at the first, but had regard unto the Weak. And because the Weak should not be offended, there is no doubt but he spake to the *Jews* after this Manner: If that unprofitable Service of *Moses's* Law which nothing availeth to Righteousness, do so highly please you, ye may keep it still for me, so that the *Gentiles* which are not bound to this Law, be not charged therewithal.

*Paul* therefore confesseth, that he conferred the Gospel with the Apostles, but (saith he) they profited me or taught me nothing; but I rather for the Defence of the Liberty of the Gospel, in the Presence of the Apostles did constantly resist those which would needs force the Observation of the Law upon the *Gentiles*, and so did overcome them. Wherefore your false Apostles lie in saying that I circumcised *Timothy*, that I shaved my Head at *Cenchrea*, and that I went up to *Jerusalem* at the Commandment of the Apostles. Nay rather, I glory that in going up to *Jerusalem* by the Revelation of God, and not at the Commandment of the Apostles, and there conferring my Gospel with them, I brought to pass the contrary, that is to say, obtained that the Apostles did approve me, and not those which were against me.

Now, the Question whereupon the Apostles conferred together in this Assembly, was this, Whether the Keeping of the Law were necessary to Justification or no? To this *Paul* answereth: I have preached unto the *Gentiles*, according to my Gospel which I received from God, Faith in Christ and not the Law, and at this preaching of Faith they received the Holy Ghost: And hereof *Barnabas* shall bear me Witness. Wherefore I conclude that the *Gentiles* ought not to be burdened with the Law, nor to be circumcised.

Notwithstanding I give no Restraint to the *Jews* herein; who if they will needs keep the Law and be circumcised, I am not against it, so that they do it with Freedom of Conscience. And thus have I taught and lived among the *Jews*, being made a Jew unto the *Jews*, holding ever the Truth of the Gospel notwithstanding.

Verse 2. *But privately to them which were of Reputation,*

That is to say, I did not only confer with the Brethren, but with those that were the chiefest among them.

Verse 2. *Lest by any Means I should run, or had run in vain.*

Not that *Paul* doubted, that he ran or had run in vain, for as much as he had now preached the Gospel eighteen Years (for it followeth incontinent in the Text, that he had continued firm and constant all this while, and had prevailed,) but for that many did think that *Paul* had therefore preached the Gospel for many Years in vain, because he had set the *Gentiles* at Liberty from the Observation of the Law. Moreover, this Opinion daily more and more increased, that the Law was necessary to justification. Wherefore in going up to *Jerusalem* by Revelation, he meant to remedy this Evil, that by this Conference all Men might plainly see his Gospel to be in no Point contrary to the Doctrine of the other Apostles, to the End that by this Means he might stop the Mouths of the Adversaries, which would else have said that he ran or had run in vain. Note here by the Way, the Virtue of Man's own Righteousness, or the Righteousness of the Law to be such, that they which teach it to run and live in vain.

Why *Paul* faith left I had run in vain.

Verse 3. *But neither Titus, who was with me, being a Greek, was compelled to be circumcised:*

This Word [*was compelled*] sufficiently declareth that the Conference and Conclusion was; to wit, That the *Gentiles* should not be constrained to be circumcised, but that Circumcision should be permitted to them for a Time; not as necessary to Righteousness, but for a Reference to the Fathers, and for Charities Sake towards the Weak (least they should be offended) until they were grown up more strong in Faith. For it might have seemed a very strange and unseemly Thing, upon sudden to forsake the Law and Traditions of the Fathers, which had been given to this People from God with so great Glory.

What was decreed in this Conference.

*Paul* then did not reject Circumcision as a damnable Thing, neither did he by Word or Deed enforce the *Jews* to forsake it. For in the 1 Cor. i. 18. he faith, *Is any Man called, being circumcised? let him not become uncircumcised.* But he rejected Circumcision as a Thing not necessary to Righteousness, seeing the others themselves were not justified thereby, but it was to them as a Sign only or a Seal of Righteousness, whereby they testified and exercised their Faith, Rom. iv. 11. Notwithstanding the believing *Jews* which were yet weak and bare a Zeal of the Law, hearing that Circumcision was not necessary to Righteousness could understand this no otherwise, but that it was altogether unprofitable and damnable. And this fond Opinion of the weak *Jews* the same Apostles did increase, to the End that the Hearts of the People being stirred up against *Paul* by this Occasion, they might roughly discredit his Doctrine. So we at this Day do reject fasting and other good Exercises as damnable Christian Exercises at this Day.

How *Paul* refused Circumcision.

How we teach fasting Things; and other

Things; but we teach that by these Exercises we do not obtain Remission of Sins. When the People hear this, by and by they judge us to speak against good Works. And this Opinion the *Papists* do confirm and increase by their Preachings and Writings. But they ly, and do us great wrong. For many Years past there was never any that taught more sound and godly Doctrine as touching good Works, then we do at this Day.

What *Paul* determined in that Conference of the Apostles. *Paul* therefore did not so condemn Circumcision, as tho' it were Sin to receive it or keep it; for the *Jews* would have been highly offended; but it was decided in this Conference and Counsel, that it was not necessary to Justification, and therefore not to be forced upon the *Gentiles*. So this Moderation was found, that for the

Reverence of the Fathers, and Charity towards the weak in Faith, the *Jews* should keep the Law and Circumcision still for a Time; notwithstanding they should not thereby seek to be justified. And moreover that the *Gentiles* should not be burdened therewith, both because it would have been to them a very strange Thing, and also a *Burden untollerable*, Acts xv. 10. briefly that none should be constrained to be circumcised, or any restrained from Circumcision.

*Paul* therefore compelled none that would be circumcised to remain uncircumcised, so that he knew Circumcision not to be necessary to Justification. This Constraint would *Paul* take away. Therefore he suffered the *Jews* to keep the Law, so that they did it with a free Conscience: For he had ever taught, as well the *Jews* as the *Gentiles*, that in Conscience they ought to be free from the Law and Circumcision; like as all the Patriarchs and all the Faithful in the old Testament were free in Conscience and justified by Faith, and not by the Law or Circumcision. And indeed *Paul* might have suffered *Titus* to be circumcised; but because he saw that they would compel him thereunto, he would not. For if they had prevailed therein, by and by they would have gathered that it had been necessary to Justification, and so thro' this Sufferance they would have triumphed against *Paul*.

Now as the false Apostles would not leave Circumcision and the Observation of the Law indifferent, but required the same as necessary to Salvation, so at this Day our Adversaries do obstinately contend, that Mens Traditions cannot be omitted without Peril of Salvation; and thus of an Example of Charity, they make an Example of Faith, when notwithstanding there is but one Example of Faith, which is, to believe in Jesus Christ. And this, as it is alone necessary to Salvation, so doth it also indifferently pertain to all Men. Notwithstanding the Adversaries would rather worship the Devil ten Times instead

The obstinate Adversaries defend their wicked Doctrine by Violence and Tyranny.

sent unto us in any Point. But what then? Let us go on boldly in the Name of the Lord of Hosts, and for all this, let us not cease to set forth the Glory of Jesus Christ; and let us fight valiantly against the Kingdom of Antichrist by the Word and by Prayer, *That the Name of God alone may be sanctified, that his Kingdom may come, and that his Will may be done*, Mattl. vi. 9, 10. And that this may speedily come to pass, we desire even from the Bottom of our Hearts, and say, *Amen, Amen.*

This Triumph of *Paul* therefore was very glorious; namely, That *Titus* which was a *Gentile*, altho' he were in the Midst of the Apostles and all the Faithful, where this Question was so vehemently debated, was not yet constrained to be circumcised. This Victory *Paul* carrieth away, and saith that in this Conference it was decided by the Consent of all the Apostles, the whole Church also approving the same, that *Titus* should not be circumcised. This is a strong Argument and maketh very much against the false Apostles. And with this Argument, *Neither was Titus compelled to be circumcised*, *Paul* was able to repress and mightily to convince all his Adversaries: As if he should say, Why do these counterfeit Apostles so falsely report of me, saying, that I am compelled to keep Circumcision by the Commandment of the Apostles, seeing I have the Witness of all the Faithful in *Jerusalem*, and moreover of all the Apostles themselves, that by my Pursuit and Travail the contrary was there determined, and that I did not only there prevail that *Titus* should not be circumcised, but that the Apostles also did approve and ratify the same? Your counterfeit Apostles therefore do ly deadly, which slander me under the Name of the Apostles, and thereby deceive you; for I have the Apostles, and all the Faithful, not against me, but with me. And this I prove by the Example of *Titus*.

Notwithstanding, *Paul* (as I have often said) did not condemn Circumcision as an unprofitable Thing, nor constrained any Man thereunto. For it is neither Sin nor Righteousness to be circumcised or uncircumcised, as it is neither Sin nor Righteousness to eat or drink. *For neither if we eat, are we the better; neither if we eat not, are we the worse*, 1 Cor. viii. 8. But if any Man should add thereto either Sin or Righteousness, and say, If thou eat thou sinnest, if thou abstain thou art righteous, he should shew himself both foolish and wicked. Therefore to join Ceremonies with Sin or Righteousness, is great Impiety: As the Pope doth, who in his Form of excommunication, threatneth to all those that do not obey the Law of the Bishop of *Rome*, God's great Curse and indignation, and so maketh all his Laws necessary to Salvation. Wherefore the Devil himself speaketh in the Person of the Pope in all the Popes Decrees. For if Salvation consisteth in keeping the Popes Laws, What need have we of Christ to be our Justifier and Saviour?

The Triumph of *Paul* against the false Apostles.

The Pope putteth Righteousness in the keeping of his Traditions, and Damnation in the break-

*Verses 4, 5. And that because of false Brethren unawares brought in, who came in privily to spie out our Liberty, which we have in Christ Jesus, that they might bring us into Bondage: To whom we gave Place by Subjection, no not for an Hour; that the Truth of the Gospel might continue with you.*

Here *Paul* sheweth the Cause why he went up to *Jerusalem*, and there conferred his Gospel with the other Apostles, and why he would not circumcise *Titus*: Not that he might be the more certain, or confirmed in the Gospel by the Apostles, for he nothing doubted thereof, but that the Truth of the Gospel might continue in the Churches of the *Galatians*, and in all the Churches of the *Gentiles*. We see then that the Business of *Paul* was no light Matter.

Now, where he speaketh of the Truth of the Gospel, he sheweth that there be two Gospels, a true and a false Gospel. Indeed the Gospel of itself is simple, true and sincere; but by the Malice of Satan's Ministry it is corrupt and defaced. Therefore where he saith, *The Truth of the Gospel*, he would have us to understand also the contrary.

The Gospel of the false Apostles.

As if he would say, The false Apostles do also preach a Faith and a Gospel, but they are both false; therefore have I set myself so constantly against them: And in that I would not give Place unto them, this have I brought

The Gospel of the Pope and other Hereticks.

to pass, that the Truth of the Gospel continueth with you. So the Pope and *Anabaptists* do brag at this Day, that they teach the Gospel and Faith in Christ. True it is, but with such Fruit as the false Apostles once did, whom *Paul* calleth before in the first Chapter, Troublers of the

Church and Subverters of the Gospel of Christ. On the other Side he saith that he teacheth the Truth of the Gospel. As if he should say, Those Things which the false Apostles teach, brag they never so much that they teach the Truth, are nothing else but stark Lies. So all *Hereticks* pretend the Name of God, of Christ, and of the Church. Also they pretend that they will not teach Errors or Lies, but most certain Truth and the pure Gospel of Christ.

The Truth of the Gospel.

Now, the Truth of the Gospel is, that our Righteousness cometh by Faith alone, without the Works of the Law. The Corruption or Falsehood of the Gospel, is, that we are justified by Faith, but not without the Works of the Law. With the like Condition the false Apostles also preached the Gospel. Even so do our *Papists* at this Day. For they say that we must believe in Christ, and

The Corruption of the Gospel.

The Doctrine of the *Papists* concerning Faith.

that Faith is the Foundation of our Salvation; but it justifieth not, except it be furnished with Charity. This

is not the Truth of the Gospel, but Falsehood and Dissimulation. But the true Gospel indeed is, that Works or Charity are not the Ornament or Perfection of Faith; but that Faith of itself is God's Gift and God's Work in our Hearts, which therefore justifieth us, because it apprehendeth Christ our Redeemer. Man's Reason hath the Law for his Object, thus thinking with itself; This I have done, this I have not done: But Faith being in her own proper Office, hath no other Object but Jesus Christ the Son of God, delivered to Death for the Sins of the whole World. It looketh not to Charity. It saith not, What have I done? What have I offended? What have I deserved? But what hath Christ done? What hath he deserved? Here the Truth of the Gospel answereth thee, he hath redeemed thee from thy Sin, from the Devil, and from eternal Death, Faith therefore acknowledgeth, that in this one Person Jesus Christ, it hath Forgiveness of Sins and eternal Life. He that turneth his Eyes away from this Object, hath no true Faith, but a fantasy and a vain Opinion and turneth his Eyes from the Promise to the Law, which terrifieth and driveth to Desperation.

Wherefore those Things which the *Papists* Schoolmen have taught concerning the justifying Faith being furnished with Charity, are nothing else but mere Dreams. For that Faith which apprehendeth Christ the Son of God, and is furnished with him is the same Faith which justifieth, and not that Faith which includeth Charity. For a true and stedfast Faith must lay hold upon nothing else but Christ alone, and in the Affections and Terrors of Conscience it hath nothing else to lean unto, but this † Diamond Christ Jesus. Wherefore he that apprehendeth Christ by Faith, altho' he be never so much terrified with the Law and oppressed with the Weight of his Sins, yet may he be bold to glory that he is righteous. How or by what Means? Even by that precious Pearl Christ Jesus, which he possesseth by Faith. This our Adversaries understand not, and therefore they cast away this precious Pearl Christ, and in his Place they set Charity, which they say is their precious Diamond. Now, when they cannot tell what Faith is, it is impossible that they should have Faith; much less can they teach it unto others. And as for that which they will seem to have, it is nothing else but natural Reason, an Opinion, a very Dream and no Faith.

This I say, to the End ye may perceive and note, that by these Words, *The Truth of the Gospel*, Paul vehemently reproveth the Contrary. For he reprehendeth the false Apostles, because they had taught a false Gospel, requiring Circumcision, and the Observation of the Law as necessary to Salvation. Moreover

The Object of Reason whereunto it looketh.

The Object of Faith, is the Thing whereunto the Eye of Faith looketh, which is Christ.

Faith furnished with Charity.

† The *Papists* imagine that Charity is inclosed in Faith, as a Diamond is in a Ring.

But Christ is the true Diamond, and not Charity.

Charity the *Papists* Diamond, rejecting Christ.

Slights praised of the

they went about by wonderful Craft and Subtility to entrap *Paul*; for they watched him narrowly to see whether he would circumcise *Titus* or no; also whether he durst withstand them in the Presence of the *Apollles*, and for this Cause he reprehendeth them bitterly. *They went about* (saith he) *to spie out our Liberty, which we have in Christ Jesus, that they might bring us into Bondage.* Wherefore the false Apostles armed themselves on every Side, that they might convince and confound him before the whole Congregation: Besides this, they went about to abuse the Authority of the Apostles, in whose Presence they accused him, saying, *Paul* hath brought *Titus* being uncircumcised, into the Company of all the Faithful; he denieth and condemneth the Law in your Presence which are Apostles. If he dare be so bold to attempt this here and before you, what will not he attempt in your Absence among the *Gentiles*.

Wherefore when he perceived that he was so craftily assailed, he strongly withstood the false Apostles, saying, We did not suffer our Liberty which we have in Christ Jesus to come in Danger, altho' the false Brethren sought by all Means to snare us and put us to much Trouble; but we overcame them even by the Judgment of the Apostles themselves, and we would not yield unto them, no not one Hour (for, no doubt, their Drift was to have caused *Paul* to surcease from this Liberty for a Time) sithens we saw that they required the Observation of the Law as necessary to Salvation. But if they had alledged nothing else but charitable bearing with the Brethren no doubt but *Paul* would have given them Place. But it was another Thing that they sought, *to wit*, That they might bring *Paul* and all that stuck to his Doctrine into Bondage. Therefore he would not yield unto them, no not the Space of one Moment.

*Luther* was content in the Time of Blindness to bear with those Things which now in the Light of the Gospel are utterly to be rejected.

† The Popes Thunderbolts.

In like Manner do we also offer to the *Papists* all that is to be offered, yea, and more than we ought. Only we except the Liberty of Conscience which we have in Christ Jesus. For we will not suffer our Consciences to be bound to any Work, so that by doing this Thing or that, we should be righteous, or leaving the same undone we should be damned. We are contented to eat the same Meats that they eat, we will keep their Feasts and fasting Days, so that they will suffer us to do the same with a free Conscience, and leave these threatening Words, wherewith they have terrified and brought under their Subjection the whole World, saying, † We command, we charge, we charge again, we excommunicate, &c. But this Liberty we cannot obtain; like as *Paul* also could not in his Time. Therefore we do as he did: For when he saw that he could not obtain this Liberty, he would not give Place to the false Apostles, the Space of one Hour.

Wherefore, like as our Adversaries will not leave this free unto us, that only Faith in Christ justifieth; so on the other Side, neither will we, nor can we give Place unto them, that Faith furnished with Charity justifieth. Here we will and we ought also

to be rebellious and obstinate against them, for else we should lose *the Truth of the Gospel*; we should lose our Liberty which we have, not in the Emperor, not in Kings and Princes, not in that Monster the Pope, not in the World, not in Flesh, Blood, Reason, &c. but which we have in Christ Jesus. We should lose Faith in Christ, which (as before I have said) apprehendeth nothing else but that precious Diamond Christ Jesus. This Faith whereby we are regenerate, justified, and engrafted into Christ, if our Adversaries will leave unto us sound and uncorrupt, we offer unto them that we will do all Things, so that they be not contrary to this Faith. But because we cannot obtain this at their Hands, we again for our Part will not yield unto them one Hairs Breadth. For the Matter which we have in Hand is weighty and of great Importance, even touching the Death of the Son of God; who by the Will and Commandment of the Father was made Flesh, was crucified and died for the Sins of the World. If Faith here give Place, then is this Death and Resurrection of the Son of God in vain, then is it but a Fable that Christ is the Saviour of the World, then is God found a Liar, because he hath not performed that he promised. Our Stoutness therefore in this Matter is godly and holy. For by it we seek to preserve our Liberty which we have in Christ Jesus, and thereby to retain the Truth of the Gospel; which if we lose, then do we also lose God, Christ, all the Promises, Faith, Righteousness, and everlasting Life.

But here will some Man say, The Law is divine and holy. Let the Law have his Glory, but yet no Law be so never so divine and holy, ought to teach me that I am justified and shall live thro' it. I grant it may teach me that I ought to love God and my Neighbour; also to live in Chastity, Sobriety, Patience, &c. but it ought not to shew how I should be delivered from Sin, the Devil, Death and Hell. Here I must take Counsel of the Gospel, I must hearken to the Gospel which teacheth me, not what I ought to do, (for that is the proper Office of the Law) but what Jesus Christ the Son of God hath done for me; *to wit*, That he suffered and died to deliver me from Sin and Death. The Gospel willet me to receive this, and to believe it. And this is the Truth of the Gospel. It is also the principle Article of all Christian Doctrine, wherein the Knowledge of all Godliness consisteth. Most necessary it is therefore that we should know this Article well, teach it unto others, and beat it into their Heads continually: For as it is very tender, so is it soon hurt. This *Paul* had well tried, and of this have all the Godly also good Experience.

To conclude, *Paul* would not circumcise *Titus*, and (as he saith) for no other Cause, but for that certain false Brethren were crept in to spy out their Liberty, and would have constrained *Paul* to circumcise

It is a Point of true Christianity to be stout against Meritmongers, for keeping the Christian Liberty

When Faith is sound, all Things are safe.

The holy Obstinaey and Stoutness of the Godly.

The Doctrine of the Law.

The Doctrine of the Gospel.

The Gospel

*Titus.* Paul seeing this Constraint and Necessity, would give no Place, no not for an Hour, but strongly resisted them, and therefore he saith, *But neither Titus, who was with me, being a Greek, was compelled to be circumcised,* Gal. ii. 3. If they had required this in the Way of brotherly Charity, doubtless he would not have denied it. But seeing they would have done it as a necessary Thing, and that by Compulsion, to the evil Example of others, to the overthrowing of the Gospel, and to bring Mens Consciences into Bondage, therefore he set himself mightily against them, and prevailed so, that *Titus* was not circumcised.

It may seem but a small Matter to be circumcised, or not circumcised. But when a Man hath an Affiance in keeping of it, or else is in Fear for not keeping of it, here God is denied, Christ is rejected, the Grace and all the Promises of God are refused. But if Circumcision be kept

without this Addition, there is no Danger. If the Pope would in this Sort require of us the keeping of his Traditions, as † bare Ceremonies, it should not be so grievous unto us to keep them; but to bind Mens Consciences to these Ceremonies, and to make of them an high and acceptable Service unto God, yea and moreover to add, that Life and Salvation, or Death and Damnation consisteth in the Observation hereof, is a devilish Superstition, and full of Blasphemy. Who so will not cry against this, accursed be he, &c.

**Verse 6.** *But of these, who seemed to be somewhat, (whatsoever they were, it maketh no Matter to me :*

**Why Paul**  
giveth not  
unto the A-  
postles any  
glorious  
Title.

This is a vehement and strong Confutation. For he giveth not to the true Apostles themselves any glorious Title; but as it were abasing their Dignity, he saith, *Who seemed to be somewhat*; that is, which were in Authority, upon whom the Determination of all Matters depended. Notwithstanding the Authority of the Apostles was indeed very great in all the Churches. And

*Paul* also did not seek any whit to diminish their Authority, but he thus contemptuously answereth the false Apostles, which set the Authority and Dignity of the Apostles against *Paul* in all the Churches, that thereby they might weaken his Authority, and bring his whole Ministry into Contempt. This *Paul* might not suffer. To the End therefore that the Truth of the Gospel and Liberty of Conscience in Christ might continue among the *Galatians*, and in all the Churches of the *Gentiles*, he answereth stoutly to the false Apostles, that he passed not how great the Apostles were, or what they had been in Times past; and whereas they alledged the Authority of the Name of the Apostles against him, it touched him nothing at all. He confesseth that the Apostles are indeed somewhat, and that their Authority is to be revered. Notwithstanding his Gospel and Ministry ought not to be overthrown for the Name

Name or Title of any, whatsoever he be, an Apostle or an Angel from Heaven.

And this was one of the greatest Arguments that the false Apostles used against *Paul*. The Apostles (said they) were familiarly conversant with Christ for the Space of three Years. They heard and saw all his Preachings and Miracles. Moreover, they themselves preached and wrought Miracles whiles Christ was yet living in the World; whom *Paul* never saw in the Flesh, and as touching his Conversion, it was long after the Glorification of Christ. Wherefore they should now consider which of these they ought more to believe; *Paul* which was but one and alone, and also but a Disciple, yea and one of the last of all; or the chiefest and most excellent Apostles, which long before *Paul* were sent and confirmed by Christ himself.

The Argument of the false Apostles against *Paul*.

To this *Paul* answereth, What of all this? This Argument concludeth nothing. Let the Apostles be never so great, yea let them be Angels from Heaven, it is no Matter to me. The Controversy is not here concerning the Excellency of the Apostles, but concerning the Word of God, and the Truth of the Gospel. This ought to be kept pure and uncorrupt; this ought to be preferred above all Things. Therefore how great *Peter* and the other Apostles have been, what great Miracles they have wrought, it is no Matter to me. This is it that I only seek, even that the Truth of the Gospel may continue among you. This seemeth to me but a slender Answer of *Paul*, when of Purpose he so contemneth the Authority of the Apostles, which the false Apostles alledged against him, and giveth no other Solution to their mighty Argument then this, *It is no Matter to me*. Notwithstanding he addeth a Reason of the Confutation.

The Word of God must be preferred before all Persons and Titles whatsoever.

### Verse 6. *God accepteth no Man's Person*)

This Place he alledgeth out of *Moses*, who useth the same, not once but many Times, *Thou shalt not accept in Judgment the Person of the rich Man or of the poor*, Levit. xix 15. And this is a Principle of Divinity, *God is no Respector of Persons*, 2 Chron. xix. 7. Rom. ii. 11. Acts x. 34. Ephes. vi. 9. Col. iii. 25. With the which Saying he stoppeth the Mouths of the false Apostles. As tho' he would say, Ye set those against me which seem to be somewhat; but God careth not for such outward Things. He regardeth not the Office of Apostleship. It is not the Dignity or Authority of Men that he looketh upon. And in Token hereof, he suffered *Judas* one of the chiefest Apostles, and *Saul* one of the greatest Kings, yea and the first of all, to fall away and to be damned. *Ishmael* also and *Esau* he refused, being both First-born. So shall you find throughout all the whole Scripture, that God oftentimes rejected these which in outward Shew were very good and holy Men. And in these Examples God seemeth sometimes to be cruel;

but it was most necessary that such fearful Examples should be shewed, and also be written. For this Vice is naturally grafted in us, that we highly esteem the Persons and outward Appearance of Men, and more regard the same then the Word of God. Contrariwise God will have us to fix our Eyes, and to rest wholly upon the Word itself; he will not have us to reverence and adore the Apostleship in the Persons of *Peter* and *Paul*, but Christ speaking in them and the Word which they bring and preach unto us.

† Every Creature of God may be called the Vail of God, because God is, as it were, covered and shadowed under it. This the natural Man cannot see; but the spiritual Man only discerneth the Person from the Word, the † Vail of God from God himself. Now this Vail of God is every Creature. Moreover, God here in this Life deal-eth not with us Face to Face, but covered and shadowed from us; that is, as *Paul* saith in another Place, *Now we see thro' a Glass, darkly; but then Face to Face*, 1 Cor. xiii. 12. Therefore we cannot be without Vails in this Life. But here Wisdom is required, which can discern the Vail from God himself, and this Wisdom the World hath not. The covetous Man hearing that *Man liveth not by Bread only, but by every Word that proceedeth out of the Mouth of God*, Deut. viii. 3. Matth. iv. 4. eateth the Bread, but he seeth not God in the Bread, for he beholdeth the Vail only and outward Shew. So he doth with Gold and other Creatures, trusting to them so long as he hath them; but when they leave them, he despaireth. And thus he honoureth not the Creator, but the Creatures; not God, but his own Belly. This I speak lest any Man should think that *Paul* utterly condemneth these outward Vails or Persons. For he saith not that there ought to be no Person, but that there is no Respect of Persons with God. There must be Persons and outward Vails; God hath given them, and they are his good Creatures, but we must not trust in them. All the Matter is in the right using of Things, and not in the Things themselves, as before I have said. There is no Fault in Circumcision or Uncircumcision (for Circumcision is nothing, and Uncircumcision is nothing) but in the Use thereof. To put Righteousness in the one and Unrighteousness in the other, that Use is damnable and ought to be taken away; which being removed, Circumcision and Uncircumcision are Things tollerable.

So the Prince, the Magistrate, the Preacher, the Scholl-master, the Schollar, the Father, the Mother, the Children, the Master, the Servant are Persons and outward Vails, which God will have us to acknowledge, love and reverence as his Creatures, which also must needs be had in this Life; but he will not have us so to reverence them or trust unto them, that we forget him. And to the End that we should not too much magnify the outward Persons, or put any Trust in them, God leaveth in them

them Offences and Sins, yea great and foul Sins, to teach us what Difference there is between the Person and God himself. *David* that good King because he should not seem to be a Person upon whom Men should trust; fell into horrible Sins, Adultery and Murther. *Peter* that excellent Apostle denied Christ. These and such like Examples, whereof the Scripture is full, ought to warn us that we repose not our Trust in the Person and outward Vail, nor think that when we have the outward Shews and Shadows, we have all Things; as it is in Popery, where they judge all Things according to the outward Vail, and therefore all Popery is nothing else but a meer respecting of Persons and outward Shews.

God suffereth his dear Saints to fall into great Vices, that we should not cleave to their Persons.

God hath given his Creatures to our Use and to do us Service, and not as Idols that we should do Service unto them. Let us then use Bread, Wine, Apparel, Possessions, Gold, Silver, and all other Creatures; but let us not trust or glory in them; for we must trust and glory in God alone. He only is to be loved, he only is to be feared and honoured.

*Paul* calleth here the Apostleship or Office of the Apostles (which wrought many and great Miracles, taught and converted many to the Faith, and were also familiar with Christ) the Person of Man.

Briefly, this Word Person comprehendeth the whole outward Conversation of the Apostles which was holy, and their Authority which was great. Notwithstanding (saith he) God esteemeth not these Things; not that he esteemeth them not at all, but in the Matter of Justification he regardeth them not, be they never so great and so glorious. For we must diligently mark this Distinction, that in Matters of Divinity we must speak far otherwise than in Matters of Policy. In Matters of Policy (as I have said) God will have us to honour and reverence these outward Vails or Persons as his Instruments by whom he governeth and preserveth the World: But when the Question is as touching Religion, Conscience, the Fear of God, Faith and the Service of God, we must not fear these outward Persons, we must put no Trust in them, look for no Comfort from them, or Hope for Deliverance by them either corporally or spiritually. For this Cause God will have no Respect of Persons, in Judgment; for Judgment is a divine Thing. Wherefore I ought neither to fear the Judge, nor trust in the Judge; but my Fear and Trust ought to be in God alone, who is the true Judge, *Deut. i. 17*. The civil Judge or Magistrate I ought indeed to reverence for God's Cause, whose Minister he is; but my Conscience may not stay or trust upon his Justice and Equity or be feared thro' his unjust Dealing or Tyranny, whereby I might fall into any Offence against God, in lying, in bearing false Witness, in denying the Truth, &c. Otherwise I will reverence and honour the Magistrate with all my Heart.

*Paul* calls the Apostleship the Person of Man.

The outward Person is not to be looked upon in Judgment.

So I would also honour the Pope and love his Person, if he would leave my Conscience free and not compel me to sin against God. But he will

will so be feared and adored, as cannot be done without Offence to the Majesty of God. Here since we must needs lose the one let us lose the Person and stick to God. We could be content to suffer the Dominion of the Pope; but because he abuseth the same so tyrannously against us, and would compel us to deny and blaspheme God, and to acknowledge him only as our Lord and Master, clogging our Consciences and spoiling us of the Fear and Trust which we should have in God, therefore we are compelled by the Commandment of God, to resist the Pope; for it is written, *That we must rather obey God than Man, Acts iv. 19.* Therefore without Offence of Conscience (which is our singular Comfort) we condemn the Authority of the Pope.

There is a certain Vehemency therefore to be noted in this Word [God] For in the Cause of Religion, and the Word of God, there must be no Respect of Persons. But in Matters of Policy we must have Regard to the Person; for otherwise there must needs follow a Contempt of all Reverence and Order. In this World God will have an Order, a Reverence and a Difference of Persons. For else the Child, the Servant, the Subject would say, I am a Christian as well as my Father, my School-master, my Master, my Prince; Why then should I reverence him? Before God then there is no Respect of Persons, neither of *Grecian* nor of *Jew*, but all are one in Christ, altho' not so before the World.

Thus *Paul* confuteth the Argument of the false Apostles as touching the Authority of the Apostles, and saith that it is nothing to the Purpose. For the Question is not here concerning the Respect of Persons, but there is a far weightier Matter in Hand, that is to say, a Divine Matter concerning God and his Word, and whether this Word ought to be preferred before the Apostleship or no; whereunto *Paul* answereth: So that the Truth of the Gospel may continue, so that the Word of God and the Righteousness of Faith may be kept pure and uncorrupt, let the Apostleship go, let an Angel from Heaven, let *Peter*, let *Paul* altogether perish.

*Verse 6. For they who seemed to be somewhat, in Conference added nothing to me.*

As tho' he would say, I did not so confer with the Apostles that they taught me any Thing; For what should they teach me, since Christ by his Revelation had before sufficiently taught me all Things? And moreover since I have now preached the Gospel the Space of eighteen Years among the *Gentiles*, and Christ hath wrought so many Miracles by me, whereby he hath confirmed my Doctrine; wherefore it was but a Conference and no Disputation. Wherein I learned nothing, neither did I recant, nor yet defend my Cause, but only declared what Things I have

I have done; *to wit*, that I had preached to the *Gentiles* Faith only in Christ without the Law, and that by this preaching of Faith the Holy Ghost came down upon the *Gentiles*, which immediately spake with divers Tongues. Which Things when the Apostles heard, they witnessed that I had taught the Truth. Wherefore the false Apostles do me great wrong which pervert and turn all these Things clean contrary. Now, if *Paul* would give no Place to the false Apostles which set the Authority of the true Apostles against him; much less ought we to give Place to our Adversaries, which have nothing else to brag of, but the Authority of their Idol the Pope. I know that the Godly ought to be humble; but against the Pope I will and I ought to be proud with a holy Pride, and say, Thou Pope, I will not be subject unto thee, I will not take thee for my Master, for I am sure that my Doctrine is true and godly. But the Pope will not hear this Doctrine. Nay he would force us to obey his Laws and his Decrees, and if we will not, he will by and by excommunicate, curse and condemn us as *Hereicks*. Such Pride therefore against the Pope is most necessary. And if we should not be thus stout and proud and in the Holy Ghost utterly condemn both him with all his Doctrine, and the Devil the Father of Lies speaking in him, we should never be able to defend this Article of the Righteousness of Faith. We do not then contemn the Authority of the Pope because we would bear Rule over him, neither do we go about to exalt ourselves above all sovereign Power, since it is evident that we teach all Men to humble and submit themselves to the higher Powers \*ordained of God; but this is it that we only seek, that the Glory of God may be maintained, and the Righteousness of Faith may be kept pure and sound.

What *Paul* did in that Conference.

The holy Pride of the Godly against the Pope.

Why the Godly are proud against the Pope.

\*The Pope is no Power ordained of God

Wherefore if the Pope will grant unto us that God alone by his mere Grace thro' Christ doth justify Sinners, we will not only carry him in our Hands, but will also kiss his Feet. But since we cannot obtain this, we again in God are proud against him above Measure, and will give no Place, no not one Hairs Breadth to all the Angels in Heaven, not to *Peter*, nor to *Paul*, not to an hundred Emperors, not to a thousand Popes, nor to the whole World. But be it far from us that we should be humble ourselves, since they would take from us our Glory, even God himself that hath created us and given us all Things, and Jesus Christ who hath redeemed us with his Blood. Let this be then the Conclusion of all together, that we will suffer our Goods to be taken away, our Name, our Life, and all that we have; but the Gospel, our Faith, Jesus Christ, we will never suffer to be wrested from us. And cursed be that Humility which here abaseth and submitteth itself. Nay rather let every Christian Man here be proud and spare not, except he will deny Christ.

Cursed is Humility in Matters of God, and of Faith.

Where-

Wherefore, God assisting me, my Forehead shall be more hard then all Mens Foreheads. Here I take upon me this Title, according to the Proverb, *Cedo nulli*, I give Place to none, yea I am glad even with all my Heart in this Point to be called rebellious and obstinate. And here I confess that I am and ever will be stout and stern, and will not one Inch give Place to any Creature. Charity giveth Place, *Beareth all Things, believeth all Things, hopeth all Things, endureth all Things,*

1 Cor. xiii. 7. But Faith giveth no Place, yea it can suffer nothing, according to this ancient Verse. *Non patitur ludum Fama, Fides, Oculis*: That is Man's good Name, his Faith, and his Eye will not be dallied withal. Wherefore a Christian, as touching his Faith, can never be too proud nor too stout, neither must he relent nor give Place, no not the Breadth of one Hair. For Faith maketh a Man here like unto God; but God suffereth nothing, he giveth Place to none, for he is immutable. So is Faith immutable, and therefore may suffer nothing, give Place to no Man. But as touching Charity, let a Christian man yeild and suffer all Things, for therein he is but a Man.

**Verses 7, 8.** *But contrariwise, when they saw that the Gospel of the Uncircumcision was committed unto me, as the Gospel of the Circumcision was unto Peter; (For he that wrought effectually in Peter to the Apostleship of the Circumcision, the same was mighty in me towards the Gentiles.)*

With these Words *Paul* mightily confuteth the false Apostles. For here he challengeth to himself the same Authority which the false Apostles attributed to the true Apostles. And he useth here a Figure which is called an *Inversion*, returning their Argument against themselves. The false Apostles (saith he) do alledge against me the Authority of the great Apostles, to maintain their Cause. But I contrariwise do alledge the same against them for my Defence, for the Apostles are on my Side. Wherefore O my *Galatians* believe not these counterfeite Apostles, which brag so much of the Authority of the Apostles against me. For the Apostles when they saw the Gospel over the Uncircumcision to be committed to me, and knew of the Grace that to me was given, gave to me and *Barnabas* the Right-hands of Fellowship, approving my Ministry and giving Thanks unto God for the Gifts which I had received. Thus he returneth the Argument of the false Apostles upon themselves. And in these Words there is an ardent Vehemency, and more contained in Matter, then in Words is able to be expressed.

What meaneth *Paul* when he saith, that the Gospel To *Peter* is over the Uncircumcision was committed unto him, and o-  
 committed ver the Circumcision unto *Peter*, when notwithstanding  
 the Gospel *Paul*  
 over Circumcision, and to *Paul* over Uncircumcision.

*Paul* almost every where preached to the *Jews* in the Synagogues, and *Peter* likewise to the *Gentiles*? There are Examples and Testimonies of both in *Acts* x. 3. *Peter* converted the Centurian with his Family, which was a *Gentile*. He wrote also to the *Gentiles*, as his first Epistle testifieth. *Paul* preaching Christ among the *Gentiles*, entereth notwithstanding into the Synagogues of the *Jews*, and there preached the Gospel, *Acts* ix. 20. And our Saviour Christ in *Matth.* xxviii. 19. and *Mark* xvi. 15. commandeth his Apostles to go throughout the whole World, and preach the Gospel to every Creature. *Paul* likewise saith, *The Gospel preached to every Creature which is under Heaven*, Col. i. 23. Why then doth he call himself the Apostle of the *Gentiles*, and *Peter* with the other, the Apostles of the Circumcision?

*Peter* the Apostle of the *Jews* and *Paul* of the *Gentiles*.

*Paul* hath Respect unto this, that the other Apostles remained specially in *Jerusalem*, until God called them unto other Places. Thus stood the Matter then for the Time, that whiles the political State of the *Jews* continued, the Apostles still remained in *Judea*. But when the Destruction of *Jerusalem* approached, they were dispersed throughout the whole World. But *Paul*, as it is written in *Acts* xiii. 2. by a singular Vocation was chosen to be the Apostle of the *Gentiles*, and being sent out of *Judea*, he travelled thro' the Countries of the *Gentiles*. Now were the *Jews* dispersed almost throughout the whole World, and dwelt here and there in Cities and other Places among the *Gentiles*. *Paul* coming thither was wont (as we read in the *Acts* ix. 10. to go into the Synagogues of the *Jews*, and by this Occasion he first brought unto them, as the Children of the Kingdom, this glad Tidings, that the Promises made unto the Fathers, were accomplished by Jesus Christ. When they would not hear this, he turned to the *Gentiles*, as *Luke* witnesseth, where he bringeth in *Paul* thus boldly speaking against the *Jews*. *It was necessary that the Word of God should first have been spoken to you: But seeing ye put it from you, and judge yourselves unworthy of everlasting Life, lo, we turn to the Gentiles*, *Acts* xiii. 46. And in *Acts* xxviii. 28. *Be it known therefore unto you, that the Salvation of God is sent unto the Gentiles, and that they will hear it*. Wherefore *Paul* was sent specially unto the *Gentiles*. But because he was a Debtor unto all, and became all Things unto all Men, therefore Occasion being offered he went into the Synagogues of the *Jews*, where not only the *Jews*, but also the *Gentiles* heard him preaching Christ, *Rom.* i. 14. Other whiles he preached publickly in the Market Place, in Houses, and by the Rivers Sides. He was specially then the Apostle of the *Gentiles*; as *Peter* was of the *Jews*; who notwithstanding preached Christ to the *Gentiles* also when Occasion was offered.

*Paul* preached also to the *Jews*.

And here he calleth Uncircumcision the *Gentiles*, and Circumcision the *Jews*, by a Figure named *Synecdoche*, which under a Part comprehendeth the whole; which Figure is commonly used in the Scripture; the Gospel then

Uncircumcision.  
Circumci-

then over Uncircumcision is that which was appointed to be sent unto the *Gentiles*. This Gospel, saith he, was committed unto him, as the Gospel over Circumcision was unto *Peter*. For as *Peter* preached the Gospel among the *Jews*, so did he among the *Gentiles*.

This he often repeateth, that *Peter*, *James* and *John*, *Paul* receiveth not his Gospel of the other Apostles. which seemed to be the Pillars of the Church, taught him nothing, nor committed unto him the Office of preaching the Gospel, as having Authority and Rule over him. But they themselves (saith he) did see that the Gospel was committed unto me, but not by *Peter*. For as I did not receive or learn any Gospel of Man. So did I receive no Commandment by Man to preach the same, but both the Knowledge and the Commandment to preach it among the *Gentiles*, I received immediately from God; like as the Charge was given of God unto *Peter* to preach the same among the *Jews*.

The Apostles Calling was equal. This Place witnesseth very plainly that the Apostles had like Calling, like Charge, and all one Gospel. *Peter* preached no other Gospel then the rest of the Apostles did, neither did he appoint to others their Charge and Office, but there was an Equality among them all, for they were all taught of God, that is, both their Vocation and Charge was wholly and immediately from God. There was none therefore greater then other, none that had any Prerogative above other. And therefore where the Pope vaunteth that *Peter* was the Chief of the Apostles, that thereby he might confirm and establish his usurped Primacy, it is an impudent Lie.

Verse 8. *For he that wrought effectually in Peter to the Apostleship of the Circumcision,*

This is a Confutation of another Argument of the false Apostles. Why do the false Apostles boast (saith he) that the Gospel of *Peter* was mighty, that he converted many, that he wrought many and great Miracles, raised up the Dead, and with his Shadow healed the Sick? *Acts* v. 15. I grant all these Things to be true; but *Peter* received this Power from Heaven. God gave a Vertue to his Word, so that many did believe him, and great Miracles were wrought by him. The same Power had I also which I received not of *Peter*, but the same God and the same Spirit which was mighty in *Peter*, was mighty to me also. I had the same Grace, I taught many, I wrought many Miracles, and thro' my Shadow also I healed the Sick. And this *Luke* testifieth, in these Words, *And God wrought special Miracles by the Hands of Paul: So that from his Body were brought unto the Sick, Handkerchiefs or Aprons, and the Diseases departed from them, and the evil Spirits went out of them, Acts* xix. 11, 12. Read more hereof *Acts* xiii. 16, 20, 28.

To conclude, *Paul* will be counted in no Point inferior to the rest of the Apostles, and herein he glorieth with a godly and holy Pride. Necessity

cessity constrained him stoutly to withstand *Peter*, and the burning Zeal he had for the Glory of God, moved him so to do. Certain prophane Spirits, as *Julianus* and *Porphirius* not considering this, thought it to be but a carnal Pride that caused *Paul* thus to do; such as at this Day we see in the Pope and his Generation. But *Paul* had not here his own Business in Hand, but a Matter of Faith. Now, as concerning Faith we ought to be invincible, and more hard if it might be, then the Adamant-stone. But as touching Charity, we ought to be soft, and more flexible then the Reed or Leaf that is shaken with the Wind, and ready to yield to every Thing. Therefore the Controversy was not here touching the Glory of *Paul*, but the Glory of God, the Word of God, the true Worship of God, true Religion, and the Righteousness of Faith, to the End that these Things might still remain pure and uncorrupt.

Verse 9. *And when James, Cephas, and John, who seemed to be Pillars, perceived the Grace that was given unto me, they gave to me and Barnabas the Right-hands of Fellowship; that we should go unto the Heathen, and they unto the Circumcision.*

That is to say, when they heard that I had received my Calling and Charge from God to preach the Gospel among the *Gentiles*, and that God had wrought so many Miracles by me; moreover, that so great a Number of the *Gentiles* were come to the Knowledge of Christ thro' my Ministry, and that the *Gentiles* had received the Holy Ghost without the Law and Circumcision by the only Preaching of Faith, they glorified God for this Grace which was given unto me.

He calleth Grace here whatsoever he had received of God, to wit, that of a Persecutor and Waster of the Church he was made an Apostle, was taught by Jesus Christ, and enriched with spiritual Gifts. And herewithal he sheweth that *Peter* gave Testimony unto him, that he was a true Apostle, sent and taught, not by himself nor by the other Apostles, but by God alone; and not only acknowledged the Ministry and Authority of *Paul*, and the Gifts of the Spirit which were in him, as heavenly Things, but so approved and confirmed the same, and yet not as a Superior and Ruler, but as a Brother and Witness. *James* and *John* did likewise the same. Wherefore he concludeth that they which are esteemed for the chief Pillars amongst the Apostles, are wholly with him, and not against him.

What *Paul* calleth Grace in this Place.

*Peter* approveth the Ministry of *Paul*.

Verse 9. *The Right-hands of Fellowship;*

As if they should have said, We (O *Paul*) in preaching the Gospel, do agree with thee in all Things. Therefore in Doctrine we are Companions, and have Fellowship together therein; that

*Paul and the other Apostles taught all one Gospel.*

is to say, we have all one Doctrine, for we preach one Gospel, one Baptism, one Christ, and one Faith. Wherefore we can teach or enjoy nothing, since there is one mutual Consent betwixt us in all Things. For we do not teach any other or more excellent Things then thou dost; but the same Gifts which we have, we see to be in thee also, saving that to thee is committed the Gospel over the Uncircumcision, as the Gospel over the Circumcision is unto us. But we conclude here, that neither Uncircumcision nor Circumcision ought to hinder our Society and Fellowship, since it is but one Gospel which we both preach.

Hitherto *Paul* hath proved by manifest Witness not only from God, but also from Man, that is to say, the Apostles, that he had truly and faithfully preached the Gospel. Therefore he sheweth that whatsoever the false Apostles said to diminish his Authority, is but feigned and forged-Matter, and that the Testimony of the Apostles maketh for him, and not for the false Apostles. But for that he is alone and without Witness, therefore he addeth an † Oath, and calleth God to record that the Things which he hath spoken are true.

† In the former Chapter and 20 Verse.

*Verse 10. Only they would that we should remember the poor; the same which I also was forward to do.*

A good Minister must be careful for the Poor.

After the Preaching of the Gospel, the Office and Charge of a true and faithful Pastor is, to be mindful of the Poor. For where the Church is, there must needs be poor, who for the most Part are the only true Disciples of the Gospel, as Christ saith, *The Poor have the Gospel preached unto them,*

*Isa. lxi. 1. Matth. xi. 5. Luke iv. 18.* For the World and the Devil do persecute the Church, and bring many to Poverty, who are afterwards forsaken and despised of the World. Moreover, the World not only offendeth herein, but also is careless for the Preservation of the Gospel, true Religion, and the true Service of God. There is

The World is ready to give for the Maintenance of Ungodliness, but it careth not for God's Ministers.

none that will now take any Care for the Maintenance of the Ministers of the Church, and erecting of Schools: But for the erecting and establishing of false Worship, Superstition and Idolatry, no Cost was spared, but every Man was ready to give most liberally and largely. And hereof came so many Monasteries, so many Cathedral Churches, so many Bishopricks in the Popes Church whereall Impiety reigned, with so great Revenues provided for their Sustentation; where as now a whole City thinketh much to find one or two poor Ministers and

Preachers of the Gospel, which before, whiles the Pope and all Impiety reigned, did sustain sundry Monasteries of *Monks, Friars, Nuns,* and whole Swarms of massing Priests. To be brief, true Religion is ever in

Need

Need. And Christ complaineth, *that he is hungry, thirsty, harbourless, naked and sick*, Matth. xxv. 35. Contrariwise, false Religion and Impiety flourisheth and aboundeth with all worldly Wealth and Prosperity. Wherefore a true and faithful Pastor must have a Care of the Poor also, and this Care *Paul* here confesseth that he had.

Verse II. *But when Peter was come to Antioch, I withstood him to the Face, because he was to be blamed.*

*Paul* goeth on still in his Confutation, saying, that he not only hath for his Defence the Testimony of *Peter* and the other Apostles which were at *Jerusalem*, but also that he withstood *Peter* in the Presence of the whole Church of *Antioch*. He sheweth here a Matter, not done in a Corner, but in the Face of the whole Church. For (as before I have said) he hath here no trifling Matter in Hand, but the chiefest Article of all Christian Doctrine. The Utility and the Majesty whereof who so rightly esteemeth, to him all other Things shall seem but vile and nothing worth. For what is *Peter*? What is *Paul*?

The Majesty of the Article of Justification.

What is an Angel from Heaven? What are all other Creatures to the Article of Justification? Which if we know, then are we in the clear Light; but if we be ignorant thereof, then are we in most miserable Darkness. Wherefore if ye see this Article impugned or defaced, fear not to resist either *Peter* or an Angel from Heaven, following the Example of *Paul*, who seeing the Majesty of this Article to be in Danger or the Dignity of *Peter*, had no Regard of his Dignity and Estimation, that he might keep the same pure and uncorrupt. For it is written, *He that loveth Father or Mother more than me, is not worthy of me*, Matth. x. 37.

Wherefore we are not ashamed, for the Defence of the Truth, to be counted and called of the Hypocrites, proud and obstinate, and such as will be only wise, will hear none, will give Place to none. Here we must needs be obstinate and inflexible. For the Cause why we offend Man, that is to say, tread down the Majesty of the Person or of the World, is so great, that the Sins which the World counteth to be most hainous, are counted singular Vertues before God. In that we love our Parents, honour the Magistrate, shew Reverence to *Peter* and other Ministers of the Word, we do well. But here we have in Hand

It behoveth us to be obstinate in God's Matters.

the Cause neither of *Peter*, nor Parents, nor Magistrate, nor of the World, nor of any other Creatures, but of God himself. Here if I give Place to my Parents, to the Magistrate, or an Angel from Heaven, I do well. For what is the Creature in respect of the Creator? Yea what are all Creatures being compared unto him? Even as one Drop of Water in respect of the whole Sea. Why then should I so highly esteem *Peter* which is but a Drop, and set God aside which is the whole Sea? Let the Drop therefore give Place to the Sea, and let *Peter* give Place unto God. This I say, to the End that you should diligently weigh

and consider the Matter whereof *Paul* intreateth ; for he intreateth of the Word of God, which can never be magnified enough.

And where he saith [ *to his Face* ] this Clause maketh specially against the venomous Vipers and Apostles of Satan, which slander those that are absent, and in their Presence dare not once, open their Mouth, as the false Apostles did, whom also he here toucheth by the

**A Christian** Way, which durst not speak evil of him in his Presence will openly but in his Absence slandered him most spitefully. So did reprove not I ( saith he ) speak evil of *Peter*, but frankly and Vices in his openly I withstood him, not of any colourable Pretence, Brother. Ambition, or other carnal Affection, but because he was to be blamed and sharply reprov'd.

**The Pro-** Here let other Men debate whether an Apostle may  
**phets and** sin or no : This say I, that we ought not to make *Peter's*  
**Apostles sin-** Fault less then it was indeed. The Prophets themselves  
**ed, and had** have sometimes erred and been deceived. *Nathan* of his  
**their Infir-** own Spirit said unto *David*, that he should build the  
**mities. House of the Lord, 2 Sam. vii. 3, 4, 5. But this Pro-  
phesy was by and by after corrected by a Revelation from**

God, that it should not be *David*, because he was a Man of War, and had shed much Blood, but his Son *Solomon* that should build up the House of the Lord ; so the Apostles did err also, for they imagined that the Kingdom of Christ should be carnal and worldly, as we may see in *Acts* i. 6. when they asked Christ, saying, *Lord wilt thou at this Time restore again the Kingdom to Israel ?* And *Peter*, altho' he heard this Commandment of Christ, *Go into the whole World*, &c. *Mat.* xxviii. 19. had not gone into *Cornelius*, *Acts* x. 12. if he had not been admonished by a Vision. And in this Matter he did not only err, but also committed a great Sin, and if *Paul* had not resisted him, all the *Gentiles* which did believe, had been constrained to receive Circumcision and to keep the Law : The believing *Jews* also had been confirmed in their Opinion ; to wit, That the Observation of these Things was necessary to Salvation, and by this Means they had received again the Law instead of the Gospel, *Moses* instead of Christ ; and

**No Saints** of all this great Enormity and horrible Sin *Peter* by this  
**without Sin.** Dissimulation had been the only Occasion. Therefore we may not attribute to the Saints such Perfection as tho' they could not sin.

**Dissention** *Luke* witnesseth that there was such great Dissention  
**between** between *Paul* and *Barnabas* ( which were put apart to-  
**Paul and** gether for the Ministry of the Gospel among the *Gentiles*,  
**Barnabas.** and had travelled thro' many Regions, and preached unto them the Gospel ) that the one departed from the other, *Acts* xv. 39.

**The Falls of** Here we must needs say, that there was a Fault either in  
**the Saints** *Paul* or *Barnabas*. And doubtless it could not be, but  
**bring great** that the Discord was exceeding great which separated  
**Comfort un-** these two, being joined together in such holy a Fellowship,  
**to us.** as the Text witnesseth. Such Examples are written for  
our

our Consolation. For it is a great Comfort unto us when we hear that even the Saints which have the Spirit of God do sin, which Comfort they would take from us, which say that the Saints do not sin.

*Samson*, Judges xvi. 1. *David*, 2 Sam. xx. 24. and many other excellent Men, full of the Holy Ghost, fell into great Sins. *Job* iii. 3, 12. and *Jeremiah* x. 20. curse the Day of their Nativity. *Elias* and *Jonas* iv. 3. are weary of their Life, and desire Death. Such Errors and Offences of the Saints, the Scripture setteth forth to the Comfort of those that are afflicted and oppressed with Desperation, and to the Terror of the Proud. No Man hath so grievously fallen at any Time, but he may rise again. And on the other Side, no Man taketh so fast footing, but he may fall. If *Peter* fell, I may likewise fall. If he rose again, I may also rise again. And such Examples as these are, the Weak-hearted and tender Consciences ought to make much of, that they may the better understand what they pray, for when they say, *Forgive us our Trespases*; and, *I believe the Forgiveness of Sins*. We have the self-same Spirit of Grace and Prayer which the Apostles and all the Saints had, neither had they any Privilege above us. We have the same Gifts which they had, the same Christ, Baptism, Word, Forgiveness of Sins: All which they had no less Need of then we have, and by the same are sanctified and saved, as we be.

Verse 12. *For before that certain came from James, he did eat with the Gentiles:*

The *Gentiles* which were converted to the Faith, did eat Meats forbidden by the Law, and *Peter* being conversant with the *Gentiles* which were converted, did eat with them, and drank Wine also which was forbidden, knowing that therein he did well, and therefore boldly transgressed the Law with the *Gentiles*. *Paul* confesseth that he also did like, when he saith that he became as a Jew to the Jews, that he might gain the Jews; to them that are without Law as without Law, that he might gain them that are without Law, 1 Cor. ix. 20, That is to say, with the *Gentiles* he did eat and drink like a *Gentile*, and kept no Law at all: With the *Jews*, according to the Law, abstained from all Things forbidden in the Law; for he laboured to love and please all Men that he might gain all. Wherefore *Peter* in eating and drinking with the *Gentiles*, sinned not, but did well, and saw that it was lawful for him so to do. For he shewed by this Transgression, that the Law was not necessary to Righteousness, and also covered the *Gentiles* from the Observation of the Law. For if it were lawful for *Peter* in one Thing to break the Law, it was lawful for him to break it in all Things. And *Paul* doth not here reprove *Peter* for Transgression, but for his Dissimulation, as followeth.

Verse 12. *But when they were come, he withdrew, and separated himself, fearing them which were of the Circumcision.*

Here then ye see *Peter's* Offence, as *Paul* plainly setteth it forth. *Paul* accuseth him not of Malice or Ignorance, but of Dissimulation and Infirmitie, in that he abstained from Meats forbidden in the Law, fearing least the *Jews* which came from *James*, should be offended thereby, and had more Respect to the *Jews* than to the *Gentiles*. Hereby he gave Occasion, as much as in him was, to overthrow the Christian Liberty and Truth of the Gospel. For in that he did withdraw and utterly separate himself, abstaining from Meats forbidden in the Law ( which notwithstanding he had eaten of before ) he ministred a Scruple of

What the believing *Jews* gathered of *Peter's* abstaining. Conscience to the Faithful, thus to gather upon his Example; *Peter* abstaineth from Meats forbidden in the Law; therefore he that eateth Meats forbidden in the Law, sinneth and transgresseth the Law; but he that abstaineth is righteous and keeps the Law, for else would not *Peter* have withdrawn himself. But because he did so, and of Purpose refused those Meats which before he did eat, it is a sure Argument that such as eat against the Law do sin, and such as abstain from Meats which the Law forbiddeth, do keep the Law and are justified thereby.

The Fact is one Thing, and the End thereof is another. Here note, that the End of this Fact of *Peter* is reprov'd of *Paul*, and not the Fact itself, for the Fact in itself was not evil. To eat and drink, or not to eat and drink is nothing, but the End that is, If thou eat thou sinnest, if thou abstain thou art righteous, is evil. So Circumcision of itself is good, but this End is evil, if thou be not circumcised after

the Law of *Moses*, thou canst not be saved. Also to eat Meats prohibited in the Law, is not evil; but this Shrinking and Dissimulation of *Peter* is evil. For it might be said, *Peter* abstaineth from Meats forbidden in the Law, wherefore if thou dost not likewise abstain, thou canst not be saved. This *Paul* might in no wise dissemble, for the Truth of the Gospel was here in Danger. To the End therefore that this Truth might continue sound and uncorrupt, he resisted *Peter* to his Face.

And here we must make a Distinction; for Meats may be refused two Manner of Ways. *First*, For Christian Charities Sake. And herein there is no Danger; for to bear with the Infirmitie of my Brother it is good. So *Paul* himself both did and taught, 1 Cor. ix. 22. *Secondly*, by abstaining from them to obtain Righteousness, and for not abstaining, to sin and to be damned. Here accursed be Charity with all the Service and Works of Charity, whatsoever. For thus to refrain from Meats, is to deny Christ, to tread his Body under our Feet; to blaspheme the Holy Ghost, and to despise all holy Things. Wherefore if we must lose the one, let us rather lose Man our Friend and Brother, then

then God our Father. For if we lose God our Father, Man our Friend and Brother cannot continue.

*Jerome*, who neither understood this Place nor the whole Epistle besides, thinking this to be but a feigned Reprehension of *Paul*, and therefore he excuseth *Peter's* Fall, saying, that it was done by Ignorance. But *Peter* offended thro' Dissimulation, and thereby had established the Necessity of the Law, had constrained both *Gentiles* and *Jews* to revolt from the Truth of the Gospel, had given them great Occasion to forsake Christ, to despise Grace, to return to the *Jewish* Religion, and to bear all the Burdens of the Law, if *Paul* had not reprov'd him, and by that Means revoked the *Gentiles* and *Jews* which were offended thro' this Example of *Peter*, to the Liberty which is in Christ Jesus and to the Truth of the Gospel. Wherefore if a Man would here set forth and amplify *Peter's* Offence, it should appear to be very great, and yet as it not done by Malice or Ignorance but by Occasion and Fear only.

Thus we see what Ruins may come by one Man's Fall and Offence, if it be not well seen to and corrected in Time. Wherefore we may not trifle with this Article of Justification; neither is it without good Cause that we do so often and so diligently put you in Mind thereof. And it is much to be marvelled, that *Peter* being such an excellent Apostle, should thus do, who before in the Council of *Jerusalem* stood, in a Manner alone in the Defence of this Article, and prevailed therein, namely, That Salvation cometh by Faith without the Law, *Acts* xv. 7. He that before did so constantly defend the Truth and Liberty of the Gospel, now by his Fall in abstaining from Meats forbidden in the Law, is not only the Cause of great Offence, but also offendeth against his own Decree. Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth, take heed lest he fall, 1 Cor. x. 12. No Man would think what Danger there is in Traditions and Ceremonies; which notwithstanding we cannot want. What is more necessary than the Law and the Works thereof? And yet there is great Danger by the same, Men be brought to the Denial of Christ. For of the Law cometh oftentimes a Trust and Affiance in Works, and where that is, there can be no Trust in Christ. Christ therefore is soon denied and soon lost, as we may see in *Peter*, who knew this Article of Justification better then we do, and yet how easily should he have given Occasion of such an horrible Ruin, if *Paul* had not withstood him, that all the *Gentiles* should thereby have been away from the preaching of *Paul*, and by this Means should have lost the Gospel and Christ himself, and this should have been done under a holy Pretence. For they might have said, *Paul* hitherto thou hast taught that we must be justified by Grace without the Law; thou seest now that *Peter* doth the contrary, for he abstaineth

The Dissimulation of *Peter*.

To fall in Doctrine, is an easy Matter.

The Council holden at *Jerusalem*.

If the Ceremonies commanded of God be so dangerous, what may we judge of those which *Antichrist* hath brought into the Church, serving to no Edification?

thou seest now that *Peter* doth the contrary, for he abstaineth from

from Meats forbidden in the Law, and hereby he teacheth us that we cannot be saved except we receive Circumcision and observe the Law.

**Verse 13.** *And the other Jews dissembled likewise with him; insomuch that Barnabas also was carried away with their Dissimulation.*

Here you may plainly see that *Paul* chargeth *Peter* with Dissimulation. If *Peter* dissembled, then did he certainly know what was the Truth and what was not. He that dissembleth sinneth not of Ignorance, but deceiveth by a Colour which he knoweth on what it is. himself to be false. *And the other* (saith he) *dissembled likewise with Peter, insomuch that Barnabas also* (who was *Paul's* Companion, and had now a long Time preached among the *Gentiles*, Faith in Christ without the Law, together with *Paul*) *was carried away with their Dissimulation.* Ye have here then *Peter's* Offence plainly described to be mere Dissimulation, which afterwards had been an Occasion of the Ruin of the Gospel, then newly received, if *Paul* had not resisted him.

And this is a wonderful Matter, that God preserved the Church, being yet but young, and the Gospel itself, by one only Person. *Paul* alone standeth to the Truth; for he had lost *Barnabas* his Companion, and *Peter* was against him. So sometime one Man is able to do more in a Council than the whole Council besides, which Thing the *Papists* themselves do witness; and for Example they alledge † *Pamphnutius* who withstood the whole Council of *Nice* (which was the best of all that were after the Council of the Apostles at *Jerusalem*) and overcame it.

\* The Law and the Gospel must be discerned one from the other.

The Law and Reason are against Faith.

This I say, to the End that we should diligently learn the Article of Justification, and make a plain Difference between the \* Law and Gospel, and that in this Matter we should do nothing by Dissimulation, or give Place to any Man, if we will retain the Truth of the Gospel and Faith sound and uncorrupt; which as I have said are soon hurt. Wherefore in this Case away with Reason, which is an Enemy to Faith, which also in Tentations of Sin and Death, leaneth not to the Righteousness of Faith (for thereof it is utterly ignorant) but to her own Righteousness, or at least, to the Righteousness of the Law. Now as soon as the Law and Reason join together, Faith loseth her Virginity; for nothing fighteth more strongly against Faith than the Law and Reason. And these two

Enemies cannot be conquered but with great Labour and Difficulty, which we must conquer notwithstanding, if we will be saved.

Wherefore, when thy Conscience is terrified with the Law, and wrestleth with the Judgment of God, ask Counsel neither of Reason nor of the

the Law, but rest only upon Grace and the Word of Consolation, and so stand herein, as if thou hadst never heard any Thing of the Law, ascending up to the Glass of Faith, where neither the Law nor Reason doth shine, but only the Light of Faith, which assureth us that we are saved by Christ alone without any Law. Thus the Gospel leadeth us beyond and above the Light of the Law and Reason, into the deep Secrets of Faith, where the Law and Reason have nothing to do. Notwithstanding we must hearken also unto the Law, but in Place and Time, *Moses* while he was in the Mountain, where he talked with God Face to Face, had no Law, made no Law, ministered no Law; but when he was come down from the Mountain, he was a Lawgiver, and governed the People by the Law. So the Conscience must be free from the Law, but the Body must be obedient to the Law.

Hereby it appeareth that *Paul* reproveth *Peter* for no right Matter, but for the chiefest Article of all Christian Doctrine, which by *Peter's* Dissimulation, was in great Danger. For *Barnabas* and the other *Jews* dissembled together with him, which did ill offend, not thro' Ignorance or Malice, but for Fear of the *Jews*; whereby their Hearts were so blinded, that they did not see their Sin. And certainly it is much to be marvelled, that such excellent Men as *Peter*, *Barnabas* and others should so suddenly and so lightly fall, especially in that Thing which they knew to be well done, and had also before taught unto others. It is a perilous Thing therefore to trust to our own Strength, be we never so holy, never so well learned, and altho' we think ourselves never so sure of that we know; for in that whereof we think ourselves most sure, we may err and fall, and bring ourselves and others into great Danger. Let us therefore diligently and with all Humility exercise ourselves in the Study of the Holy Scriptures, and let us heartily pray that we never lose the Truth of the Gospel.

Thus we see then that we are nothing with all our Gifts be they never so great, except God assist us. When he leaveth us to ourselves, our Wisdom and Knowledge do nothing. For in the Hour of Temptation it may suddenly come to pass, that by the Subtility of the Devil, all the comfortable Places of the Scripture shall be taken out of our Sight, and such Places only as contain Threatnings shall be set before our Eyes, which shall oppress us and utterly confound us. Let us learn therefore that if God withdraw his Hand, we may soon be overthrown, and let no Man glory of his own Righteousness, Wisdom and other Gifts, but let him humble himself and pray with the Apostles, *Lord increase our Faith*, Luke xvii. 5.

What we must do when our Conscience is terrified.

*Moses* in the Mountain was above the Law; so in Matters of Faith we must have nothing to do with the Law

We must not trust in our own Strength.

Without God we can do nothing.

verse 14. *But when I saw that they walked not uprightly, according to the Truth of the Gospel,*

This is a wonderful Example of such excellent Men and Pillars of the Church. There is none but *Paul* that hath his Eyes open, and seeth the Offence of *Peter*, of *Barnabas* and the other *Jews* which disssembled with *Peter*. On the other Side, they *Peter* know- do not see their own Offence; nay they rather think that eth not his Error, they do well in bearing with the Infirmary of the weak *Jews*. Wherefore it was very necessary that *Paul* should reprove their Offence and not disssemble it, and therefore he accuseth *Peter*, *Barnabas* and others, that they went not the right Way to the Truth of the Gospel. that is to say, they swarved from the Truth of the Gospel. It is a great Matter that *Peter* should be accused of *Paul* as one that was fallen from the Truth of the Gospel. He could not be more grievously reprehended. Yet he suffered it patiently, and no doubt but he gladly acknowledged his Offence. I said before, that many have the Gospel, but not the Truth of the Gospel. So *Paul* saith here, that *Peter*, *Barnabas* and other of the *Jews* went not the right Way to the Truth of the Gospel, that is to say, they had the Gospel, but they walked not uprightly according to the Gospel. For albeit they preached the Gospel, yet thro' their Dissimulation ( which could not stand with the Truth of the Gospel ) they established the Law; but the establishing of the Law is the abolishing of the Gospel.

Who so then can rightly judge between the Law and the Gospel let him thank God, and know that he is a right Divine. In the Time of Tentation, I confess that I myself do not know how to do it as I ought. Now the Way to discern the one from the other, is to place the Gospel in Heaven and the Law on the Earth; to call the Righteousness of the Gospel heavenly, and the Righteousness of the Law earthly, and to put as great Difference between the Righteousness of the Gospel and of the Law, as God hath made between Heaven and Earth, between Light and Darknes, between Day and Night. Let the one be as the Light and the Day, and the other as the Darknes and the Night. And would to God we could yet further separate the one from the other. Wherefore if the Question be concerning the Matter of Faith or Conscience, let us utterly exclude the Law, and leave it on the Earth; but if we have to do with Works, then let us lighten the Lantern of Works and of the Righteousness of the Law. So let the Sun and the inestimable Light of the Gospel and Grace shine in the Day, and the Lantern of the Law in the Night. Wherefore, if thy Conscience be terrified with the Sense and Feeling of Sin, think thus with thyself, Thou art now remaining upon Earth, there let the *Ass* labour and travel, there let him serve and carry the Burden that is laid upon him, that is to say, let the Body with his Members be subject to the Law. But when thou mountest up into Heaven, then leave the *Ass* with his Burden upon the Earth; for the Conscience hath nothing to do with the Law, or Works, or with the earthly Righteousness. So doth the *Ass* remain in the Valley, but the Conscience ascendeth with *Isaac* into the Mountain, knowing nothing

at all of the Law or Works thereof, but only looking to the Remission of Sins and pure Righteousness offered and freely given unto us in Christ.

Contrariwise in civil Policy, Obedience to the Law must be severely required. There nothing must be known as concerning the Gospel, Conscience, Grace, Remission of Sins, heavenly Righteousness, or Christ himself, but *Moses* only with the Law and the Works thereof. If we mark well this Distinction, neither the one nor the other shall pass his Bounds, but the Law shall abide without Heaven, that is, without the Heart and Conscience, and contrariwise the Liberty of the Gospel shall abide without the Earth, that is to say, without the Body and Members thereof. Now therefore, as soon as the Law and Sin come into Heaven, that is, into the Conscience, let them by and by be cast out.

For the Conscience being seared with the Terror of the Wrath and Judgment of God, ought to know nothing of the Law, and Sin, but of Christ only. And on the other Side, when Grace and Liberty come into the Earth, that is, into the Body, then say, Thou oughtest not to dwell in the Dregs and Dunghil of this corporal Life, but thou belongest unto Heaven.

When the Law is to be urged.

The Law hath nothing to do with the Conscience.

This Distinction of the Law and the Gospel *Peter* confounded thro' his Dissimulation, and thereby perswaded the believing *Jews* that they must be justified by the Gospel and the Law together. This might not *Paul* suffer, and therefore he *reproved Peter*; not to put him to any Reproach, but to the End that he might again establish a plain Difference between these two; namely, that the Gospel justifieth in Heaven, and the Law on Earth. The Pope hath not only mixed the Law with the Gospel, but also of the Gospel hath made mere Laws, yea and such as are ceremonial only. He hath also confounded and mixed political and ecclesiastical Matters together, which is a devilish and hellish Confusion.

The Pope maketh Laws of the Gospel.

This Place touching the Difference between the Law and the Gospel, is very necessary to be known; for it containeth the Sum of all Christian Doctrine. Wherefore let all that love and fear God, diligently learn to discern the one from the other, not only in Words, but in Deed and in Practise, that is to say, in Heart and Conscience.

For as touching the Words, the Distinction is easy; but in Time of Temptation thou shalt find the Gospel but as a Stranger and a rare Guest in thy Conscience; but the Law contrariwise thou shalt find a familiar and continual Dweller within thee; for Reason hath the Knowledge of the Law naturally. Wherefore when thy Conscience is terrified with Sin, which the Law uttereth and increaseth, then say thou, There is a Time to die, and a Time to live; there is a Time to hear the Law, and a Time to despise the

The Gospel a Stranger in Temptations; the Law a continual Guest.

Law;

**The Time of the Gospel.** Law; there is a Time to hear the Gospel, and there is a Time to be ignorant of the Gospel. Let the Law now depart, and let the Gospel come; for there is now no Time to hear the Law, but the Gospel. But thou hast done no good, nay thou hast done wickedly, and hast grievously sinned. I grant, notwithstanding I have Remission of all my Sins for Christ's Sake. But out of the Conflict of Conscience, when external Duties must be done, there is no Time to hearken to the Gospel; then must thou follow thy Vocation, and the Works thereof.

**An Object.**

**When we must hear the Law.**

**Verse 14.** *I said unto Peter before them all, If thou, being a Jew, livest after the Manner of Gentiles, and not as do the Jews, Why compellest thou the Gentiles to live as do the Jews?*

**To live like the Jews.** That is to wit, thou art a Jew, and therefore thou art bound to live like a Jew, that is, to abstain from Meats forbidden in the Law. Notwithstanding thou livest like a Gentile; that is to say, thou dost contrary to the Law, and transgresseth the Law. For as a Gentile which is free from the Law, thou eatest common and unclean Meats, and therein thou dost well. But in that thou being afraid at the Presence of the Brethren converted from the Jewish Religion, abstainest from Meats forbidden in the Law, and keepest the Law, thou compellest the Jews likewise to keep the Law; that is, thou constrainest them of Necessity to observe the Law. For in that thou abstainest from profane Meats, thou givest Occasion to the Gentiles thus to think, Peter abstaineth from those Meats which the Gentiles use to eat, which he also himself before did eat; therefore we ought likewise to avoid the same, and to live after the Manner of the Jews, otherwise we cannot be justified or saved. We see then that Paul reproveth not Ignorance in Peter (for he knew that he might freely eat with the Gentiles all Manner of Meats) but Dissimulation, whereby he compelleth the Gentiles to live like the Jews.

**Peter thro' his Dissimulation, compelled the Gentiles to live like the Jews.**

**Things in different may not clog Mens Consciences.** Here I say again, that to live as the Jew, is not evil of itself, for it is a Thing indifferent either to eat Swines Flesh, or any other Meats. But so to play the Jew, that for Conscience Sake thou abstainest from certain Meats, this is to deny Christ and to overthrow the Gospel. Therefore when Paul saw that Peter's Act tended to this End, he withstood him and said, Thou knowest that the keeping of the Law is not necessary to Righteousness, but that we are justified only thro' Faith in Christ, and therefore thou keepest not the Law, but transgresseth the Law and eatest all Manner of Meats. Notwithstanding by thy Example

ple thou constrainest the *Gentiles* to forsake Christ, and to return to the Law. For thou givest them Occasion thus to think, Faith only is not sufficient to Righteousness, but the Law and Works are also required. And this *Peter* teacheth us by his Example. Therefore the Observation of the Law must needs be joined with Faith in Christ, if we will be saved. Wherefore *Peter* by his Example *Peter's Error* is not only prejudicial to the Purity of Doctrine, but also to the Truth of Faith and Christian Righteousness. For the *Gentiles* received this of him, that the keeping of the Law was necessary to Righteousness; which Error in Case it be admitted, then doth Christ profit us nothing at all.

Hereby it plainly appeareth to what End this Discord between *Paul* and *Peter* tendeth. *Paul* doth nothing by Dissimulation, but dealeth sincerely and goeth plainly to Work, *Peter* dissembleth, but his Dissimulation *Paul* reproveth. The Controversy was for the Maintenance of pure Doctrine, and the Verity of the Gospel; and in this Quarrel *Paul* did not care for the Offence of any. In this Case all People and Nations, all Kings and Princes, all Judges and Magistrates ought to give Place. Since then it is so dangerous a Thing to have to do with the Law, and that this Fall was so sudden and so great as if it had been from Heaven above, even down into Hell, let every Christian diligently learn to discern between the Law and the Gospel. Let them suffer the Law to rule over the Body and Members thereof, but

not over the Conscience. For the Queen and Spouse may Liberty of not be defiled with the Law, but must be kept without Conscience. Spot for her only Husband Christ, as *Paul* saith, 2 Cor.

xi. 2. *I have espoused you to one Husband, &c.* Let the Conscience then have her Bride-chamber, not in the low Valley, but in the high Mountain, in the which let Christ ly and there rule and reign, who doth not terrify and afflict Sinners, but comforteth them, pardoneth their Sins and saveth them. Wherefore let the afflicted Conscience think upon nothing, know

nothing, set nothing against the Judgment of God, but the Word of Christ, which is the Word of Grace, of Remission of Sins, of Salvation and everlasting Life. But What an afflicted Conscience ought to behold.

this to perform in Deed, is a hard Matter. For Man's Reason and Nature cannot stedfastly cleave unto Christ, but oftentimes it is carried away with the Cogitations of the Law and Sin, and so always seeketh to be at Liberty after the Flesh, but according to Conscience a Servant and a Slave.

Verse 15. *We who are Jews by Nature, and not Sinners of the Gentiles,*

That is to say, we are born unto the Righteousness of the Law, to *Moses*, and to Circumcision, and even in our Birth we bring the Law with us. We have the Righteousness of the Law by Nature, as *Paul* before

before faith of himself in *Chapter i. 14. Being more exceedingly zealous of the Traditions of my Fathers.* Wherefore if we be compared to the *Gentiles*, we are no Sinners; we are not without the Law, and without Works like unto the *Gentiles*; but we are *Jews* born, we are born righteous and brought up in Righteousness. Our Righteousness beginneth even with our Birth, for the *Jewish* Religion is natural unto us. For God commanded *Abraham* to circumcise every Man Child the eight Day, *Gen. xvii. 10.* This Law of Circumcision received from the Fathers, *Moses* afterward confirmed. It is a great Matter therefore that we are *Jews* by Nature. Notwithstanding, altho' we have this Prerogative, that we are righteous by Nature, born to the Law and the Works thereof, and are not Sinners as the *Gentiles*, yet are we not therefore righteous before God.

Hereby it is evident that *Paul* speaketh not of Ceremonies, or of the ceremonial Law, as some do affirm, but of a far weightier Matter, namely, of the Nativity of the *Jews* whom he denieth to be righteous, altho' they be born holy, be circumcised, keep the Law, have the Adoption, the Glory, the Covenant, the Fathers, the true Worship, God, Christ, the Promises, live in them and glory in the same: As they say, *John viii. 33. 41. We be Abraham's Seed, also we have one Father, even God.* And in *Rom. ii. 17. Behold, thou art called a Jew, and restest in the Law, &c.* Wherefore, altho' *Peter* and the other Apostles were the Children of God, righteous according to the Law, the Works and the Righteousness thereof, Circumcision, the Adoption, the Covenants, the Promises, the Apostleship, &c. Yet Christian Righteousness cometh not thereby; for none of all these is Faith in Christ, which only (as followeth in the Text) justifieth, and not the Law: Not that the Law is evil or damnable, for the Law, Circumcision and such like, are not therefore condemned because they justify not; but *Paul* therefore taketh from them the Office of Justification, because the false Apostles contended that by them, without Faith, and only by the Works wrought, Men are justified, and saved. This was not to be suffered of *Paul*.

Faith justifieth, and nothing but Faith.

All Things are deadly without Faith.

For without Faith all Things are deadly. The Law, Circumcision, the Adoption, the Temple, the Worship of God, the Promises, yea God and Christ himself without Faith profiteth nothing. *Paul* therefore speaketh generally against all Things which are contrary to Faith, and not against Ceremonies only.

**Verse 16.** *Knowing that a Man is not justified by the Works of the Law, but by the Faith of Jesus Christ,*

The Work of the Law.

This Word [*The Work of the Law*] reacheth far and comprehendeth much. We take the Work of the Law therefore generally for that which is contrary to Grace. Whatsoever

soever is not Grace, is the Law, whether it be judicial, ceremonial, or the ten Commandments. Wherefore if thou couldst do the Works of the Law according to this Commandment, *Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, &c.* (which no Man yet ever did or could do) yet thou shouldst not be justified before God; for a Man is not justified by the Works of the Law. But hereof we will speak more largely hereafter.

The Work of the Law then, according to *Paul*, signifieth the Work of the whole Law, whether it be judicial, ceremonial or moral. Now, if the Work of the moral Law, do not justify, much less doth Circumcision justify, which is a Work of the ceremonial Law. Wherefore, when *Paul* saith (as he oftentimes doth) that a Man is not justified by the Law, or by the Works of the Law, (which are both one) he speaketh generally of the whole Law, setting the Righteousness of Faith, against the Righteousness of the whole Law. For by the Righteousness of the Law (saith he) a Man is not pronounced righteous before God: But the Righteousness of Faith God imputeth freely thro' Grace, for Christ's Sake. The Law (no doubt) is holy, righteous and good, and consequently the Works of the Law are holy, righteous and good, yet notwithstanding a Man is not justified thereby before God.

Now, the Works of the Law may be done either before Justification or after, There were many good Men even among the Pagans, as *Xenophon, Aristides, Fabius, Cicero, Pomponius, Atticus*, and others, which before Justification performed the Deeds of the Law, and did notable Works: *Cicero* suffered Death valiantly in a good and just Cause. *Pomponius* was a constant Man and loved Truth, for he never made a Lie himself, nor could suffer the same in any other. Now, Constancy and Truth are noble Virtues and excellent Works of the Law, and yet were they not justified thereby. After Justification, *Peter, Paul*, and all other Christians have done and do the Works of the Law, and yet are they not justified thereby, For I know nothing by myself, yet am I not hereby justified, 1 Cor. iv. 4. We see then, that he speaketh not of any Part of the Law, but of the whole Law, and all the Works thereof.

Works done before and after Justification.

*Cicero, Pomponius, Atticus.*

*Paul* intreateth of the whole Law.

### *The Divinity of the Popish Sophisters commonly called the Schoolmen.*

Wherefore the wicked and pernicious Opinion of the Papists, is utterly to be condemned, which attribute the Merit of Grace and Remission of Sins to the

The Papists Divinity.

Work

**Merit of Congruence before Grace** which God of very Equity must reward.

**Merit of Worthiness after Grace** which of Right and Duty deserveth eternal Life.

Work wrought. For they say that a good Work before Grace, is able to obtain Grace of Congruence (which they call *meritum de Congruo*;) because it is meet that God should reward such a Work. But when Grace is obtained, the Work following deserveth everlasting Life of due Debt and Worthiness, which they call *meritum de Condigno*. As for Example, If a Man being in deadly Sin, without Grace, do a good Work of his own good natural Inclination; that is, If he say or hear a Mass, or give Alms, and such like, this Man of Congruence deserveth Grace. When he hath thus obtained Grace, he doth now a Work which of Worthiness deserveth everlasting Life. For the first, God is no Debtor; but because he is just and good, it behoveth him to approve such a good Work tho' it be done in deadly Sin, and to give Grace for such a Service. But when Grace is obtained, God is become a Debtor, and is constrained of Right and Duty to give eternal Life. For now it is not only a Work of Free-will, done according to the Substance, but also done in Grace, which maketh a Man acceptable unto God, that is to say, in Charity.

**The Doctrine of the Papists blasphemous against Christ and his Righteousness.**

This is the Divinity of the Antichristian Kingdom, which here I recite to the End that the Disputation of *Paul* may be the better understood, (for too contrary Things being set together may be the better known:) And moreover that all Men may see how far from the Truth these Blind-guides, and Leaders of the Blind have wandered, and how by this wicked and blasphemous Doctrine they have not only darkned the Gospel, but have taken it clean away, and buried Christ utterly. For if I be in deadly Sin can

do any little Work which is not only acceptable in God's Sight of itself, and according to the Substance, but also is able to deserve Grace of Congruence, and when I have received Grace, I may do Works according to Grace, that is to say, according to Charity, and get of Right and Duty eternal Life, What Need have I now of the Grace of God, for Forgiveness of Sins, of the Promise, and of the Death and Victory of Christ? Christ is now to me unprofitable, and his Benefit of none Effect; for I have Free-will and Power to do good Works, whereby I deserve Grace of Congruence, and afterwards by the Worthiness of my Work, eternal Life.

Such monstrous and horrible Blasphemies should have been set forth to the *Turks* and *Jews*, and not to the Church of Christ. And hereby it plainly appeareth that the Pope with his *Bishops*, *Doctors*, *Priests*, and all his religious Rabble, had no Knowledge or Regard of holy Matters, and that they were not careful for the Health of the silly and miserable scattered Flock. For if they had seen, but as it were thro' a Cloud, what *Paul* calleth Sin, and what he calleth Grace, they would never have compelled the People to believe such Abominations and execrable Lies. By deadly Sin they understood only the external Work committed

ted against the Law, as Murder, Theft, and such like. They could not see, that Ignorance, Hatred, and Contempt of God in the Heart, Ingratitude, murmuring against God, and resisting the Will of God, are also deadly Sins, and that the Flesh cannot think, speak, or do any Thing, but that which is devilish and altogether against God. If they had seen these Mischiefs fast rooted in the Nature of Man, they would never have devised such impudent and execrable Dreams touching the Desert of Congruence and Worthiness.

Wherefore we must properly and plainly define what a wicked Man or a deadly Sinner is. He is such a holy and a bloody Hypocrite as *Paul* was when he went to *Damascus*, to persecute Jesus of *Nazareth*, to abolish the Doctrine of the Gospel, to murder the Faithful, and utterly to overthrow the Church of Christ. And who will not say but that these were horrible Sins? Yet could not *Paul* see them: For he was so blinded with a perverse Zeal of God, that he thought these Abominations to be perfect Righteousness and high Service unto God; And shall we say that such as defend these horrible Sins to be perfect Righteousness, do deserve Grace?

Wherefore with *Paul*, we utterly deny the Merit of Congruence and Worthiness, and affirm that these Speculations are nothing else but mere Deceits of Satan, which were never done indeed, nor justified by any Examples. For God never gave to any Man Grace and everlasting Life for the Merit of Congruence or Worthiness. These Disputations therefore of the School-men touching the Merit of Congruence and Worthiness, are nothing else but vain Toys and Dreams of idle Brains, to no other End and Purpose but to draw Men from the true Worship of God. And hereupon is the whole *Papacy* grounded. For there is no religious Person, but he hath this Imagination; I am able by the Observation of my holy Order to deserve Grace of Congruence, and by the Works which I do after that I have received this Grace. I am able to heap up such Treasure of Merit, as shall not only be sufficient for me to obtain eternal Life, but also to give or sell unto others. Thus have all the religious Orders taught, and thus have they lived. And to defend this horrible Blasphemy against Christ, the *Papists* do at this Day attempt against us what they can. And there is not one of them all, but the more holy Hypocrite and Merit-monger he is, the more cruel and deadly Enemy he is to the Gospel of Christ.

What the *Papists* call deadly Sin.

A Description of a deadly Sinner.

Desert of Congruence and Worthiness a vain and foolish Toy.

The Ground of the whole Popedom.

### *The true Way to Christianity.*

**N**OW the true Way to Christianity, is this, that a Man do first acknowledge himself by the Law, to be a Sinner, and that it is impossible for him to do any good Work. For the Law saith,

The *first*  
Part of true  
Christianity,  
is the preach-  
ing of Re-  
pentance,  
and the  
acknowledg-  
ing of our  
Sins.

faith, Thou art an evil Tree and therefore all that thou thinkest, speakest, or doest is against God. Thou canst not therefore deserve Grace by thy Works, which if thou go about to do, thou doublest thy Offence; for since thou art an evil Tree, thou canst not but bring forth evil Fruits, *Matth. vii. 17.* that is to say Sins. *For whatsoever is not of Faith is Sin,* Rom. xiv. 23. Wherefore he that would deserve Grace by Works going before Faith, goeth about to please God with Sins which is nothing else but to heap Sin upon Sin, to mock God, and to provoke his Wrath. When a Man is thus taught and instructed

by the Law, then is he terrified and humbled, then he seeth indeed the Greatness of his Sin, and cannot find in himself one Spark of the Love of God; therefore he justifieth God in his Word, and confesseth, that he is guilty of Death and eternal Damnation. The *first* Part then of Christianity is the preaching of Repentance, and the Knowledge of ourselves.

The *second*  
Part is the  
preaching  
of the For-  
giveness of  
Sins.

The *second* Part is, If thou wilt be saved thou mayest not seek Salvation by Works; for God hath sent his only begotten Son into the World, that we might live thro' him. He was crucified and died for thee and offered up thy Sins in his own Body. Here is no Congruence or Work done before Grace, but Wrath, Sin, Terror, and Death. Wherefore the Law doth nothing else but utter Sin, terrify and humble, and by this Means prepareth us to Justification, and driveth us to Christ. For God hath revealed unto us by his Word, that he will be unto us a merciful Father, and without our Deserts (seeing

The Office  
of the Law.

we can deserve nothing)

will freely give unto us Remission of Sins, Righteousness, and Life everlasting for Christ his Son's Sake. For God giveth his Gifts freely unto all Men, and that is the Praise and Glory of his Divinity. But the Justiciaries and Merit-mongers will not receive Grace and everlasting Life of him freely, but will deserve the same by their own Works. For this Cause they would utterly take from him the Glory of his Divinity. To the End therefore that he may maintain and defend the same, he is constrained to send his Law before, which as a lightning and thundering from Heaven, may bruise and break those hard Rocks.

The Merit-  
mongers  
take from  
God the Glo-  
ry of his  
Godhead.

The devilish  
Dreams of  
the *Papists*  
touching the  
the Merit of  
*congruum &*  
*condignum.*

This briefly is our Doctrine as touching Christian Righteousness contrary to the Abominations and Blasphemies of the *Papists* concerning the Merit of Congruence and Worthiness, or Works before Grace and after Grace. Which monstrous Dreams were devised by such as were never exercised with any Tentations, never had any true feeling of Sin or of the Terror of Death; and therefore they know not what they say, or what they teach. Moreover,

they can shew no Example of any Work done either before or after but

Grace that could justify before God. Wherefore they are nothing else but vain Toyes and foolish Fables, whereby the *Papists* deceive both themselves and others. For *Paul* here plainly affirmeth, that no Man is justified by the Works of the Law, either going before Grace (whereof he speaketh in this Place) or coming after Grace. You see then that Christian Righteousness is not such an essential Quality ingrafted in the Nature of Man, as the Schoolmen do when they say :

(*The Divinity of the Schoolmen.*)

WHEN a Man doth any good Work, God accepteth it, and for that Work he poureth into him Charity, which they call Charity infused; this Charity (say they) is a Quality remaining in the Heart, and this they call formal Righteousness (which Manner of speaking it is expedient for you to know) and they can abide nothing less than to hear that this Quality of forming and adorning the Soul, & Whiteness doth the Work, should not be counted Righteousness. They can climb no higher than to this Cogitation of Man's Reason, that Man is righteous by his own formal Righteousness, which is Grace making him acceptable unto God, that is to say Charity. So to this Quality cleaving unto the Soul, that is, to wit, Charity (which is a Work after the Law, for the Law saith, *Thou shalt love the Lord thy God, &c.*) They attribute formal Righteousness, that is to say, true Christian Righteousness, and they say that this Righteousness is worthy of everlasting Life, and he that hath it is formally righteous; and moreover he is effectually or actually righteous, because he now doth good Works, wherunto everlasting Life is due. This is the Opinion of the Popish Schoolmen, yea even of the best of them all.

The *Papists* take their formal Righteousness, which they call Charity, to be that Grace, whereby we are made acceptable unto God.

Some other there be which are not so good as *Scotus* and *Occam*, which said, that for the obtaining of the Grace of God, this Charity infused or given of God, is not necessary, but that a Man even by his own natural Strength, may procure this Charity above all Things. For so reasoneth *Scotus*: If a Man may love a Creature, a young Man a Maiden, a covetous Man, Money, which are the less Good, he may also love God which is the greater Good. If he have a Love of the Creature through his natural Strength, much more hath he a Love to the Creator. With this Argument were all the *Sophisters* convicted, and none of them all was able to refute it. Notwithstanding thus they reply.

*Scotus* and *Occam* Doctors of hellish Darkness.

The Scripture compelleth us to confess (say they) that God, besides that natural Love and Charity which is ingrafted in us (wherewith alone he is not contented) requireth also Charity, which he himself giveth. And hereby we see, that besides that Strength which they say we have of ourselves to fulfil the Law, and is sufficient to Salvation, God requireth yet a far more Perfection in us which we cannot have.

The blasphemous Doctrine of the Schoolmen, which

hereby they accuse God as a Tyrant and a cruel Exactor, who is not content that we keep and fulfil his Law, but above the Law (which we ourselves are able to fulfil) requireth also, that we should accomplish it with other Circumstances and Furniture, as Apparel to the same. As if a Mistress should not be contented that her Cook had dressed her Meat excellently well, but should chide her for that she did not prepare the same, being decked with precious Apparel, and adorned with a Crown of Gold. Now, what a Mistress were this, who when her Cook had done all that she was bound to do, and also exactly performed the same, would moreover require that she should wear such Ornaments as she could not have? Even so, what a one should God be if he should require his Law to be fulfilled of us (which notwithstanding by our own natural Strength we observe and fulfil) with such Furniture as we cannot have?

But here lest they should seem to avouch contrary Things, they make a Distinction, and say, that the Law is fulfilled two Manner of Ways: *First*, According to the Substance of the Deed. And *secondly*, According to the Mind of the Commander. According to the Substance of the Deed (say they) we may fulfil all Things which the Law commandeth, but not according to the Mind of the Commander, which is that God is not contented that thou hast done all Things which are commanded in the Law (altho' he can require no more of thee) but he further requireth, that thou shouldst fulfil the Law in Charity; not that Charity which thou hast by Nature, but that which is above Nature and heavenly, which he himself giveth. And what is this else but to make of God a Tyrant and a Tormentor, which requireth that of us which we are not able to perform? And it is in a Manner as much as if they should say, that the Fault is not in us if we be damned, but in God, which with this Circumstance requireth his Law to be accomplished of us.

These Things I do the more diligently repeat, that you may see how far they have strayed from the true Sense of the Scripture, which have said that by our own natural Strength we may love God above all Things or at least, by the Work wrought we may deserve Grace and everlasting Life. And because God is not content that we fulfil the Law according to the Substance of the Deed, but will have us also to fulfil the same according to the Mind of the Commander. Therefore the Scripture further compelleth us to have a Quality above Nature poured into us from above, and that is Charity, which they call formal Righteousness, adorning and beautifying Faith, being also the Cause that Faith justifieth us. So Faith is the Body, and the Shell, Charity the Life, the Kernel, the Form and Furniture. These are the monstrous Dreams of the Schoolmen.

But we in the Stead of this Charity do place Faith, and we say the Faith apprehendeth Jesus Christ, who is the Form which adorneth and furnisheth Faith, as the Colour adorneth and beautifieth the Wall.

Christian

Christian Faith therefore is not an idle Quality or empty Husk in the Art, which may be in deadly Sin until Charity come and quicken it: if it be true Faith, it is a sure Trust and Confidence of the Heart, a firm Consent whereby Christ is apprehended, so Christ is the Object of Faith, yea rather even in Faith Christ himself is present. Faith therefore is a certain objective Knowledge, or rather Darknes which seeth nothing, yet Christ apprehended by Faith seemeth in this Darknes, like as God in Sinai, *Exod* xix. 9. and in the Temple gate in the Midst of Darknes, *1 Kings* viii. 10. Therefore our formal Righteousness is not Charity furnishing and beautifying Faith, but it is Faith itself, which as it were a certain Cloud in our Hearts, that is to say a steadfast Trust and Affiance in the Thing which we see not, which is Christ, who altho' he be not seen at yet is he present.

Christ is the Object which Faith beholdeth and looketh unto.

True formal and Christian Righteousness.

Faith therefore justifieth, because it apprehendeth and possesseth this Treasure, even Christ present. But this sense cannot be comprehended of us, because it is in Darknes, as I have said. Wherefore, where assured Trust and Affiance of the Heart is, there Christ is present, even in the Cloud and Obscurity of Faith. And this is the true formal Righteousness, whereby a Man is justified, and not by Charity, as the Popish Schoolmen do most wickedly maintain.

How Christ is present in Faith, Man's Heart cannot comprehend.

To conclude, like as the Schoolmen say that Charity furnisheth and quickeneth Faith, so do we say that it is Christ which furnisheth and quickeneth Faith, or rather that he is the very Form and Perfection of Faith. Wherefore Christ apprehended by Faith, and dwelling in the Heart, as the true Christian Righteousness, for the which God counteth righteous and giveth us eternal Life. Here is no Work of the Law, Charity, but a far other Manner of Righteousness, and a certain World beyond and above the Law. For Christ or Faith is not Law nor the Work of the Law. But concerning this Matter, which Schoolmen neither well understood nor taught, we intend to speak more largely hereafter. Now it shall be enough that we have shewed *Paul* speaketh not here of the ceremonial Law only, but of the whole Law.

### *The true Rule of Christianity.*

Contrary to these vain Trifles and doting Dreams (as we have also noted before) we teach Faith, give a true Rule of Christianity in this Sort; First, that man must be taught by the Law to know himself that he may learn to say with the Prophet, *For all have sinned, and come short of the Glory of God*, *Rom.* iii. 23. *There is not one righteous, no not one: Not one that*

The first Part of Christianity, is the preaching of Repentance.

*understandeth, not one that seeketh after God : All have gone astray, Psal. xiv. 1, 2, 3. liii. 1, 2, 3. Also, Against thee, thee only have I sinned, Psal. li. 3. Thus we by a contrary Way, do drive Men from the Merit of Congruence and Worthiness. Now, when a Man is humbled by the Law, and brought to the Knowledge of himself, then followeth true Repentance, ( for true Repentance beginneth at the Fear and Judgment of God ) and he seeth himself to be so great a Sinner, that he can find no Means how he may be delivered from his Sin by his own Strength, Works or Merits. Then he perceiveth well what *Paul* meaneth when he saith, *But I am carnal, sold under Sin, Rom. vii. 14. Also, For God hath concluded them all in Unbelief, Rom. xi. 32. And all the World may become guilty before God, Rom. iii. 19. Then he seeth that all the Divinity of the Schoolmen touching the Merit of Congruence and Worthiness, is nothing else but meer Foolishness, and that by this Means the whole Papacy falleth.**

Here now he beginneth to sigh, and saith in this wise, Who then can give Succour? For he being thus terrified with the Law, utterly despaireth of his own Strength; he looketh about and sigheth for the Help of a Mediator and Saviour. Here then cometh in good Time the healthful Word of the Gospel, and preaching of faith, *Son, be of good Cheer, thy Sins be forgiven thee, Matth. ix. 2. believe in Christ Jesus crucified for thy Sins. If thou feel thy Sins and the Burden thereof, look not upon them in thyself, but remember that they are translated and laid upon Christ, whose Stripes have made thee whole, Isa. liii. 5.*

This the beginning of Health and Salvation. By this Means we are delivered from Sin, justified and made Inheritors of everlasting Life, not for our own Works and Deserts, but for our Faith, whereby we lay hold upon Christ. Wherefore we also do acknowledge a Quality and a formal Righteousness in the Heart : Not Charity (as the *Sophisters* do) but Faith, and yet so notwithstanding, that the Heart must behold and apprehend nothing but Christ the Saviour. And here it is necessary that you know the true Definition of Christ. The Schoolmen being utterly ignorant hereof, have made Christ a Judge and a Tormentor, devising this fond Fantasy concerning the Merit of Congruence and Worthiness.

But Christ, according to his true Definition, is no Law-giver, but a Forgiver of Sins, and a Saviour. This Law-giver. doth Faith apprehend and undoubtedly believe, that he hath wrought Works and Merits of Congruence and Worthiness before and after Grace abundantly. For he might have satisfied for all the Sins of the World by one only Drop of his Blood, but now he hath shed it plentifully, and hath satisfied abundantly. *By his own Blood he entred in once into the holy Place, having obtained eternal Redemption for us, Heb. ix. 12. Also, Being justified freely by his Grace, thro' the Redemption that is in Jesus Christ : Whom God hath set forth to be a Propitiation, thro' Faith in his Blood, Rom. iii. 24, 25. Wherefore it is a great Matter, by Faith to lay hold upon Christ*

bearing

aring the Sins of the World. And this Faith alone is counted for righteouſneſs.

Here is to be noted, that theſe three Things, Faith, Chriſt, Chriſt, Acceptation or Imputation muſt be joined together. Faith, Impu- tation. Faith taketh hold of Chriſt, and hath him preſent, and Imputeth him incloſed, as the Ring doth the precious ſtone. And whoſoever ſhall be found having this Confidence in Chriſt apprehended in the Heart, him will God account for righteous. This is the Mean, and this is the Merit whereby we attain the Remiſſion of Sins and Righteouſneſs. Becauſe thou believeſt in me, ſaith the Lord, and thy Faith layeth hold upon Chriſt, whom I have freely given unto thee that he might be thy *Mediator and High-Prieſt*, therefore be thou juſtified and righteous. Wherefore God doth accept or account us righteous, only for our Faith in Chriſt.

And this Acceptation or Imputation is very neceſſary: Imputation neceſſary. *Faith*, Becauſe we are not yet perfectly righteous, but whiles we remain in this Life, Sin dwelleth ſtill in our Fleſh; and this Remnant of Sin God purgeth in us. Moreover we are ſometimes tempted of the Holy Ghoſt and fall into Sins, as did *Peter*, *Judas* and other holy Men. Notwithſtanding we have always Recourſe to this Article, that our Sins are covered, and that God will not lay them to our Charge, *Pſal.* cxii. 1. and *Rom.* iv. 7. Not that Sin is not in us, as the *Papiſts* have taught, ſaying, that we muſt be always working well until we feel that there is no Guilt of Sin remaining in us; yea, Sin is indeed always in us, and the Godly do feel it, but it is covered and is not imputed unto us for Chriſt's Sake; whom becauſe we do apprehend by Faith, all our Sins are now no Sins. But where Chriſt and Faith be not, there is no Remiſſion or Covering of Sins, but mere Imputation of Sins and Condemnation. Thus will God glorify his Son, and will be glorified himſelf in us thro' him.

When we have thus taught Faith in Chriſt, then do we teach alſo good Works; becauſe thou haſt laid hold upon Chriſt, by Faith, thro' whom thou art made righteous: Begin now to work well, love God, and thy Neighbor, call upon God, give Thanks unto him, praife him, and ſeek him. Theſe are good Works indeed, which flow from this Faith and this Cheerfulneſs conceived in the Heart, for that we have Remiſſion of Sins freely by Chriſt.

Now, what Croſs or Affliction ſoever do afterwards inſue, they are lightly born, and cheerfully ſuffered. For the Yoke that Chriſt layeth upon us, is ſweet, and his Burden is eaſy, *Matth.* xi. 30. When Sin is ſeconded, and the Conſcience delivered from the Burden and Sting of Sin, then may a Chriſtian bear all Things eaſily; becauſe he ſeeleth all Things within ſweet and comfortable, therefore he doth and ſuffereth all things willingly. But when a Man walketh in his own Righteouſneſs,

They that believe in Chriſt, ſhall not be charged with their Sins.

The Doctrine of good Works muſt be taught after the Doctrine of Faith.

whatsoever he doth is grievous and tedious unto him, because he doth it unwillingly.

Who is a right Christian. We therefore do make this Definition of a Christian that a Christian is not he which hath no Sin, but he to whom God imputeth not his Sin, thro' Faith in Christ. This Doctrine bringeth great Consolation to poor afflicted Consciences in serious and inward Terrors. It is not without good Cause therefore that we do so often repeat and beat into your Minds the Forgiveness of Sins and Imputation of Righteousness for Christ's Sake; also that a Christian hath nothing to do with the Law and Sin, specially in the Time of Tentation. For in that he is a Christian, he is above the Law and Sin; for he hath Christ the Lord of the Law present and inclosed in his Heart (as we have said) even as a Ring hath a Jewel or precious Stone inclosed in it.

A Christian Man hath nothing to do with the Law. Therefore when the Law accuseth and Sin terrifieth him, he looketh upon Christ, and when he hath apprehended him by Faith, he hath present with him the Conqueror of the Law, Sin, Death, and the Devil, who reigneth and ruleth over them, so that they cannot hurt him. Wherefore a Christian Man, if ye define him rightly, is free from all Laws, and is not subject unto any Creature, either within or without, in that he is a Christian (I say) and not in that he is a Man or a Woman, that is to say, in that he hath his Conscience adorned and beautified with this Faith, with this great and inestimable Treasure, or (as Paul saith) this *unspeakable Gift*, 2 Cor. ix. 19. which cannot be magnified and praised enough, for it makes us the Children and Heirs of God. And by this Means a Christian is greater then the whole World. For he hath such a Gift, such a Treasure in his Heart, that altho' seemeth to be but little, yet notwithstanding the Smallness thereof greater then Heaven and Earth, because Christ which is this Gift is greater.

Therefore when the Law accuseth and Sin terrifieth him, he looketh upon Christ, and when he hath apprehended him by Faith, he hath present with him the Conqueror of the Law, Sin, Death, and the Devil, who reigneth and ruleth over them, so that they cannot hurt him. Wherefore a Christian Man, if ye define him rightly, is free from all Laws, and is not subject unto any Creature, either within or without, in that he is a Christian (I say) and not in that he is a Man or a Woman, that is to say, in that he hath his Conscience adorned and beautified with this Faith, with this great and inestimable Treasure, or (as Paul saith) this *unspeakable Gift*, 2 Cor. ix. 19. which cannot be magnified and praised enough, for it makes us the Children and Heirs of God. And by this Means a Christian is greater then the whole World. For he hath such a Gift, such a Treasure in his Heart, that altho' seemeth to be but little, yet notwithstanding the Smallness thereof greater then Heaven and Earth, because Christ which is this Gift is greater.

Christians are Judges of all Kinds of Doctrine. Whiles this Doctrine pacifying and quieting the Conscience, remaineth pure and uncorrupt, Christians are made Judges over all Kinds of Doctrine, and are Lords over the Laws of the whole World. Then can they certainly judge that the *Turk* with his *Alcoran* is damned because he goeth not the right Way, that is, he acknowledgeth not himself to be miserable and damnable, nor apprehendeth Christ by Faith, for whose Sake he might be assured that his Sins are pardoned. In like Manner they boldly pronounce Sentence against the Pope, that he is condemned with all his Kingdom, because he so walketh and teacheth (with all his religious Rabble of *Sophisters* and

ledgeth not himself to be miserable and damnable, nor apprehendeth Christ by Faith, for whose Sake he might be assured that his Sins are pardoned. In like Manner they boldly pronounce Sentence against the Pope, that he is condemned with all his Kingdom, because he so walketh and

The Doctrine of the Pope. teacheth (with all his religious Rabble of *Sophisters* and Schoolmen,) that by the Merit of Congruence we must come to Grace and that afterward by the Merit of Worthiness we are received into Heaven. Here saith the Christian, this is not the right Way to justify us, neither doth this Way lead us to Heaven. For I cannot (saith he) by my Works going before Grace, deserve Grace, nor be

Schoolmen,) that by the Merit of Congruence we must come to Grace and that afterward by the Merit of Worthiness we are received into Heaven. Here saith the Christian, this is not the right Way to justify us, neither doth this Way lead us to Heaven. For I cannot (saith he) by my Works going before Grace, deserve Grace, nor be

my Works following Grace, deserve eternal Life; but to him that believeth, Sin is pardoned, and Righteousness imputed. This Trust and this Confidence maketh him the Child of God, and Heir of his Kingdom; for in Hope he possesseth already everlasting Life, assured unto him by Promise. Thro' Faith in Christ, therefore all Things are given unto us, Grace, Peace, Forgiveness of Sins, Salvation, and everlasting Life, and not for the Merit of Congruence and Worthiness.

Wherefore this Doctrine of the Schoolmen, with their Ceremonies, Masses, and infinite Foundations of the Papistical Kingdom, are most abominable Blasphemies against God, Sacriledges and plain Denials of Christ, as *Peter* hath fore-told in these Words, *There shall be* (saith he) *false Teachers among you. who privily shall bring in damnable Heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them, &c.* 2 Pet. ii. 1. As tho' he would say, The Lord hath redeemed and bought us with his Blood, that he might justify and save us; this is the Way of Righteousness and Salvation. But there shall come false Teachers, which denying the Lord, shall blaspheme the Way of Truth, of Righteousness, and Salvation; they shall find out new Ways of Falshood and Destruction, and many shall follow their damnable Ways. The Papacy *Peter* throughout this whole *Chapter* most lively painteth lively painted out the Papacy, which neglecting and despising the Gospel and Faith in Christ, hath taught the Works and Traditions of Men; as the Merit of Congruence and Worthiness, the Difference of Days, Meats, Vows, Invocations of Saints, Pilgrimages. Purgatory, and such like. In these Phantastical Opinions the *Papists* are so nussed, that it is impossible for them to understand one Syllable of the Gospel, of Faith, or of Christ.

And this the Thing itself doth well declare. For they take that Priviledge unto themselves which belongeth unto Christ alone. He only forgiveth Sins, he only giveth Righteousness and everlasting Life; and they most impudently and wickedly do vaunt that they are able to obtain these Things by their own Merits and Worthiness before and after Grace. This saith *Peter* and the other Apostles, is to bring in damnable Heresies and Sects of Perdition. For by these Means they deny Christ, tread his Blood under their Feet, blaspheme the Holy Ghost, and despise the Grace of God. Wherefore no Man can sufficiently conceive how horrible the Idolatry of the *Papists* The Idolatry of the *Papists*. As inestimable as the Gift is which is offered unto us by Christ, even so and no less abominable are these Prophanations of the *Papists*. Wherefore they ought not to be lightly esteemed or forgotten, but diligently weighed and considered. And this maketh very much also for amplifying of the Grace of God, and Benefit of Christ, as by the contrary. For the more we know the Prophanation of the Papistical Mass, so much the more we abhor and detest the same, and embrace the true Use of the holy Communion, which the Pope hath taken away, and hath made Merchandise thereof, that being bought

way by the Pope. G 4 for on taken 2

for Money, it might profit others. For he saith that the Massing Priest an Apostata, denying Christ and blaspheming the Holy Ghost, standing at the Altar, doth a good Work, not only for himself, but also for others both Quick and Dead, and for the whole Church, and that only by the Work wrought, and by no other Means.

Wherefore even by this we may plainly see the inestimable Patience of God, in that he hath not long ago destroyed the whole Papacy, and consumed it with Fire and Brimstone, as he did *Sodom* and *Gomorrhah*. But now these jolly Fellows go about, not only to cover, but highly to advance their Impiety and Filthiness. This we may in no Case dissemble. We must therefore with all Diligence set forth the Article of Justification, that as a most clear Sun, it may bring to Light the Darknes of their Hypocrisy, and discover their Filthiness and Shame. For this Cause we do so often repeat, and so earnestly set forth the Righteousness of Faith, that the Adversaries may be confounded, and this Article established and confirmed in our Hearts. And this is a most necessary Thing; for if we once lose this Sun, we fall again into our former Darknes. And most horrible it is that the Pope should ever be able to bring this to pass in the Church, that Christ should be denied, troden under Foot, spit upon, blasphemed, yea, and that even by the Gospel and Sacraments, which he hath so darkned, and hath turned into such an horrible Abuse, that he hath made them to serve him against Christ, for the stablishing and confirming of his detestable Abominations. O deep Darknes, O horrible Wrath of God!

The horrible Abuse of the Gospel and Sacrament in the Popedom.

gain into our former Darknes. And most horrible it is that the Pope should ever be able to bring this to pass in the Church, that Christ should be denied, troden under Foot, spit upon, blasphemed, yea, and that even by the Gospel and Sacraments, which he hath so darkned, and hath turned into such an horrible Abuse, that he hath made them to serve him against Christ, for the stablishing and confirming of his detestable Abominations. O deep Darknes, O horrible Wrath of God!

*Verse 16. Even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the Faith of Christ,*

This is the true Mean to become a Christian, even to be justified by Faith in Jesus Christ, and not by the Works of the Law. Here we must stand not upon the wicked Gloss of the Schoolmen, which say that

The Schoolmens Gloss is wicked, which saith that Faith adorned with Charity justifieth. Faith then justifieth, when Charity and good Works are joined withal. With this pestilent Gloss the *Sophisters* have darkned and corrupted this and other like Sentences in *Paul*, wherein he manifestly attributeth Justification to Faith only in Christ. But when a Man heareth that he ought to believe in Christ, and yet notwithstanding Faith justifieth not except it be formed and furnished with Charity, by and by he falleth from Faith, and thus he thinketh, if Faith without Charity justifieth not, then is Faith in vain and unprofitable, and Charity alone justifieth; for except Faith be formed with Charity, it is nothing.

And to confirm this pernicious and pestilent Gloss, the Adversaries do alledge this Place, *Tho' I speak with the Tongues of Men, and of Angels and have not Charity, I am become as sounding Brass, or a tinkling Cymbal,*

1 Cor. xiii. 1. and this Place is their brazen Wall. But they are Men without Understanding, and therefore they can see or understand nothing in *Paul*; and by this false Interpretation they have not only perverted the Words of *Paul*, but have also denied Christ, and buried all his Benefits, wherefore we must avoid this Gloss as a most deadly and devilish Poison, and conclude with *Paul*, that we are justified, not by Faith furnished with Charity, but by Faith only and alone.

Faith justifieth without the Law.

We grant that we must teach also good Works and Charity, but it must be done in Time and Place, that is to say, when the Question is concerning Works, and toucheth not this Article of Justification. But here the Question is, by what Means we are justified and attain eternal Life. To this we answer with *Paul*, that by Faith only in Christ we are pronounced righteous, and not by the Works of the Law or Charity; not because we reject good Works, but that we will not suffer ourselves to be removed from this Ankerhold of our Salvation, which Satan most desireth. Wherefore since we are now in the Matter of Justification, we reject and condemn all good Works; for this Place will admit no Disputation of good Works. In this Matter therefore we do generally cut off all Laws and all the Works of the Law.

The Doctrine of good Works is not to be neglected.

But the Law is good, just and holy. True it is. But when we are in the Matter of Justification, there is no Time or Place to speak of the Law; but the Question is, what Christ is, and what Benefit he hath brought unto us. Christ is not the Law, he is not my Work, or the Work of the Law, he is not my Charity, my Obedience, my Poverty, but he is the Lord of Life and Death, a Mediator, a Saviour, a Redeemer of those that are under the Law and Sin, in him we are by Faith, and he in us. This Bridegroom must be alone with the Bride in his secret Chamber, all the Servants and Family being put apart. But afterwards, when the Door is open and he cometh forth, then let the Servants and Hand-maidens return to minister unto them, then let Charity do her Office, and let good Works be done.

We must learn therefore to discern all Laws, yea even the Law of God, and all Works, from the Promise of the Gospel, and from Faith, that we may define Christ rightly. For Christ is no Law, and therefore he is no Exactor of the Law and Works, but *he is the Lamb of God, which taketh away the Sin of the World*, John i. 29. This doth Faith alone lay hold of, and not Charity, which notwithstanding, as a certain Thankfulness must follow Faith. Wherefore Victory over Sin and Death, Salvation and everlasting Life come not by the Law nor by the Works of the Law, nor yet by the Power of Free-will, but by the Lord Jesus Christ only and alone.

Faith only justifieth, because it only taketh hold of the Benefit of Christ.

Verse 16. *That we might be justified by the Faith of Christ, and not by the Works of the Law:*

*Paul*

*Paul speaketh of the whole Law.*

*Paul speaketh not here of the ceremonial Law only (as before we have said) but of the whole Law : For the ceremonial Law was as well the Law of God as the moral Law was.*

As for Example, Circumcision, the Institution of the Priest-hood, the Service and Ceremonies of the Temple, were as well commanded of God as the ten Commandments. Moreover, when *Abraham* was commanded to offer up his Son *Isaac* in Sacrifice, *Gen. xv. 6.* it was a Law. This Work of *Abraham* pleased God no less than other Works of the ceremonial Law did, and yet was he not justified by this Work, but by Faith; for the Scripture saith, *Abraham believed God, and it was counted to him for Righteousness, Rom. iv. 3.*

But since the revealing of Christ (say they) the ceremonial Law killeth and bringeth Death. Yea, so doth the Law of the ten Commandments also, without Faith in Christ. Moreover, there may no Law be suffered to reign in the Conscience, but only the Law of the Spirit and Life, whereby we are made free in Christ from the Law of the Letter and of Death, from the Works thereof, and from all Sins: Not because the Law is evil, but for that it is not able to justify us; for it hath a plain contrary Effect and Working. It is an high and an excellent Matter to be at Peace with God, and therefore in this Case we have need of a far other Mediator then *Moses* or the Law. Here we must do nothing at all, but only receive the Treasure which is Christ, and apprehend him in our Hearts by Faith, altho' we feel ourselves to be never so full of Sin. These Words therefore of the Apostle, *That we might be justified by the Faith of Christ, and not by the Works of the Law,* are very effectual, and not in vain or unprofitable, as the Schoolmen think, and therefore they pass them over so lightly.

*The Law must not be suffered to reign in the Conscience.*

*Our Salvation consisteth not in doing, but in receiving.*

Hitherto ye have heard the Words of *Paul*, which he spake unto *Peter*, wherein he hath briefly comprised the principle Article of all Christian Doctrine, which maketh true Christians indeed. Now he turneth to the *Galatians*, to whom he writeth, and thus he concludeth, Since it is so that we are justified by Faith in Christ, then by the Works of the Law shall no Flesh be justified.

**Verse 16.** *For by the Works of the Law shall no Flesh be justified.*

*What Paul calleth the Flesh.*

*Flesh in Paul* doth not signify (as the Schoolmen dream) manifest and gross Sins, for those he useth to call by their proper Names, as Adultery, Fornication, Uncleaness and such like; but by *Flesh Paul* meaneth here

as Christ doth in *John iii. 6.* *That which is born of the Flesh* (saith he) *is Flesh.* *Flesh* therefore signifieth the whole Nature of Man, with Reason

son and all other Powers whatsoever do belong to Man. This Flesh (saith he) is not justified by Works, no not of the Law. Flesh therefore according to *Paul* signifieth all the Righteousness, Wisdom, Devotion, Religion, Understanding and Will that is possible to be in a natural Man; so that if a Man be never so righteous according to Reason and the Law of God, yet with all this Righteousness, Works, Merits, Devotion and Religion, he is not justified.

This the *Papists* do not believe, but being blind and obstinate, they defend their Abominations against their own Conscience, and continue still in this their Blasphemy, having in their Mouths these execrable Words; He that doth this good Work or that, deserveth Forgiveness of his Sins; whosoever entreth into this or that holy Order, and keepeth his Rule, to him we assuredly promise everlasting Life. It cannot be uttered what an horrible Blasphemy it is to attribute that to the Doctrine of Devils, to the Decrees and Ordinances of Men, to the wicked Traditions of the Pope, to the hypocritical Works and Merits of *Monks* and *Friers*, which *Paul* the Apostle of Christ taketh from the Law of God. For if no Flesh be justified by the Works of the Law, much less shall it be justified by the Rule of *Benedict*, *Francis*, or *Augustine*, in the which there is not one jot of true Faith in Christ; but this only they teach, that whosoever keepeth these Things hath Life everlasting.

The Blindness of the *Papists*.

The Pope attributeth the Vertue of justifying to his own Traditions, which *Paul* taketh from the Law of God.

Wherefore I have much and often marvelled, that these Sects of Perdition reigning so many Years in so great Darkness and Errors, the Church could endure and continue as it hath done. Some there were whom God called by the Text of the Gospel and by Baptism. These walked in Simplicity and Humbleness of Heart, thinking the *Monks* and *Friers*, and such only as were anointed of the Bishops to be religious and holy, and themselves to be profane and secular, and not worthy to be compared unto them. Wherefore they finding in themselves no good Works to set against the Wrath and Judgment of God, did fly to the Death and Passion of Christ, and were saved in this Simplicity.

Who were saved in the Kingdom of the Pope.

Horrible and unspeakable is the Wrath of God, in that he hath so long Time punished the Contempt of the Gospel and Christ in the *Papists*, and also their Ingratitude, in giving them over into a reprobate Sense, insomuch that they blaspheming and denying Christ altogether as touching his Office, instead of the Gospel received the execrable Rules, Ordinances and Traditions of Men, which they devoutly adored and honoured, yea, and preferred the same far above the Word of God, until at length they were forbidden to marry, and were bound to that incestuous single Life, wherein they were outwardly polluted and defiled with all Kinds of horrible Wickedness,

The *Papists* prefer Man's Traditions before the Gospel.

ness, as Adultery, Whoredom, Uncleanness, Sodomity, and such other Abominations. This was the Fruit of that filthy single Life.

So God punishing Sin with Sin, inwardly gave them over unto a reprobate Mind, and outwardly suffered them to fall into such horrible Abominations, and that justly, because they blasphemed the only Son of God, in whom the Father would be glorified, and whom he delivered to Death, that all which believe in him, might be saved by him, and not by their own execrable Rules and Orders. *Him that honoureth me* (saith he) *I will honour*, 1 Sam. ii. 30. Now, God is honoured in his Son. Whoso then believeth that the Son is our Mediator and Saviour, he honoureth the Father, and him again doth God honour, that is to say, adorneth him with his Gifts, Forgiveness of Sins, Righteousness, the Holy Ghost, and everlasting Life. Contrariwise, *They that despise me* (saith he) *shall be despised*.

**The Dignity of the Law.** This is then a general Conclusion, *By the Works of the Law, shall no Flesh be justified*. The Law of God is greater then the whole World, for it comprehendeth all Men, and the Works of the Law do far excel, even the most glorious Will-works of all the Meritmongers; and yet *Paul* saith, that neither the Law nor the Works of the Law do justify. Therefore we conclude with *Paul*, that Faith only justifieth. This Proposition he goeth about to confirm in this Manner.

**Verse 17.** *But if while we seek to be justified by Christ, we ourselves also are found Sinners, Is therefore Christ the Minister of Sin? God forbid.*

**The first Argument in Defence of the Righteousness of Faith.** If this be true (saith he) that we are justified by Christ, then is it impossible that we should be Sinners, or should be justified by the Law. On the contrary, if this be not true, but that we must be justified by the Law and the Works of the Law, it is then impossible that we should be justified by Christ. One of these two must needs be false. Either we are not justified by Christ, or we are not justified by the Law. But the Truth is that we are justified by Christ; therefore we are not justified by the Law. He reasoneth therefore after this Manner, *But if while we seek to be justified by Christ, &c.* That is, if we seek to be justified by Christ, and so being justified are yet found Sinners, having need of the Law to justify us being Sinners; If we have need (I say) of the Observation of the Law to justify us, so that they which are righteous in Christ are not righteous, but have yet need of the Law, to justify them; or, if he that is justified by Christ must yet further be justified by the Law, then is Christ nothing else but a Law-giver, and a Minister of Sin. Therefore he that is justified and holy in Christ, is not justified or holy, but hath yet need of the Righteousness and Holiness of the Law.

But we are indeed justified and made righteous in Christ; for the Truth of the Gospel teacheth us that a Man is not justified in the Law, but in Christ. Now, if they which are justified in Christ are yet sound Sinners, that is, do yet still belong to the Law, and are under the Law, (as the false Apostles teach) then are they not yet justified; for the Law accuseth them, and sheweth them to be yet Sinners, and requireth of them the Works of the Law as necessary to their Justification. Therefore they that are justified in Christ, are not justified: And so it followeth that Christ is not a Justifier, but a Minister of the Law.

With these Words he vehemently chargeth the false Apostles and all Meritmongers, that they pervert altogether; for they make of the Law, Grace, and of Grace *Moses* Christ, the Law, of *Moses* Christ, and of Christ *Moses*. For they teach, that besides Christ and all the Righteousness of Christ, the Observation of the Law is necessary to Justification. And thus we see that by their intolerable Perverseness, they make the Law Christ; for by this Means they attribute that to the Law, which properly belongeth unto Christ. If thou do the Works of the Law (say they) thou shalt be saved; but if thou do them not, thou shalt not be justified, altho' thou do believe in Christ never so much. Now, if it be so that Christ justifieth not, but is the Minister of Sin (as it needs must follow by their Doctrine) then is Christ the Law; for we have nothing else of him (seeing he teacheth that we are Sinners) than that we have by the Law. So Christ being the Minister of Sin, sendeth us to the Law and *Moses*, as to our Justifier.

The *Justiciaries* make *Moses* Christ, and the Law Grace.

It cannot be therefore but that the *Papists*, and all such as are ignorant of the Righteousness of Christ, or have not the true Knowledge thereof, must needs make of Christ *Moses* and the Law, and of the Law, Christ, for thus they teach. It is true (say they) that Faith in Christ justifieth, but withal we must needs keep the Commandments of God. For it is writen, *If thou wilt enter into Life, keep the Commandments*, Matth. xix. 17. Here even at the first Dash, Christ is denied and Faith abolished, because that is attributed to the Commandments of God, or to the Law, which belongeth to Christ alone. For Christ, according to his true Definition, is a Justifier and a Redeemer from Sins. If I attribute this to the Law, then is the Law my Justifier, delivering me from my Sins, because I do the Works thereof; and so now the Law is Christ, and Christ utterly loseth his Name, his Office and Glory, and is nothing else but a Minister of the Law, reproveth, accusing, terrifying, presenting, and sending the Sinner to another that may justify him, which is the proper Office of the Law.

But the proper Office of Christ is, after the Law hath pronounced a Man to be guilty, to raise him up again, and to loose him from his Sins, if he believe the Gospel. For to all that do believe, *Christ is the End of the Law for Righteousness*, Rom. x. 4. *He is the Lamb of God that taketh away the Sins of the World*, John i. 29. But the *Papists* and *Anabaptists*, because they understand not this Doctrine.

do turn all clean contrary making of Christ *Moses*, and of *Moses* Christ. And this is indeed, altho' they will say otherwise, their principle Proposition, that Christ is *Moses*. Moreover, they deride us, because we do so diligently teach, and so earnestly require Faith.

Meritmongers scorn the Preachers of Faith. Ha, ha, (say they) Faith, Faith, wait thou the Time until thou come to Heaven by Faith. Nay, thou must strive to do greater and weightier Matters. Thou must fulfil the Law, according to that Saying, *Do this, and thou shalt live*, Luke x. 28. Faith which ye so highly extol, doth nothing else but make Men careless, idle and negligent. Thus are they become nothing else but Ministers of the Law, and Law-workers, calling back the People from Baptism, Faith, the Promises of Christ, to the Law and Works, turning Grace into the Law, and the Law into Grace.

Who would ever believe that these Things could so easily be confounded and mingled together? There is no Man so insensible, which doth not perceive this Distinction of the Law and Grace to be most plain and manifest. For the very Nature and Signification of the Words maketh this Distinction and Difference. For who understandeth not these Words, *Law*, and *Grace*, do differ in Name and Signification? Wherefore it is a monstrous Thing, that this Distinction being so plain, the Adversaries should be so devilish and perverse, as to mingle together the Law and Grace, and to transform Christ into *Moses*. Therefore I oftentimes say, that this Doctrine of Faith is very plain, and that every Man may easily understand this Distinction of the Law and Grace as touching the Words, but as touching the Use and Practice, it is very hard.

The *Pope* and his School-Doctors do plainly confess that the Law and Grace are divers and distinct Things, and yet when they come to the Use and Practice thereof, they teach clean contrary. Faith in Christ (say they) whether it be gotten by the Strength, Operation and Qualities of Nature, or whether it be Faith infused and poured into us of God, yet it is but a dead Faith, if Charity be not joined therewith. Where is now the Distinction and Difference of the Law and Grace? Indeed they do distinguish them in Name, but in Effect they call Grace Charity. Thus do all they which so straightly require the Observation of the Law, and attribute Justification to the Law and Works. Wherefore whosoever doth not perfectly understand the Article of Justification, must needs confound and mingle the Law and Grace together.

Let every Man therefore diligently learn above all Things, to put a Difference between the Law and Grace in Deed and in Practice; not in Words only, as the *Pope* and the Phantastical *Anabaptists* do, who as touching the Words, do confess that they are two distinct Things: But in very Deed (as I have said) they confound and mingle them together, for they will not grant that Faith justifieth without Works. If

this be true then Christ profiteth me nothing. For tho' my Faith be never so perfect, yet after their Opinion, if this Faith be without Charity, I am not justified. And thus Christ apprehended by Faith is not a Justifier, Grace profiteth nothing, neither can Faith be true Faith without Charity.

With this Doctrine these lying Spirits and Sects of Perdition do darken and deface the Benefit of Christ at this Day; they take away from him the Glory of a Justifier, and make him a Minister of Sin; they are in all Things like to the false Apostles. For even as they throughout all the Churches did require Circumcision and the Observation of the Law besides Faith in Christ, insomuch that without Circumcision and keeping of the Law, they denied the Justification of Faith, (for except ye be circumcised, said they, after the Law of *Moses*, ye cannot be saved) even so at this Day these strait Exactors of the Law, besides the Righteousness of Faith, do require the keeping of the Commandments of God, according to that Saying, *Do this, and thou shalt live*, Luke x. 8. Also, *If thou wilt enter into Life, keep the Commandments*, Matth. xix. 17. Wherefore there is not one among them be he never so wise, that understandeth the Difference between the Law and Grace.

But we put a Difference, and say, that we do not here dispute whether we ought to do good Works, whether the Law be good holy and just, whether it ought to be kept or no; for this is another Manner of Question. But our Question is concerning Justification, and whether the Law do justify or no. This the Adversaries will not hear; they will not answer to this Question, nor make any Distinction as we do, but only cry out, that good Works ought to be done, that the Law ought to be observed. We know that well enough. But because these are divers and distinct Matters, we will not suffer them to be mingled together. That good Works ought to be done, we will hereafter declare when Time shall serve. But since we are now in the Matter of Justification, we set aside here all good Works, for the which the Adversaries do so earnestly strive, ascribing unto them wholly the Office of justifying, which is to take from Christ his Glory, and to ascribe the same unto Works.

Wherefore this is a strong Argument, which I have oftentimes used to my great Comfort: *If then while we seek to be made righteous by Christ, &c.* As tho' Paul should say, If we being justified by Christ, are counted yet not justified and righteous, but as Sinners which are yet to be justified by the Law, then may we not seek Justification in Christ, but in the Law. But if Justification cometh by the Law, then cometh it not by Grace. Now, if Justification cometh not by Grace, but by the Law, what hath Christ done and wrought by his Death, by his Preaching, by his Victory which he hath obtained over the Law, Sin and Death, and by sending the Holy Ghost? We must conclude therefore, that either we are justified by Christ, or else that we are made Sinners, culpa-

They that say the Law is necessary to Righteousness, are like to the false Apostles.

If Righteousness come by the Law then is Christ unprofitable.

culpable and guilty thro' him. But if the Law do justify, then can it not be avoided, but needs it must follow, that we are made Sinners thro' Christ, and so Christ is a Minister of Sin. The Case standing thus, let us then set down this Proposition. Every one that believeth in the Lord Jesus Christ is a Sinner, and is guilty of eternal Death, and if he fly not unto the Law, doing the Works thereof, he shall not be saved.

The Holy Scripture, especially the New Testament maketh often Mention of Faith in Christ, and highly advanceth the same, which saith, that whosoever believeth in him, is saved, perisheth not, is not judged, is not confounded, hath eternal Life, &c. John iii. 16. But contrariwise they say, he that believeth in him is condemned, &c. John v. 24. because he hath Faith without Works, which doth condemn. Thus do they pervert all Things, making of Christ a Destroyer and a Murderer, and of *Moses* a Saviour. And is not this an horrible Blasphemy, so to teach that by good Works thou shalt be made worthy of eternal Life, but by believing in Christ thou shalt be made culpable and guilty of eternal Death? That the Law being kept and accomplished saveth, and Faith in Christ condemneth?

The self same Words ( I grant ) the Adversaries do not use, but in very deed such is their Doctrine. For Faith infused ( say they ) which properly they call Faith

The Doctrine of the Papists.

which is furnished with Charity. Hereof it followeth that Faith in Christ without the Law saveth us not. This is plainly to affirm that Christ leaveth us in our Sins and in the Wrath of God, and maketh us guilty of eternal

Death. On the other Side, if thou keep the Law and do the Works thereof, then Faith justifieth thee, because it hath Works, without the which Faith availeth nothing. Therefore Works justify and not Faith. O horrible Impiety ! What pernicious and cursed Doctrine is this !

*Paul* therefore groundeth his Argument upon an Impossibility, and a sufficient Division. If we being justified in Christ are yet found Sinners, and cannot be justified by another Mean then by Christ, that is, to wit, by the Law, then cannot Christ justify us, but he only accuseth and condemneth us, and so consequently it followeth that Christ died in vain, and that these with other like Places are false, *Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the Sin of the World*, John i. 29. Also, *That whosoever believeth in him, should not perish, but have everlasting Life*, John iii. 15. yea the whole Scripture is false, which beareth Witness that Christ is the Justifier and Saviour of the World. For if we be found

The Papists are touched.

Sinners after that we be justified by Christ, it followeth of Necessity that they which fulfil the Law, are justified without Christ. If this be true, then are we either *Turks* or *Jews*, or *Tartarians*, professing the Name and Word

of God in outward Shew, but in Deed and Verity utterly denying Christ and his Word. It is a great Impiety therefore to affirm that Faith, except it be formed with Charity, justifieth not. But if the Adversaries will needs defend this Doctrine, Why do they not then reject Faith in Christ

altogether, seeing they make nothing else but a vain Quality in the soul, which without Christ availeth nothing? Why do they not say in plain Words, that Works do justify and not Faith? Yea, why do they not generally deny, not only *Paul*, but also the whole Gospel (as in every Deed they do) which attribute Righteousness to Works, and not to Faith alone? For If Faith and Works together do justify, then is the Disputation of *Paul* altogether false, which plainly pronounceth that a Man is not justified by the Deeds of the Law, but by Faith alone in Jesus Christ.

### Verse 17. *Is therefore Christ the Minister of Sin?*

This is a Kind of Speech used of the *Hebrews*, which *Paul* in the *Cor. iii.* doth also use: Where he most divinely and plainly speaketh of these two Ministeries; *to wit*, of the Letter and the Spirit, of the Law and Grace, or of Death and Life. And The Minister saith that *Moses* the Minister of the Law, hath the Ministry of Sin, (as he calleth it) of Wrath, Death and Condemnation. For *Paul* is wont to give reproachful Names unto the Law, and amongst all the Apostles, he only useth this Manner of Speech; the other do not so speak. And very necessary it is that such as are studious of the Holy Scripture should understand this Manner of Speech used of the Apostle.

Now, a Minister of Sin is nothing else but a Law-giver, or a School-master of the Law, which teacheth good Works and Charity, and that Man must suffer the Cross and Afflictions, and follow the Example of Christ and of the Saints. He that teacheth and requireth this, is a Minister of the Law, of Sin, of Wrath, and of Death; for by this Doctrine he doth nothing else but terrify and afflict Mens Consciences and shut them under Sin. For it is impossible for the Nature of Man, to accomplish the Law, yea in those that are justified and have the Holy Ghost, the Law of the Members fighteth against the Law of the Mind. What shall it not then do in the Wicked which have not the Holy Ghost? Wherefore he that teacheth, that Righteousness cometh by the Law, doth not understand what he saith, or what he affirmeth, *1 Tim. i. 7.* and much less doth he keep the Law, but rather he deceiveth himself and others, and layeth upon them such a Burden, as they are not able to bear, requiring and teaching impossible Things, and at the last he bringeth himself and his Disciples unto Desperation.

The right Use and End therefore of the Law is, to accuse and condemn as guilty such as live in Security, that they may see themselves to be in Danger of Sin, Wrath, and Death eternal, that so they may be terrified and brought even to the Brink of Desperation, trembling and quaking at the falling of a Leaf; and in that they are such, they are under the

There is no perfect Obedience to the Law, even in the Justified.

The Office and Use of the Law.

To be under the Law. For the Law requireth perfect Obedience unto the Law. God, and condemneth all those that do not accomplish the same. Now it is certain, that there is no Man living which is able to perform this Obedience, which notwithstanding God straightly requireth of us : The Law therefore justifieth not, but condemneth, according to that Saying, *Cursed is every one that continueth not in all Things which are written in the Book of the Law to do them,* Gal. iii. 10. Therefore he that teacheth the Law is a Minister of the Law.

The Ministry of the Law, is the Ministry of Sin.

Wherefore it is not without good Cause that *Paul* in the 2 *Cor.* iii. calleth the Ministry of the Law the Ministry of Sin ; for the Law sheweth and uttereth Sin, which without the Law is dead. Now, the Knowledge of Sin (I speak not here of that speculative Knowledge of Hypocrites, but of a true Knowledge, by the which we see

the Wrath of

God against Sin, and feel a true Taste of Death) terrifieth the Heart, driveth down to Desperation, killeth and destroyeth, *Rom.* vii. Wherefore these School-masters of

The Scripture calleth the Teachers of the Law Exactors and Tyrants, bringing Mens Souls into spiritual Slavery.

the Law and Works, are called in the Scripture Oppressors and Tyrants. For as the Task-masters in *Egypt* did oppress the Children of *Israel* with corporal Servitude, *Exod.* v. so do these Law-givers and Task-masters drive Men into spiritual and most miserable Bondage of Soul, and at length bring them to Desperation and utter Destruction. These do neither know themselves nor the Force of the Law ; neither is it possible for them to have Quietness and Peace of Conscience in great and inward Terrors, and in the Agony of Death, yea tho' they have observed

the Law, loved their Neighbours, done many good Works, and suffered great Afflictions ; for the Law always terrifieth and accuseth, saying, Thou never didst accomplish all that is commanded in the Law ; but accursed is he that hath not done all Things contained therein. Wherefore these Terrors remain still in the Conscience and increase more and more. And if such School-masters of the Law be not raised up by Faith and the Righteousness of Christ, they are driven down headlong to Desperation.

The History of the publishing of the Law.

This also was notably figured when the Law was given, as we may see in the xix and xx of *Exodus*, *Moses* brought the People out of the Tents to meet with the Lord, that they might hear him speak unto them out of the dark Cloud. Then the People being astonished and trembling for Fear, fled back (which a little before had promised to do all that God had commanded) and standing aloof off, said unto *Moses*, *Who can abide to see the Fire, and to hear the Thundrings, and Noise of the Trumpet ? Speak thou with us, and we will hear ; but let not God speak with us, lest we die.* So the proper Office of the

The Office of the Law.

Law is to lead us out of our Tents and Tabernacles, that is to say, from the Quietness and Security wherein we dwell,

dwell, and from trusting in ourselves, and to bring us before the Presence of God, to reveal his Wrath unto us, and to set before us our Sins. Here the Conscience feeleth that it hath not satisfied the Law, neither is able to satisfy it, not to bear the Wrath of God, which the Law revealeth when it bringeth us forth after this Manner before the Presence of God, that is to say, when it seareth us, accuseth us, and setteth before us our Sins. Here it is impossible that we should be able to stand; and therefore, being thoroughly afraid, we fly, and we cry out with the Children of Israel, *We shall die, we shall die: Let not the Lord speak unto us, but speak thou unto us, &c.*

He then which teacheth that Faith in Christ justifieth not without the Observation of the Law maketh Christ Who maketh Christ a Minister of Sin, that is to say, a School-master of the Minister of Sin. Law, which teacheth the self-same Doctrine that *Moses* did. By this Means Christ is no Saviour, no Giver of Grace, but a cruel Tyrant, who requireth such Things (as *Moses* did) which no Man is able to perform. See how all the Meritmongers do take Christ to be but a new Law-giver, and the Gospel to be nothing else but a certain Book which containeth new Laws concerning Works, as the *Turks* dream of their *Alcoran*. But as touching Laws there is enough in *Moses*. The Gospel then is a preaching of Christ, which forgiveth Sins, giveth Grace, justifieth and saveth Sinners. Now, whereas there are Commandments found in the Gospel, they are not the Gospel, but Expositions of the Law, and Matters depending upon the Gospel.

To conclude, if the Law be the Ministry of Sin, then is it also the Ministry of Wrath and of Death. For as the Law revealeth Sin, so doth it terrify a Man, it sheweth unto him his Sin and the Wrath of God, and striketh into him a Terror of Death and damnation. For thus the Conscience by and by gathereth; Thou hast not kept the Commandments of God, therefore is God angry with thee. If he be angry with thee he will destroy thee and condemn thee forever. And it thinketh this to be an infallible Consequence, I have sinned therefore I must die. And so followeth that the Ministry of Sin is the Ministry of Wrath and Condemnation. For after that Sin is revealed by and by ensueth the Wrath of God, Death and damnation. And hereof it cometh that many which are not able to bear the Judgment and Wrath of God, which the Law setteth before their Eyes, do kill, hang, or drown themselves.

The Conscience thus gathereth; Thou hast sinned, therefore God is angry with thee, and will condemn thee forever.

Verse 17. *God forbid.*

As tho' he would say, Christ is not the Minister of Sin, but the Giver of Righteousness and eternal Life. Wherefore *Paul* separateth

A Picture of parateth *Moses* far from Christ. Let *Moses* then tarry on Earth; let him be the School-master of the Letter, and Exactor of the Law; let him torment and crucify Sinners. But the Believers (saith *Paul*) have another School-master in their Consciences; not *Moses*, but Christ, which hath abolished the Law and Sin, hath overcome the Wrath of God, and destroyed Death. He biddeth us that labour and are oppressed with all Manner of Calamities, to come unto him. Therefore when ye fly unto him, *Moses* with his Law vanisheth away, so that his Sepulchre can no where be seen, *Deut.* xxxiv. 6. Sin and Death can hurt us no more. For Christ our Instructor is Lord over the Law, Sin and Death; so that they which believe in him, are delivered from the same. It is therefore the proper Office of Christ to deliver from Sin and Death, And this *Paul* teacheth and repeateth every where.

We are condemned and killed by the Law, but by Christ we are justified and restored to Life. The Law astonisheth us, and driveth us from God: But Christ reconcileth to God and maketh for us an intercession, that we may boldly come unto him. For he is the Lamb of God that hath taken away the Sins of the World. Now, if the Sin of the World be taken away, then is it taken away from me also. Christ hath which do believe in him. If Sin be taken away, then is the Wrath of God, Death and Damnation taken away also. And in the Place of Sin succeedeth Righteousness, in the Place of Wrath, Reconciliation and Grace, in the Place of Death, Life, and in the Place of Damnation, Salvation. Let us learn to practise this Distinction, not in Words only, but in Life and lively Experience, and with an inward Feeling: For where Christ is, there must needs be Joy of Heart and Peace of Conscience; for Christ is our Reconciliation, Righteousness, Peace, Life and Salvation. Briefly, whatsoever the poor afflicted Conscience desireth, it findeth in Christ abundantly. Now *Paul* goeth about to amplify this Argument and to perswade as followeth.

**Verse 18.** *For if I build again the Things which I destroyed, I make myself a Transgressor.*

As if he should say, I have not preached to this End that I might build again those Things which I once destroyed: For if I should so do, I should not only labour in vain, but should make myself also a Transgressor, and overthrow all together, as the false Apostles do, that is to say, of Grace and of Christ I should again make the Law and *Moses*; and contrariwise of the Law and *Moses*, I should make Grace and Christ. Now, by the Ministry of the Gospel I have abolished Sin, Heaviness of Heart, Wrath and Death. For thus have I taught, Thy Conscience, O Man, is subject to the Law, Sin and Death, from

from which thou canst be delivered either by Men or Angels. But now cometh the Gospel and preacheth unto thee Remission of Sins by Jesus Christ who hath abolished the Law, and hath destroyed Sin and Death. Believe in him; so shalt thou be delivered from the Curse of the Law, and from the Tyranny of Sin and Death, thou shalt become righteous, and have eternal Life.

Behold how I have destroyed the Law by the preaching of the Gospel, to the End that it should not reign in the Conscience any more. For when the new Guest Christ Jesus cometh into the new House there to dwell alone, *Moses* the old Inhabiter must give Place unto him and depart some whither else. And where Christ the new Guest is come to dwell, there can Sin, Wrath and Death have no Place: But there now dwelleth mere Grace, Righteousness, Joy, Life, true Affiance and Trust in the Father, now pacified and reconciled unto us, gracious, long-suffering and full of Mercy for his Son Christ's Sake. Should I then, driving out Christ and destroying his Kingdom, which I have planted thro' the preaching of the Gospel, now build up again the Law, and set up the Kingdom of *Moses*? Indeed this should I do if I should teach Circumcision and the Observation of the Law to be necessary to Salvation, as the false Apostles do: And by this Means, in the Stead of Righteousness and Life, I should restore again Sin and Death. For the Law doth nothing else but utter Sin, procure God's Wrath, kill and destroy.

What are the *Papists* (I pray you) yea the best of them all, but Destroyers of the Kingdom of Christ, and Builders up of the Kingdom of the Devil and of Sin, of Wrath and eternal Death? Yea they destroy the Church, which is God's building, not by the Law of *Moses*, as did the false Apostles, but by Mens Traditions and Doctrines of Devils. And even so the Phantastical Heads which are at this Day, and shall come after us, do destroy, and shall destroy those Things which we have built; do build, and shall build up again those Things which we have destroyed.

But we by the Grace of Christ holding the Article of Justification, do assuredly know that we are justified and reputed righteous before God by Faith only in Christ. Therefore we do not mingle the Law and Grace, Faith and Works together; but we separate them far asunder. And this Distinction or Difference between the Law and Grace, let every true Christian mark diligently, and let him suffer the same to take Place, not in Letters and Syllables, but in Practise and inward Experience: So that when he heareth that good Works ought to be done, and that the Example of Christ is to be followed, he may be able to judge rightly and truly. Well all these Things will I gladly do. What then followeth? Thou shalt then be saved and obtain eternal Life. Nay, not so, I grant indeed that I ought to do good Works, patiently to suffer Troubles and

*Moses* giveth Place to Christ, and the Law to the Gospel.

The *Papists* are Destroyers of the Kingdom of Christ.

The Difference of the Law and the Gospel, must be diligently marked.

Afflictions, and to shed my Blood also if need be, for Christ's Cause; but yet am I not justified, neither do I obtain Salvation thereby.

We must not therefore draw good Works into the Article of Justification, as the *Monks* have done, which say, That not only good Works, but also the Punishments and Torments which Malefactors suffer for their wicked Deeds, do deserve everlasting Life. For

How the *Monks* were wont to comfort condemned Persons at the Time of their Death. thus they comfort them when they are brought to the Gallows, or Place of Execution: Thou must suffer willingly and patiently this shameful Death, which if thou do, thou shalt deserve Remission of thy Sins and everlasting Life. What an horrible Thing is this, that a wretched Thief, a Murderer, a Robber, should be so miserably seduced in that extream Anguish and Distress, that even at the very Point of Death, when he is now ready to be hanged, or to have his Head cut off, he should refuse the

Gospel, and sweet Promises in Christ, which are only able to bring Comfort and Salvation, and should be commanded to hope for Pardon of his Sins, if he willingly and patiently endure that opprobrious Death which he suffereth for his mischievous Deeds? What is this else but to heap upon him, which is already most miserably afflicted, extream Perdition and Destruction, and thro' a false Confidence in his own Death, to shew him the ready Way to Hell?

Hereby these Hypocrites do plainly declare, that they neither teach nor understand one Letter or Syllable concerning Grace, the Gospel, or Christ. They retain only in outward Shew the Name of the Gospel and of Christ, that they may beguile the Hearts of the People. Notwithstanding they denying and rejecting Christ indeed, do attribute more to the Traditions of Men, then to the Gospel of Christ. Which Thing to be true, so many Kinds of false Worship, so many religious Orders, so many Ceremonies, and so many Will-Works do plainly witness; all which Things were instituted as available to deserve Grace, Righteousness, and everlasting Life. In their Confessions they

The Manner of Popish Confession. make no mention of Faith, or the Merit of Christ, but they teach and set forth the Satisfactions and Merits of Men, as it may plainly appear in this Form of Absolution (I speak nothing here of other Matters) which the

*Monks* used among themselves, yea and such as would be counted more devout, and more religious then others: Which I think good here to set down, that our Posterity may see how great and how horrible the Kingdom of the Pope is.

### *The Form of a Monkish Absolution.*

*God forgive thee my Brother; the Merit of the Passion of our Lord Jesus Christ, and of blessed St. Mary always a Virgin, and of all the Saints, the Merit of thine Or-*  
der,

der, the Straightness of thy Religion, the Humility of thy Confession, the Contrition of thy Heart, the good Works which thou hast done and shalt do for the Love of our Lord Jesus Christ, be unto thee available for the Remission of thy Sins, the Increase of Desert and Grace, and the Reward of everlasting Life. Amen.

Ye hear the Merit of Christ mentioned in these Words; but if ye weigh them well, ye shall perceive that Christ is there altogether unprofitable, and that the Glory and Name of a Justifier and Saviour is quite taken from him, and given to *Monkish* Merits. Is not this to take the Name of God in vain? Is not this to confess Christ in Words, and in very Deed to deny his Power, and blaspheme his Name? I myself also was once entangled with this Error, I thought Christ to be a Judge (altho' I confessed with my Mouth that he suffered and died for Man's Redemption) and ought to be pacified by the Observation of my Rule and Order. Therefore when I prayed or when I said Mass, I used to add this in the End; O Lord Jesus, I come unto thee, and I pray thee that these Burdens and this Straightness of my Rule and Religion may be a full Recompence for all my Sins. But now I give Thanks unto God the Father of all Mercies, which hath called me out of Darkness unto the Light of his glorious Gospel, and hath given unto me plentiful Knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord, for whose Sake I count all Things to be but loss, yea I esteem them but as Dung, that I may gain Christ, and that I may be found in him, not having mine own Righteousness out of the Rule of *Augustine*, but that Righteousness which cometh by Faith in Christ: Unto whom with the Father and the Holy Ghost be Praise and Glory, World without End. Amen.

We conclude therefore with *Paul*, that we are justified Faith without Faith only in Christ, without the Law. Now after our Works, that a Man is once justified, and possesseth Christ by Faith and knoweth that he is his Righteousness and Life, doubtless he will not be idle, but as a good Tree he will bring forth good Fruits. For the believing Man hath the Holy Ghost, and where the Holy Ghost dwelleth, he will not suffer a Man to be idle, but stirreth him up to all Exercises of Piety and Godliness and of true Religion, to the Love of God, to the patient suffering of Afflictions, to Prayer, to Thanksgiving, to the Exercise of Charity towards all Men.

Hitherto we have handled the first Argument, wherein *Paul* contendeth that either we cannot be justified by the Law, or else that Christ must needs be the Minister of Sin. But this is impossible; Wherefore we conclude that justification cometh not by the Law. Of this Place we have largely intreated, as it is well worthy, and yet can it not be taught, and beaten into Mens Heads sufficiently.

Verse 19. *For I thro' the Law am dead to the Law, that I might live unto God.*

*Paul's Manner of Speech unknown to Man's Reason.*

*Paul calleth Grace the Law.*

*Law, giving a new Name to the Effect and Working of Grace, in Contempt of the Law of Moses and the false Apostles, which contended that*

*Phrases of Speech only proper to the Scripture*

*Death against Death.*

*here, that thro' the Law he is dead to the Law. As if he said, The Law of Moses accuseth and condemneth me : But against that accusing and condemning Law, I have another Law, which is Grace and Liberty, James i. 25. This Law accuseth the accusing Law, and condemneth the condemning Law. So Death killeth Death ; but this killing Death is Life itself : But it is called the Death of Death by a vehement Indignation of Spirit against Death. So Righteousness taketh the Name of Sin, because it condemneth Sin, and this condemning of Sin is true Righteousness.*

*Paul's Heresy.*

*He that is dead to the Law, liveth to God.*

*The Doctrine of the Papists.*

These are marvellous Words and unknown Kinds of Speech, which Man's Reason can in no wise understand ; and altho' they be but few, yet are they uttered with great Zeal and Vehemency of Spirit, and as it were in great Displeasure. As if he should say, Why do ye boast so much of the Law ? Whereof in this Case I will be ignorant. But if ye will needs have the Law. I also have the Law. Wherefore, as tho' he were moved thro' Indignation of the Holy Ghost, he calleth Grace itself the Law, giving a new Name to the Effect and Working of Grace, in Contempt of the Law of Moses and the false Apostles, which contended that the Law was necessary to Justification ; and so he setteth the Law against the Law. And this is a sweet Kind of Speech and full of Consolation, when in the Scriptures, and specially in *Paul*, the Law is set against the Law, Sin against Sin, Death against Death, Captivity against Captivity, Hell against Hell, the Altar against the Altar, the Lamb against the Lamb, the Passover against the Passover.

In *Rom. viii. 3.* it is said, *For Sin be condemned Sin*, *Psal. lxxviii. 18.* and *Eph. iv. 8.* *He hath led Captivity Captive*, *Hos. xiii. 14.* *O Death, I will be thy Plagues ; O Grave, I will be thy Destruction.* So he saith here, that thro' the Law he is dead to the Law. As if he said, The Law of *Moses* accuseth and condemneth me : But against that accusing and condemning Law, I have another Law, which is Grace and Liberty, *James i. 25.* This Law accuseth the accusing Law, and condemneth the condemning Law. So Death killeth Death ; but this killing Death is Life itself : But it is called the Death of Death by a vehement Indignation of Spirit against Death. So Righteousness taketh the Name of Sin, because it condemneth Sin, and this condemning of Sin is true Righteousness.

And here *Paul* seemeth to be an *Heretick*, yea of all *Hereticks* the greatest, and his Heresy is strange and monstrous. For he saith, *That he being dead to the Law, liveth to God.* The false Apostles taught this Doctrine, Except thou live to the Law, thou art dead to God, that is to say, unless thou live after the Law, thou art dead before God : But *Paul* saith quite contrary, Except thou be dead to the Law, thou canst not live to God. The Doctrine of our Adversaries at this Day is like to the Doctrine of the false Apostles of that Time, if thou wilt live to God (say they) live to the Law or after the Law. But contrariwise we say, If thou wilt live to God, thou must be utterly dead to the Law. Man's Reason and Wisdom understandeth

standeth not this Doctrine: Therefore it teacheth always the contrary, that is, If thou wilt live unto God, thou must keep the Law: For it is written, *Do this, and thou shalt live.* And this is a special Principle amongst all the Popish Divines, he that liveth after the Law, liveth unto God. *Paul* teacheth the contrary, that is, We cannot live unto God, unless we be thoroughly dead to the Law. Wherefore we must mount up to this heavenly Altitude, that we may be assured that we are far above the Law, yea that we are utterly dead unto the Law. Now, if we be dead unto the Law, then hath the Law no Power over us, like as it hath no Power over Christ, who hath delivered us from the same, that we might live unto God. All these Things tend to this End, to prove that we are not justified by the Law, but by Faith only in Jesus Christ.

And here *Paul* speaketh not of the ceremonial Law only (as before we have declared more at large) but of the whole Law, whether it be ceremonial or moral, which to a Christian is utterly abrogate, for he is dead unto it; not that the Law is utterly taken away, nay it remaineth, liveth, and reigneth still in the Wicked. But a godly Man is dead unto the Law, like as he is dead unto Sin, the Devil, Death and Hell; which notwithstanding do still remain, and the World with all the Wicked shall still abide in them. Wherefore when the *Papist* understandeth that the ceremonial Law only is abolished, understand thou that *Paul* and every Christian is dead to the whole Law, and yet the Law remaineth still.

As for Example, Christ rising from Death is free from the Grave, and yet the Grave remaineth still. *Peter* is delivered from the Prison, the Sick of the Palsie from his Couch, the young Man from his Coffin, the Maiden from her Couch, and yet the Prison, the Bed, the Coffin, the Couch, do remain still. Even so the Law is abolished when I am not subject unto it, the Law is dead when I am dead unto it, and yet it remaineth still. But because I am dead unto it by another Law, therefore it is dead also unto me, as the Grave of Christ, the Prison of *Peter*, the Couch of the Maiden, &c. do still remain; and yet Christ by his Resurrection is dead unto the Grave, *Peter* by his Deliverance is freed from the Prison, and the Maid thro' Life is delivered from the Couch.

Wherefore these Words, *I am dead to the Law*, are very effectual; for he saith not, I am free from the Law for a Time, or I am Lord over the Law, but simply I am dead to the Law, that is to say, I have nothing to do with the Law. *Paul* could have uttered nothing more effectually against the Righteousness of the Law, then to say, I am dead to the Law, that is, I care nothing at all for the Law, therefore I am not justified by it.

Now, to die to the Law, is, not to be bound to the Law, but to be free from the Law and not to know it. Therefore let him that will live to God, endeavour that

A special Principle amongst the Popish Divines.

The whole Law is abrogated.

Christ free from the Grave, &c.

What it is to die to the Law.

he may be found without the Law, and let him come out of the Grave with Christ. The Souldiers were astonished when Christ was risen out of the Grave, and they also which saw the Maiden raised up from Death to Life, were amazed. So Man's Reason and Wisdom is astonished, and becometh foolish when it heareth that we are not justified except we be dead to the Law, for it is not able to reach unto this Mystery. But we know that when we apprehend Christ by Faith inwardly in Conscience, we enter into a certain new Law, which swalloweth up the old Law that held us Captives. As the Grave in which Christ lay dead, after that he was risen again was void and empty, and Christ vanished away: So when I believe in Christ, I rise again with him, and die to my Grave, that is to say, The Law which held me Captive, so that now the Law is void, and I am escaped out of my Prison and Grave, that is to say, the Law. Wherefore the Law hath no Right to accuse me, or to hold me any longer, for I am risen again.

It is necessary that Mens Consciences should be diligently instructed, that they may well understand the Difference between the Righteousness of the Law and Grace: The Righteousness of Grace or the Liberty of

Conscience doth in nowise pertain to the Flesh. For the Let the Flesh be subject to the Law, but not the Conscience. The Flesh may not be at Liberty, but must remain in the Grave, the Prison, the Couch, it must be in Subjection to the Law, and exercised by the *Egyptians*. But the Christian Conscience must be dead to the Law, that is to say, free from the Law, and must have nothing at all to do with it. It is good to know this, for it helpeth very

much for the comforting of poor afflicted Consciences. Wherefore when you see a Man terrified and cast down with the Sense and Feeling of his

How afflicted Conscience must be comforted. Sin, say unto him, Brother thou dost not rightly distinguish. Thou placest the Law in thy Conscience, which should be placed in the Flesh. Awake, arise up, and remember that thou must believe in Christ the Conqueror of the Law and Sin. With this Faith thou shalt mount up above and beyond the Law, into that Heaven of Grace

where is no Law nor Sin. And albeit the Law and Sin do still remain, yet they pertain nothing to thee, for thou art dead to the Law and Sin.

This is easily said; but blessed is he which knoweth how to lay sure hold on these Things in Time of Distress, that is, which can say,

How thou must defend thyself against the Accusation of the Law. when Sin over-weigheth him, and the Law accuseth him, What is this to me, O Law, that thou accusest me, and sayest that I have committed many Sins? Indeed I grant that I have committed many Sins, yea and yet still do commit Sins daily without Number. This toucheth me nothing, I am now deaf and cannot hear; therefore thou talkest to me in vain, for I am dead unto thee. But if thou wilt needs dispute with me as touching my Sins, get

The Conscience answering to the Accusation of the Law. thee to my Flesh and Members my Servants, teach them, exercise and crucify them: But trouble not me, not me  
Conscience.

Conscience, I say, which am a Lady and a Queen, and have nothing to do with thee; for I am dead to thee, and I now live to Christ, with whom I am under another Law, to wit, the Law of Grace, which ruleth over Sin and the Law. By what Means? By Faith in Christ, as Paul declareth hereafter.

But this seemeth a strange and a wonderful Definition, that to live to the Law, is to die to God; and to die to the Law, is to live to God. These two Propositions are mean contrary to Reason, and therefore no crafty Sophister, or Law-worker can understand them. But learn thou the true Understanding thereof. He that liveth to the Law, that is, seeketh to be justified by the Works of the Law, is and remaineth a Sinner, therefore he is dead and condemned. For the Law cannot justify and save him, but accuseth, terrifieth and killeth him. Therefore to

live unto the Law, is to die unto God; and contrariwise, to die to the Law, is to live unto God. Wherefore if thou wilt live unto God, thou must 'ie to the Law; but if thou wilt live to the Law thou shalt die to God. Now, to live unto God, is to be justified by Grace or by Faith for Christ's Sake, without the Law and Works.

This is then the proper and true Definition of a Christian, that he is the Child of Grace and Remission of Sins, because he is under no Law, but is above the Law, Sin, Death, and Hell. And even as Christ is free from the Grave, and Peter from the Prison, so is a Christian free from the Law. And such a Respect there is between the justified Conscience and the Law, as is between Christ raised up from the Grave, and the Grave; and as is between Peter delivered from the Prison, and the Prison. And like as Christ by his Death and Resurrection is dead to the Grave, so that it hath now no Power over him nor is able any longer to hold him, but the Stone being rolled away, the Seals broken, and the Keepers astonished, he riseth again and goeth away without any let, *Matth. xxviii.* And as Peter by his Deliverance is freed from the Prison, and goeth whither he will; even

the Conscience by Grace is delivered from the Law; and is every one that is born of the Spirit. But the Flesh knoweth not from whence this cometh, nor whither it goeth, for it cannot judge but after the Law. But on the contrary, the Spirit saith, Let the Law accuse me, let Sin and Death terrify me never so much, yet I do not therefore despair, for I have the Law against the Law, Sin against Sin, and Death against Death.

Therefore when I feel the Remorse and Sting of Conscience for Sin, I beheld that brazen Serpent Christ hanging upon the Cross.

Here I find another Sin against my Sin which accuseth and devoureth me. Now this other Sin, namely, in the Flesh of Christ, which taketh away the Sins of the World,

Almighty, it condemneth and swalloweth up my Sin. So my Sin

To live to the Law, is to die to God, and contrariwise to die to the Law, is to live to God.

The Conscience by Grace delivered from the Law.

Sin against Sin.

is condemned by Sin, that is, by Christ crucified, *For he hath made him to be Sin for us, who knew no Sin; that we might be made the Righteousness of God in him,* 2 Cor. v. 21. In like Manner I find Death in my Flesh, which afflicteth and killeth me; but I have in me a contrary Death, which is the Death of Death, for this Death crucifieth and swalloweth up my Death.

These Things be not done by the Law or Works, but by Christ crucified, upon whose Shoulders ly all the Evils and Miseries of Mankind, the Law, Sin, Death, the Devil and Hell; and all these do die in him, for by his Death he hath killed them. But we must receive this Benefit of Christ with a sure Faith. For like as neither the Law nor any Work thereof is offered unto us, but Christ alone; so nothing is required of us but Faith alone, whereby we apprehend Christ, and believe that our Sins and our Death are condemned and abolished in the Sin and Death of Christ.

Thus have we always most certain and sure Arguments, which necessarily conclude that Justification cometh by Faith alone. For how should the Law and Works avail to Justification, seeing that *Paul* is so earnest both against the Law and Works, and saith plainly that we must be dead to the Law, if we will live to God? But if we be dead to the Law and the Law be dead to us, then hath it nothing to do with us. How then should it avail any Thing at all to our Justification? Wherefore we must needs say, that we be justified by Grace alone, or by Faith alone in Christ, without the Law and Works.

This the blind *Sophisters* do not understand, and therefore they dream that Faith justifieth not, except it do the Works of Charity. By this Means Faith which believeth in Christ, becometh unprofitable and of none Effect; for the Virtue of justifying is taken from it, except it be furnished with Charity. But let us now set apart the Law and Charity until another Time, and let us rest upon the principal Point of this present Matter, which is this, that Jesus Christ the Son of God died upon the Cross, did bear in his Body my Sins, the Law, Death, the Devil and Hell. These invincible Enemies and Tyrants do oppress, vex and trouble me, and therefore I am careful how I may be delivered out of their Hands justified and saved. Here

I find neither Law, Work nor Charity, which is able to deliver me from their Tyranny. There is none but the Lord Jesus only and alone, which taketh away the Law, killeth and destroyeth my Death in his Body, and by this Means spoileth Hell, judgeth and crucifieth the Devil, and throweth him down into Hell. To be brief, all the Enemies which did before torment and oppress me, Christ Jesus hath brought to nought, *And having spoiled Principalities and Powers, he made a Shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it,* Col. ii. 15. in such Sort that they can now rule and reign no more over me, but are constrained to obey me.

By this we may plainly see that there is nothing here for us to do : Only it belongeth unto us, to hear that these Things have been wrought and done in this Sort, and by Faith to apprehend the same. And this is the true formed and furnished Faith indeed : Now, when I have thus apprehended Christ by Faith, and thro' him am dead to the Law, justified from Sin, delivered from Death, the Devil and Hell, then I do good Works, I love God, I give Thanks to him, I exercise Charity towards my Neighbour. But this Charity or Works following do neither form nor adorn my Faith, but my Faith formeth and adorneth Charity. This is our Divinity, which seemeth strange and marvelous, or rather foolish to carnal Reason, *to wit*, that I am not only blind and deaf to the Law, yea delivered and freed from the Law, but also wholly dead unto the same.

This Sentence of *Paul*, *Thro' the Law I am dead to the Law*, is full of Consolation. Which if it may enter into a Man in due Season, and take sure hold in his Heart with good Understanding, it may so work, that it will make him able to stand against all Dangers of Death, and all Terrors of Conscience and Sin, altho' they assail him, accuse him, and would drive him to Desperation never so much. True it is that every Man is tempted, if not in his Life, yet at his Death. There when the Law accuseth him and sheweth unto him his Sins, his Conscience by and by saith, Thou hast sinned. If then thou take good hold of that which *Paul* here teacheth, thou wilt answer, I grant I have sinned. Then will God punish thee. Nay, he will not so do. Why, doth not the Law of God so say? I have nothing to do with that Law. Why so? Because I have another Law which striketh this Law dumb, that is to say, Liberty. What Liberty the Liberty of Christ, for by Christ I am utterly freed from the Law. Therefore that Law which is and remaineth a Law to the Wicked, is to me Liberty, and bindeth that Law which would condemn me : And by this Means that Law which would bind me and hold me Captive, is now fast bound itself, and holden Captive by Grace and Liberty, which is now my Law, Which saith to that accusing Law, Thou shalt not hold this Man bound and captive, for he is mine ; but I will hold thee captive, and bind by Hands that thou shalt not hurt him, for he liveth now unto Christ, and is dead unto thee.

This to do, is to dash out the Teeth of the Law, to wrest his Sting and all his Weapons from him, and to spoil him of all his Force ; and yet the same Law notwithstanding continueth and remaineth still to the Wicked and Unbelievers ; and to us also that be

In the Matter of Justification there is nothing for us to do, but to hear what Christ hath done for us, and to apprehend the same by Faith.

This Sentence well understood in the Time of Trouble, maketh a Man strong against all Tentations.

A Speech or Dialogue between the Law and Conscience.

is that? The

A Consolation against the Terrors of the Law, &c.

The binding Law thro' Christ is bound itself.

Weak,

Weak, so far forth as we lack Faith, it continueth yet still in his Force; here it hath his Edge and Teeth. But if I do believe In Christ, altho'

Sin drive me never so much to despair, yet staying upon this Liberty which I have in Christ, I confess that I have sinned, but my Sin which is a condemned Sin, is in Christ which is a condemning Sin: Now this condemning Sin is stronger then that which is condemned, for it is justifying Grace, Righteousness, Life and Salvation. Thus

Death killed, and Death killing. when I feel the Terror of Death, I say, Thou hast nothing to do with me O Death; for I have another Death which killeth thee my Death, and that Death which killeth, is stronger then that which is killed, 1 *John* v. 4.

Thus a faithful Man by Faith only in Christ, may raise up himself, and conceive such sure and sound Consolation, that he shall not need to fear the Devil, Sin, Death, or any Evils. And altho' the Devil set upon him with all Might and Main, and go about with all the Terrors of the World to oppress him, yet he conceiveth good Hope even in the midst thereof, and thus he saith, Sir Devil, I fear not thy Threatnings and Terrors, for there is one whose Name is Jesus Christ, in whom I believe, he hath abolished the Law, condemned Sin, vanquished Death, and destroyed Hell; and he is thy Tormentor, O Satan, for he hath bound thee and holdeth the Captive, to the End that thou shouldest no more hurt me, or any that believeth in him. This Faith the Devil cannot overcome, but is overcome of it. *For this is the Victory* (saith S. *John*) *that overcometh the World, even our Faith.* Who is it that overcometh the World, but he which believeth that Jesus Christ is the Son of God?

*Paul* therefore thro' a vehement Zeal and Indignation of Spirit, calleth Grace itself the Law, which notwithstanding is an exceeding and inestimable Liberty of Grace which we have in Christ A new Name Jesus. Moreover he giveth this approbrious Name unto given to the Law (to let us understand for our Consolation, that the Law is now a new Name given unto it,) that it is not Law, that it is dead and now alive any more, but dead and condemned. And here condemned. (which is a pleasant Sight to behold) he bringeth forth the Law, and setteth it before us as a Thief and a Robber which is already condemned and adjudged to Death. For he describeth it as it were a Prisoner having both Hands and Feet fast bound, and all his Power taken away, so that it cannot exercise his Ty-

The Law is bound and condemned, therefore it cannot accuse us, &c. ranny, that is to say, it cannot accuse and condemn any more, and with this most pleasant Sight he maketh it odious and contemptible to the Conscience: So that now he which believeth in Christ, dare boldly and with a holy Pride, triumph over the Law after this Manner, I am a Sinner, if thou canst do any Thing against me O Law, now do thy worst. So far off is it then, that the Law is now terrible unto him which doth believe.

Since

Since Christ is risen from Death, Why should he now fear the Grave? Since *Peter* is delivered from the Prison, Why should he now fear it? When the Maiden was at the Point of Death, then might she indeed fear the Bed, but being now raised up, Why should she fear it? In like Manner, Why should a Christian which enjoyeth and possesseth Christ by Faith fear the Law? True it is that he seeleth the Terrors of the Law, but he is not overcome of them, but staying upon the Liberty which he hath in Christ, he saith, I hear thee murmuring, O Law, that thou wouldest accuse me and condemn me, but this troubleth me nothing at all. Thou art to me as the Grave was unto Christ; for I see that thou art fast bound Hand and Foot, and this hath my Law done. What Law is that? Liberty, which is called the Law, not because it bindeth me, but because it bindeth my Law. The Law of the Ten Commandments did bind me. But against that Law I have another Law, even the Law of Grace, which notwithstanding is to me no Law, neither doth it bind me, but setteth me at Liberty. And this is a Law against that accusing and condemning Law; which Law it so bindeth, that it hath no Power to hurt me any more. So against my Death which bindeth me I have another Death, that is to say, Life, which quickeneth me in Christ, and this Death looseth and freeth me from the Bonds of my Death, and with the same Bonds bindeth my Death. So Death which bound me is now fast bound, which killed me is now killed by Death, that is to say by Life itself.

Thus Christ, with most sweet Names, is called my Law, my Sin, my Death, against the Law, against Sin, against Death; whereas in very Deed he is nothing else but mere Liberty, Righteousness, Life and everlasting Salvation. And for this Cause he is made the Law of the Law, the Sin of Sin, the Death of Death, that he might redeem from the Curse of the Law, justify me and quicken me. So then, whiles Christ is the Law, he is also Liberty; whiles he is Sin, he is Righteousness, and whiles he is Death, he is Life. For in that he suffered the Law to accuse him, Sin to condemn him, and Death to devour him, he abolished the Law, he condemned Sin he destroyed Death, he justified and saved me. So is Christ the Poison of the Law, Sin and Death, and the Remedy for obtaining of Liberty, Righteousness, and everlasting Life.

This Manner of Speech which *Paul* here useth, and is proper unto him alone, is full of Consolation. Likewise in the vii. Chapter to the *Romans* he setteth the Law of the Spirit against the Law of the Members. And because this is a strange and marvelous Manner of speaking, therefore it entereth more easily into the Mind, and sticketh faster in the Memory. Moreover, when he saith, *I thro' the Law am dead*

Why he calleth Liberty the Law.

The Law of Grace, binding the Law of the Ten Commandments.

The most sweet and comfortable Names of Christ.

Christ a Poison against Death.

The Law of the Mind set against the Law of the Members.

*dead to the Law*, it soundeth more sweetly then if he should say, I thro Liberty am dead to the Law. For he setteth before us, as it were, a certain Picture, as if the Law were fighting against the Law. As tho' he should say, O Law, if thou canst accuse me, terrify me, and bind me, I will set above and against thee another Law, that is to say, another

One Tormentor against another.

Tormentor, which shall accuse thee, bind thee, and oppress thee. Indeed thou art my Tormentor, but I have another Tormentor, even Christ, which shall torment thee. When thou art thus bound, tormented and suppressed, then am I at Liberty. So then Grace is a Law, not to me (for it bindeth me not) but to my Law;

which this Law so bindeth, that it cannot hurt me any more.

Thus *Paul* goeth about to draw us wholly from the beholding of the Law, Sin, Death and all other Evils, and to bring us unto Christ, that there we might behold this joyful Conflict, *to wit*, the Law fighting against the Law, that it may be to me Liberty, Sin against Sin, that it may be to me Righteousness, Death against Death, that I may obtain Life, Christ fighting against the Devil, that I may be the Child of God; and destroying Hell, that I may enjoy the Kingdom of Heaven.

### Verse 19. *That I might live unto God.*

That is to say, that I might live before God. Ye see then that there is no Life unless ye be without the Law, yea unless ye be

The Flesh subject to the Law, but not the Conscience.

utterly dead unto the Law, I mean in Conscience. Notwithstanding in the mean Season (as I have often said) so long as the Body liveth, the Flesh must be exercised with Laws, and vexed with Exactions and Penalties of Laws, as were the *Egyptians*. But the inward Man not subject to the Law, but delivered and freed from it, is a

lively, a just, and a holy Person, not of himself, but in Christ, because he believeth in him, as followeth.

### Verse 20. *I am crucified with Christ,*

This he addeth to declare that the Law is a Devourer of the Law. Not only (saith he) I am dead to the Law thro' the Law, that I may live to God, but also I am crucified with Christ. But Christ is Lord over the Law, because he is crucified and dead unto the Law: Therefore also am I Lord over the Law; for I likewise am crucified and dead unto the Law, forasmuch as I am crucified and dead with Christ. By what Means? By Grace and Faith. Thro' this Faith because I am now crucified and dead unto the Law, therefore the Law loseth all his Power which he had over me; even as it hath lost all his Power which it had over Christ. Wherefore, even as Christ himself was crucified to the Law, Sin, Death, and the Devil, so that they have no farther Power over him; even so I thro' Faith being now crucified with Christ in Spirit, am crucified and dead to the Law, Sin, Death, and the

the Devil, so that they have no further Power over me, but are now crucified and dead unto me.

*Paul* speaketh not here of crucifying by Imitation or Example ( for to follow the Example of Christ, is also to be crucified with him, ) which crucifying belongeth to the Flesh. Whereof *Peter* speaketh in his first Epistle second Chapter, and 21 Verse, *Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an Example, that we should follow his Steps.* But he speaketh here of that high crucifying, whereby Sin, the Devil and Death are crucified in Christ, and not in me. Here Christ Jesus doth all himself alone. But I believing in Christ, am by Faith crucified also with Christ, so that all these Things are crucified and dead unto me.

To be crucified with Christ.

### Verse 20. *Nevertheless I live ;*

I speak not so (saith he) of my Death and Crucifying, as tho' I now lived not : Yea I live, for I am quickned by this Death and Crucifying, thro' the which I die, that is, for as much as I am delivered from the Law, Sin and Death, I now live indeed. Wherefore that Crucifying and that Death whereby I am crucified and dead to the Law, Sin, Death and all Evils, is to me Resurrection and Life. For Christ crucifieth the Devil, he killeth Death, condemneth Sin, and bindeth the Law; and I believing this, am delivered from the Law, Sin, Death and the Devil. The Law therefore is bound, dead and crucified unto me, and again am bound, dead and crucified unto it. Wherefore even by this Death and Crucifying, that is to say, by this Grace or Liberty, *I now live.*

The true Life of the Faithful.

Here ( as before I have said ) we must observe *Paul's* Manner of speaking. He saith that we are dead and crucified to the Law, whereas in very deed the Law itself is dead and crucified unto us. But this Manner of Speech he useth here of Purpose, that it may be the more sweet and comfortable unto us. For the Law, ( which notwithstanding continueth, liveth and reigneth in the whole World, which also accuseth and condemneth all Men ) is crucified and dead unto those only which believe in Christ ; therefore to them alone belongeth this Glory, that they are dead to Sin, Hell, Death and the Devil.

The Faithful are crucified and dead to the Law.

The World, which

The Glory of the Faithful.

### Verse 20. *Yet not I,*

That is to say, not in mine own Person, nor in mine own Substance. Here he plainly sheweth by what Means he liveth : And he teacheth what true Christian Righteousness is, namely that Righteousness whereby Christ liveth in us, and not that which is in our Person. Therefore when we speak of Christian Righteousness, we must utterly reject the Person. And here Christ and my Conscience must become one Body, so

Christian Righteousness.

We must  
have Christ  
only in Sight  
and before  
our Eye.

that nothing remain in my Sight, but Christ crucified and raised from the Dead. But if I behold myself only and set Christ aside, I am gone. For by and by I fall into this Cogitation: Christ is in Heaven, and thou art on the Earth, How shalt thou now come unto him? Forsooth I will live holily, and do that which the Law requireth, so shall I enter into Life. Here, returning to myself and considering what I am, what I ought to be, and what I am bound to do, I lose the Sight of Christ, who is my Righteousness and Life. Who being lost, there is no Counsel nor Succor now remaining, but certain Desperation and Destruction must needs follow.

And this is a common Evil among Men. For such is our Misery, that when Tentation or Death cometh, by and by setting Christ aside, we consider our own Life past, and what we have done. Here except we be raised up again by Faith, we must needs perish. Wherefore we must learn in such Conflicts and Terrors of Conscience (forgetting ourselves, and setting the Law, our Life past, and all our Works apart, which drive us to the Consideration of ourselves only) to turn our Eyes wholly to the brazen Serpent Christ Jesus crucified, and assuredly believe that he is our Righteousness and Life, not fearing the Threatnings and Terrors of the Law, Sin, Death, and the Judgment of God. For Christ, on whom our Eyes are fixed, in whom we live, who also liveth in us, is Lord and Conqueror of the Law, Sin, Death and all Evils; in whom most certain and sure Consolation is set forth unto us, and Victory given.

*Verse 20. Nevertheless, I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me:*

Where he saith, *Nevertheless, I live*, he speaketh it, as it were, in his own Person. Therefore he by and by correcteth himself, saying, *Yet not I*. That is to say, I live not now in mine own Person, but *Christ liveth in me*. Indeed the Person liveth, but not in himself, nor for any Thing that is in him. But who is this *I*, of whom he saith, *Yet not I*. This *I* is he which hath the Law, and is bound to do the Works thereof, who also is a certain Person separate from Christ. This Person *Paul* rejecteth. For, as he is separated from Christ he belongeth to Death and Hell. Therefore he saith, *Yet not I, but Christ liveth in me*. He in my Form, my Furniture and Perfection, adorning and beautifying my Faith, as the Colour, the clear Light, or the Whiteness do garnish and beautify the Wall. Thus are we constrained grossly to set forth this Matter. For we cannot spiritually conceive, that Christ is so nearly joined and united unto us, as the Colour or Whiteness are unto the Wall, Christ therefore (saith he) thus joined and united unto me and abiding in me, liveth this Life in me which I now live; yea Christ him-

himself is this Life which I now live. Wherefore Christ and I in this Behalf are both one.

Now, Christ living in me abolisheth the Law, condemneth Sin, and destroyeth Death; for it cannot be, but at his Presence all these must needs vanish away. For Christ is everlasting Peace, Consolation, Righteousness, and Life, and to these the Terror of the Law, Heaviness of Mind, Sin, Hell and Death, must needs give Place. So Christ living and abiding in me taketh away and swalloweth up all Evils which vex and afflict me. This Union or Conjunction then, is the Cause that I am delivered from the Terror of the Law and Sin, and separate from myself, and translated unto Christ and his Kingdom, which is a Kingdom of Grace, Righteousness, Peace, Joy, Life, Salvation and eternal Glory. Whilst I thus abide and dwell in him, What Evil is there that can hurt me?

In the mean Season the old Man abideth without and is subject to the Law, but as concerning Justification, Christ and I must be entirely conjoined and united together, so that he may live in me and I in him. And this is a wonderful Manner of Speech. Now, because Christ liveth in me, therefore look what Grace, Righteousness, Life, Peace and Salvation is in me, it is his, and yet notwithstanding the same is mine also, by that unseparable Union and Conjunction which is thro' Faith; by the which Christ and I are made as it were one Body in Spirit. For as much then as Christ liveth in me, it followeth, that as I must needs be with him Partaker of Grace, Righteousness, Life and eternal Salvation, so the Law, Sin and Death, can have no Place in me; yea the Law is crucified and swallowed up of the Law, Sin of Sin, and Death of Death. Thus Paul goeth about to draw us from the beholding of ourselves, the Law and Works, and to plant in us true Faith in Christ; so that in the Matter of Justification we should think upon nothing else but Grace, separating the same far from the Law and Works, which in this Matter ought to have no Place.

Paul hath his peculiar Phrase or Kind of Speech, which is not after the Manner of Men, but divine and heavenly, nor used of the Evangelists, or of the rest of the Apostles, saving only of John, who is also wont sometimes so to speak. And if Paul had not first used this Phrase, and set forth the same unto us in plain Words, the very Saints themselves durst not have used it. For it seemeth a very strange and a monstrous Manner of speaking thus to say; I live, I live not; I am dead, I am not dead; I am a Sinner, I am not a Sinner; I have the Law, I have not the Law. Which Phrase is sweet and comfortable to all those that believe in Christ. For in that they behold themselves, they have both the Law and Sin, but in that they look unto Christ, they are dead to the Law and have no Sin. If there-

The Works of Christ living in the Faithful.

Christ living in the Faithful, communiceth unto them all Gifts of Grace and spiritual Blessings.

Paul's excellent and heavenly Manner of Speech.

The Faithful both Righteous and Sinners.

fore in the Matter of Justification thou separate the Person of Christ from thy Person, then art thou in the Law, thou abidest in the Law, thou livest in the Law and not in Christ, and so thou art condemned of the Law, and dead before God. For thou hast that

**The Papists Faith** which ( as the *Sophisters* dream ) is furnished with Charity. Thus I speak for Examples Sake. For there was never any one found that was saved by this Faith.

And therefore what Things soever the Popish *Sophisters* have written touching this Faith, are nothing else but vain Toys and mere Deceits of Satan. But let us grant that such there be as have this Faith, yet are they not therefore justified. For they have but an historical Faith concerning Christ, which the Devil also and all the Wicked have.

Faith therefore must be purely taught, namely, that thou art so entirely and nearly joined unto Christ, that he and thou art made as it were one Person; so that thou mayest boldly say, I am now one with Christ, that is to say, Christ's Righteousness, Victory and Life are mine. And again, Christ may say, I am that Sinner, that is, his Sins and his Death are mine, because he is united and joined unto me, and I unto him. For by Faith we are so joined together, that we are become one Flesh and one Bone,

**Eph. v. 30.** we are the Members of the Body of Christ, Flesh of his Flesh, and Bone of his Bones: So that this Faith doth couple Christ and me more near together, then the Husband is coupled to his Wife. This Faith therefore is not an idle Quality, but the Excellency thereof is such, that it utterly confoundeth these foolish Dreams of the *Sophisters* touching their formed Faith and counterfeit Charity, their Merits, Works and Worthiness.

These Things I would gladly set forth more fully, if by any Means I could.

Hitherto we have declared this to be the first Argument of *Paul* that either Christ must needs be the Minister of *Grace*, or else the Law doth not justify. When he had finished this Argument he set forth himself for an Example, saying, that he was dead unto that old Law by a certain new Law. Now he answereth two Objections which might have been made against him. His first Answer is against the Cavillations of the Proud, and the Offence of the Weak. For when Remission of Sins is freely preached, then do the Malicious by and by slander this preaching, as *Rom. iii. 8.* *Let us do Evil, that Good may come.* For these Fellows as soon as they hear that we are not justified by the Law, forthwith do maliciously conclude and say, Why, then let us reject the Law. Again, if Grace do there abound ( say they )

What Occasion the Malicious take of this Doctrine.

where Sin doth abound, let us then abound in Sin, that we may become righteous, and that Grace may the more abound. These are the malicious and proud Spirits which spitefully and wittingly slander the Scriptures and Sayings of the Holy Ghost, even as they slandered *Paul* whiles the Apostles lived, to their own Confusion and Condemnation, as it is said, *2 Pet. iii. 4.*

Moreover the Weak which are not malicious, are offended when they hear that the Law and good Works are not to be done as necessary to Justification. These must be holpen, and must be instructed how good Works do not justify, how they ought to be done, how not to be done. These ought to be done, not as the Cause, but as the Fruits of Righteousness; and when we are made righteous, we ought to do them; but not contrariwise, to the End that when we are unrighteous, we may be made righteous. The Tree maketh the Apple, but not the Apple the Tree.

He said before, *I am dead, &c.* here the Presumptuous and Malicious might take Occasion to cavil after this Manner. What sayest thou *Paul*? Art thou dead? How then dost thou speak? How dost thou write? The Weak also might soon be offended and say unto him, What art thou *Paul*? Do we not see that thou art living, and dost such Things as pertain to this Life? To this he answereth; I live indeed, and yet now not I, but Christ liveth in me. There is then a double Life. The *first* is mine, which is natural: The *second* is the Life of another, that is to say, the Life of Christ in me. As touching my natural Life I am dead, and now I live another Life, I live not now as *Paul*, but *Paul* is dead. Who is it then that liveth? The Christian.

*Paul* therefore as he liveth in himself, is wholly dead thro' the Law, but as he liveth in Christ, or rather as Christ liveth in him, he liveth by another Life; for Christ speaketh in him, liveth in him, and exerciseth all the Operations of Life in him. This cometh not now of the Life of *Paul*, but of the Life of the Christian and regenerate Person. Therefore thou malicious Spirit, where I say that I am dead, now slander my Words no more. And thou that art Weak, be not offended, but distinguish and divide this Matter rightly. For (as I said) there are two Lives; *to wit*, my natural Life, and the Life of another. By mine own Life I live not; for if I did, the Law would have Dominion over me, and hold me in Captivity. To the End therefore that it should not hold me in Captivity and Bondage, I am dead to it by another Law, and this Death purchaseth unto me the Life of another, even the Life of Christ, which Life is not mine by Nature, but is given unto me by Christ thro' Faith.

*Secondly*, This Objection might have been made against *Paul*: What sayest thou *Paul*? Dost thou not live by thine own Life, or in thine own Flesh, but in Christ? We see thy Flesh, but we see not Christ. Wouldst thou then delude us by thine Incantments that we should not see thee present in Flesh living as thou didst before, and doing all Things in this corporal Life as others do? He answereth:

Verse 20. *And the Life which I now live in the Flesh, I live by the Faith of the Son of God,*

How the Weak are to be instructed.

Good Works are not the Cause, but the Fruits of Righteousness.

Malicious Cavillers.

Life taken two Manner of Ways.

The Faithful live not their own Life, but the Life of Christ.

Christ in  
our Life.

As if he should say; True it is that I live in the Flesh, but this Life whatsoever it is, I esteem as no Life, for in very Deed it is no true Life, but a Shadow of Life, under the which an other liveth, that is to say, Christ who is my true Life indeed, which Life thou seest not, but only hearest, and I feel. *Thou hearest the Sound thereof, but canst not tell, whence it cometh, and whither it goeth*, John iii. 8. Even so thou seest me speaking, eating, labouring, sleeping and doing other Things, and yet thou seest not my Life. For this Time of Life which I now live, I live indeed in the Flesh, but not thro' the Flesh or according to the Flesh, but thro' Faith, and according to Faith. *Paul* then denieth not that he liveth in the Flesh, because he doth all Things that belong to a natural Man. He useth also carnal Things, as Meat, Drink, Apparel and such like, which is to live in the Flesh, but he saith that this is not this Life: And altho' he useth these Things, yet he liveth not thro' them, as the World liveth thro' the Flesh and after the Flesh, for it neither knoweth nor hopeth for any Life besides this.

The Faithful  
live in the  
Flesh, but not  
according to  
the Flesh.

Therefore (saith He) this Life which I now live in the Flesh, whatsoever it is, I live in the Faith of the Son of God. For this Word which I now corporally speak, is the Word, not of Flesh, but of the Holy Ghost, and of Christ. This Sight which goeth in, or cometh out at mine Eyes, proceedeth not of Flesh, that is to say, it is not governed of the Flesh, but of the Holy Ghost. So my Hearing cometh not of the Flesh, altho' it be in the Flesh, but of the Holy Ghost. A Christian speaketh none other but chaste, sober and holy Things, which pertain unto Christ, to the Glory of God, and the Profit of his Neighbour. These Things come not of the Flesh, neither are done according to the Flesh, and yet are they in the Flesh. For I cannot teach, write, pray or give Thanks but with these Instruments of the Flesh, which are necessary to the accomplishing of these Works, and yet notwithstanding these Works proceed not of the Flesh, but are given by God from above. In like Manner I behold a Woman, but with a chaste Eye, not lusting after her. This beholding cometh not of the Flesh, altho' it be in the Flesh, because the Eyes are the carnal Instruments of this Sight, but the Chasteness of this Sight cometh not from Heaven.

To live in  
the Faith of  
the Son of  
God.

Thus a Christian useth the World and all Creatures, so that there is no Difference between him and the Infidel. For in their Apparel, in their Feeding, Hearing, Seeing, Speaking, Gestures, Countenances and such other Things they are like, and in outward Appearance they seem to be all one (as *Paul* speaketh of Christ, *In outward Appearance he was found*, saith he, *as a Man*, Phil. ii. 8.) yet notwithstanding there is great Difference. For I live in the Flesh, (I grant) but I live not of myself, but in that I now live, I live in the Faith of the Son of God. This which I now speak, springeth out of another Fountain than that which thou hearest of me before. *Paul* before his

The Differ-  
ence be-  
tween the  
Faithful and  
Unfaithful.

Con-

Conversion spake with the same Voice and Tongue wherewith he spake afterwards; but his Voice and his Tongue were then blasphemous, and therefore he could speak nothing else but Blasphemies and Abominations against Christ and his Church. After he was converted, he had the same Flesh, the same Voice and Tongue which he had before, and nothing was changed, but his Voice and his Tongue then uttered no Blasphemies, but spiritual and heavenly Words; *to wit*, Thanksgiving and the Praise of God which came of Faith and the Holy Ghost. So then I live in the Flesh, but not of the Flesh, or after the Flesh, but in the Faith of the Son of God.

Hereby we may plainly see whence this spiritual Life cometh, which the natural Man can in no ways perceive, for he knoweth not what Manner of Life this is. He heareth the Wind, but whence it cometh or whither it goeth, he knoweth not. He heareth the Voice of the spiritual Man, he knoweth his Face, his Manners, and his Gestures, but he seeth not whence those Words, which are not now wicked and blasphemous as before, but holy and godly, or whence those Motions and Actions do come. For this Life is in the Heart by Faith, where the Flesh is killed, and Christ reigneth with his Holy Spirit, who now seeth, heareth, speaketh, worketh, suffereth and doth all other Things in him, altho' the Flesh do resist. To conclude, this is not the Life of the Flesh, altho' it be in the Flesh, but of Christ the Son of God, whom the Christian possesseth by Faith.

Verse 20. *Who loved me, and gave himself for me.*

Here have ye the true Manner of Justification set before your Eyes, and a perfect Example of the Assurance of Faith. He that can with a firm and a constant Faith say these Words with *Paul, I live by Faith in the Son of God, who loved me and gave himself for me*, is happy indeed. And with these Words *Paul* taketh away the whole Righteousness of the Law and Works, as afterwards we will declare. We must therefore diligently weigh and consider these Words, *The Son of God loved me, and gave himself for me*. It was not I then that first loved the Son of God, and delivered myself for him, as the *Sophisters* dream, that they love the Son of God, and deliver themselves for him. For they teach that a Man, *ex puris naturalibus*, that is, of his own pure natural Strength, is able to do meritorious Works before Grace, and love God and Christ above all Things. These Fellows prevent the Love of God and Christ, for they do that is in them (say they) that is, they do not only fulfil the Commandments, but also they observe the *Counsels*, they do the Works of \* Supererogation, and sell their superfluous Merits to Lay-men, and so (as they dream) they give

The true Manner of Justification.

|| The *Papists* divide the Gospel into Precepts and Counsels.

To the Precepts Men are bound, say they, but not to the Counsels. \* Works of Supererogation the *Papists* call those which they do of their own Devotion more then God requireth.

themselves for Christ, and thereby save both themselves and others, turning the Words of *Paul, Who loved me, &c.* clean contrary, and saying, We have loved Christ and given ourselves for him. Thus, whilst the Wicked, being puffed up with the Wisdom of the Flesh, imagine that they do what in them lieth, they love God, they deliver themselves for Christ; what do they else but abolish the Gospel, deride, deny and blaspheme Christ, yea spit upon him and tread him under Foot? They confess in Words that he is a Justifier and a Saviour; in very Deed they take from him the Power both to justify and save, and give the same to their own Will-works, their Ceremonies and Devotions. This is to live in their own Righteousness and Works, and not in the Faith of the Son of God.

Wherefore this is not the true Way to attain Justification, to do that which in thee lieth, as the Popish *Sophisters* and School-Doctors do teach, which affirm, that if a Man do what in him lieth, God will undoubtedly give unto him his Grace. But this Saying may not be straightly urged, say they, for if we do those Works which may be approved by the Judgment of any good Man, it is enough; for then Grace shall surely follow, because God, in that he is good and just, must needs give Grace as a Recompence for such good Works. And hereof cometh this Verse.

*Ultra posse viri non vult Deus ulla requiri.* That is,  
God will no more require of Man, then of himself perform he can.

Indeed this is a good Saying if it be used rightly, and in Place convenient, that is, in the Government of Common-weales or Families. As if I being in the Kingdom of Reason, do execute the Office of a Magistrate, or govern a Family, doing that in me lieth, I am excused. This Kingdom hath his Bounds and Limits, to the which also these Sayings do pertain, *To do what in us lieth, To do as much as we*

*The Papists* are able. But the *Papists* apply these Sayings to the spiritual Kingdom, wherein a Man can do nothing else but sin, for he is *sold under Sin*, Rom. vii. 14. But in external Things (such I mean as pertain to civil and household Government) he is not a Servant, but a Lord and Ruler, wherefore they have done wickedly in applying these Sentences to the Church, which properly pertain to the Government of Common-weales and Families; for the

Kingdom of Man's Reason and the spiritual Kingdom must be separate far asunder.

Moreover, they say that Nature is corrupt, but the Qualities of Nature notwithstanding are sound and uncorrupt, which also they attribute even unto Devils. Upon this Ground they reason after

*The Papists* this Manner, if the natural Qualities of Man be sound and uncorrupt, then is his Understanding and his Will sound and uncorrupt, and so consequently, all other Qualities  
corrupt; but  
they say that the Powers and Qualities of Nature remain sound and uncorrupt.

lities of Nature are pure and perfect in him. To know these Things it is necessary for you that ye may hold the Sincerity of the Doctrine of Faith, where they say then that the natural Qualities of Man are sound and uncorrupt, and thereof do infer, that a Man is able of himself to fulfil the Law, and to love God with all his Heart, applying these Qualities to the spiritual Kingdom, I deny the Consequence. And here I make a Distinction between the natural and the spiritual Qualities (which they confound and mingle together) and I say that the spiritual Qualities are not sound but corrupt, yea utterly quenched thro' Sin both in Man and Devil, so that there is in them nothing else but corrupt Understanding, and a Will continually striving against the Will of God, which can think nothing else but that which is altogether against God. Notwithstanding, I grant that the natural Qualities are uncorrupt. But what Qualities are they? That a Man being drowned in Sin and Iniquity, and a Bond-slave of Satan, hath Will, Reason and Power notwithstanding, to execute the Office of a Magistrate, to govern a Family, to guide a Ship, to build a House, and to do such other Things as are subject unto Man, for these Things are not taken from him. We do not then deny but that these Sentences are true in the corporal Kingdom, but if ye wrest them to the spiritual Kingdom, I utterly deny them, for there (as I said) we are clean overwhelmed and drowned in Sin. Whatsoever is in our Will is evil, whatsoever is in our Understanding is Error. Wherefore in spiritual Matters Man hath nothing but Darknes, Errors, Ignorance, Malice and Perverseness both of Will and Understanding. How then shall he work well, fulfil the Law, and love God?

Wherefore *Paul* saith here, that Christ first began and not we, *He, even he (saith Paul) loved me, and gave himself for me.* As if he said; He found in me no good Will or right Understanding; but this good Lord had Mercy upon me. He saw me to be nothing else but wicked, going astray, contemning God, and flying from him more and more; yea rebelling against God, taken, led and carried away Captive of the Devil. Thus of his mere Mercy preventing my Reason, my Will and my Understanding he loved me, and so loved me, that he gave himself for me, to the End that I might be freed from the Law, Sin, the Devil and Death.

Again, these Words, *The Son of God loved me, and gave himself for me,* are mighty Thundrings and Lightnings from Heaven against the Righteousness of the Law and all the Works thereof. So great and so horrible Wickedness, Error, Darknes and Ignorance was in my Will and Understanding, that it was impossible for me to be ransomed by any other Means then by such an inestimable Price. Why do we then vaunt of the Integrity and Soundness of Nature, of the Rule of Reason, of free Will, and of doing what in us lieth? Why do I offer, to pacify the Wrath of God (who as *Moses* saith, is a consuming Fire) this my rotten Stubble and Straw, yea horrible Sins, and claim of him to reward me with Grace and everlasting Life for them, since here I learn such Wickedness to lie  
lurk-

Christ first  
loved us, and  
we not him.

The bragging  
of the  
*Papists*,  
most vain  
and foolish  
touching the  
Integrity of  
the Qualities  
of Nature.

lacking in my Nature, that the whole World and all Creatures therein were not able to countervail the Indignation of God, but that the very Son of God himself must needs be delivered for the same :

But let us consider well this Price, and let us behold The Dignity of the Price given for us. this Captive delivered, ( as *Paul* saith ) for me, the Son of God I mean, and we shall see him without all Comparison to exceed and excel all Creatures. What wilt thou do, when thou hearest the Apostle say, that such an inestimable Price was given for thee ? Wilt thou bring thy Cowl, thy shaven Crown, thy Chastity, thy Obedience, thy Poverty, thy Works, thy Merits ? What shall all these do ? Yea what shall the Law of *Moses* avail ? What shall the Works of all Men, and all the Sufferings of the Martyrs profit thee ? What is the Obedience of all the holy Angels in Comparison of the Son of God delivered, and that most shamefully, even to the Death of the Cross, so that there was no Drop of his most precious Blood, but it was shed and that for thy Sins ? If thou couldst rightly consider this incomparable Price, thou shouldst hold as accursed all these Ceremonies, Vows, Works and Merits before Grace and after, and throw them down all to Hell. For it is an horrible Blasphemy to imagine that there is any Work whereby thou shouldst presume to pacify God, since thou seest that there is nothing which is able to pacify him, but this inestimable Price, even the Death and Blood of the Son of God, Drop whereof is more precious then the whole World.

### Verse 20. For me.

Who is this *Me* ? Even I wretched and damnable Sinner, so dearly beloved of the Son of God, that he gave himself for *Me*. If I then thro' Works or Merits could have loved the Son of God, and so come unto him, What needed he to deliver himself for me ? Hereby it appeareth how coldly the *Papists* handled, yea how they

The Negligence of the *Papists* in handling the Holy Scriptures.

How Sects may be withstood.

utterly neglected the Holy Scriptures, and the Doctrine of Faith. For if they had considered but only these Words, that it behoved the Son of God to be given for me, it had been impossible that so many monstrous Sects should have sprung up amongst them. For Faith would by and by have answered ; Why dost thou choose this kind of Life, this Religion, this Work. Dost thou this to please God, or to be justified thereby ? Dost thou not hear, O thou Wretch, that the Son of God shed his Blood for thee ? Thus true Faith in Christ would easily have withstood all Manner of Sects.

Wherefore I say ( as I have oftentimes said ) that there is no Remedy against Sects, or Power to resist them, but this only Article of Christian Righteousness. If we lose this Article, it is impossible for us to withstand any Errors or Sects ; as we may see at this Day in the fantastical Spirits the *Anabaptists* and such like, who being fallen away from this Article of Justification, will never cease to fall, err, and seduce others, until they come to the Fulness of all Iniquity. There is no doubt,

doubt, but they will raise up innumerable Sects, and will devise new Works. But what are all these Things (tho' they have never so goodly a Shew of Holiness) if ye compare them to the Death and Blood of the Son of God, *Who gave himself for me*? Consider well, I pray you, who this Son of God is, how glorious he is, The Majesty how mighty he is. What is Heaven and Earth in Comparison of him? Let all the *Papists* and all the Authors of Sects, yea tho' the whole World take their Part, be of Christ the Son of God. thrown down into Hell, with all their Righteousness, Works and Merits, rather than the Truth of the Gospel should be blamished and the Glory of Christ perish. What mean they then, to brag so much of Works and Merits? If I being a Wretch and a damned Sinner could be redeemed by any other Price, What needed the Son of God to be given for me? But because there was no other Price either in Heaven or in Earth, but Christ the Son of God, therefore it was most necessary that he should be delivered for me. Moreover, this he did of ineffimable Love: For *Paul* saith, *Who loved me*.

Wherefore these Words, *Who loved me*, are full of Faith. And he that can utter this Word *Me*, and apply it unto himself with a true and a constant Faith, as *Paul* did, shall be a good Disputer with *Paul* against the Law. For he delivered neither Sheep, Ox, Gold nor Silver, but even God himself entirely and wholly *for me*, even for *Me* (I say) a miserable and a wretched Sinner. Now therefore, in that the Son of God was thus delivered to Death for me, I take Comfort and apply this Benefit unto myself. And this Manner of applying is the very true Force and Power of Faith.

These Words which (are the pure preaching of Grace and Christian Righteousness indeed) *Paul* setteth against the Righteousness of the Law. As if he had said, Be it so that the Law is an heavenly Doctrine, and hath also his Glory; yet notwithstanding it loved not me, nor gave itself for me, yea it accuseth me, terrifieth and driveth me to Desperation. But I have now another which hath delivered me from the Terrors of the Law, Sin and Death, and hath brought me into Liberty, the Righteousness of God, and eternal Life, who is called the Son of God, to whom be Praise and Glory for ever.

The Law loveth not Sinners, but accuseth them.

Faith therefore (as I have said) embraceth and wrappeth in itself Christ Jesus the Son of God, delivered to Death for us, as *Paul* here teacheth, who being apprehended by Faith, giveth unto us Righteousness and Life. And here he setteth out most lively the Priest-hood and Office of Christ; which are, to pacify God, to make Intercession for Sinners, to offer up himself a Sacrifice for their Sins, to redeem, to instruct, and to comfort them.

The Office of Christ.

Let us learn therefore to give a true Definition of Christ; not as the School-Divines do, and such as seek Righteousness by their own Works, which make him a new Law-giver, who abolishing the old Law, hath established a new. To these Christ is nothing else but an Exactor and a Tyrant. But let us define him as *Paul* here doth; namely that he is the

the Son of God, who not for our Desert or any Righteousness of ours but of his own free Mercy offered up himself a Sacrifice for us Sinners: that he might sanctify us for ever.

**A true Definition of Christ.** Christ then is no *Moses*, no Exactor, no Giver of Law; but a Giver of Grace, a Saviour, and one that is full of Mercy; briefly, he is nothing else but infinite Mercy and Goodness, freely given and bountifully giving unto us.

And thus shall you paint out Christ in his right Colours. If you suffer him any other wise to be painted out unto you, when Temptation and Trouble cometh, you shall soon be overthrown. Now, as it is the

**The greatest Cunning that Christians can have is to define Christ rightly.** greatest Knowledge and Cunning that Christians can have thus to define Christ; so of all Things it is the hardest. For I myself even in this great Light of the Gospel wherein I have been so long exercised, have much ado to hold this Definition of Christ which *Paul* here giveth. So deeply hath this Doctrine and pestilent Opinion, that Christ is a Law-giver, entred even as it were Oyl into my Bones. Ye young Men therefore are in this Case much more happy then we that are old. For ye are not infected with these

pernicious Errors, wherein I have been so nussed and so drowned even from my Youth, that at the very hearing of the Name of Christ my Heart hath trembled and quaked for Fear; for I was perswaded that he was a severe Judge. Wherefore it is to me a double Travel, and Trouble to correct and reform this Evil: *First* to forget, to condemn,

**This Opinion, that Christ is a Judge, is not easily rejected.** and to resist this old grounded Error, that Christ is a Law-giver and a Judge; for it always returneth and plucketh me back: *Then* to plant in my Heart a new and true Perswasion of Christ, that he is a Justifier and a Saviour. Ye (I say) that are young, may learn with much less Difficulty, to know Christ purely and sincerely, if ye will. Wherefore if any Man feel himself oppressed with

Heaviness and Anguish of Heart, he must not impute it unto Christ, altho' it come under the Name of Christ, but unto the Devil, who oftentimes cometh under the Colour of Christ, and transformeth himself into an Angel of Light.

Let us learn therefore to put a Difference between Christ and a Law-giver, not only in Word but also in Deed and Practise, that when the Devil shall come under the Shadow of Christ, and shall go about to trouble us under his Name, we may know him, not to be Christ, but a very Fiend indeed. For Christ when he cometh, is nothing else but Joy and Sweetness to a trembling and broken Heart, as here *Paul* witnesseth, who setteth him out with this most sweet and comfortable Title, when

he saith, *Who loved me, and gave himself for me.* Christ therefore in very Deed is a Lover of those which are in Trouble and Anguish, in Sin and Death, and such a Lover as gave himself for us; who is also our High Priest, that is to say, a Mediator between God and us miserable and wretched Sinners. What could be said (I pray you) more

**Christ is a Lover of the Afflicted, and such as feel the Burden of their Sins.**

more sweet and comfortable to the poor afflicted Conscience? Now, if these Things be true (as they are indeed most true or else the Gospel must be nothing but a Fable,) then are we not justified by the Righteousness of the Law, but much less by our own Righteousness.

Read therefore with great Vehemency these Words, *Me*, and *for Me*, and so inwardly practise with thyself, that thou, with a sure Faith mayest conceive and print this *Me* in thy Heart, and apply it unto thyself, not doubting but thou art in the Number of those to whom this *Me* belongeth; also that Christ hath not only loved *Peter* and *Paul*, and given himself for them, but that the same Grace also which is comprehended in this *Me*, as well pertaineth and cometh unto us, as unto them. For as we cannot deny but that we are all Sinners, and are constrained to, say that thro' the Sin of *Adam* we were all lost, were made the Enemies of God, subject to the Wrath and Judgment of God, and guilty of eternal Death, (for this do all terrified Hearts feel and confess, and more indeed then they should do,) so can we not deny but that Christ died for our Sins, that he might make us righteous. For he died not to justify the Righteous but the Unrighteous, and to make them the Children of God, and Inheritors of all spiritual and heavenly Gifts.

Therefore, when I feel and confess myself to be a Sinner thro' *Adam's* Transgression, Why should I not say, that I am made righteous thro' the Righteousness of Christ, especially when I hear that he loved me, and gave himself for me? This did *Paul* most stedfastly believe, and therefore he speaketh these Words with so great Vehemency and full Assurance. Which he grant unto us, in some Part at the least, who hath loved us and given himself for us.

As by *Adam* all became guilty, so by Christ all that believe are made righteous.

Verse 21. *I do not frustrate the Grace of God:*

Now he prepareth a Way to the second Argument of this Epistle, and here ye must diligently consider, that to seek to be justified by the Works of the Law, is to reject the Grace of God. But I pray you, what Sin can be more execrable or horrible, then to reject the Grace of God, and to refuse that Righteousness which cometh by Christ? It is enough and too much already that we are wicked Sinners and Transgressors of the Commandments of God; and yet we commit moreover the most execrable Sin of all Sins, in that we do so contemptuously refuse the Grace of God and Remission of Sins offered unto us by Christ. This Blasphemy is more horrible than can be expressed. There is no Sin which *Paul* and the other Apostles did so much detest, as the Contempt of Grace and Denial of Christ, and yet there is no Sin more common. Hereof it cometh, that *Paul* above the rest, doth so sharply inveigh against *Anti-christ*, for that he despiseth the Grace of God, and refuseth the Benefit of Christ our High Priest, who offered up himself a Sacrifice for our Sins.

To seek Righteousness by the Law, is to reject the Grace of God.

Now,

Now, thus to deny Christ, what is it else but to spit in his Face, to tread him under Foot, to set himself in his Place, and to say, I will justify thee, and I will save thee. By what Means? By Masses, Pilgrimages, Pardons, Merits and such like. We see then how proudly *Antichrist* hath

*Antichrist*  
rejecteth  
Grace, and  
denieth the  
Faith.

lift up himself against and above God, and set himself in the Place of Christ, rejected the Grace of God, and denied the Faith. For this is his Doctrine; Faith availeth nothing (saith he) unless it be joined with Works, and by this false and detestable Doctrine he hath defaced, darkened, and utterly buried the Benefit of Christ, and in the Stead of the Grace of Christ and his Kingdom, he

hath established the Doctrine of Works and the Kingdom of Ceremonies and hath confirmed the same with mere Trifles and doting Dreams, and by this Means he hath wrested the whole World out of Christ's Hands (who alone ought to reign in the Conscience) and hath thrown it down headlong into Hell.

To reject the  
Grace of  
God.

Hereby we may easily understand what it is to reject and refuse the Grace of God, even to seek Righteousness by the Law. Now who hath ever heard that a Man by keeping of the Law, rejecteth Grace? Do we then sin

in keeping of the Law? No forsooth. But we despise Grace when we observe the Law to this End, that we may be justified thro' it. The Law is good, holy and profitable, and yet it justifieth not. He then that keepeth the Law to be justified thereby, rejecteth Grace, denieth

The World  
is so wicked  
and perverse  
that it rejecteth the  
Grace of  
God.

Christ, despiseth his Sacrifice; and will not be saved by this inestimable Price, but will satisfy for his Sins thro' the Righteousness of the Law, or deserve Grace by his own Righteousness, and this Man blasphemeth and despiseth the Grace of God. Now, what an horrible Thing is it to say, that any Man should be so devilish, as to despise the Grace and Mercy of God? And yet notwithstanding all the World doth so: Albeit it cannot abide that any Man should so judge of it, but will seem to do

high Service and Honour unto God. Now followeth the second Argument.

Verse 21. *For if Righteousness come by the Law, then Christ is dead in vain.*

These Words of *Paul* ought diligently to be weighed and considered in this wise. Is it true that Christ suffered Death or not? Again, did he suffer in vain or not? Here we are constrained to answer, except we be stark mad, that he suffered in very Deed, and that he suffered not in vain, nor for himself, but for us. If then he suffered not in vain, it followeth of Necessity that Righteousness cometh not by the Law.

Here again I admonish you, that *Paul* speaketh not of the ceremonial Law only, as the *Papists* do continually dream. Take now there-

therefore the ceremonial Law, and even the Law itself also, or the Law of the Ten Commandments, wherein is contained the most perfect Religion, and the highest Service of God, that is to say, Faith, the Fear of God, the Love of God, and the Love of our Neighbour, and shew me any Man that hath been justified thereby; yet is it true notwithstanding that Christ died in vain. For he that is justified by this Law, hath Power in himself to obtain Righteousness. For in that he doth what in him lieth, he deserveth Grace, and the Holy Ghost is poured into him, whereby he is now able to love God and his Neighbour. This being granted, it must needs follow that Christ died in vain. For what Need of Christ hath he which both loveth Christ and giveth himself for him, so that he is able by the Merit of Congruence before Grace to obtain Grace, and then to do such Works as by the Merit of Worthiness after Grace, he is able to deserve eternal Life? Then take away Christ with all his Benefits, for he is utterly unprofitable. But why was he born? Why was he crucified? Why did he suffer? Why was he made my High-Priest, loving me and giving *himself* an inestimable Sacrifice for me? In vain (no doubt) and to no Purpose at all, if Righteousness come by no other Means then the *Papists* teach; for, without Grace and without Christ, I find no Righteousness either in myself or in the Law.

Is this horrible Blasphemy to be suffered or dissembled, that the Divine Majesty, not sparing his own dear Son, but delivering him to Death for us all, should not do all these Things seriously and in good earnest, but as it were in Sport? Before I would admit this Blasphemy, I would not only that the Holiness of all the *Papists* and *Meritmongers*, but also of all the Saints and holy Angels should be thrown into the Bottom of Hell, and condemned with the Devil: Mine Eyes shall behold nothing else but this inestimable Price, my Lord and Saviour Christ; he ought to be such a Treasure unto me that all other Things should be but Dung in Comparison of him; he ought to be such a Light unto me, that when I have apprehended him by Faith, I should not know whether there be any Law, any Sin, any Righteousness or any Unrighteousness in the World. For what are all Things which are in Heaven and Earth in Comparison of the Son of God Christ Jesus my Lord and Saviour, *Who loved me, and gave himself for me.*

Wherefore to reject the Grace of God is an horrible Sin and commonly reigning throughout the World, whereof all they are guilty which seek Righteousness by their own Works. For whiles they seek to be justified by their own Works and Merits, or by the Law, they reject the Grace of God and Christ, as I have said. And of all these Abominations the Pope hath been the only Author: For he hath not only defaced and troden under his Feet the Gospel of Christ, but hath also replenished the World

Not only the ceremonial Law, but also the Law of the Ten Commandments is unable to justify.

The Righteousness of all Saints, is nothing in Comparison of the Righteousness of Christ.

A common Sin to reject the Grace of God.

The Pope is the Author of all Abominations in the Church.

with his cursed Traditions. And hereof, amongst other Enormities, his Bulls and Pardons are a sufficient Witness, where-  
**The Pope's** by he absolveth, not such as believe, but such as are  
**Pardons.** contrite, make Confession to a Priest, and reach out  
 their Helping-hand to the Maintenance of his Pomp and  
**Traditions.** Yet notwithstanding in this great Light of the Gospel, the  
 blind and obstinate *Papists* do continue still in their wicked Opinions and  
 doting Dreams, saying that the Qualities of Nature do remain sound and  
 uncorrupt, and that Men are able to prepare themselves to Grace, or to  
 deserve Grace by their own Works and Merits. And so far off is  
 it that they will acknowledge their Impiety and Error, that they do yet  
 still obstinately defend the same even against their own Conscience.

But we do constantly affirm with *Paul* ( for we will not  
 If the Law reject the Grace of God ) that either Christ died in vain,  
 justify, then or else the Law justifieth not. But Christ died not in vain,  
 Christ died therefore the Law justifieth not. Christ the Son of God,  
 in vain. of his own free Grace and Mercy, hath justified us; there-  
 fore the Law could not justify us: For if it could, then  
 had Christ done unwisely in that he gave himself for our Sins, that we  
 thereby might be justified. We conclude therefore, that we are justified  
 neither by our own Works and Merits before Grace or after, neither  
 yet by the Law.

Now, if my Salvation was so costly and dear a Price unto Christ, that  
 he was constrained to die for my Sins, then all my Works with all the  
 Righteousness of the Law, are but vile and nothing worth  
 A Compari- in Comparison of this inestimable Price. For how can I  
 son between buy that for a Farthing, which cost many thousand Ta-  
 Christ and lents of Gold? Now the Law ( to speak nothing of other  
 the Law. Matters which are of much less Value ) with all the  
 Works and Righteousness thereof, is but as a Farthing;  
 if ye compare it unto Christ, who by his Death hath vanquished my  
 Death, and hath purchased Righteousness and everlasting Life. Should  
 I then despise and reject this incomparable Price, and by the Law or by  
 the Works and Merits of Men ( vile Dross and Dung, for so *Paul* cal-  
 leth them, if they be compared unto Christ, ) seek that Righteousness  
 which Christ freely and of mere Love hath given unto me already, and  
 hath cost him so great a Price, that he was constrained to give himself  
 and even his own Heart Blood for me? This ( as I have  
 The devilish said ) the whole World doth, and specially such as will  
 Perverseness be counted more holy and religious than others. Where-  
 of the World. by they plainly witness, that Christ died in vain, altho'  
 with their Mouths they confess the contrary never so much;

which is most horribly to blaspheme the Son of God, to spit in his Face,  
 to tread him under Foot, to count the Blood of the Testament as an  
 unholy Thing, and utterly to despise the Spirit of Grace.

*Paul* here disputing of Righteousness, hath no civil  
 Civil Right- Matter in Hand, that is, he speaketh not of civil Right-  
 teousness teousness; which God notwithstanding alloweth and re-  
 hath her Re- quireth  
 ward.

quireth, and giveth Rewards thereunto accordingly, which also Reason is able in some Part to perform : But he intreateth here of the Righteousness that availeth before God, whereby we are delivered from the Law, Sin, Death, and all Evils, and are made Partakers of Grace, Righteousness and everlasting Life, and finally, are now become Lords of Heaven and Earth, and of all other Creatures. This Righteousness neither Man's Law neither the Law of God is able to perform.

The Law is given besides and above Reason, to be a Light and a Help to Man, and to shew him what he ought to do, and what to leave undone. Notwithstanding Man, with all his Strength and Reason, yea with this great Light also and heavenly Benefit (the Law I mean) cannot be justified. Now, if that which is the most excellent Thing in the World (the Law I say) which as a bright shining Sun is joined to the dim and obscure Light of Man's Reason to lighten and to direct it, is not able to justify, What can Reason do (I pray you) without the Law? What? Doubtless nothing else but that which the Pope with his dreaming *Sophisters* and his whole Synagogue hath done, who with their own Traditions have darkned the Light even of the *first* Commandment. Wherefore there is not one of them that is able rightly to understand any one Syllable of the Law, but every Man walketh in mere Darkness of Man's Reason. And this Terror is much more pernicious and deadly, than that which proceedeth of the Doctrine of Works and the Law.

These Words therefore are very effectual and full of Power, where he saith, *If Righteousness come by the Law; then Christ died in vain*; he speaketh here nothing of Man's Strength, Reason or Wisdom, be it never so great (for the greater it is, the sooner it deceiveth a Man) but he saith plainly without all Condition, *If by the Law, &c.* Wherefore Reason, lightned, aided and directed by the Law, yea even by the Law of God, is so unable to attain Righteousness, that it draweth a Man from Righteousness and rejecteth Christ : Set thou therefore the Death of Christ alone against all Law, and with *Paul*, 1 *Cor.* ii. 2. know nothing but Jesus Christ crucified. Receive no Light either of Reason, or of the Law, or of any Thing else then of Christ alone. Then shalt thou be learned indeed, righteous and holy, and shalt receive the Holy Ghost, which shall preserve thee in the Purity of the Word and Faith ; but set Christ aside, and all Things are but vain.

Here again we see, what a goodly Commendation *Paul* giveth to the Righteousness of the Law, or Man's own Righteousness, namely, that it is a condemning and rejecting of the Grace of God, and an abolishing of the Death of Christ. *Paul* is no great Rhetorician, and yet see what Matter he ministreth to him that listeth to play the Rhetorician. What Eloquence is able sufficiently to set forth these Words, *To reject Grace, the Grace of God : Also, that Christ died in*

The Righteousness which is accepted before God:

Reason altho' it be lightned with the Law, yea with the Law of God remaineth blind.

The Commendation of the Righteousness of the Law:

*vain?* The Horribleness whereof is such, that all the Eloquence in the World is not able to express it. It is a small Matter to say, that any Man died in vain; but to say that Christ died in vain, is to take him quite away. Whoso listeth to play the Rhetorician,

**To make the** hath here Matter enough to dilate and amplify at large,  
**Death of** what an horrible and blasphemous Doctrine it is to set up  
**Christ un-** the Righteousness of the Law, and Works. For what  
**profitable.** can be more blasphemous and horrible, then to make the  
 Death of Christ unprofitable? And what do they else

which keep the Law to this End, that they may be justified thereby? Now, to make the Death of Christ unprofitable, is to make his Resurrection, his Victory, his Glory, his Kingdom, Heaven, Earth, God himself, the Majesty of God, and briefly all Things else unprofitable, and of none Effect.

This thundring and lightning from Heaven against the Righteousness of the Law and Man's own Righteousness, should make us to abhor it. And here with this Thunder-clap falleth down all the Orders of *Monks*, and *Friers*, with all such superstitious Religion. For who will not detest his own Vows, his Cowls, his shaven Crown, all Men's Traditions, yea the very Law of *Moses* also, if he hear that for these Things he rejecteth the Grace of God, and maketh the Death of Christ unprofitable. The World hearing this, doth not believe that it is true. It thinketh that such horrible Wickedness cannot enter into any Man's Heart, that he should reject the Grace of God, and esteem the Death of Christ as a Thing of nought: And yet this Sin commonly reigneth. For whosoever seeketh Righteousness without Christ, either by Works, Merits, Satisfaction, Afflictions, or by the Law, rejecteth the Grace of God, and despiseth the Death of Christ whatsoever he protesteth with his Mouth to the contrary.





## C H A P. III.

Verse I. *O Foolish Galatians,*

**P**AUL here sheweth his Apostolical Care and burning Zeal which he beareth to the Church, so that in disputing and confuting, he intermingleth sometimes gentle Exhortations, and sometimes he sharply reproveth, according to his own Rule given to *Timothy*, *Preach* (saith he) *the Word, be instant in Season, out of Season; reprove, rebuke, exhort,* 2 Tim. iv. 2. Here the simple Reader may happily be deceived if he be not circum- *Paul's Order* spect, to think that *Paul* in teaching keepeth no Order in teaching. At all. And indeed after the Manner of the Rhetoricians he observeth none, but as concerning the Spirit he useth a goodly Order: Now, after that he hath sufficiently proved, and with two strong Arguments confirmed this Article, that Christian Righteousness cometh not by keeping of the Law, but by Faith in Christ, and withal hath confuted the Doctrine of the false Apostles; in the midst of this Discourse he turneth his Talk to the *Galatians*, and reproveth them, saying, *O Foolish Galatians, &c.* As if he should say, Alas, from whence are ye fallen, O ye miserable *Galatians*? I have most carefully and diligently taught you the Truth of the Gospel and ye also have received the same of me with fervent Zeal and great Diligence. How then cometh it to pass, that ye are so suddenly fallen away from it? Who hath bewitched you? He reproveth the *Galatians* very sharply (as it seemeth) when he calleth them Fools, bewitched, and disobedient to the Truth. Now whither he did this of Zeal or Compassion, I will not here contend, both may be true. A carnal Man would interpret this to be a reviling, rather than a godly Reprehension. Did *Paul* then give an evil Example, or was he spiteful against the Churches of *Galatia*, because he called them foolish and bewitched? No, not so. For with a Christian Zeal it is lawful for an Apostle, a Pastor or Preacher, sharply to reprove the People committed to his Charge; and such Reprovings are both wholly and godly. So Parents, of a fatherly and most tenderly Affection, do sharply reprove and rebuke their Children, which they would not bear if another should do it. The Schol-master sometimes is angry with his Children.

The chiding  
of Parents  
towards their  
Children

Scholar, he rebuketh him and beateth him; all which he taketh in good Part, and would not bear it at the Hands of his equal. The Magistrate likewise is angry, he reproveth and punisheth such as are under his Charge: And this Discipline is not only good, but also very necessary, without the which nothing can be well done. Wherefore unless the Magistrate, the Minister, the Father and Mother be angry, and use to reprove or rebuke when the Case requireth, he is unprofitable, and never shall discharge his Office rightly.

Wherefore sharp Chidings and bitter Words are necessary in every Kind of Life, as any other Vertue else. Yet notwithstanding this Anger must be so tempered, that it proceed not of any Envy or Malice, but only of a fatherly Affection and Christian Zeal; that is to say, it ought not to be childish or woman like, seeking Revenge, but only for the correcting of the Fault: As the Father correcteth not his Child with Desire to revenge, but only that the Child thereby may be the better. And these Kinds of Anger are good, and are called in the Scripture Zeals or Jealousies. For in chastising my Brother, my Child my Scholar or Subject in this Sort, I seek not his Destruction, but his Profit and Welfare.

It may be then that *Paul* here rebuketh the *Galatians*, either of a very Zeal (not to destroy them, but by this Means to reduce them into the Way again, and to amend them) or else of Pity and Compassion, as it were by way of Complaint, for that it grieveth him that they should be so miserably seduced. As if he should say; I am sorry and ashamed to hear of this your miserable Case, your wretched Doings &c. In like Manner do we also reprehend the Miserable; not that we tread them down, or upbraid them with their Misery, but as having Compassion on them, and seeking their Amendment. This I say, lest any Man should cavil, that *Paul* railed upon the Churches, contrary to the Rule of the Gospel.

In like Manner Christ rebuketh the *Pharisees*, calling them Serpents, the Generation of Vipers, the Children of the Devil. But these are the Rebukings of the Holy Ghost. They are fatherly and motherly, and as the Chidings of a faithful Friend: As it is said also in the *Proverbs*; *Faithful are the Wounds of a Friend; but the Kisses of an Enemy are deceitful*, Prov. xxvii. 6. Thus one and the self-same Rebuke, if it come out of the Mouth of a Father, may be a great Benefit; but if it proceed out of the Mouth of our equal or Enemy, it is a spiteful Reproach. When two Men do one Thing, in the one it is commendable, and in the other it is reprov'd. But when Christ and *Paul* do reprove, it is done with singular Vertue and Commendation; but when a private Man shall do the like, it is in him a great Vice. Therefore one and the self-same Word in the Mouth of *Paul* is a Benefit; but in the Mouth of another, it is a Reproach.

There

There is a certain Vehemency to be noted in this Word *Galatians* : for he calleth them not Brethren, as elsewhere he is wont to do ; but he calleth them by the Name which was proper to their Country. And it seemeth that it was the natural Vice of that Nation to be foolish ; like as it was the Fault of the *Cretenses* to be Liars. As if he should say ; As ye are called, even so are ye indeed, and so ye continue, that is to say, foolish *Galatians* and so you shew yourselves to be even now in the Busines of the Gospel ( wherein notwithstanding ye ought to have been most wise ) yet ye continue still in your own Nature, and are no Changelings. Thus *Paul* by way of Correction, putteth the *Galatians* in Mind of their corrupt Nature.

The natural Vice of the *Galatians*.

Moreover, we are here admonished, that according to the Flesh, there are yet natural Vices remaining in the Churches, and in the Godly. Grace maketh not such a Change in the Faithful, that by and by they become altogether new Creatures and perfect in all Things ; but there remain yet certain Dregs of their old and natural Corruption. As if a Man that is naturally inclined to Anger, be converted to Christ, altho' he be mollified by Grace ( the Holy Ghost so framing his Heart that he is now become more meek and gentle ) yet this natural Vice is not utterly quenched in his Flesh. Likewise, such as are by Nature severe and sharp altho' they be converted to the Faith, yet notwithstanding they cannot utterly forsake this Vice. Hereof it cometh that the Holy Scriptures, which do contain all one Truth of divers Spirits are diversly handled. One in teaching is mild and gentle ; another more rough and rigorous. Thus the Spirit of God being poured into divers Vessels, doth not quench at once the Vices of Nature ; but by little and little during this Life, he purgeth that Sin which is rooted, not only in the *Galatians*, but also in all Men of all Nations.

The Remnants of natural Vices remain in the Godly.

The Scripture being one and the self-same Truth, is of sundry Persons diversly handled.

Albeit then, that the *Galatians* were lightened and did believe, and had now received the Holy Ghost by the Preaching of Faith, notwithstanding this Remnant of Vice ( this Foolishness I mean ) and the original Corruption which afterwards did easily burst out into the Flame of false Doctrine, remained in them still, Wherefore let no Man trust so much in himself, as to think that when he hath received Grace, he is thoroughly purged from his old Vices. Indeed many Things are purged from us, and principally the Head of the Serpent, that is to say, Infidelity and Ignorance of God is cut off and banished, but the slimy Body and the Remnants of Sin remain still in us. Let not Man therefore presume so much of himself, that when he hath once received Faith, he can by it be thoroughly changed into a new Man : Nay, he shall keep somewhat of his old Vices still cleaving unto him, tho' he be never so good and so perfect a Christian. For we are not yet dead, but we still live

Grace by little and little purgeth the Godly from their old Sins.

in the Flesh; which, because it is not yet pure, *Continually lusteth against the Spirit*, Gal. v. 17. *I am carnal, sold under Sin. But I see another Law in my Members, warring against the Law of my Mind*, Rom. vii. 14, 23. Wherefore the natural Vices that were in us before we received Faith, do still remain in us after that we have received Faith;

None pure hath the Upper-hand, to keep them under that they but Christ alone rule not; and yet not without great Conflict. This Glory is due to Christ alone, and this Title he beareth, that he is pure and without Blemish, *Who did no Sin, neither was Guile found in his Mouth*, 1 Pet. ii. 22.

**Verse 1.** *Who hath bewitched you, that you should not obey the Truth,*

**A Commendation of the Righteousness of the Law.** Here have ye another Commendation of this goodly Righteousness of the Law, and of our own Righteousness, namely, that it maketh us to condemn the Truth; it bewitcheth us in such Sort that we do not believe nor obey the Truth, but rebel against it.

*Of the bodily and spiritual Witchcraft.*

**P**aul calleth the *Galatians* foolish and bewitched, comparing them to Children, to whom Witchcraft doth much harm. As tho' he should say; It happened to you as it doth to Children, whom Witches, Sorcerers and Inchanters are wont to charm by their Inchantments and by the Illusion of the Devil. Afterwards in the 5 Chapter he rehearseth Sorcery among the Works of the Flesh, which is a Kind of Witchcraft, whereby he plainly testifieth, that indeed such Witchcraft and Sorcery there is, and that it may be done. Moreover, it cannot be denied

but that the Devil liveth, yea and reigneth throughout the whole World. Witchcraft and Sorcery therefore are the Works of the Devil, whereby he doth not only hurt Men, but also by the Permission of God, he sometimes destroyeth them. Furthermore, we are all subject to the Devil both in Body and Goods, and we be Strangers in this World, whereof he is the prince and god. Therefore

the Bread which we eat, the Drink which we drink, the Garments which we wear, yea the Air and whatsoever we live by in the Flesh, is under his Dominion.

**Satan bewitcheth Men spiritually.** But he doth not only bewitch Men after this gross Manner, but also after a more subtil Sort and much more dangerous, wherein he is a marvelous cunning Workman. And hereof it cometh that Paul applieth the bewitching of the Senses to the bewitching of the Spirit. For by this spiritual Witchcraft that old Serpent bewitcheth not Mens Senses, but their Minds with false and wicked Opinions; which Opinions they that are so bewitched, do take to be true and godly. Briefly, so great

is the Malice of this Sorcerer the Devil and his Desire to hurt, that not only he deceiveth those secure and proud Spirits with his Inchantments, but even those also which are Professors of true Christianity, and well affected in Religion: Yea, as touching myself, to say the Truth, he sometimes assaileth me so mightily, and oppresseth me with such heavy Cogitations, that he utterly shadoweth my Saviour Christ from me, and in a Manner taketh him clean out of my Sight. To be brief, there is none of us all which is not oftentimes bewitched with false Perswasions; that is to say, which doth not fear, trust, or rejoyce where he ought not, or doth not sometimes think otherwise of God, of Christ, of Faith, of his Vocation, &c. then he should do.

*Luther's  
Conflicts  
with Satan.*

Let us therefore learn to know the subtile Slights of this Sorcerer, lest if he find us sleeping in Security, he deceive us by his Inchantments. True it is, that by his Sorcery he can do no hurt to our Ministry, yet he is with us in Spirit: Day and Night he rangeth about, seeking how he may devour every one of us alone, and unless he find us sober and armed with spiritual Weapons, that is to say, with the Word of God and Faith, he will devour us.

This is the Cause that he oftentimes stirreth up new Battles against us. And indeed it is very profitable for us, that he thus assaileth us, and by his subtile Trains exerciseth us: For by this Means he confirmeth our Doctrine, he stirreth up and increaseth Faith in us. Indeed we have been many Times cast down, and yet still are cast down in this Conflict, but we perish not, for Christ hath always triumphed, and doth triumph thro' us. Wherefore we hope assuredly, that we shall also hereafter by Jesus Christ obtain the Victory against the Devil. And this Hope bringeth unto us sure Consolation, so that in the midst of our Tentations we take Courage, and say; Behold, Satan hath heretofore tempted us and by his false Illusions hath provoked us to Infidelity, to the Contempt of God, Despair, &c. yet hath he not prevailed, neither shall he prevail hereafter; *Because greater is he that is in you, than he that is in the World,* 1 John iv. 4. Christ is stronger, who hath and doth overcome that strong One in us, and shall overcome him for ever. Notwithstanding the Devil sometimes overcometh us in the Flesh, that we may have Experience of the Power of a stronger against that strong One, and may say with Paul; *When I am weak, then am I strong.*

*The Profit  
that cometh  
to the Godly  
by the Ten-  
tation of  
Satan.*

Let no Man think therefore that the Galatians only were bewitched of the Devil; but let every Man think that he himself might have been, and yet may be bewitched by him. There is none of us so strong that he is able to resist him, and especially if he attempt to do it by his own Strength. Job was an upright and a just Man, fearing God, and there was none like unto him upon the Earth, Job i. 8. But what Power had he against the Devil, when God withdrew his Hand? Did not this holy Man horribly fall? Therefore this Inchanter was not

*Satan conti-  
nually be-  
witcheth  
Men.*

only mighty in the *Galatians*, but he goeth about continually to deceive, if not all Men, yet as many as he can with his Illusions, and false Perswasions; For he is a Liar, and the Father of Lies, John viii. 44.

Verse 1. *Who hath bewitched you,*

Here Paul excuseth the *Galatians*, and layeth the Fault upon the false Apostles. As tho' he should say; I see that ye are not fallen thro' Wilfulness or Malice, but the Devil hath sent the enchanting false Apostles his Children amongst you, and they do so bewitch you in teaching you that ye are justified by the Law that now ye think otherwise of Christ then ye did afore when ye heard the Gospel preached by me. But we labour both by preaching and writing unto you, to uncharm that Sorcery wherewith the false Apostles have bewitched you, and to set at Liberty those which are spared therewith.

So we also at this Day do labour by the Word of God against those fantastical Opinions of the *Anabaptists*, that we may set at Liberty those that are intangled therewith, and reduce them to the pure Doctrine of Faith and there hold them. And this our Labour is not altogether in vain. For we have called back many whom they have bewitched, and have delivered them out of their Spares. Notwithstanding such there are as will not suffer themselves to be taught, especially the chief Sorcerers and Authors of this Witchery. They will hear no Reason, nor admit the Scripture; yea, they abuse and corrupt the Scripture, and avoid such Places as are alledged against them, with their false Glosses and devilish Dreams clean contrary to the Scripture; which is a manifest Sign that they are bewitched of the Devil. Wherefore they are nothing amended by our Admonitions, but are much more hardned and more obstinate then they were before. And surely I could never have

believed, but that I have good Experience thereof at this Day, that the Power of the Devil is so great, that he is able to make Falshood so like to the Truth. Moreover,

( which is yet much more horrible ) when he goeth about to overwhelm sorrowful Consciences with over-much Heaviness, he can so cunningly and so lively change himself into the Likeness of Christ, that it is impossible for the poor tempted and afflicted Soul to perceive it; whereby many simple and ignorant Persons are deceived and driven down to Desperation, and some also destroy themselves; for they are so bewitched of the Devil, that they believe this to be a most certain Truth, that they are tempted and accused, not of the Devil, but of Christ himself.

The Example of Dr. *Kraus*. Such a like Thing of late happened to that miserable Man Doctor *Kraus* of *Hall*, which said, I have denied Christ, and therefore he standeth now before his Father and accuseth me. He being blinded with the Illusion of the Devil, had so strongly conceived in his Mind this Imagination, that by no Exhortation, no Consolation, no Promises of God he could be brought from it, whereupon he despaired and so miserably destroyed himself.

This

This was a mere Lie, a bewitching of the Devil, and a fantastical Definition of a strange Christ whom the Scripture knoweth not. For the Scripture setteth forth Christ, not as a Judge, a Tempter, an Accuser, but a Reconciler, a Mediator, a Comforter, and a Throne of Grace.

The Devil's  
Definition of  
of a false  
Christ.

But the poor Man deluded by the Devil, could not then see this, and therefore against all Scripture, he thinketh this to be an undoubted Truth: Christ accuseth thee before his Father, he standeth not for thee, but against thee, therefore thou art damned. And this Temptation is not of Man, but of the Devil, which that Inchanter most strongly imprinteth in the Heart of the Tempted. But unto us which are led and taught by another Spirit, it is a cursed Lie, and a bewitching of the Devil. But unto those that are thus bewitched, it is so certain a Truth that none can be more certain.

Seeing then that the Devil is able to print in our Hearts so manifest a Lie, that we would swear a thousand Times it were an undoubted Truth, we must not be proud, but walk in Fear and Humility, calling upon the Lord Jesus, that we be not led into Temptation. Worldly and secure Men, which having heard the Gospel once or twice preached, do by and by imagine that they have received Abundance of the Spirit, fall at length in like Manner, because they fear not God, they are not thankful unto him, but perswade themselves that they are able not only to hold and defend the Doctrine of true Religion, but also to stand against the Devil in any Assault or Conflict, be it never so great. Such are meet Instruments for the Devil to bewitch and to throw down to Desperation.

The Godly  
must dili-  
gently  
watch.

Worldly  
and secure  
Men are soon  
bewitched.

On the other Side, say not thou I am perfect, I cannot fall but humble thyself, and fear, lest if thou stand to Day, to Morrow thou be overthrown. I myself, altho' I be a Doctor of Divinity, and have now preached Christ, and fought against the Devil in his false Teachers a great while, by mine own Experience have found how hard a Matter this is. For I cannot shake off Satan as I desire; neither can I so apprehend Christ as the Scripture setteth him forth; but oftentimes the Devil setteth before mine Eyes a false Christ. But Thanks be to God, who keepeth us in the Word, in Faith and in Prayer, that we may walk before him in Humility and Fear, and not presume of our own Wisdom, Righteousness and Strength, but trust in the Power of Christ, who is strong when we are weak, and by us weak and feeble Creatures continually overcome and triumpheth; To whom be Glory for ever.

This bewitching then, and this Sorcery, is nothing else but a plain Illusion of the Devil, printing in the Heart a false Opinion of Christ and against Christ, and he that is deluded with this Opinion, is bewitched. They therefore that have this Opinion, that they are justified by the Works of the Law, or by the Traditions of Men, are bewitched; for this Opinion is against Faith and

Witchcraft  
what it is.

Who are  
bewitched.

again

against Christ. *Paul* useth this Word *bewitching* in Contempt of the false Apostles, which so vehemently urged the Doctrine of the Law and Works. As if he should say; What a devilish bewitching is this? For as the Senses are perverted by bodily Witchcraft, so are the Minds of Men also deluded by this spiritual Witchcraft.

**Verse 1.** *That you should not obey the Truth,*

The *Galatians* at the first did gladly hear and obey the Truth. Therefore when he saith, *Who hath bewitched you?* He sheweth that they were bewitched by these false Apostles, and were fallen away from the Truth which before they did obey. But this seemeth yet a more bitter and vehement Kind of Speech, when he saith that they do not believe the Truth. For he signifieth by these Words that they are bewitched, and that he would deliver them from this Witchery, and yet they will not acknowledge nor receive this Benefit. For it is certain that he did not reduce all from the Errors of the false Apostles unto the Truth, but that many of them remained yet still bewitched. Therefore he useth these sharp and vehement Words, *Who hath bewitched you?* As if he would say; Ye are so deluded and bewitched, that now ye cannot obey the Truth. I fear lest many of you are utterly lost, and so fallen away, that ye will never return again to the Truth.

An other  
goodly Com-  
mendation  
of the Right-  
eousness of  
the Law.

And here ye have again to note by the way, another goodly Commendation of the Law and of Man's own Righteousness, that the Doctrine and Preaching thereof, be it never so servent, if the Preaching of Christ and of the Gospel do not go withal, never bringeth with it true Conversion and hearty Repentance. Here of manifest Demonstrations we have not only by plain Words of the Scripture, but also by evident Experience. For as it is true which is written to the *Hebrews*, that the Law bringeth none to Perfection; so in this Epistle St. *Paul* by manifest Example confirmeth the same, reasoning thus with the *Galatians*; Tell me, saith he, ye that would be justified by the Law, Received ye the Spirit of God, by hearing the Law, or by the Gospel of Faith preached? Proving by their own Experience, that it is not the Law nor the Preaching thereof, but the Gospel and Preaching of Faith that raiseth a Man being fallen, and quickeneth him to true Repentance, as more fully is to be expressed hereafter when we come to the Place. And yet neither is the Preaching of the Law without his Effect; the Use whereof only serveth to shew forth the Wrath of God and to cast down; but to raise up a Man, that cometh by the Ministration of the Gospel and the Preaching of Faith only in Christ.

**Verse 1.** *Before whose Eyes Jesus Christ hath been evidently set forth,*

It was bitterly spoken where he said before, that they were so bewitched,

witched, that they could not obey the Truth : But it is more bitterly said, when he addeth that Christ was so lively described before them, that they might handle him with their Hands, and yet they would not obey the Truth. Thus he convinceth them even by their own Experience. As tho' he would say; Ye are so bewitched and deluded with the devilish Opinions of the false Apostles, that now ye will not obey the Truth. And whereas I have with great Travel and Diligence set forth Christ plainly before your Eyes, yet doth this profit you nothing at all.

In these Words he hath Respect to the former Arguments, whereby he proved, that to those that will be justified by the Law, Christ is but the Minister of Sin, that such do reject the Grace of God, and that to them Christ died in vain. Which Arguments he had before more vehemently prosecuted and more largely amplified in their Presence, even as if a Painter had pourtraied Christ Jesus before their Eyes, Now being absent he putteth them in Mind of the same Things, saying, *To whom Jesus Christ was described in your Sight.* As if he said; There is no Painter that with his Colours can so lively set out Christ unto you as I have painted him out by my Preaching; and yet notwithstanding ye still remain most miserably bewitched.

### Verse I. *Set forth, crucified among you?*

What did I then paint out? Even Christ himself. How was that done? In this Sort, that he is crucified in you or among you. He useth here very rough and sharp Words. Before he said that they sought Righteousness by the Law, rejected the Grace of God, and that to them Christ died in vain. Now he addeth moreover, that they crucify Christ, who before lived and reigned in them. As if he should say; Ye have now, not only rejected the Grace of God, not only to you Christ died in vain, but also he is most shamefully crucified among you. After the same Manner he speaketh, *Heb. vi. 6, Crucifying to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open Shame.*

If a Man did but hear the Name of a Monk, of his shaven Crown, of his Cowl, of his Rule, it should make him afraid (how much soever the Papists do adore these Abominations, and brag that they are perfect in Religion and Holiness, as I and others did judge of them before God revealed his Gospel unto us; for we were brought up in the Traditions of Men, which darkned Christ and made him utterly unprofitable unto us) when he heareth *Paul* say, that even they which seek to be justified by the Law of God, be not only Deniers and Murderers of Christ, but also they do most wickedly crucify him again. Now, if they be Crucifiers of Christ which seek to be justified by the Righteousness of the Law of God, and the Works thereof, What are they (I pray you) which seek Salvation and eternal Life by the Dregs and filthy Dung of Man's Righteousness, and by the Doctrine of Devils?

The Apostle useth bitter and rough Words.

They that seek to be justified by the Law, crucify Christ.

But who could ever believe or think that it was so horrible and so abominable a Sin to be made a religious Man ( for so they call them ) namely to be made a *Massing Priest*, a *Monk*, a *Frier*, a *Nun* ? Doubtless no Man. Yea they themselves say moreover that The *Papists* Munkery is a new Baptism. Can there be any Thing are Crucifiers of the more horrible then that the Kingdom of the *Papists* is the Kingdom of such as spitefully spit in the Face of the Son of God Christ the Son of God, and crucify him again ? ( For indeed they crucify him afresh who was once crucified and rose again ) both in themselves, in the Church, and in the Hearts of the Faithful ; for with their spiteful Reproaches, Rebukes, Slanders and Injuries, they spit upon him, and with their wicked Opinions they wound him, and thrust him thro' that in them he may die most miserably ; and in the Stead of him they set up a glorious Witchcraft, whereby Men are so miserably charmed and deluded, that they cannot know Christ to be their Justifier, their Reconciler and Saviour, but a Minister of Sin, their Accuser, their Judge and their Destroyer, which must be pacified no otherwise than by our Works and Merits.

And out of this Opinion did afterwards spring the most The Doctrines of the *Papists*. pestilent and pernicious Doctrine that is in the whole *Papacy*, which is this : If thou wilt serve God, thou must merit Forgiveness of Sins and everlasting Life, and must also help others that they may attain to Salvation :

Thou must enter into a Monastery, vow Obedience, Chastity, Poverty, &c. *Monks* and *Friers*, and the rest of that religious Rabble, being puffed up with this Opinion of their own Holiness, bragged that they only were in the Life and State of Perfection, and that other Christians led but a

† Undue Works are such as the *Papists* say they are not bound to do. common Life, for they did not † undue Works, or more then they were bound to do, that is, they did not vow and keep Chastity, Poverty, Obedience, &c. they were but only baptised, and kept the Ten Commandments : But as for themselves, besides that which was common as well to them as to other Christians, they kept also the Works of Supererogation, and the ‡ Counsels of Christ : Wherefore they hoped to have Merits and a Place in Heaven among the principal Saints, far above the common Sort of Christians.

‡ The *Papists* brag that they keep not only the Commandments, but also the Counsels and Exhortations of

\* This was undoubtedly an horrible Illusion of the Devil, whereby he hath bewitched almost the whole World. And every Man, the more holy he would seem to be, the more he is snared with that Witchery, that is to say, with the pestilent Perswasion of his own Righteousness. And this was the Cause that we could not know that Jesus Christ was our Mediator and Saviour ; but we thought that he was a severe Judge, which should be pacified

Christ, whereto they say, they are not bound. \* In the Time of Popery we were so bewitched, that it was impossible to acknowledge Christ, &c.

cified by our own Works ; which was nothing else but most horribly to blaspheme Christ, and as *Paul* said before, to reject the Grace of God, to make the Death of Christ of none Effect, and not only to kill him, but also most shamefully to crucify him again. And this is the right Meaning of that which Christ alledgeth out of *Daniel*, *That Abominations standeth in the holy Place*, Matth. xxiv. 15. Dan. xi. 31. Wherefore every *Monk* and religious Person, and every *Justiciary* seeking Remission of Sins and Righteousness by his own Works or by his Afflictions, is a Crucifier of Christ now reigning and living altho' not in the proper Person of Christ, yet in his own Heart and in the Hearts of others. And whosoever do enter into Monasteries to the End, that by keeping of their Rule they may be justified, do enter into the Dens of Thieves, and such as crucify Christ again.

Wherefore *Paul* useth in this Place very severe and sharp Words, to the End that he may fear and call back the *Galatians* from the Doctrine of the false Apostles. As if he should say; Consider well what ye have done; ye have crucified Christ again ( and this do I so plainly shew and paint out before your Eyes, that ye may see it, yea and touch it with your Hands ) because ye seek to be justified by the Law. But if Righteousness come by the Law, then is Christ a Minister of Sin, and his Death altogether in vain. If this be true, then must it needs follow that Christ is crucified again in you.

And it is not without Cause that he addeth this Clause, *in you*, or, *among you*. For Christ is no more crucified, he dieth no more in his own Person, as is said, *Rom. vi. 9*. But he dieth in us, when we rejecting true Doctrine, Grace, Faith, free Remission of Sins, seek to be justified by our own Works, or else by the Works commanded in the Law. Here Christ is crucified in us again. Now this false and wicked Perswasion, to seek Righteousness by the Law and Works, is nothing else ( as I have before more amply declared ) but the Illusion of the Devil, wherewith Men are so bewitched, that in no wise they can acknowledge the Benefit of Christ ; yea in all their Life they can do nothing else, but deny the Lord who hath bought them, and in whose Name they were baptised, and crucify him again in themselves. Whosoever then hath any Fear of God or Love unto Christ and his true Religion, let him fly quickly out of this *Babylon*, and let him tremble at the very Name of the *Papacy*. For the Impiety and Abomination thereof is so horrible, that no Man is able to express it with Words, neither can it be otherwise seen, then with spiritual Eyes only.

To seek  
Righteous-  
ness by the  
Law.

The horrible  
Abomination  
of the Pa-  
pacy.

These two Arguments *Paul* prosecuteth and beateth into the Heads of the *Galatians* very diligently : *First*, that they are so bewitched of the Devil, that they obey not the Truth most clearly set forth before their Eyes : *Secondly*, that they crucify Christ again in themselves. These seem to be simple and plain Words, and without any high Eloquence, but in very Deed they are so mighty that they exceed all the Eloquence of Man. It cannot therefore be comprehended but only in Spirit,

Spirit, how great an Impiety it is to seek to be justified by the Righteousness of the Law, or by the Righteousness and Merits of Man. For as *Paul* saith here it is nothing else but to be bewitched of the Devil, to be disobedient to the Truth, and to crucify Christ again. Are not these goodly Commendations of the Righteousness of the Law, and Man's own Righteousness.

The Apostle therefore is inflamed with a vehement Zeal, and with bitter Words he reproveth and condemneth the Presumption of Man's own Righteousness, rising upon the Observation of the Law of God, and chargeth it with this Impiety, that it crucifieth again the Son of God. Seeing then it is so dangerous a Thing, it cannot be beaten down enough, or condemned as it should

The Fall of  
*Lucifer*.

be; for thereof ensueth such a Fall, as is no less then the Fall of *Lucifer*, and such a Loss as can never be recovered, and therefore he useth so sharp and rigorous Words against it, that he spareth not the very Law of God; against the which he so bitterly inveiyeth, that he seemeth utterly to reject and condemn it. And this doth he, being constrained by great Necessity; for otherwise he could not withstand the false Apostles, nor defend the Righteousness of Faith against them. Albeit then that the Law be holy, just and good, yet must it put on, as it were the Visour of an Hypocrite, seeking to be justified by Works. Now he preffeth them with an Argument, whereof they themselves had good Experience, and which they could not deny.

Verse 2. *This only would I learn of you, Received ye the Spirit by the Works of the Law, or by the hearing of Faith?*

He speaketh these Words with a certain Indignation and Contempt of the false Apostles. If I had nothing else against you but even your own Experience (saith he) yet have I enough. As if he should say; Go too now, answer me I pray you, which am your Scholar (for ye are so suddenly become Doctors, that ye are now my Masters and Teachers: ) *Received ye the Spirit by the Works of the Law, or by the hearing of Faith?* With this Argument he so convinceth them, that they have nothing to reply again. For their own Experience is altogether against them; to wit, that they had received the Holy Ghost, not by the Works of the Law, but by the Preaching of the Gospel.

*Paul* speaketh of the whole Law.

Here again I warn you, that *Paul* speaketh not only of the ceremonial Law, but of the whole Law. For he groundeth his Argument upon a sufficient Division. If he should speak of the ceremonial Law only, it were not a sufficient Division. It is an Argument therefore standing upon two

Parts, whereof the one must needs be true and the other false; that is, either ye received the Holy Ghost by the Law, or by the hearing of Faith. If by the Law, then not by the Preaching of Faith. If by the Preaching of Faith, then not by the Law. There is no Mean betwixt these two. For all that is not the Holy Ghost or the Preaching of Faith, is the Law. Here are we in the Matter of Justification. But to attain to Justification, there is no other Way, but either the Voice of the Gospel, or the Voice of the Law. Wherefore the Law is here taken generally, as wholly separate from the Gospel. But it is not the ceremonial Law only that is separate from the Gospel, but also the moral Law or the Law of the Ten Commandments. Wherefore *Paul* speaketh here of the whole Law.

Two Ways  
to Justifica-  
tion.

He groundeth his Argument upon a sufficient Distinction, after this Sort. Tell me, (saith he) *Received ye the Spirit by the Works of the Law, or by the hearing of Faith?* Answer me to this. Ye cannot say that this was done by the Law. For so long as ye were under the Law and did the Works thereof, ye never received the Holy Ghost. Indeed ye taught and heard the Law of *Moses* every Sabbath; but it hath not been heard or seen that ever the Holy Ghost was given to any, either Doctor or Disciple, thro' the Preaching of the Law. Moreover, ye have not only taught and heard the Law, but also ye have laboured with all your Power to perform the same by your Works, whereby ye should most of all have received the Holy Ghost, if he had been given by the Law, seeing ye were not only Teachers and Hearers, but also Doers of the Law; and yet ye cannot shew me that this was done at any Time. But as soon as the hearing of Faith or the Gospel came into you, by and by ye received the Holy Ghost by the only hearing of Faith, before ye had done any Work, or shewed any Fruit of the Gospel. For as *Luke* witnesseth in the *Acts* x. 44. xi. 15. xiv. 5. i. at the only Preaching of *Peter* and *Paul*, the Holy Ghost came upon those which heard the Word, thro' whom also they received divers Gifts, so that they spake with new Tongues.

The Holy  
Ghost is re-  
ceived by  
hearing the  
Word of  
Faith, and  
not by the  
Law.

It is manifest therefore that by the only Preaching of Faith, ye received the Holy Ghost before ye did any good Work, or brought forth any Fruits of the Gospel. On the other Side the accomplishing of the Law never brought the Holy Ghost; much less could the only hearing of the Law do so. Therefore not only the hearing of the Law, but that Affection and Zeal also, whereby ye go about to accomplish the Law by your Works, is vain and unprofitable. Wherefore, altho' a Man labour to do all Things; that is to say, altho' he have a Zeal of God, and with all his Endeavour go about to be saved by the Law, and exercise himself Day and Night in the Righteousness thereof, notwithstanding he doth but labour and consume himself in vain. For they which are ignorant of the Righteousness

The Law  
bringeth not  
the Holy  
Ghost.

eousness

teousness of God, and go about to establish their own Righteousness (as *Paul* saith in another Place) do not submit themselves unto the Righteousness of God, *Rom. x. 3.* Again, *Israel* which followed the Law of Righteousness, attained not to the Law of Righteousness, &c. *Rom. xi. 7.* Now *Paul* speaketh here of the Manifestation of the Holy Ghost in the Primitive Church. For the Holy Ghost came down in a manifest Likeness upon those that did believe, and by this Sign did plainly witness that he was there present at the Preaching of the Apostles, *Matth. iii. 16.* also that they which heard the Word of Faith preached by the Apostles, were accepted as righteous before God, for else the Holy Ghost would not have come down upon them.

The Appearing of the Holy Ghost.

ly witness that he was there present at the Preaching of the Apostles, *Matth. iii. 16.* also that they which heard the Word of Faith preached by the Apostles, were accepted as righteous before God, for else the Holy Ghost would not have come down upon them.

### *The Argument of the Book containing the Acts of the Apostles.*

Wherefore we must diligently weigh and consider the Force of this Argument, which is so often repeated in the *Acts* of the Apostles, which Book is written to confirm and establish this Argument, for it teacheth nothing else but that the Holy Ghost is not given by the Law, but by the hearing of the Gospel. For when *Peter* preached, the Holy Ghost forthwith fell upon all those that heard him, and in one Day three Thousand which were present at the Preaching of *Peter*, believed and received the Holy Ghost, *Acts ii.* So *Cornelius* received the Holy Ghost, not by the Alms which he gave, but when *Peter* had opened his Mouth, and was yet in speaking, the Holy Ghost fell upon all them which with *Cornelius* heard the Word, *Acts x. 44.* These are manifest Arguments, Experiences, and divine Works which cannot deceive us.

*Luke* also writeth of *Paul* in the 15 of the *Acts*, that where he had preached the Gospel together with *Barnabas* among the *Gentiles*, and was returned to *Jerusalem*, he set himself against the *Pharisees* and Disciples of the Apostles, which urged Circumcision and the keeping of the Law, as necessary to Salvation; whose Mouths he so stopped (saith *Luke*) in shewing what Things he and *Barnabas* had done amongst the *Gentiles*, that the whole Church was amazed at the hearing thereof, especially when they hear that God had wrought so many and so great Miracles and Wonders by them among the *Gentiles*; and when they which bare a Zeal to the Law, did wonder how it could be that the uncircumcised *Gentiles*, not doing the Law nor the Works thereof, nor having the Righteousness of the Law, should notwithstanding attain to this Grace, to be justified and receive the Holy Ghost as well as the *Jews* that were circumcised; here *Paul* and *Barnabas* did alledge nothing else but manifest Experience; wherewith they were so confounded, that they had nothing to reply again. By this Means *Paulus Sergius* the Lieutenant, and all those Cities, Regions, Kingdoms and Countries where the Apostles had preached, by the only Preaching of Faith did believe, without the Law and the Works thereof.

In the whole Book therefore of the *Acts* there is nothing else handled in effect, but that it behoveth as well *Jews* as *Gentiles*, as well righteous as unrighteous, to be justified by Faith alone in Christ Jesus, without the Law and the Works thereof. The which Thing doth appear as well by the Preaching of *Peter*, of *Paul*, of *Stephen*, of *Philip* and the other Apostles, as also by the Examples of the *Gentiles* and *Jews*. For as God gave the Holy Ghost to the *Gentiles* which lived without the Law, by the Preaching of the Gospel; so did he give the same to the *Jews*; yet not by the Law nor by the Ceremonies and sacrifices commanded in the Law, but by the only Preaching of Faith. Now, if the Law had been able to justify, and the Righteousness of the Law had been necessary to Salvation, then doubtless the Holy Ghost had not been given to the *Gentiles* which kept not the Law. But Experience itself doth plainly witness, that the Holy Ghost was given unto them without the Law; (and this did the Apostles, both *Peter*, *Paul*, *Barnabas* and others see) therefore the Law doth not justify, but Faith only in Christ, which the Gospel setteth forth.

These Things are diligently to be marked, because of the Adversaries which do not consider what is handled in the *Acts* of the Apostles. I myself in Times past also read this Book, when indeed I understood in nothing at all. Therefore when thou hearest or readest in the *Acts* of the Apostles, or wheresoever it be in the Scriptures, this Word *Gentiles*, thou must think that it is not to be understood literally of the common nature of the *Gentiles*, but it carrieth with it a spiritual Meaning, and is to be taken, not for those which are under the Law, as were the *Jews*; as before is said in the second Chapter; *We who are Jews by Nature, &c.*) but for those which are without the Law. Wherefore to say that the *Gentiles* are justified by Faith, is nothing else,

that that they which observe not the Law, nor do the Works thereof, which are not circumcised, which sacrifice not, &c. are justified and receive the Holy Ghost.

What Means? Not by the Law and the Works thereof (for they have no Law) but freely and without any other Means, except only the Hearing of the Gospel.

So *Cornelius* and his Friends whom he had called to his House, do nothing, neither look they upon any Works going before, and yet as many as are present, receive the Holy Ghost. No Man speaketh but *Peter*; they sitting by do nothing, they think not of the Law, much less do they keep it, they sacrifice not, they care not for the receiving of Circumcision, but only are bent to hear that which *Peter* speaketh. He by Preaching brought the Holy Ghost into their Hearts, as it were visibly; *For they spake with Tongues and glorified God.*

But some Man may here cavil and say; Who knoweth whether it were the Holy Ghost or not? Well let him cavil. Sure it is that the Holy Ghost so bearing witness doth not lie, but hereby sheweth that he receiveth the *Gentiles* for righteous, and justifieth them by no other

Both *Jews* and *Gentiles* are justified by Faith only.

The *Gentiles* justified by Faith.

Means, then by the only Voice of the Gospel, or hearing of Faith in Christ preached. We may see also in the *Acts* how greatly the *Jews*, marvelled at this new and strange Thing: For the Faithful which were of the Circumcision, and came with *Peter* to *Cæsarea*, seeing the Gift of the Holy Ghost to be poured out also upon the *Gentiles* in the House of *Cornelius*, were astonished, *Acts* x. 45. Also they that were at *Jerusalem*, complained of *Peter* for that he went in to Men uncircumcised and did eat with them, *Acts* xi. 2. But when they heard the Matter declared by *Peter* in order as it was done touching *Cornelius*, they marvelled, and glorified God, saying, *Then hath God also to the Gentiles granted Repentance unto Life*, *Acts* xi. 18.

This Report therefore and this Fame, that God had given Salvation also to the *Gentiles*, was at the first not only intollerable, but also a great Offence, even to the believing *Jews*, which they could not easily shake off; for they had this Prerogative above all other Nations, that they were the People of God. The Adoption, the Glory, the Worship, &c. belonged to them, *Rom.* ix. 4. Moreover, they exercised themselves in the Righteousness of the Law, they laboured all the Day long, they bare the Burden and Heat of the Day. Moreover, they had the Promise as touching the Observation of the Law; therefore they could not but murmur against the *Gentiles*, and say; Behold the *Gentiles* come but even now, and have not suffered any Heat, or born any Burden; notwithstanding they have the same Righteousness and Holy Ghost without Labour, which we by Labour and by the Heat and Burden of the Day could not obtain, *Matth.* xx. 11, 12.

The Mur-  
muring of  
the *Jews* a-  
gainst the  
*Gentiles*.

Indeed they have laboured, but that was but one Hour, and by this Labour they are more refreshed then wearied. Wherefore then hath God tormented us with the Law, if it avail nothing to the obtaining of Righteousness? He now preferreth the *Gentiles* before us which have been so long burdened with the Yoke of the Law. For we which are the People of God, have been vexed all the Day long; but they which are not the People of God, neither have any Law, nor have done any good at all, are made equal with us.

The Council  
of the Apo-  
stles.

And for this Cause the Council of the Apostles, upon great Necessity was assembled at *Jerusalem* to satisfy and pacify the *Jews*, who tho' they believed in Christ, yet was this Opinion notwithstanding deeply rooted in their Hearts, that the Law of *Moses* ought to be observed. There *Peter* upon his Experience, set himself against them, saying, *Forasmuch then as God gave them the like Gift as he did unto us, who believed on the Lord Jesus Christ, What was I that I could withstand God?* *Acts* xi. 17. Again, *And God which knoweth the Hearts, bare them witnes, giving them the Holy Ghost, even as he did unto us: And put no Difference between us and them, purifying their Hearts by Faith.* Now therefore why tempt ye God, to put a Yoke upon the Neck of the Disciples, which neither our Fathers nor we were able to bear? &c. *Acts* xv. 8, 9, 10. With these Words *Peter* at once overthroweth the whole Law. As if he should say:

We

We will not keep the Law, for we are not able to keep it; but we believe thro' the Grace of our Lord Jesus Chrill to be saved, even as they did. So *Peter* here standeth altogether unto this Argument, that God gave unto the *Gentiles* the self-same Grace that he gave to the *Jews*. As tho' he would say; When I preached to *Cornelius*, I learned by mine own Experience, that the Holy Ghost was given without the Law to the *Gentiles*, by the only hearing of Faith; therefore in no Case are they to be burdened with the Law. To conclude, since it is certain that neither we nor our Fathers were ever able to fulfil the Law, it behoveth you also to reject this Error, that Righteousness and Salvation cometh by the Law: And this the believing *Jews* did by little and little; but the Wicked which by this Preaching were offended, at the length were altogether hardned.

That the Holy Ghost is given by the only hearing of Faith.

*The Commendation of the Book containing  
the Acts of the Apostles.*

SO in the *Acts* ye shall find the Experience, the Preachings, and also the Examples of the Apostles for the Confirmation of this Matter, against this obstinate Opinion touching the Righteousness of the Law. And we ought therefore the more to love, and the more diligently to read this Book, because it containeth most substantial Testimonies, which are able to comfort and confirm us against the *Papists* our *Jews*; whose Abominations and coloured Hypocrites we impugn and condemn by our Doctrine, that we may set forth the Benefits and Glory of Christ. Who, tho' they have no substantial Matter to alledge against us, (whereas the *Jews* might have layed against the Apostles, that they had received the Law and all these Ceremonies from God) yet notwithstanding they are no less obstinate in defending their cursed Traditions and Abominations, then the *Jews* were in maintaining their Law which they had received from God, glorying and bragging that they sit in the Place of Bishops, and that the Authority to govern the Churches, is committed unto them: Wherefore they would bring us into Bondage, and wrest from us this Article, that we are justified, not by Faith formed and adorned with Charity (as they say) but by Faith alone. But we set against them the Book of the *Acts*: Let them read this Book, and consider the Examples contained in it, and they shall find it to be the Sum and the Argument thereof, that we are justified by Faith only in Christ without Works, and that the Holy Ghost is given by the only hearing of Faith at the Preaching of the Gospel, and not at the Preaching of the Law, nor by the Works of the Law.

The *Papists* are our *Jews* which molest us no less then the *Jews* did *Paul*.

The Argument of the Book containing the *Acts* of the Apostles.

Wherefore thus teach we; O Man, altho' thou fast, give Alms, hear thy Parents, obey the Magistrate, &c. yet art thou not justified

thereby. This Voice of the Law, honour thy Parents, or any other else either heard or fulfilled, doth not justify. What then? To hear the Voice of the Spouse, to hear the Word of Faith: This Word being heard, doth justify. Wherefore? Because it bringeth the Holy Ghost which justifieth a Man, and maketh him righteous before God.

Hereby we may see what is the Difference between the Law and the Gospel; The Law never bringeth the Holy Ghost, but only teacheth what we ought to do; therefore it justifieth not: But the Gospel bringeth the Holy Ghost, because it teacheth what we ought to receive. Therefore the Law and the Gospel are two contrary Doctrines. To put Righteousness therefore in the Law, is nothing else but to fight against the Gospel. For *Moses* with his Law is a severe Exactor, requireth of us that we should work, and that we should give; briefly, it requireth and exacteth. Contrariwise the Gospel giveth freely and requireth of us nothing else, but to hold out our Hands, and to take that which is offered. Now to exact and to give, to take and to offer are Things contrary, and cannot stand together; for that which is given, I take; but that which I give, I do not take, but I offer it unto another. Therefore if the Gospel be a Gift, it requireth nothing. Contrariwise, the Law giveth nothing, but it requireth and straitly exacteth of us, yea even impossible Things.

### Of Cornelius in the tenth of the Acts.

**H**ERE our Adversaries set against us the Example of *Cornelius*: *Cornelius* (say they) was (as *Luke* witnesseth) a good Man, just and fearing God, which gave Alms to the People, and prayed to God continually; therefore of Congruence he did merit the Forgiveness of Sins, and the sending of the Holy Ghost. I answer; *Cornelius*, was a Gentile, and this cannot the Adversaries deny: For the Words which *Peter* alledgeth in the 10 Chapter of the *Acts*, do plainly witness the same. Ye know (saith he) how that it is an unlawful Thing for a Man that is a Jew, to keep Company, or come unto one of another Nation: But God hath shewed me, that I should not call any Man common or unclean, *Acts*

*Cornelius* a Gentile is justified by Faith. x. 28. He was therefore a Gentile, and not circumcised, not keeping the Law, yea not once thinking of it, because it pertained nothing unto him; and yet notwithstanding he was justified and received the Holy Ghost. And this Argument (as I said) is handled throughout the whole Book of the *Acts*; to wit, that the Law availeth nothing to Righteousness.

Let this suffice then for the Defence of the Article of Justification, that *Cornelius* was a Gentile, not circumcised, not keeping the Law; therefore he was not justified by the Law, but by the hearing of Faith. God justifieth therefore without the Law, and so consequently the Law availeth nothing to Righteousness.

Righteousness; for otherwise God would have given the Holy Ghost to the *Jews* only, which had the Law and kept it, and not to the *Gentiles* which had not the Law, and much less did accomplish it. But God wrought clean contrary; for the Holy Ghost was given to them that kept not the Law; wherefore Righteousness cometh not by the Law. By this Means the Objection of the Adversaries which do not understand the true Manner of Justification, is answered.

Here again the Adversaries object against us, and say; Be it so that *Cornelius* was a *Gentile*, and did not receive the Holy Ghost by the Law, yet notwithstanding soasmuch as the Text saith plainly, *that he was a just man, fearing God, giving Alms, &c.* it may seem that by these Works he deserved to have the Holy Ghost afterwards given unto him. I answer, that *Cornelius* was a just and a holy Man in the Old Testament, because of his Faith in Christ which was to come, as all the Fathers, Prophets and godly Kings were righteous and received secretly the Holy Ghost thro' Faith in Christ to come. But these Popish Sophisters put no Difference between Faith in Christ to come, and in Christ which is already come. Wherefore if *Cornelius* had died before Christ was revealed, yet had he not been damned, because he had the Faith of the Fathers, which were saved by Faith only in Christ to come, *Acts xv. 11.* He remaineth then always a *Gentile*, uncircumcised and without the Law, and yet notwithstanding he worshipped the self-same God whom the Fathers worshipped by Faith in the *Messias* to come. But now, because the *Messias* was already come, necessary it was that it should be shewed unto him by the Apostle *Peter*, that he was not now to be looked for, but that he was already come.

How the Fathers in the Old Testament were holy, &c.

Faith in Christ to be revealed and now revealed and present.

And this Article concerning Faith in Christ to be revealed, and in Christ now revealed (that I may touch this also by the Way) is very necessary to be known. For seeing that Christ is now revealed, we cannot be saved by Faith in Christ to come, but we must believe that he is already come, hath fulfilled all Things, and abolished the Law. Therefore necessary it was also that *Cornelius* should be brought to another Belief, not that Christ was yet to come, as he did believe before, but that he was already come. So Faith giveth Place to Faith; *From Faith to Faith*, Rom i. 17.

The Popish School-men therefore are deceived, when they say for the Maintenance of their *opus congruum*, or Merit before Grace, that *Cornelius* by the natural and moral Works of Reason, deserved Grace and the sending of the Holy Ghost. For to be a just Man and fearing God, are the Properties, not of a *Gentile*, or of a natural Man, but of a spiritual Man, who hath Faith already. For unless he did believe in God and fear God, he could not hope to obtain any Thing of him by Prayer. The first Commendation therefore that *Luke* giveth unto *Cornelius*, is this, that he is a righteous Man and fearing God; afterwards he com-

Works of Congruence or Merit before Grace.

commendeth

mendeth him for his Works and Alms Deed. This our Adversaries do not consider, but lay hold only upon this Sentence, that he gave Alms unto the Poor; for that seemeth to make for the establishing of their Merit of Congruence or Desert going before Grace. But first the Per-

son or the Tree must be commended, and then the Works and the Fruit. *Cornelius* is a good Tree, for he is righteous and feareth God; therefore he bringeth forth good Fruit, he giveth Alms, he calleth upon God, and these Fruits please God, because of his Faith. Wherefore the Angel commendeth *Cornelius* for his Faith in Christ which was to come, and bringeth him from that Faith,

to another Faith in Christ which was already come, when he saith, *Call for one Simon, whose surname is Peter: He shall tell thee what thou oughtest to do, &c. Acts x. 5, 6.* Likeas then *Cornelius* was without the Law before Christ was revealed, even so after Christ was revealed, he received neither the Law nor Circumcision. And as he kept not the Law before, so did he nor keep it afterwards. This Argument therefore concludeth strongly; *Cornelius* was justified without the Law, therefore the Law justifieth not.

### *Naaman the Syrian.*

**L**ikewise *Naaman the Syrian* was (no doubt) a good and a godly Man, and had a religious and reverent Opinion of God. And altho' he was a *Gentile* and belonged not to the Kingdom of *Moses*, which then flourished; yet notwithstanding his Flesh was cleansed, and the God of *Israel* was revealed unto him, and he received the Holy Ghost. For thus he saith, *Now I know that there is no God in all the Earth, but in Israel, 2 Kings v. 15.* He doth nothing at all, he keepeth not the Law, he is not circumcised, but only he prayeth, that so much of that Earth might be given unto him, as two Mules should be able to carry away. Moreover, it appeareth that Faith was not idle in him. For thus he speaketh to the Prophet *Elisba*; Ver. 17, 18. *Thy Servant will henceforth offer neither Burnt-offerings, nor Sacrifice unto*

*other gods, but unto the Lord. In this Thing the Lord pardon thy Servant, that when my Master goeth into the House of Rimmon to worship there, and he leaneth on my Hand, and I bow myself in the House of Rimmon: When I bow down myself in the House of Rimmon, the Lord + pardon thy Servant in this Thing. And he said unto him, Go in Peace.* So was he justified. The Jew hearing this, fretteth for Anger, and saith, What? Should the *Gentile* be justified without the keeping of the Law? Should he be compared with us which are circumcised?

† He seeleth his Conscience wounded in being present at idol Service, and therefore desireth God to forgive him; lest others by his Example might fall to Idolatry.

The *Gentiles* justified without the Law, even when the Law and Policy of *Moses* was yet in Force.

Therefore God, long before, when the Kingdom of *Moses* was yet standing and flourishing, did shew that he justifieth Men without the Law, as indeed he justified many Kings in *Egypt* and in *Babylon* & also *Job* and many other Nations of the East. Moreover, *Nineveh* a great City was justified, and received the Promise of God, that it should not be destroyed. By what Means? Not because it heard and fulfilled the Law, but because it believed the Word of God which the Prophet *Jonah* preached. For so saith the Prophet; *So the People of Nineveh believed God, and proclaimed a Fast, and put on Sackcloth*, *Jonah* iii. 5. That is to say, they repented. Our Adversaries do craftily pass over this Word *Believed*, and yet the Effect of all together resteth therein. Thou readest not in *Jonah*: And the *Ninevites* received the Law of *Moses*, were circumcised, offered Sacrifice, fulfilled the Works of the Law, but believing the Word, they repented in Sackcloth and Ashes.

This was done before Christ was revealed, when that Faith yet reigned, which believed in Christ to come. If then the *Gentiles* were justified without the Law, and received secretly the Holy Ghost, when the Law was yet in Force, Why should the Law be required as necessary to Righteousness, which by the coming of Christ is now abolished? Wherefore this is a strong Argument, grounded upon the Experience of the *Galatians*: *Received ye the Spirit by the Works of the Law, or by the hearing of Faith?* *Gal.* iii. 2. For they were compelled to grant that they heard nothing of the Holy Ghost, before the Preaching of *Paul*, but when he preached the Gospel, then received they the Holy Ghost.

So we also at this Day, convicted by the Testimony of our own Conscience, are constrained to confess, that the Holy Ghost is not given by the Law, but by the hearing of Faith. For many heretofore in the *Papacy*, have gone about with great Labour and Study, to keep the Law, the Decrees of the Fathers, and the Traditions of the Pope; and some with painful and continual Exercises in fasting and praying, did so weary and weaken their bodies, that afterwards they were able to do nothing; whereby notwithstanding they gained nothing else, but that they miserably afflicted and tormented themselves. They could never attain to a quiet Conscience, and Peace in Christ, but continually doubted of the Good-will of God towards them. But now, since the Gospel teacheth that the Law and Works do not justify, but Faith alone in Jesus Christ, hereupon followeth a most certain Knowledge and Understanding, a most joyful Conscience, and a true Judgment of every Kind of Life, and of all Things else whatsoever. The believing Man may now fully judge, that the *Papacy* with all the religious Orders and Traditions thereof is wicked; which before he could not do. For so great Blind-

The Conscience witnesseth that the Holy Ghost is not given by the Law, but by the hearing of Faith.

The Blind-  
ness of the  
Pope's King-  
dom.

ness reigned in the World, that we thought those Works which Men had devised, not only without the Will of God, but also contrary to his Commandment, to be much better than those, which the Magistrate, the House-holder, the Child, the Servant did at the Commandment of God.

Indeed we ought to have learned by the Word of God, that the religious Orders of the *Papists* ( which only they call holy ) are wicked, since there is no Commandment of God, or Testimony in the holy Scrip-  
tures as touching the same. Contrariwise, other Orders of

The Orders  
and Kinds of  
Life ap-  
pointed of  
God.

Life which have the Word and Commandment of God, are holy and ordained of God. But we were then wrapped in such horrible Darknes, that we could not truly judge of any Thing. But now, since the clear Light of the Gospel doth appear, all Kinds of Life in the World are under our Judgment. We may boldly pronounce out of the Word of God, that the Condition of Servants, which before the World is most vile, is far more acceptable unto God, then all the religious Orders of the *Papists*. For by his Word he commendeth, approveth and adorneth the State of Servants, and so doth he not the Orders of *Monks*,

The Condi-  
tion of Ser-  
vants allow-  
ed before  
God.

*Friers* and such others. Therefore this Argument grounded upon Experience, ought to prevail with us also. For altho' many Men in the *Papacy* wrought many and great Works, yet could they never be certain of the Will of God towards them, but they were always in doubt; they could never attain to the Knowledge of God, of themselves, of their Calling; they never felt the Testimony of the Spirit in their Hearts: But now that the Truth of the Gospel appeareth, they are fully instructed by the only hearing of Faith, in all these Things.

The Cer-  
tainty of true  
Believers.

It is not without Cause that I do so largely intreat of these Things.

By what  
Means the  
Holy Ghost  
is given un-  
to us.

For it seemeth to reason but a small Matter, that the Holy Ghost is received by the only hearing of Faith, and that there is nothing else required of us, but that we setting apart all our Works, should give ourselves only to the hearing of the Gospel. Man's Heart doth not understand nor believe that so great a Treasure, namely, the Holy Ghost, is given by the only hearing of Faith; but reason-

eth after this Manner; Forgiveness of Sins, Deliverance from Death, the giving of the Holy Ghost, of Righteousness and everlasting Life, are great Things, therefore if thou wilt obtain these inestimable Benefits, thou must perform some other great and weighty Matter. This Opinion

The Dispu-  
tation of  
Man's Rea-  
son.

the Devil doth well like and approve, and also increased the same in the Heart. Therefore when Reason beareth this; thou canst do nothing for the obtaining of the Forgiveness of Sins, but must only hear the Word of God, by and by it crieth out, and saith; Ey, thou makest too small Account of the Remission of Sins, &c. So the in-

estimable Greatness of the Gifts, is the Cause that we cannot believe it;

and because this incomparable Treasure is freely offered, therefore it is despised.

But this we must needs learn, that Forgiveness of Sins, Christ, and the Holy Ghost are freely given unto us at the only hearing of Faith preached, notwithstanding, our horrible Sins and Demerits. And we must not weigh, how great the Thing is that is given, and how unworthy we are of it (for so should the Greatness of the Gift, and our Unworthiness terrify us;) but we must think that it pleaseth God freely to give unto us this unspeakable Gift, unto us (I say) which are unworthy, as Christ in *Luke* saith, *Fear not, little Flock; for it is your Fathers good Pleasure to give unto you: Lo, to give unto you* (saith he) *a Kingdom*, *Luke xii. 32.* To whom? To you unworthy which are his little Flock. If I then be little and the Thing great, (nay rather of all Things the greatest) which God hath given unto me, I must thus think, that he also is great and only great, which giveth it: If he offer it and will give it, I consider not mine own Sin and Unworthiness, but his fatherly Good will towards me, which is the Giver, and I receive the Greatness of the Gift with Joy and Gladness, and am thankful for so inestimable a Gift given freely unto me, to me (I say) unworthy, by the hearing of Faith.

To whom the Kingdom of Heaven is given.

Here again foolish Reason is offended, and reproveth us, saying; Where ye teach Men to do nothing at all for the obtaining of so great and inestimable a Gift, but to hear the Word of God, that seemeth to tend to the great Contempt of Grace, and to make Men secure idle and dissolute, so that they slack their Hands and do no good at all. Therefore it is not good to preach this Doctrine, for it is not true; but Men must be urged to labour and to exercise themselves unto Righteousness, and then shall they obtain this Gift. The self-same Thing the *Pelagians* in Times past objected against the Christians. But hear what *Paul* saith in this Place, *Ye have received the Holy Ghost; not by your own Labour and Travail, nor by the Works of the Law, but by the hearing of Faith.* Briefly, hear what Christ himself saith, and what he answereth to *Martha*, being very careful and hardly bearing, that her Sister *Mary*, sitting at the Feet of Jesus and hearing his Word, should leave her to minister alone. *Martha, Martha,* (saith he) *thou art careful, and troubled about many Things: But one Thing is needful. And Mary hath chosen that good Part, which shall not be taken away from her,* *Luke x. 41, 42.* A Man therefore is made a Christian, not by working, but by hearing: Wherefore he that will exercise himself to Righteousness must first exercise himself in hearing the Gospel. Now, when he hath heard and received the Gospel, let him give thanks to God with a joyful and a glad Heart, and afterwards let him exercise himself in those good Works which are commanded in the Law, so that the Law and Works may follow the hearing

What our Adversaries object against us.

The Objection of the Pelagians against the Christians.

A Man is made a Christian by hearing the Doctrine of Faith.

hearing of Faith. So may he quietly walk in the Light which is Christ, and boldly choose and do Works, not hypocritical, but good Works indeed, such as he knoweth to please God and to be commanded of him, and condemn all those hypocritical Shadows of Free-will Works.

Our Adversaries think that Faith, whereby we receive the Holy Ghost, is but a light Matter; but how high and hard a Matter it is, I myself do find by Experience, and so do all they which with me do earnestly embrace the same: It is soon said that by the only hearing of Faith the Holy Ghost is received; but it is not so easily heard, laid hold on, believed and retained, as it is said. Wherefore if thou hear of me that Christ is that Lamb of God sacrificed for thy Sins, see also that thou hear it effectually. Paul very aptly calleth it *the Hearing*

**The Hearing of Faith.**

*ing of Faith*, and not the Word of Faith, (altho' there be small Difference) that is, such a Word as thou hearing dost believe, so that the Word be not only my Voice,

but may be heard of thee, and may enter into thy Heart, and be believed of thee; then is it truly and indeed the hearing of Faith, thro' the which thou receivest the Holy Ghost; which after thou hast once received, thou shalt also mortify thy Flesh.

The Faithful do find by their own Experience, how gladly they would hold and embrace the Word when they hear it, with a full Faith, and abandon this Opinion of the Law and of their own Righteousness, but they feel in their Flesh a mighty Resistance against the Spirit,

**The striving of the Flesh against the Spirit in the Godly.**

for Reason and the Flesh will needs work together. This Saying, *Ye must be circumcised and keep the Law*, cannot be utterly rooted out of our Minds, but it sticketh fast in the Hearts of all the Faithful. There is in the Faithful therefore a continual Conflict between the hearing of

Faith and the Works of the Law; for the Conscience always murmureth, and thinketh that this is too easy a Way, that by the only hearing of the Word, Righteousness, the Holy Ghost, and Life everlasting is promised unto us. But come once to an earnest Trial thereof, and then tell me how easy a Thing it is

**To hear the Word of Faith.**

to hear the Word of Faith, indeed he which giveth is great: Moreover, he giveth great Things willingly and freely, and upbraideth no Man therewith; but thy Capacity is hard,

and Faith weak, still striving against thee, so that thou art not able to receive this Gift. But let thy Conscience murmur against thee never so much, and let this (*Must*) come never so often into thy Mind, yet stand fast and hold out, until thou overcome this (*Must*.) So as Faith increaseth by little and little, that Opinion of the Righteousness of the Law will diminish. But this cannot be done without great Conflicts.

**Verse 3.** *Are ye so foolish? Having begun in the Spirit, Are ye now made perfect by the Flesh?*

This Argument being concluded, how that the Holy Ghost cometh not by the Works of the Law, but by the Preaching of Faith: He beginneth here to exhort and terrify them from a double Danger or Incom-

commodity. The first is, *Are ye so foolish? Having begun in the Spirit, Are ye now made perfect by the Flesh?* The other followeth, *Have ye suffered so great Things in vain?* As if he said; Ye began in the Spirit, that is, your Religion was excellently well begun: As also a little after, he saith, *Ye ran well,* &c. But what have ye gotten thereby? Forsooth ye will now end in the Flesh.

To begin in the Spirit.

*Paul* setteth here the Spirit against the Flesh: He calleth not the Flesh (as before I have said) fleshly Lusts, beastly Passions, or sensual Appetites; for he intreateth not here of Lust, and such other fleshly Desires, but of Forgiveness of Sins, of justifying the Conscience, of obtaining Righteousness before God, of Deliverance from the Law, Sin and Death; and yet notwithstanding he saith here, that they forsaking the Spirit, do now end in the Flesh. Flesh therefore is here taken for the very Righteousness and Wisdom of the Flesh, and the Judgment of Reason, which seeketh to be justified by the Law. Whatsoever then is most excellent in Man, the same here *Paul* calleth Flesh, as the Wisdom of Reason, and the Righteousness of the Law itself.

What Flesh signifieth in this Place.

And this Place must be well considered, because of the slanderous and cavilling *Papists*, which wrest the same against us, saying that we in Popery began in the Spirit, but now having married Wives, we end in the Flesh. As tho' a single Life, or not to have a Wife, were a spiritual Life; and as tho' it nothing hindred their spiritual Life, if a Man not contented with one Whore, have many. They are mad Men, not understanding what the Spirit, or what the Flesh is: The Spirit is whatsoever is done in us according to the Spirit: The Flesh whatsoever is done in us according to the Flesh without the Spirit. Wherefore all the Duties of a Christian Man, as to love his Wife, to bring up his Children, to govern his Family, and such like (which unto them are worldly and carnal) are the Fruits of the Spirit. These blind Buzzards cannot discern Things, which are the good Creatures of God, from Vices.

The Spirit. The Flesh.

What the *Papists* call worldly and carnal.

Here is also to be noted the Manner of Speech which the Apostle useth, when he saith, *ut carne consummami*, speaking in the passive Voice. As if he said; Ye end, yea rather ye are ended in the Flesh. For the Righteousness of the Law, which *Paul* here calleth the Flesh is so far off from justifying, that they which after the receiving of the Holy Ghost thro' the hearing of Faith, fall back again unto it, are ended in it, that is to say, are utterly destroyed. Therefore whosoever teach that the Law ought to be fulfilled to this End, that Men might be justified thereby, whiles they go about to quiet their Consciences, they hurt them, and whiles they would justify them, they condemn them.

*Paul* hath always a Glance at the false Apostles: For they still urged the Law, saying, Faith only in Christ taketh not away Sin, pacifieth not the Wrath of God, justifieth not; therefore if ye will obtain these Benefits, ye

The Doctrine of the false Apostles.

must

must not only believe in Christ, but therewith ye must also keep the Law, be circumcised, keep the Feasts, Sacrifices, &c. Thus doing ye shall be free from Sin, from the Wrath of God, from everlasting Death. Yea, rather (saith *Paul*) by the self-same Things ye establish Unrighteousness, ye provoke the Wrath of God, ye add Sin to Sin, ye quench the Spirit, ye fall away from Grace, and utterly reject the same, and ye together with your Disciples do end in the Flesh. This is the first Danger, from the which he terrifieth the *Galatians*, lest if they seek to be justified by the Law, they loose their Spirit, and forego their good Beginnings for a wretched End.

Verse 4. *Have ye suffered so many Things in vain?*

Another  
Danger from  
the which  
*Paul* terrifi-  
eth the  
*Galatians*.

The other Danger or Incommodity is this; *Have ye suffered so many Things in vain?* As tho' he would say; Consider, not only how well ye began, and how miserably ye have forsaken your good Beginning and your Course well begun; moreover, that not only ye have lost the first Fruits of the Spirit, being fallen again into the Ministry of Sin and Death, and into a doleful and a miserable Bondage of the Law; but consider this also, that ye have suf-

fered much for the Gospel's Sake, and for the Name of Christ; *to wit*, the spoiling of your Goods, Railings and Reproaches, Dangers both of Body and Lives, &c. All Things were in a happy Course and great Towardness with you. Ye taught purely, ye lived holily, and ye endured many Evils constantly for the Name of Christ. But now all is lost, as well Doctrine as Faith, as well doing as suffering, as well the Spirit as the Fruits thereof.

What In-  
commodi-  
ties the Right-  
eousness of  
the Law, or  
Man's own  
Righteous-  
ness bring-  
eth.

Hereby it appeareth sufficiently what Incommodity the Righteousness of the Law and Man's own Righteousness bringeth; *to wit*, that they which trust in it, do lose at once unspeakable Benefits. Now, what a miserable Thing is it, so suddenly to lose such inestimable Glory and Assurance of Conscience towards God? Also to endure so many great and grievous Afflictions, as Loss of Goods, Wife, Children, Body and Life, and yet notwithstanding to sustain all these Things in vain. And out of these two Places much Matter may be gathered to set forth and amplify at large the goodly Commendation of the Law and

Man's own Righteousness, if a Man would stand upon every Parsel by itself, and declare what Spirit it was wherewith they began; what, how great, and how many the Afflictions were which they endured for Christ's Sake. But not Eloquence can sufficiently set forth these Matters; for they are inestimable Things whereof *Paul* here intreateth; *to wit*, the Glory of God, Victory over the World, the Flesh and the Devil, Righteousness and everlasting Life; and on the other Side, Sin, Desperation, eternal Death and Hell. And yet notwithstanding in a Moment we lose all these incomparable Gifts, and procure unto ourselves these horrible

and

and endless Miseries, and all by false Teachers, when they lead us away from the Truth of the Gospel unto false Doctrine. And this do they, not only very easily, but also under a Shew of great Holiness, bring to pass.

Verse 4. *If it be yet in vain.*

This he addeth as a Correction, whereby he mitigateth the Reprehension that goeth before, which was somewhat sharp. And this he doth as an Apostle, lest he should terrify the *Galatians* too much. Altho' he chide them, yet notwithstanding he always doth it in such Sort, that he poureth in sweet Oyl withal, lest he should drive them to Desperation.

The Office  
of an Apo-  
stle.

He saith therefore, *If it be yet in vain.* As if he would say; Yet I do not take away all Hope from you. But if ye would so end in the Flesh, that is to say, follow the Righteousness of the Law and forsake the Spirit, as ye have begun, then know ye, that all your Glory and Affiance which ye have in God, is in vain, and all your Afflictions are unprofitable. Indeed I must needs speak somewhat roughly unto you in this Matter: I must be fervent in the Defence thereof, and somewhat sharp in chiding of you, especially the Matter being so weighty and constraining me thereunto, lest ye should think it to be but a Trifle to reject the Doctrine of *Paul*, and receive another. Notwithstanding I will not utterly discourage you, so that ye repent and amend. For sickly and scabbed Children may not be cast away, but must be tendred and cherished more diligently then they which are in Health. So that *Paul* here like a cunning Physician, layeth all the Fault in a Manner upon the false Apostles, the Authors and only Cause of this deadly Disease. Contrariwise he handleth the *Galatians* very gently, that by his Mildness he might heal them. We therefore by the Example of *Paul*, ought in like Manner to reprehend the Weak, and so to cure their Infirmary, that in the mean Time we leave not off to cherish and comfort them, lest if we handle them too sharply, they fall into Desperation.

To end in  
the Flesh.

Verse 5. *He therefore that minisreth to you the Spirit, and worketh Miracles among you, Doth he it by the Works of the Law, or by the hearing of Faith preached?*

This Argument grounded upon the Experience of the *Galatians*, doth so well like the Apostle, that after he hath reprov'd and terrified them, setting before them a double Danger, he now repeateth the same again, and that with a more large Amplification, saying, *He which minisreth, &c.* That is to say; *Paul* maketh often Rehearsal of the Argument grounded upon Experience,

*Paul* ma-  
keth often  
Rehearsal  
of the Ar-

say ; Ye have not only received the Spirit by the hearing of Faith, but whatsoever ye have either known or done, it came by the hearing of Faith. As tho' he would say ; It was not enough that God gave you once the Spirit ; but the same God also hath enriched you with the Gifts of the Spirit, and increased the same in you, to the end that when ye have once received the Spirit it might always grow and be more and more effectual in you. Hereby it is plain, that the *Galatians* had wrought Miracles, or at the least, had shewed such Fruits of Faith as the true Disciples of the Gospel are wont to bring forth. For the Apostle elsewhere saith, *That the Kingdom of God is not in Word, but in Power*, 1 Cor. iv. 20. Now, this Power is not only to be

The King-  
dom of God  
consisteth  
not in Words  
but in Pow-  
er.

able to speak of the Kingdom of God ; but also in very deed to shew, that God thro' his Spirit is effectual in us. So, before in the second Chapter, he saith of himself ; *He that was effectual in Peter among the Jews, was also effectual in me ; He that was mighty by Peter in the Apostleship over the Circumcision, was also mighty by me to- wards the Gentiles.*

When a Preacher then so preacheth, that the Word is not fruitless, but effectual in the Hearts of Hearers, that is to say, when Faith, Hope, Love and Patience do follow, then God giveth his Spirit and worketh Miracles in the Hearers. In like Manner *Paul* saith here, *That God hath given his Spirit to the Galatians, and hath wrought Miracles among them.* As tho' he would say, God hath not only brought to pass thro' my Preaching, that ye should believe ; but also that ye should live holily, bring forth many Fruits of Faith, and suffer many Afflictions : Also by the same Power of the Holy Ghost, of Adulterers, of wrathful, impatient and covetous Persons, and of very Enemies, ye are become liberal, chaste, gentle, patient and Lovers of your Neighbours. Whereupon afterwards he giveth Testimony of them in the fourth Chapter, that they received him as an Angel of God, yea rather as Christ Jesus, and that they loved him so entirely, that they were ready to have plucked out their own Eyes for him.

Now, to love thy Neighbour so heartily, that thou art ready to bestow thy Money, thy Goods, thine Eyes, and all that thou hast for his Salvation, and moreover to suffer patiently all Adversities and Afflictions, these (no doubt) are the Effects and Fruits of the Spirit, and these (saith he) ye received and enjoyed before these false Teachers came among you ; but ye received them not by the Law, but of God, who so

The Works of the Holy Ghost. Spirit, that the Gospel had a most happy Course amongst you, in teaching, believing, working and suffering. Now, seeing ye know these Things (being convicted even by the Testimony of your own Conscience) How cometh it

to pass that ye shew not the same Fruits that ye did before ? That is, that ye teach not truly, that ye believe not faithfully, that ye live not holily, that ye work not rightly, and that ye suffer not patiently. Finally, Who hath so corrupted you, that ye bear not so loving Affection to- wards

wards me, as ye did before, that ye receive not *Paul* now as an Angel of God, nor as Jesus Christ, that ye will not pluck out your Eyes to give them unto me? How cometh it to pass (I say) that this fervent Zeal of yours waxeth so cold towards me, and that ye now prefer before me, the false Apostles, which do so miserably seduce you?

In like Manner it happeneth unto us at this Day. When we first preached the Gospel, there were very many that favoured our Doctrine, and had a good and reverend Opinion of us, and after the Preaching thereof, followed the Fruits and Effects of Faith. But what ensued? A Sort of Light and brainsick Heads sprung up, and by and by destroyed all that we had in long Time and with much Travail planted before, and also made us so odious unto them which before loved us dearly, and thankfully received our Doctrine, that now they hate nothing more then our Name. But of this Mischief the Devil is the Author, working in his Members contrary Works, which wholly fight against the Works of the Holy Ghost. Therefore saith the Apostle, your Experience (*O ye Galatians*) ought to teach you, that these great and excellent Virtues proceeded not of the Works of the Law; for as ye had them not before the hearing of Faith preached, so have ye them not now, altho' the false Apostles reign in the Midst of you.

The Works  
of the Devil,

We likewise may say at this Day to those which vaunt themselves to be Gospellers, and to be freed from the Tyranny of the Pope; Have ye overcome the Tyranny of the Pope, and obtained Liberty in Christ thro' the *Anabaptists* and such other fantastical Spirits, or thro' us which have preached Faith in Jesus Christ? Here if they will confess the Truth, they must needs say; no doubt by the Preaching of Faith.

And true it is, that at the beginning of our Preaching, the Doctrine of Faith had a most happy Course, and down fell the Pope's Pardons, Purgatory, Vows, Masses, and such like Abominations, which drew with them the Ruin of all Popery. No Man could justly condemn us; for our Doctrine was pure, raising up and comforting many poor Consciences, which had been long oppressed with Mens Traditions under the *Papacy*, which was a plain

What hap-  
py Success  
the Gospel  
had when  
it was first  
preached.

Tyranny, a lacking and crucifying of Consciences. Many therefore gave thanks unto God, that thro' the Gospel (which we first, by the Grace of God then preached) they were so mightily delivered out of those Snares, and this Slaughter-house of Consciences. But when these new found Heads sprang up (who went about by all Means to work our Discredit) then began our Doctrine to be evil thought off, for it was commonly bruted abroad, that the Professors thereof disagreed among themselves. Whereat many being greatly offended, fell quite from the Truth, putting the *Papists* in Comfort, that we together with our Doctrine, should shortly come to nought, and by this Means they could recover their former Dignity and Authority again.

The Pope-  
dom a very  
Slaughter-  
house of  
Consciences.

Wherefore like as the false Apostles vehemently contended that the

*Galatians,*

*Galatians*, now justified by Faith in Christ, ought to be circumcised and keep the Law of *Moses*, if they would be delivered from their Sins, and from the Wrath of God, and obtain the Holy Ghost, and yet notwithstanding by the self-same Means they burdened them the

The *Anabaptists* the Authors of Tumults and Seditions, hindered much the Course of the Gospel.

more with Sins, (for Sin is not taken away by the Law, neither is the Holy Ghost given thro' it, but only it worketh Wrath, and driveth Men into great Terrors :) So at this Day these rash Heads, which ought to provide for the Safety of the Catholick Church, and at once to drive down all Popery, have done no good, but much hurt in the Church ; they have not overthrown the *Papacy*, but have more established it.

The *Anabaptists* Enemies to the Article of Justification.

But if they had (as they began) with a common Consent together with us, taught and diligently urged the Article of Justification, that is to say, that we are justified neither by the Righteousness of the Law, nor by our own Righteousness, but by only Faith in Jesus Christ ; doubtless this one Article by little and little (as it began) had overthrown the whole *Papacy*, with all

her Brotherhoods, Pardons, religious Orders, Reliques, Ceremonies, Invocation of Saints, Purgatory, Masses, Watchings, Vows, and infinite other like Abominations. But they leaving off the Preaching of Faith and true Christian Righteousness, have gone another Way to work, to the great Hinderance both of sound Doctrine, and of the Churches.

**Verse 6.** *Even as Abraham believed God, and it was accounted to him for Righteousness:*

Hitherto *Paul* reasoneth upon the Experience of the *Galatians*, and with this Argument he urgeth them vehemently. Ye (saith he) have believed and believing have done Miracles, and have shewed many notable Signs ; and moreover, ye have suffered many Afflictions, all which Things are the Effects and Operations, not of the Law, but of the Holy Ghost : This the *Galatians* were constrained to confess ; for they could not deny these Things, which were before their Eyes, and manifest to their Senses ; and therefore this Argument grounded upon their own Experience is very strong.

Now, he addeth the Example of *Abraham*, and rehearseth the Testimony of the Scripture. The first is out of *Genesis*, *Abraham believed God*, &c. *Gen.* xv. 6. This Place the Apostle here mightily prosecute, as also he did in his Epistle to the *Romans*, *For if Abraham* (saith he) *were justified by Works, he hath whereof to glory, but not before God*, *Rom.* iv. 2. For before God there is in him

How *Abraham* was justified before God.

nothing but Sin and Wrath. Now, he was justified before God, not because he did work, but because he did believe : For the Scripture saith, *Abraham believed God, and it was counted to him for Righteousness*. This Place doth *Paul* there notably set forth and amplify, as it is most worthy,

worthy, *Abraham* (saith he) being not weak in Faith, he considered not his own Body now dead, when he was about an hundred Years old, neither et the Deadness of *Sarah's* Womb. He staggered not at the Promise of God bro' Unbelief; but was strong in Faith, giving Glory to God: And being fully perswaded, that what he had promised, he was able also to perform.--- Now it was not written for his Sake alone, that it was imputed to him; but for us also, &c. Rom. iv. 19, 20, 21,--23, 24.

Paul by these Words, *Abraham* believed, of Faith in God, maketh the chiefest Worship, the chiefest Duty, the chiefest Obedience, and the chiefest Sacrifice. Let him that is a Rhetorician, amplify this Place, and he shall see that Faith is an almighty Thing, and that the Power thereof is infinite and inestimable: For it giveth Glory unto God, which is the highest Service that can be given unto him. Now, to give Glory unto God, is to believe in him, to count him true, wise, righteous, merciful, almighty; briefly to acknowledge him to be the Author and Giver of all Goodness; this Reason doth not, but Faith. That is it which maketh us divine People, and (as a Man would say) it is the Creator of a certain Divinity, not in the Substance of God, but in us; for without Faith God loseth in us his Glory, Wisdom, Righteousness, Truth and Mercy. To conclude, no Majesty or Divinity remaineth unto God, where Faith is not; and the chiefest Thing that God requireth of Man is, that he give unto him his Glory and his Divinity; that is to say, that he take him not for an Idol, but for God, who regardeth him, heareth him, sheweth Mercy unto him, and helpeth him: This being done, God hath his full and perfect Divinity, that is, he hath whatsoever a faithful Heart can attribute unto him. To be able therefore to give that Glory unto God, it is the Wisdom of Wisdoms, the Righteousness of Righteousnesses, the Religion of Religions, and Sacrifice of Sacrifices. Hereby we may perceive what an high and excellent Righteousness Faith is, and so by the contrary, what an horrible and grievous Sin Infidelity is.

Whosoever then believeth the Word of God, as *Abraham* did, is righteous before God, because he hath Faith, which giveth Glory unto God; that is, he giveth to God that which is due to him. For Faith saith thus; I believe thee (O God) when thou speakest. And what saith God? Impossible Things, Lies, foolish, weak, absurd, abominable, heretical and devilish Things, if ye believe Reason. For what is more absurd, foolish and impossible, then when God saith to *Abraham*, that he should have a Son of the barren and dead Body of his Wife *Sarah*.

So, if we will follow the Judgment of Reason, God setteth forth absurd and impossible Things, when he setteth out unto us the Articles of the Christian Faith. Indeed it seemeth to Reason an absurd and a foolish Thing, that in the Lord's

M

Supper

the Articles of Faith!

The Power of Faith infinite.

To give Glory to God.

Faith giveth Glory to God.

Righteous before God.

What God saith, if ye set Faith aside and hearken unto Reason.

The Judgment of Reason touching

Supper is offered unto us the Body and Blood of Christ, that Baptism is the Laver of the New-birth, and of the renewing of the Holy Ghost, that the Dead shall rise in the last Day, that Christ the Son of God was conceived and carried in the Womb of the Virgin *Mary*, that he was born, that he suffered the most reproachful Death of the Cross, that he was raised up again, that he now sitteth at the Right-hand of God the

The Gospel is the Word of the Cross.

Father, and that he hath all Power both in Heaven and in Earth. For this Cause *Paul* calleth the Gospel of Christ crucified, the Word of the Cross and foolish Preaching, which to the *Jews* was offensive, and to the *Gentiles* foolish Doctrine, 1 *Cor.* i. 18. Wherefore Reason doth not

The chief Worship of God.

understand that to hear the Word of God and to believe it is the chiefest Service that God requireth of us; but it thinketh that those Things which it chooseth and doth of a good Intent (as they call it) and of her own Devotion,

please God.

Therefore when God speaketh, Reason judgeth his Word to be Heresy and the Word of the Devil, for it seemeth unto it, absurd and foolish.

Faith slayeth Reason.

But, Faith killeth Reason, and slayeth that Beast which the whole World and all Creatures cannot kill. So *Abraham* killed it by Faith in the Word of God, whereby Seed

was promised to him of *Sarah*, who was barren and now past Child-bearing. Unto this Word Reason yielded not straightway in *Abraham*, but it fought against Faith, in him, judging it to be an absurd, a foolish and an impossible Thing, that *Sarah*, who was now not only 90

The wrestling of Faith with Reason in *Abraham*.

Years old, but also was barren by Nature, should bring forth a Son. Thus Faith wrestled with Reason in *Abraham*; but herein Faith got the Victory, killed and sacrificed Reason, that most cruel and pestilent Enemy of God. So all the Godly entring with *Abraham* into the Darkness of Faith,

do kill Reason, saying, Reason, thou art foolish, thou dost not favour those Things which belong unto God: Therefore speak not against me, but hold thy Peace; judge not, but hear the Word of God and believe it. So the Godly by Faith kill such a Beast as is greater

The Sacrifice of Christians.

then the whole World, and thereby do offer to God a most acceptable Sacrifice and Service.

Reason God's Enemy.

And in Comparison of this Sacrifice of the Faithful, all the Religions of all Nations, and all the Works of all Monks and Meritmongers, are nothing at all. For by this Sacrifice, first (as I said) they kill Reason, a great and mighty Enemy of God. For Reason despiseth God, denieth his Wisdom, Justice, Power, Truth, Mercy, Majesty and Divinity. Moreover, by the same Sacrifice they yield Glory unto God; that is, they believe him to be just, good, faithful, true, &c. they believe that he can do all

The Commendation of Faith.

Things, that all his Words are holy, true, lively and effective,

&c. which is a most acceptable Obedience unto God. Wherefore these

can be no greater or more holy Religion in the World, nor more acceptable Service unto God, then Faith is.

Contrariwise, The Justiciaries and such as seek Righteousness by their own Works, lacking Faith, do many Things. They fast, they pray, they watch, they lay Crosses upon themselves. But because they think to appease the Wrath of God and deserve Grace by these Things, they give no Glory to God, that is, they do not judge him to be merciful, true, and to keep his Promise, &c. but to be an angry Judge, which must be pacified with Works, and by this Means they disguise God, they make him a Liar in all his Promises, they deny Christ and all his Benefits; to conclude, they thrust God out of his Seat and set themselves in his Place. For they rejecting and despising the Word of God, do choose unto themselves such a Service of God, and such Works as God hath not commanded. They imagine that God hath a Pleasure therein, and they hope to receive a Reward of him for the same. Therefore they kill nor Reason, that mighty Enemy of God, but quicken it; and they take from God his Majesty and his Divinity, and attribute the same unto their own Works. Wherefore only Faith giveth Glory to God as *Paul* witnesseth of *Abraham*, *Abraham* (saith he) *was strong in Faith, giving Glory to God: And being fully perswaded, that what he had promised, he was able also to perform. And therefore it was imputed to him for Righteousness*, Rom. iv. 20, 21, 22.

Christian Righteousness consisteth in Faith of the Heart, and God's Imputation. It is not without Cause that he addeth this Sentence out of the 15 Chapter of *Genesis*, *And it was counted unto him for Righteousness*. For Christian Righteousness consisteth in two Things, that is to say, in Faith of the Heart, and in God's Imputation. Faith is indeed a formal Righteousness, and yet this Righteousness is not enough; for after Faith there remain yet certain Remnants of Sin in our Flesh.

This Sacrifice of Faith began in *Abraham*, but at the last it was finished in his Death. Wherefore the other Part of Righteousness must needs be added also, to finish the same in us, that is to say, God's Imputation: For Faith giveth not enough to God, because it is imperfect, yea rather our Faith is but a little Spark of Faith, which beginneth only to render unto God his true Divinity, we have received the first Fruits of the Spirit, but not yet the tenths. Besides this, Reason is not utterly killed in this Life, which may appear by our Concupiscence, Wrath and Impatience, and other Fruits of the Flesh, and of Infidelity yet remaining in us. Yea the holiest that live, have not yet a full and continual Joy in God, but have their sundry Passions,

sometimes sad, sometimes merry, as the Scriptures witness of the Prophets and Apostles. But such Faults are not laid to their Charge, because of their Faith in Christ, for otherwise no Flesh should be saved: We conclude therefore upon these Words, *It was imputed to him for Righteousness*, that Righteousness indeed beginneth thro' Faith, and by the

The Unfaithful give not Glory to God.

Formal is that which gives Perfection to the Thing whereunto it is joined.

The Remnants of Sin in the Godly.

same we have the first Fruits of the Spirit; but because Faith is weak, it is not made perfect without God's Imputation. Wherefore Faith be-  
 ginneth Righteousness, but Imputation maketh it perfect unto the Day  
 of Christ.

**The Blind-** The Popish *Sophisters* and School-men dispute also of Im-  
**ness of the** putation, when they speak of the good Acceptation of  
**School-men.** the Work; but besides and clean contrary to the Scrip-  
 ture; for they wrest it only to Works. They do not con-  
 sider the Uncleaness and inward Poison lurking in the Heart, as Incre-  
 dularity, doubting, contemning, and hating of God, which most pernicious  
 and perilous Beasts are the Fountain and Cause of all  
 Mischiefs. They consider no more but outward and gross  
 Faults and Unrighteousness, which are little Rivers pro-  
 ceeding and issuing out of those Fountains. Therefore  
 they attribute Acceptations to Works, that is to say, that  
 God doth accept our Works, not of Duty, but of Congru-  
 ence. Contrariwise, we excluding all Works, do go to  
 the very Head of this Beast, which is called Reason, which is  
 the Fountain and Head-spring of all Mischiefs. For Reason  
 seareth not God, it loveth not God, it trusteth not in  
 God, but proudly contemneth him. It is not moved ei-  
 ther with his Threatnings or his Promises. It is not de-  
 lighted with his Words or Works, but it murmureth against him, it is  
 angry with him, judgeth and hateth him, to be short, it is an Enemy  
 to God, not giving him his Glory, *Rom. viii. 7.* This pestilent Beast  
 (Reason I say) being once slain, all outward and gross Vices should be  
 nothing.

**God accept-** Wherefore we must first and before all Things go a-  
**eth our** bout by Faith, to kill Infidelity, the Contempt and Hating  
**Works, say** of God; murmuring against his Judgment, his Wrath, and  
**the Papists,** all his Words, and Works; for then do we kill Reason,  
**of Congru-** which can be killed by none other Means but by Faith,  
**ence, that is,** which in believing God, giveth unto him his Glory, notwithstanding that  
**because it is** he speaketh those Things, which seem both foolish, absurd, and impossi-  
**meet that** ble to Reason; notwithstanding also, that God setteth forth himself o-  
**God should** therwise then Reason is able either to judge or conceive, that is to say,  
**reward thee.** after this Manner: I will account and pronounce thee as righteous, not  
 for the keeping of the Law, nor for thy Works and thy Merits, but for  
 thy Faith in Jesus Christ mine only begotten Son, who was born, suffered,  
 was crucified and died for thy Sins; and that Sin which remaineth in  
 thee, I will not impute unto thee. If Reason then be not killed, and  
 all Kinds of Religion and Service of God under Heaven that are invent-  
 ed by Men to get Righteousness before God, be not condemn'd, the  
 Righteousness of Faith can take no Place.

**Reason must** When Reason heareth this, by and by it is offended; it rageth and  
**be killed by** uttereth all her Malice against God, saying, Are then my good Works  
**Faith.** nothing? Have I then laboured and born the Burden and Heat of the Day  
 in vain? *Matth. xx. 28.* Hereof riseth those Uproars of Nations, of  
 Kings

Kings and Princes, against the Lord and against his Christ, *Psal.* ii. 2. For the World neither will nor can suffer that his Wisdom, Righteousness, Religions and Worshippings should be reprov'd and condemn'd. The Pope with all his popish Rablement, will not seem to err, much less will he suffer himself to be condemn'd.

Wherefore let those which give themselves to the Study of the holy Scripture, learn out of it this Saying; *Abram* believed God, and it was counted to him for Righteousness, to set forth truly and rightly this true Christian Righteousness after this Manner; that it is a Faith and Confidence in the Son of God, or rather a Confidence of the Heart in God thro' Jesus Christ; And let them add this Clause as a Difference: Which Faith and Confidence is accounted Righteousness for Christ's Sake. For these two Things (as I said before) work Christian Righteousness; namely, Faith in the Heart, which is a Gift of God, and assuredly believeth in Christ, and also that God accepteth this imperfect Faith for perfect Righteousness, for Christ's Sake, in whom I have begun to believe. Because of this Faith in Christ, God seeth not my doubting of his Good-will towards me, my Distrust, Heaviness of Spirit, and other Sins which are yet in me. For as long as I live in the Flesh Sin is truly in me. But because I am covered under the Shadow of Christ's Wings, as is the Chicken under the Wing of the Hen, and dwell without all Fear under that most ample and large Heaven of the Forgiveness of Sins, which is spread over me, God covereth and pardoneth the Remnant of Sin in me; that is to say, because of that Faith wherewith I began to lay hold upon Christ, he accepteth my imperfect Righteousness even for perfect Righteousness, and counteth my Sin for no Sin, which notwithstanding is Sin indeed.

So we shroud ourselves under the Covering of Christ's Flesh, who is our cloudy Pillar for the Day, and our Pillar of Fire for the Night, *Exod.* xiii. 21. lest God should see our Sin. And altho' we see it, and for the same do feel the Terrors of Conscience, yet flying unto Christ our Mediator and Reconciler (thro' whom we are made perfect) we are sure and safe: For all Things are in him, so thro' him we have all Things, who also doth supply whatsoever is wanting in us. When we believe this, God winketh at the Sins and the Remnants of Sin yet sticking in our Flesh, and so covereth them, as if they were no Sins. Because (saith he) thou believest in my Son, altho' thou have many Sins, yet notwithstanding they shall be forgiven thee, until thou be clean delivered from them by Death.

Let Christians learn with all Diligence to understand this Article of Christian Righteousness. And to this End let them read *Paul*, and read him again both often and with great Diligence, and let them compare the first with the last; yea let them compare *Paul* wholly and fully with himself, then shall they find it to be true, that Christian Righteousness consisteth in these two Things; namely in Faith which giveth Glory unto God, and in God's Imputation. For

A Definition of the Christian Faith.

*Paul's* Divinity.

yea let them

Christian Righteousness consisteth in two Things.

Faith is weak ( as I have said ) and therefore God's Imputation must needs be joined withal, that is to say, that God will not lay to our Charge the Remnant of Sin, that he will not punish it, nor condemn us for it, but will cover it and will freely forgive it, as tho' it were nothing at all; not for our Sake, neither for our Worthiness and Works, but for Jesus Christ's Sake in whom we believe.

**A Christian**  
is both right-  
eous and a  
Sinner

Thus a Christian Man is both righteous and a Sinner, holy and profane, an Enemy of God and yet a Child of God. These Contraries no *Sophister* will admit, for they know not the true Manner of Justification. And this was the Cause why they constrained Men to work

well so long, until they should feel in themselves no Sin at all. Whereby they gave Occasion to many (which striving with all their Endeavour to be perfectly righteous, could not attain thereunto ) to become stark mad; Yea an infinite Number also of those which were the Authors of this devilish Opinion, at the Hour of Death were driven unto Desperation. Which Thing had happened unto me also, if Christ had not mercifully looked upon me, and delivered me out of this Error.

Contrariwise, we teach and comfort the afflicted Sinner after this Manner; Brother it is not possible for thee to become so right-

**How they**  
that feel the  
heavy Bur-  
den of Sin,  
ought to  
be comfort-  
ed.

eous in this Life, that thou shouldest feel no Sin at all, that the Body should be clear like the Sun, without Spot or Blemish; but thou hast as yet Wrinkles and Spots, and yet art thou holy notwithstanding. But thou wilt say; How can I be holy, when I feel Sin in me? I answer, In that thou dost feel and acknowledge thy Sin, it is a good Token, give Thanks unto God and despair not. It is one Step of Health, when the sick Man doth acknowledge and confess his Infirmity. But how shall I be delivered from Sin? Run to Christ the Physician, which healeth them that are broken in Heart, and saveth Sinners. Fol-

**An Objec-  
tion.**

low not the Judgment of Reason, which telleth thee that he is angry with Sinners; but kill Reason and believe in Christ. If thou believe, thou art righteous, because thou givest Glory unto God, that he is almighty, merciful, true, &c. thou justifiest and praisest God. To be brief, thou tellest unto him his Divinity, and whatsoever else belongeth unto him; and the Sin which remaineth in thee, is not laid to thy Charge, but is pardoned for Christ's Sake in whom thou believest, who is perfectly just; whose Righteousness is thy Righteousness, and thy Sin is his Sin.

**Christians be  
Priests.**

Here we see that every Christian is an high Priest: For first he offereth up and killeth his own Reason, and the Wisdom of the Flesh: Then he giveth Glory to God, that he is righteous, true, patient, pitiful and merciful. And this is that daily Sacrifice of the new Testament, which must be offered Evening and Morning. This Evening-sacrifice is to kill Reason; the Morning-sacrifice is to glorify God. Thus a Christian daily and continually is oc-  
cupied

**The daily  
Sacrifice of  
the new  
Testament.**

cupied in this double Sacrifice and in the Exercise thereof. And no Man is able to set forth sufficiently the Excellency and Dignity of this Christian Sacrifice.

This is therefore a strange and a wonderful Definition of Christian Righteousness, that it is the Imputation of God for Righteousness or unto Righteousness, because of our Faith in Christ, or for Christ's Sake. When the Popish School-men hear this Definition, they laugh at it. For they imagine that Righteousness is a certain Quality poured into the Soul, and afterwards spread into all the Parts of Man. They cannot put away the vain Imaginations of Reason, which teacheth that a right Judgment, and a Good-will, or a good Intent is true Righteousness. This unspeakable Gift therefore excelleth all Reason, that God doth account and acknowledge him for righteous without Works, which embraceth his Son by Faith alone, who was sent into the World, was born, suffered, and was crucified for us.

Christian  
Righteous-  
ness.

What the  
Papists call  
Righteous-  
ness.

This Matter, as touching the Words is easy ( *to wit*, that Righteousness is not essentially in us, as the *Papists* reason out of *Aristotle*, but without us in the Grace of God only and in his Imputation; and that there is no essential Substance of Righteousness in us, besides that weak Faith or first Fruits of Faith, whereby we have begun to apprehend Christ, and yet Sin in the mean Time remaineth verily in us; ) but in very Deed it is no small or light Matter, but weighty and of great Importance. For Christ which was given for us, and whom we apprehend by Faith, hath done no small Thing for us, but ( as *Paul* said before ) *He loved me, and gave himself for me*, Gal. ii. 20. *Being made a Curse for us*, &c. Gal. iii. 13. And this is no vain Speculation, that Christ was delivered for my Sins and was made accursed for me, that I might be delivered from everlasting Death. Therefore to apprehend that \* Son by Faith, and with the Heart to believe in him, given unto us and for us of God, causeth that God doth account that Faith, altho' it be imperfect for perfect Righteousness.

\* For unto us  
a Child is  
born, unto us  
a Son is  
given,  
Isa. ix. 6.

And here we are altogether in another World far from Reason, where we dispute not what we ought to do, or with what Works we may deserve Grace and Forgiveness of Sins; but we are in a Matter of most high and heavenly Divinity, where we do hear this Gospel or glad Tidings, that Christ died for us, and that we believing this, are counted righteous, tho' Sins notwithstanding do remain in us, and that great Sins. So our Saviour Christ also defineth the Righteousness of Faith, out of the 15 Chapter of St. *John's* Gospel; *The Father* ( saith he ) *loveth you*. Wherefore doth he love you? Not because ye were *Pharisees* unreprouable in the Righteousness of the Law, circumcised, doing good Works, Fasting, &c. but because I have chosen you out of the World, and ye have done nothing, but that ye have loved me, and believed that I came out from the Father. This Object ( 1 ) being sent from the Father into the World, pleased you. And because you have

† Christ is called our Object, because the Eye of our Faith is directed unto him.

† Contrary Sayings.

yet the Father loveth me? Here nothing cometh between, but only Christ the Mediator. The Father (saith he) doth not therefore love you, because ye are worthy of Love, but because ye have loved me, and have believed that I came out from him, *John xvi. 17. xvii. 8.*

Thus a Christian Man abideth in true Humility, feeling Sin in him effectually, and confessing himself to be worthy of Wrath and Judgment of God, and everlasting Death for the same, that he may be humbled in this Life; and yet notwithstanding he continueth still in his holy Pride, in the which he turneth unto Christ, and in him he lifteth up himself against this feeling of God's Wrath and Judgment, and believeth that not only the Remnants of Sin are not imputed unto him, but that also he is loved of the Father, not for his own Sake, but for Christ's Sake, whom the Father loveth.

Hereby now we may see, how Faith justifieth without Works, and yet notwithstanding, how Imputation of Righteousness is also necessary. Sins do remain in us, which God utterly hateth. Therefore

Imputation of Righteousness.

it is necessary that we should have Imputation of Righteousness, which we obtain thro' Christ and for Christ's Sake who is given unto us and received of us by Faith. In the mean Time, as long as we live here, we are carried and nourished in the Bosom of the Mercy and Long-sufferance of God, until the Body of Sin be abolished, and we raised up as new Creatures in that great Day; then shall there be new Heavens and a new Earth, in which Righteousness shall dwell: In the mean while under this Heaven Sin and wicked Men do dwell, and the Godly also have Sin dwelling in them. For this Cause *Paul, Rom. vii.* complaineth of Sin which remaineth in the Saints; yet notwithstanding he saith afterwards in the eighth Chapter, *Verse 1. There is therefore now no*

Things which are contrary in themselves, are reconciled in Christ.

*Condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus.* Now, how shall these Things so contrary and repugnant, be reconciled together, that Sin in us is no Sin, that he which is damnable shall not be condemned, that he which is rejected, shall not be rejected, that he which is worthy of the Wrath of God and everlasting Damnation, shall not be punished? The only Reconciler hereof is the Mediator between God and

and Men, even the Man Jesus Christ, 1 Tim. ii. 5. as Paul saith, There is therefore now no Condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, Rom. viii. 1.

Verse 7. Know ye therefore, that they which are of Faith, the same are the Children of Abraham.

This is the general Argument and whole Disputation of Paul against the Jews, that they which believe, are the Children of Abraham, and not they which are born of his Flesh and his Blood, Rom.

ix. 7, 8. This Disputation Paul vehemently prosecuteth in this Place, and in the 4th and 9th Chapters to the Romans. For this was the greatest Confidence and Glory of the Jews, *We are the Seed and Children of Abraham*. He was circumcised and kept the Law; therefore if we will be the true Children of Abraham, we must follow our Father, &c. It was (no doubt) an excellent Glory and Dignity, to be the Seed of Abraham; for no Man could deny but that God spake to the Seed and of the Seed of Abraham; but this Prerogative nothing profited the unbelieving Jews. By Reason whereof Paul, especially in this Place, mightily striveth against this Argument, and wresteth from the Jews this strong Alliance in themselves; and this could he, as the Elect Vessel of Christ, do above all other, Acts ix. 15. For if we at the beginning should have disputed with the Jews without Paul, peradventure we should have prevailed very little against them.

The Disputation of Paul against the Jews.

So then Paul reasoneth against the Jews which stood so proudly in this Opinion, that they were the Children of Abraham, saying, *We are the Seed of Abraham*. Well, what then? Abraham was circumcised and kept the Law, we do the same. All this I grant; But will ye therefore seek to be justified and saved? Nay not so; but let us come to the Patriarch Abraham himself, and let us see by what Means he was justified and saved: Doubtless, not for his excellent Vertues and holy Works; not because he forsook his Country, Kindred and Father's House; not because he was circumcised and observed the Law; not because he was about to offer up, in Sacrifice at the Commandment of God, his Son Isaac, in whom he had the Promise of Posterity; but because he believed, Gen. xii. 1. Gen. xvii. 24. Gen. xxii. 1, 2. Wherefore he was not justified by any other Means than by Faith alone: If ye then will be justified by the Law, much more ought Abraham your Father to be justified by the Law. But Abraham could not otherwise be justified, nor receive Forgiveness of Sins and the Holy Ghost, then by Faith alone. Since this is true by the Testimony of the Scripture, Why stand ye so much upon Circumcision and the Law, contending that ye have Righteousness and Salvation thereby, when as Abraham himself, your Father, your Fountain and Head-spring, of whom ye do so much glory, was justified and saved without these, by Faith alone? What can be said against this Argument?

By what Means Abraham was justified.

*Paul* therefore concludeth with this Sentence; *They which are of Faith are the Children of Abraham*, that corporal Birth or carnal

The carnal begetting doth not make us the Children of *Abraham*. Seed maketh not the Children of *Abraham* before God. As tho' he would say; There is none before God accounted as the Child of this *Abraham* (who is the Servant of God, whom God hath chosen and made righteous by Faith) thro' carnal Generation; but such Children must be given him before God, as he was a Father: But he was a Father of Faith, was justified and pleased God, not because he could beget Children after the Flesh, not because he had Circumcision and the Law, but because he believed in God. He there-

The believing and the begetting *Abraham*. also himself believe, or else he is not a Child of the Elect, the beloved and the justified *Abraham*, but only of the begetting *Abraham*, which is nothing else but a Man conceived, born, and wrapt in Sin, without the Forgiveness of Sins, without Faith, without the Holy Ghost, as another Man is, and therefore condemned. Such also are the Children carnally begotten of him, having nothing in them like unto their Father, but Flesh and Blood, Sin and Death, therefore these are also damned. This glorious boasting then, *We be Abraham's Seed*, John viii. 33, 38. is to no Purpose.

What Manner ones the carnal Children of *Abraham* are. This Argument *Paul* setteth out plainly in the 9th to the *Romans*, by two Examples of the holy Scripture. The first is of *Ishmael* and *Isaac*, which were both the Seed and natural Children of *Abraham*; and yet notwithstanding *Ishmael* (which was begotten of *Abraham*, as *Isaac* was, yea and should also have been the first begotten, if carnal

The first Example of *Ishmael* and *Isaac*. Generation had had any Privilege, or could have made Children to *Abraham*) is shut out, and yet the Scripture saith; *In Isaac shall thy Seed be called*. The second is of *Esau* and *Jacob*, who when they were as yet in their Mother's Womb, and had done neither good nor evil, it was said, *The elder shall serve the younger. Jacob have I loved, and Esau have I hated*. Therefore it is plain, that they which are of

Generation had had any Privilege, or could have made Children to *Abraham*) is shut out, and yet the Scripture saith; *In Isaac shall thy Seed be called*.

The second Example of *Esau* and *Jacob*. The second is of *Esau* and *Jacob*, who when they were as yet in their Mother's Womb, and had done neither good nor evil, it was said, *The elder shall serve the younger. Jacob have I loved, and Esau have I hated*.

Therefore it is plain, that they which are of Faith, are the Children of *Abraham*.

This Word Faith signifieth in the Hebrew Tongue, Truth. But some will here object (as the *Jews* do, and certain cavilling Spirits at this Day) saying that this Word Faith in the Hebrew, signifieth Truth, and therefore we do not rightly apply it: And moreover, that this Place out of *Gen. xv. 5.* speaketh of a corporal Thing, namely, of the Promise of Posterity, and therefore is not well applied of *Paul* to Faith in Christ, but ought simply to be understood of the Faith of *Abraham*, whereby he believed according to the Promise of God, that he should have Seed; and hereby they would prove that the Arguments and Allegations of *Paul* do conclude nothing. In like Manner they may cavil also, that the Place which *Paul* a little after alledgeth out of *Hab. ii. 4.* speaketh of Faith, as touching the

But some will here object (as the *Jews* do, and certain cavilling Spirits at this Day) saying that this Word Faith in the Hebrew, signifieth Truth, and therefore we do not rightly apply it: And moreover, that this Place out of *Gen. xv. 5.* speaketh of a corporal Thing, namely, of the Promise of Posterity, and therefore is not well applied of *Paul* to Faith in Christ, but ought simply to be understood of the Faith of *Abraham*, whereby he believed according to the Promise of God, that he should have Seed; and hereby they would prove that the Arguments and Allegations of *Paul* do conclude nothing. In like Manner they may cavil also, that the Place which *Paul* a little after alledgeth out of *Hab. ii. 4.* speaketh of Faith, as touching the

full accomplishing of the whole Vision, and not of Faith only in Christ, for the which *Paul* alledgeth it. Likewise they may wrest all the *11th Chapter* to the *Hebrews*, which speaketh of Faith and the Examples of Faith. By these Things such vain-glorious and arrogant Spirits do hunt for Praise, and seek to be counted wise and learned, where they least of all deserve it. But because of the Simple and Ignorant, we will briefly answer to their Cavillations.

To the first I answer thus, that Faith is nothing else, but the Truth of the Heart; that is to say, a true and a right Opinion of the Heart as touching God. Now, Faith only thinketh and judgeth rightly of God, and not Reason, and then doth a Man Faith think-  
think rightly of God, when he believeth his Word: But eth rightly  
when he will measure God without the Word, and be- of God.  
lieve him according to the Wisdom of Reason, he hath no  
right Opinion of God in his Heart; and therefore he cannot think or  
judge of him as he should do. As for Example, when a *Monk* imagi-  
neth that his Coul, his shaven Crown, and his Vows do please God, and  
that Grace and everlasting Life is given unto him for the  
same, he hath no true Opinion of God, but false and full Truth and  
of Impiety. Truth therefore is Faith itself, which judg- Faith signify  
eth rightly of God, namely, that God regardeth not our both one  
Works and Righteousness, because we are unclean; but Thing.  
that he will have Mercy upon us, look upon us, accept us, jus-  
tify and save us, if we believe in his Son, whom he hath sent to be a Sacrifice  
for the Sins of the whole World, *1 John ii. 2.* This is a true Opinion of  
God, and in very deed nothing else but Faith itself. I cannot compre-  
hend nor be fully assured by Reason, that I am received into God's Fa-  
vour for Christ's Sake: But I hear this to be pronounced by the Gospel,  
and I lay hold upon it by Faith.

To the second Cavillation, I answer, that *Paul* doth rightly alledge the  
Place of the fifteenth of *Genesis*, applying it to Faith in Christ. For  
with Faith always must be joined a certain Assurance of God's Mercy.  
Now this Assurance comprehendeth a faithful Trust of Remission of Sins  
for Christ's Sake. For it is impossible that thy Conscience should look  
for any Thing at God's Hand, except first it be assured, that God is mer-  
ciful unto thee for Christ's Sake. Therefore all the Promises are to be  
referred to that first Promise concerning Christ; *The Seed of the Woman*  
*shall bruise the Serpents Head*, *Gen. iii. 15.* So did all the Prophets  
both understand it and teach it. By this we may see that  
the Faith of our Fathers in the old Testament, and ours All the Pro-  
now in the new is all one, altho' they differ as touching mises are to  
their outward Object. Which Thing *Peter* witnesseth in be referred  
the *Acts* when he saith; *Which neither our Fathers, nor we,* to that first  
*were able to bear. But we believe that thro' the Grace of Promise.*  
*the Lord Jesus Christ, we shall be saved even as they,* *Acts*  
*xv. 10, 11.* And *Paul* saith, *Our Fathers did all drink of that spiritual Rock*  
*that followed them; and that Rock was Christ.* And Christ himself said;  
*Your Father Abraham rejoiced to see my Day, and he saw it, and was glad,*  
*John*

John viii. 56. Notwithstanding, the Faith of the Fathers was grounded on Christ which was to come, as ours is on Christ which is now come. *Abraham* in his Time was justified by Faith in Christ to come, but if he lived at this Day, he would be justified by Faith in Christ now revealed and present: Like as I have said before of *Cornelius*, who at the first believed in Christ to come, but being instructed by *Peter*, he believed that Christ was already come, *Acts* x. 1, 2, 3. Therefore the Diversity of Times never changeth Faith, nor the Holy Ghost, nor the Gifts thereof.

The Faith  
of the Fa-  
thers and  
ours both  
one.

For there hath been, is, and ever shall be one Mind, one Judgment and Understanding concerning Christ, as well in the ancient Fathers, as in the Faithful, which are at this Day, and shall come hereafter. So we have as well Christ to come and believe in him, as the Fathers in the old Testament had. For we look for him

to come again in the last Day with Glory, to judge both the Quick and the Dead, whom now we believe to be come already for our Salvation. Therefore this Allegation of *Paul* offendeth none but those blind and ignorant Cavillers.

*Paul* therefore (as I have said) rightly alledgeth that Place out of *Genesis*, of Faith in Christ, when he speaketh of the Faith of *Abraham*. For all the Promises past, were contained in Christ to come. Therefore as well *Abraham* and the other Fathers, as also we, are made righteous by Faith in Christ: They by Faith in him then to come, we by Faith in him now present. For we intreat now of the Nature and Manner of Justification, which is all one both in them and in us, whither it be in Christ to be revealed, or in Christ now revealed and present. It is enough therefore that *Paul* sheweth, that the Law justifieth not, but only Faith, whether it be in Christ to come, or in Christ already come.

To some Christ is come, to some he is to come. At this Day also Christ to some is present, to other some he is to come. To all Believers he is present; to the Unbelievers he is not yet come, neither doth he profit them any Thing at all: But if they hear the Gospel, and believe that he is present unto them, he justifieth and saveth them.

Verse 7. *Know ye therefore, that they which are of Faith, the same are the Children of Abraham.*

Who are the  
Children of  
*Abraham*.

*Abraham* a  
Father both  
of the *Jews*  
and the *Genti-*  
*les*.

As if he would say; Ye know by this Example of *Abraham*, and by the plain Testimony of the Scripture, that they are the Children of *Abraham*, which are of Faith, whether they be *Jews* or *Gentiles*, without any respect either unto the Law, or unto Works, or to the carnal Generation of the Fathers. For not by the Law, but by the Righteousness of Faith, the Promise was made unto *Abraham*, that he should be Heir of the World, that is to say, that in his Seed all the Nations of the Earth should be blessed.

fed, and that he should be called the Father of Nations. And lest the *Jews* should falsely interpret this Word *Nations*, applying it unto themselves alone, the Scripture preventeth this, and saith not only, *a Father of Nations*, Gen. xvii. iv. but *a Father of many Nations have I made thee*, Rom. iv. 17. Therefore *Abraham* is not only the Father of the *Jews*, but also of the *Gentiles*.

Hereby we may plainly see that the Children of *Abraham* are not the Children of the Flesh, but the Children of Faith, as *Paul*, Rom. iv. 16, 17. declareth, *Who is the Father of us all. (As it is written, I have made thee a Father of many Nations) even before God whom he did believe*: So that *Paul* maketh two *Abrahams*, a begetting and a believing *Abraham*. *Abraham* hath Children and is a Father of many Nations. Where? Before God, where he believeth; not before the World, where he begetteth.

For in the World he is the Child of *Adam* and a Sinner, or (which is more) he is a Worker of the Righteousness of the Law, living after the Rule of Reason, that is, after the Manner of Men; but this pertaineth nothing to the believing *Abraham*.

This Example therefore of *Abraham* wrappeth in it the holy Scripture itself, which saith that we are counted righteous by Faith. Wherefore this is a strong and mighty Argument two Manner of Ways, both by the Example of *Abraham*, and also by the Authority of the Scripture.

Verse 8. *And the Scripture foreseeing that God would justify the Heathen through Faith,*

These Things pertain to the former Argument. As if he should say; Ye *Jews* do glory in the Law above Measure; ye highly commend *Moses*, because God spake unto him in the Bush, &c. As the *Jews* do proudly brag against us, (as I have myself at sundry Times heard), saying; Ye Christians have Apostles, ye have a Pope and ye have Bishops; but we *Jews* have Patriarchs, Prophets, yea we have God himself, who spake unto us in the Bush, in *Sinai* where he gave unto us the Law, and in the Temple, &c. Such a Glory and such an excellent Testimony alledge ye for yourselves against us, if ye can. To this answereth *Paul* the Apostle of the *Gentiles*; This your proud bragging and boasting is to no Purpose; for the Scripture prevented it, and foresaw long before the Law, that the *Gentiles* should not be justified by the Law, but by the Blessing of *Abraham's* Seed, which was promised unto him (as *Paul* saith afterwards) 430 years before the Law was given. Now, the Law being given so many Years after, could not hinder or abolish this Promise of the Blessing made unto *Abraham*, but it hath continued firm and shall continue for ever. What can the *Jews* answer to this?

The Children of *Abraham* are not of the Flesh but of Faith.

The vain bragging of the *Jews*.

This

An Argument  
grounded upon the Certainty of Time.

This Argument grounded upon the Certainty of Time is very strong. The Promise of Blessing is given unto *Abraham* 430 Years before the People of *Israel* received the Law. For it is said to *Abraham*: Because thou hast believed God and hast given Glory unto him, therefore thou shalt be a Father of many Nations, Gen. xvii. 5.

There *Abraham* by the Promise of God is appointed a Father of many Nations, and the Inheritance of the World for his Posterity and Issue after him, is given unto him before the Law was published. Why do ye brag then, O ye *Galatians*, that obtain Forgiveness of Sins, and are become Children, and do receive the Inheritance thro' the Law, which followed a long Time, that is to say, 430 Years after the Promise.

The Error  
of the false  
Apostles.

Thus the false Apostles did advance the Law and the Glory thereof. But the Promise made unto *Abraham* 430 Years before the Law was given, they neglected and despised, and would in no wise know that *Abraham* (of whom they gloried notwithstanding as the Father of the whole Nation) being yet uncircumcised, and living so many Ages before the Law, was made righteous by no other Means then by Faith only, as the Scripture most plainly witnesseth; *Abraham* believed God, and it was counted to him for Righteousness, Gen. xv. 6. Afterwards, when he was now accounted righteous because of his Faith, the Scripture maketh mention of Circumcision, where it saith; *This is my Covenant which ye shall keep between me and you*, &c. Gen. xvii. 10. With this Argument *Paul* mightily convinceth the false Apostles, and sheweth plainly that *Abraham* was justified by Faith only, both without and before Circumcision, and also 430 Years before the Law. This self-same Argument he handleth in the fourth Chapter to the *Romans*; to wit, that Righteousness was imputed to *Abraham* before Circumcision, and that he was righteous being yet uncircumcised, much more then he was righteous before the Law.

*Abraham*  
was justified  
before Circumcision:  
And 430  
Years before  
the Law.

Therefore (saith *Paul*) the Scripture did well provide against this your glorious bragging of the Righteousness of the Law and Works. When? Before Circumcision and before the Law. For the Law was given 430 Years after the Promise, whereas *Abraham* was not only justified without the Law and before the Law, but was also dead and buried; and his Righteousness without the Law did not only flourish until the Law, but also shall flourish even to the End of the World. If then the Father of the whole *Jewish* Nation was made righteous without the Law and before the Law, much more are the Children made righteous by the same Means that their Father was. Therefore Righteousness cometh by Faith only and not by the Law.

Verse 8. Preached before the Gospel unto *Abraham*, saying, In thee shall all Nations be blessed.

The

The *Jews* do not only lightly pass over, but also do deride and with their wicked Glosses do corrupt these excellent and notable Sentences; *Abraham believed God, &c. I have appointed thee a Father, &c.* and such like, which highly commend Faith and contain Promises of spiritual Things. For they are blind and hard hearted, and therefore they see not that these Places do intreat of Faith towards God, and of Righteousness before God. With like Malice also they handle this notable Place of the spiritual Blessing, *In thee shall all Families of the Earth be blessed*, Gen. xii. 3. Acts iii. 25. For (say they) to bless signifieth nothing else but to praise, to pray for Prosperity, and to be glorious in the Sight of the World. After this Manner the *Jew* (say they) which is born of the Seed of *Abraham*, is blessed; and the Proselite or Stranger which worshippeth the God of the *Jews* and joineth himself unto them, is also blessed. Therefore they think that Blessing is nothing else but Praise and Glory in this World, in that a Man may glory and vaunt that he is of the Stock and Family of *Abraham*. But this is to corrupt and pervert the Sentences of the Scriptures, and not to expound them. By these Words, *Abraham believed*, Paul defineth and setteth before our Eyes a spiritual *Abraham*, faithful, righteous, and having the Promise of God; an *Abraham* (I say) which is not in Error, and in the old Flesh; which is not born of *Adam*, but of the Holy Ghost. And of this *Abraham* renewed by Faith and regenerate by the Holy Ghost, speaketh the Scripture, and pronounceth of him, that he should be a Father of many Nations. Also that all the *Gentiles* should be given unto him for an Inheritance, when it saith, *In thee shall all the Nations of the Earth be blessed*. This, *Paul* vehemently urgeth by the Authority of the Scripture, which saith, Gen. xv. 6. *Abraham believed God, &c.*

The *Jews* corrupt the Sentences of the Scripture.

What the *Jews* call the Blessing.

The Scripture then attributeth no Righteousness to *Abraham*, but in that he believeth, and it speaketh of such an *Abraham*, as he is accounted before God. Such Sentences therefore of the Scripture do set forth unto us a new *Abraham*, which is separate from the carnal Marriage and Bed, and from the carnal Generation, and make him such an one as he is before God, that is to say, believing and justified thro' Faith, to whom now God maketh this Promise because of his Faith; *Thou shalt be a Father of many Nations*. Again, *In thee shall all the Nations of the Earth be blessed*. And this is the Meaning of *Paul*, where he sheweth how the Scripture preventeth the vain Presumption and proud Brags of the *Jews* as touching the Law. For the Inheritance of the *Gentiles* was given unto *Abraham*, not by the Law and Circumcision, but long before the same, by the only Righteousness of Faith.

Therefore, whereas the *Jews* will be counted and called blessed, because they are the Children and Seed of *Abraham*, it is nothing else but a vain-glorious Brag. It is (no doubt) a great Prerogative and Glory before the World, to be born of *Abraham's* Seed, as *Paul* sheweth,

It is a great Glory to be of *Abraham's* Seed.

Rom. ix. but not so before God. Wherefore the *Jews* do wickedly pervert this Place concerning the Blessing, in applying it only to a carnal Blessing, and do great Injuries to the Scripture, which speaketh most manifestly of the spiritual Blessing before God, and neither can nor ought otherwise to be understood. This is then the true Meaning of this Place, *In thee shall be blessed.* In which thee? In thee *Abraham* believing, or in thy Faith, or in Christ (thy Seed) to come, in whom thou believest: All the Nations of the Earth (I say) shall be blessed, that is, all the Nations shall be thy blessed Children, even like as thou art blessed, as it is written, *So shall thy Seed be,* Gen. xv. 5.

*Abraham's* Hereof it followeth that the Blessing and Faith of *Abraham* is the same that ours is; that *Abraham's* Christ is our Faith and ours all one. Christ; that Christ died as well for the Sins of *Abraham*, as for us. *Abraham* which saw my Day and rejoiced, John

viii. 56. Therefore all sound but one and the same Thing. We may not suffer this Word *Blessing* to be corrupted. The

We must mark diligently what is set out to us in the Promises. *Jews* look but thro' a Vail into the Scripture, and therefore they understand not what, or whereof the Promise is which was made to the Fathers; Which we notwithstanding ought to consider above all Things. So shall we see that God speaketh to *Abraham* the Patriarch, not of the Law nor of Things to be done, but of Things to be believed; that is to say, that God speaketh unto him of

Promises which are apprehended by Faith. Now, what doth *Abraham*? He believeth those Promises. And what doth God to that believing *Abraham*? He imputeth Faith unto him for Righteousness, and addeth further many more Promises, as, *I am thy Shield,* Gen. xv. 1. *In thee shall all Families of the Earth be blessed,* Gen. xii. 3. *Thou shalt be a Father of many Nations,* Gen. xvii. 4. *So shall thy Seed be,* Gen. xv. 5. These are invincible Arguments, against the which nothing can be said, if the Places of the holy Scripture be thoroughly considered.

Verse 9. *So then they which be of Faith, are blessed with faithful Abraham.*

All the Weight and Force hereof lieth in these Words, *with faithful Abraham*; for he putteth a plain Difference between *Abraham* and *Abraham*, of one and the self same Person making two. As if he said;

A working and a believing *Abraham*. There is a working, and there is a believing *Abraham*; with the working *Abraham* we have nothing to do; for if he be justified by Works, he hath to rejoice but not with God: Let the *Jews* glory as much as they will, of that begetting *Abraham*, which is a Worker, is circumcised, and keepeth the Law; but we glory of the faithful *Abraham*,

of whom the Scripture saith, that he received the Blessing of Righteousness thro' his Faith, not only for himself, but also for all those which

which believe as he did ; and so the World was promised to *Abraham*, because he believed ; therefore all the World is blessed, that is to say, receiveth Imputation of Righteousness, if it believe as *Abraham* did.

Wherefore the Blessing is nothing else but the Promise of the Gospel : and that all Nations are blessed, is as much as to say, as all Nations shall hear the Blessing, that is, the Promise of God shall be preached and published by the Gospel among all Nations : And out of this Place the Prophets have drawn many Prophecies by a spiritual Understanding : As *Psal. ii. 8. Ask of me, and I shall give thee the Heathen for thine Inheritance, and the uttermost Parts of the Earth for thy Possession.* And again, *Psal. xix. 4. Their Line is gone out thro' all the Earth.*

Briefly, all the Prophecies of the Kingdom of Christ, and of the publishing of the Gospel throughout all the World, have sprung out of this Place : *In thee shall all the Nations of the Earth be blessed.* Wherefore, to say that the Nations are blessed, is nothing else, but that Righteousness is freely given unto them, or that they are counted righteous before God, not by the Law, but by the hearing of Faith ; for *Abraham* was not justified by any other Means then by hearing the Word of Promise, of Blessing, and of Grace. Therefore like as *Abraham* obtained Imputation of Righteousness by the hearing of Faith ; even so did all the *Gentiles* obtain and yet do obtain the same : For the same Word that was first declared unto *Abraham*, was afterward published to all the *Gentiles*.

Hereby then we see that to bless, signifieth nothing else (but as I said before) to preach and teach the Word of the Gospel, to confess Christ, and to spread abroad the Knowledge of him among all the *Gentiles* : And this is the priestly Office and continual Sacrifice of the Church in the New Testament, which distributeth this Blessing by Preaching and by ministering of the Sacraments, by comforting the broken-hearted, by distributing the Word of Grace, which *Abraham* had, and which was also his Blessing, which when he believed, he received the Blessing. So we also believing the same are blessed, and this Blessing is a great Glory, not before the World, but before God : For we have heard that our Sins are forgiven us, and that we are accepted of God, that God is our Father, and that we are his Children, with whom he will not be angry, but will deliver us from Sin, from Death and all Evils, and will give unto us Righteousness, Life and eternal Salvation. Of this Blessing (as I have said) do the Prophets preach in every Place, who did not so coldly consider those Promises made unto the Fathers, as the wicked *Jews* did, and as the Popish School-men and Sectaries do at this Day, but did read them and weigh them with great Diligence, and also drew out of those Promises whatsoever they prophesied concerning Christ or his Kingdom. So the Prophecy of *Hos. xiii. 14. I will redeem them*

The Prophets diligently weighed the Promises made unto the Fathers.

The priestly Office of the Church of Christ.

The Blessing is spiritual, and not corporal, as the *Jews* dreast.

The Diligence of the Prophets.

from Death : O Death, I will be thy Plagues; O Grave, I will be thy Destruction; and such like Places of the other Prophets, did all spring out of these Promises, in the which God promised to the Fathers the bruising of the Serpent's Head, and the Blessing of all Nations, *Gen. iii. 15.*

Moreover, if the Nations be blessed, that is to say, if they be accounted righteous before God, it followeth that they are free from Sin and Death, and are made Partakers of Righteousness, Salvation, and everlasting Life, not for their Works, but for their Faith in Christ. Wherefore that Place of *Gen. xii. 3. In thee shall all Families of the Earth be blessed,* speaketh not of the Blessing of the Mouth, but of such a Blessing as belongeth to the Imputation of Righteousness, which is avail-

The Blessing  
is received  
only by  
Faith.

able before God, and redeemeth from the Curse of Sin, and from all those Evils that do accompany Sin. Now, this Blessing is received only by Faith: For the Text saith plainly, *Abraham believed God, and it was accounted unto him for Righteousness;* wherefore it is a mere spiritual Blessing, and there is no Blessing indeed, but this; which

altho' it be accursed in the World (as indeed it is) yet it is available before God. This Place therefore is of great Force, that they which are of Faith, are become Partakers of this Promise of the Blessing made unto the believing *Abraham*. And by this Means *Paul* preventeth the Cavillation of the *Jews*, which brag of a begetting and working *Abraham*, and just before Men, and not of a believing *Abraham*.

The Pope  
setteth Christ  
forth as an  
Example  
and not as  
a Gift.

Now, like as the *Jews* do glory only of a working *Abraham*, even so the Pope setteth out only a working Christ, or rather an Example of Christ. He that will live godly (saith he) must walk as Christ hath walked, according to his own Saying in *John xiii. 15. For I have given you an Example, that ye should do as I have done to you.* We deny not but that the Faithful ought to follow

the Example of Christ, and to work well; but they say that we are not justified, thereby before God: And *Paul* doth not here reason what we ought to do, but by what Means we are made righteous.

In the Mat-  
ter of Justi-  
fication we  
must consi-  
der the Be-  
nefit, and not  
the Exam-  
ple of Christ.

In this Matter we must set nothing before our Eyes, but Jesus Christ dying for our Sins, and rising again for our Righteousness, and him must we apprehend by Faith as a Gift, not as an Example. This, Reason understandeth not; and therefore as the *Jews* follow a working, and not a believing *Abraham*, even so the *Papists* and all that seek Righteousness by Works, do behold and apprehend, not a justifying, but a working Christ, and by this Means they swerve from Christ, from Righteousness and Salva-

tion: And like as the *Jews* which were saved, ought to follow the believing *Abraham*; so we also, if we will be delivered from our Sins and be saved, must take hold of the justifying and saving Christ, whom *Abraham* himself also by Faith did apprehend, and thro' him was blessed.

It was indeed a great Glory, that *Abraham* received Circumcision at the Commandment of God, that he was endued with excellent Virtues;

that

that he obeyed God in all Things; as it is also a great Praise and Felicity to follow the Example of Christ working, to love thy Neighbour, to do good to them that hurt thee, to pray for thine Enemies, patiently to bear the Ingratitude of those which render evil for good, but all this availeth nothing to Righteousness before God. The excellent Deeds and Virtues of *Abraham* were not the Cause that he was counted righteous before God: So likewise the Imagination and following of the Example of Christ, doth not make us righteous before God. For, to make us righteous before God, there is a far more excellent Price required, which is neither the Righteousness of Man, nor yet of the Law. Here we must have Christ, to bless us and save us, like as *Abraham* also had him for his Blessor and Saviour. How? Not by Works, but by Faith. Wherefore as there is great Difference between the believing and working *Abraham*; so is there great Difference between Christ blessing and redeeming, and Christ working and giving Example. Now, *Paul* speaking here of Christ redeeming and *Abraham* believing, and not of Christ giving Example, or of *Abraham* working. Therefore he addeth purposely, and that with great Vehemency; *They which are of Faith, are blessed with faithful Abraham.*

Wherefore we must separate the believing and the working *Abraham* as far asunder, as there is Distance betwixt Heaven and Earth: A Man believing in Christ is altogether a divine Person, the Child of God, the Inheritor of the World, a Conqueror of Sin, Death, the World and the Devil; therefore he cannot be praised and magnified enough. Let us not suffer this faithful *Abraham* to ly hid in his Grave, as he is hid from the *Jews*, but let us highly extol and magnify him, and let us fill both Heaven and Earth with his Name, so that in respect of this faithful *Abraham*, we see nothing at all in the working *Abraham*. For when we speak of this faithful *Abraham*, we are in Heaven. But afterwards, doing those Things which the working *Abraham* did, which were carnal and earthly, and not divine and heavenly, (but in as much as they were given unto him of God) we are among Men in Earth. The believing *Abraham* therefore filleth both Heaven and Earth. So every Christian thro' his Faith filleth Heaven and Earth, so that besides it, he ought to behold nothing.

Now, by these Words, *shall be blessed*, *Paul* gathereth an Argument of the contrary: For the Scripture is full of Oppositions, as when two contraries are compared together. And it is a Point of cunning to mark well these Oppositions in the Scriptures, and by them to expound the Sentences thereof. As here, this Word (*Blessing*) importeth also the contrary, that is to say, Malediction. For when the Scripture saith, that all Nations which are of Faith, are blessed with faithful *Abraham*, it followeth necessarily, that all, as well *Jews* as *Gentiles*, are accursed with

The faithful *Abraham* must be separate from the working *Abraham*.

One contrary proved by comparing it with his contrary, As all Nations are blessed thro' Faith, therefore without Faith, all are accursed.

without Faith, or without this faithful *Abraham*. For the Promise of Blessing was given to *Abraham*, that in him all Nations should be blessed. There is no Blessing then to be looked for, but only in the Promise made unto *Abraham*, now published by the Gospel throughout the whole World. Therefore, whatsoever is without that Blessing, is accursed. And this *Paul* sheweth plainly when he saith;

**Verse 10.** *For as many as are of the Works of the Law, are under the Curse :*

The Law  
bringeth all  
Men under  
the Curse  
which are  
without  
Faith.

Here ye see that the Curse is as it were a Flood, swallowing up whatsoever is without *Abraham*; that is to say, without Faith, and the Promise of the Blessing of *Abraham*. Now, if the Law itself given by *Moses* at the Commandment of God, maketh them subject to the Curse which are under it, much more shall the Laws and Traditions so do, which are devised by Man. He therefore that will avoid the Curse, must lay hold upon the Promise of

Blessing, or upon the Faith of *Abraham*, or else he shall remain under the Curse. Upon this Place therefore ( *shall be blessed in thee* ) it followeth, that all Nations, whether they were before *Abraham*, in his Time, or after him, are accursed, and shall abide under the Curse for ever, unless they be blessed in the Faith of *Abraham*, unto whom the Promise of the Blessing was given to be published by his Seed, throughout the whole World.

The Righteousness of Faith and civil Righteousness.

To know these Things it is very necessary, for they help greatly to comfort troubled and afflicted Consciences, and moreover they teach us to separate the Righteousness of Faith from the Righteousness of the Flesh, or civil Righteousness. For we must note that *Paul* is here in Hand, not with a Matter of Policy, but with a divine and spiritual Matter, least any mad Brain should cavil, and say, that he curseth and condemneth politick Laws and Magistrates. Here all the *Sophisters*

and Popish School-men are dumb and can say nothing. Wherefore the

Readers must be admonished that in this Place there is nothing handled as touching civil Laws, Manners, or Matters political ( which are the Ordinances of God and good Things, and the Scripture elsewhere approveth and commendeth the same ) but of a spiritual Righteousness, by the which we are justified before God, and are called the Children of God in the Kingdom of Heaven. To be brief,

Civil Laws and Ordinances are good and of God.

there is nothing handled here concerning the bodily Life, but concerning everlasting Life, where no Blessing is to be hoped for, or Righteousness to be sought either thro' the Law, or Traditions, or whatsoever can be named in this Life, besides the Promise of *Abraham's* Blessing. Let civil Laws and Ordinances abide in their Place and Order; let the Magistrate make never so good and excellent Laws; yet notwithstanding

ing they deliver no Man from the Curse of God's Law. The Kingdom of *Babylon* ordained of God, and by him committed unto Kings, had excellent Laws, and all Nations were commanded to obey them; notwithstanding this Obedience of the Laws did not save it from the Curse of the Law of God. In like Manner we obey the Laws of Princes and Magistrates, but we are not therefore righteous before God; for here we are in another Matter.

It is not without Cause that I do so diligently teach and repeat this Distinction; for the Knowledge thereof is very necessary. Albeit there are few that mark it or understand it indeed. Again, the confounding and mingling together of the heavenly and civil Righteousness, is very easy. In the civil Righteousness we must have regard to Law and Works; but in the spiritual, divine and heavenly Righteousness, we must utterly reject all Laws and Works, and set the only Promise and Blessing before our Eyes, which layeth before us Christ the Giver of this Blessing and Grace, and our only Saviour. So that this spiritual Righteousness, secluding the Law and all Works, looketh only unto the Grace and Blessing which is given by Christ, as it was promised to *Abraham*, and of him believed.

The Righteousness of Faith and civil Righteousness are easily confounded.

Hereby we may plainly see, that this Argument is invincible. For if we must hope to receive the Blessing by Christ alone, then it must needs follow on the contrary, that it is not received by the Law. For the Blessing was given to faithful *Abraham* before the Law and without the Law. Now, like as *Abraham* believed in Christ which was to come, the Giver of the Blessing; so and by the same Faith, we believe in Christ which is come and present, and so are we now justified by Faith, as *Abraham* was then justified by Faith. They therefore which are under the Law, are not blessed, but remain under the Curse.

The Blessing must be received by Faith, and not by the Law.

This the Pope and his proud Prelates do not believe, nor can believe, neither can they abide this Doctrine. Yet must we not hold our Peace, but must confess the Truth and say, that the *Papacy* is accursed, yea all the Laws and civil Ordinances of the Emperor are accursed; for according to *Paul*, whatsoever is without the Promise and Faith of *Abraham*, is accursed. When our Adversaries hear this, by and by they pervert and slander our Words, as tho' we taught that the Magistrates should not be honoured, but that we raise up Seditions against the Emperor, that we condemn all Laws, that we overthrow and destroy Common-weals, &c. But they do us great wrong. For we put a great Difference between the corporal and the spiritual Blessing, and we say that the Emperor is blessed with a corporal Blessing. For, to have a Kingdom, Laws and civil Ordinances, to have a Wife, Children, House and Lands, is a Blessing. For all these Things are the good Creatures and Gifts of God. But we are not delivered from

How the Adversaries pervert, and slander our Words.

The corporal Blessing delivereth us not from Sins.

the everlasting Curse by this corporal Blessing, which is but temporal and must have an End. Therefore we condemn not Laws, neither do we stir up Sedition against the Emperor; but we teach that he must be obeyed, that he must be feared, revered and honoured, but yet civilly. But when we speak of the Blessing after the Man-

ner of Divines, then we say boldly with *Paul*, that all Things which are without the Faith and Promise of *Abraham*, are accursed and abide under that everlasting Curse of God. For there we must look for another Life after this, and another Blessing after this corporal Blessing.

To conclude, we say that all corporal Things are the good Creatures of God. Therefore (as I have said) to have Wife, Children, Goods, to have politick Laws and Ordinances, are the good Blessings of God in their Place; that is to say, they are temporal Blessings belonging to this Life. But these Blessings the Justiciaries and Law-

workers of all Ages, as the *Jews*, *Papists*, *Sectaries*, and such like, do confound and mingle together. For they put no Difference between corporal and spiritual Things. Therefore they say, we have a Law, and this Law is good, holy and righteous; therefore we are justified thro' it. Who denieth but that the Law is good,

The Law of Sin, Wrath and Death. holy and righteous? But yet it is also the Law of Malediction, of Sin, of Wrath, and of Death. Wherefore we make here a Distinction between the corporal and spiritual Blessing, and say, that God hath a double Blessing;

one corporal for this Life, and another spiritual for everlasting Life.

Corporal Blessings are to be separate from Spiritual Blessings. Therefore to have Riches, Children, and such like, we say it is a Blessing, but in his Degree, that is to say, in this Life present. But as touching Life everlasting, it is not enough to have corporal Blessings; for the very wicked do therein abound most of all. It is not sufficient that we have civil Righteousness or the Righteousness of the Law; for therein also the wicked do specially flourish. These Things God distributeth in the World freely, and bestow-

God bestoweth his Gifts both upon the good and evil. eth them both upon the good and bad, like as he suffereth the Sun to rise both upon the good and the evil, and sendeth Rain upon the righteous and unrighteous; for he is liberal unto all. And to him it is a small Matter to put all Creatures under the Feet of the wicked, *For the Creature was made subject to Vanity, not willingly*, Rom. viii.

20. They therefore which have but only these corporal Blessings, are not the Children of God, blessed before God spiritually, as was *Abraham*; but they are under the Curse, as *Paul* here saith; *Whoever is under the Works of the Law, is under the Curse*.

*Paul* might have said by a general Proposition; whatsoever is without Faith, is under the Curse. He saith not so, but he taketh that which besides Faith is the best, the greatest and most excellent among all corporal Blessings of the World; *to wit*, the Law of God. The Law (saith

(saith he) indeed is holy and given of God : Notwithstanding it doth nothing else but make all Men subject to the Curse, and keep them under the same. Now, if the Law of God do bring Men under the Curse, much more may the same be said of inferior Laws and Blessings. And that it may be plainly understood what *Paul* calleth it to be under the Curse, he declareth by this Testimony of the Scripture, saying ;

The Effects  
of the Law,

Verse 10. *For it is written : Cursed is every one that continueth not in all Things which are written in the Book of the Law, to do them.*

*Paul* goeth about to prove by this Testimony taken out of *Deut.* xxvii. 26. that all Men which are under the Law, or under the Works of the Law, are accursed, or under the Curse, that is to say, under Sin, the Wrath of God, and everlasting Death. For he speaketh not (as I have said before) of a corporal, but of a spiritual Curse, which must needs be the Curse of everlasting Death and Hell. And this is a wonderful Manner of proving. For, *Paul* proveth this affirmative Sentence, which he borroweth out of *Moses*; *Whosoever are of the Works of the Law, are under the Curse*; By this negative, *Cursed is every one that continueth not in all Things, &c.* Now, these two Sentences of *Paul* and *Moses* seem clean contrary. *Paul* saith ; whosoever shall do the Works of the Law, are accursed. *Moses* saith ; whosoever shall not do the Works of the Law, are accursed. How shall these two Sayings be reconciled together ? Or else (which is more) How shall the one be proved by the other ? Indeed no Man can well understand this Place, unless he also know and understand the Article of Justification.

*Paul* proveth the affirmative Sentence by the negative.

*Paul* (no doubt) being among the *Galatians*, had before more largely intreated of this Matter ; for else they could not have understood it, seeing he doth here but touch it by the Way. But because they had heard him declare the same unto them before, they being now again put in Mind thereof, do call it to Remembrance. And these two Sentences are not repugnant, but do very well agree. We also do teach in like Manner ; *That the Hearers of the Law are not just before God, but the Doers of the Law shall be justified*, *Rom.* ii. 13. And contrariwise ; *They that are of the Works of the Law, are under the Curse*. For the Article of Justification teacheth, that whatsoever is without the Faith of *Abraham* is accursed : And yet notwithstanding the Righteousness of the Law must be fulfilled in us, *Rom.* viii. 4. To a Man that is ignorant of the Doctrine of Faith, these two Sentences seem to be quite contrary.

First of all therefore, we must mark well whereupon *Paul* intreateth in this Place, whereabout he goeth, and how he looketh into *Moses*. He is here (as before I have often said) in a spiritual Matter, separated from Policy and from all Laws, and he looketh into *Moses* with other Eyes

Sentences in the Scriptures sometimes seem to be contrary.

then the Hypocrites and false Apostles do, and expoundeth the Law spiritually. Wherefore the whole Effect of the Matter consisteth in this Word (to do.) Now, to do the Law, is not only to do it outwardly, but to do it truly and perfectly. There be two Sorts then of Doers of the Law : The first are they which are of the Works

of the Law, against whom *Paul* envyeth throughout all this Epistle. The other Sort are they which are of Faith of whom we will speak hereafter. Now, to be of the Law, or of the Works of the Law, and to be of Faith, are quite contrary, yea even as contrary as God and the Devil, Sin

and Righteousness, Death and Life. For they are of the Law, which would be justified by the Law. They are of Faith, which do assuredly trust that they are justified thro' Mercy alone for Christ's Sake. He which saith that Righteousness is of Faith, curseth and condemneth the Righteousness of Works. Contrariwise, he which saith that Righteousness is of the Law, curseth and condemneth the Righteousness of Faith. Therefore they are altogether contrary the one to the other.

He that considereth this, shall easily understand, that To do the Law, is not to do that which is commanded in the Law in outward Shew only (as the Hypocrites imagine) but in Spirit, that is to say, truly and perfectly.

A Doer of the Law according to the *Papists*. But where shall we find him that will so accomplish the Law ? Let us see him and we will praise him. Here our Adversaries have their Answer ready, saying ; *But the Doers of the Law shall be justified*, Rom. ii. 13. Very well. But let us first define who be these Doers of the Law.

They call him a Doer of the Law, which doth the Works of the Law, and so by those Works \* going before, is made righteous.

\* These be the Works preparatory, as the *Papists* call them, going before Justification, as the efficient Cause thereof. This is not to do the Law according to *Paul* : For (as I have said) to be of the Works of the Law, and to be of Faith, are contrary Things. Therefore to seek to be justified by the Works of the Law, is to deny the Righteousness of Faith. Wherefore these Justiciaries and Law-workers, when they do the Law, even in so doing, deny the Righteousness of Faith, and sin against the *first*, the *second*, and *third* Commandments, yea even against the whole Law. For God commandeth that we should worship him in Faith, and in the Fear of his Name. On the contrary, they make Righteousness of Works, without Faith and against Faith : Therefore in that they do the Law, they do clean contrary to the Law, and sin most deadly. For they deny the Righteousness of God, his Mercy and his Promises ; they deny Christ with all his Benefits, and in their Hearts they stablish, not the Righteousness

The Error and Impiety of the Justiciaries. of the Law (which they understand not, and much less do it ; ) but a mere Fantasie and an Idol of the Law. Therefore we must needs say, that not only in doing of the Law they do it not, but also they sin, and deny

deny the divine Majesty in all his Promises. And to this End the Law was not given.

Wherefore, they, not understanding the Law, abuse the Law, and as Paul said; *They being ignorant of God's Righteousness, and going about to establish their own Righteousness, have not submitted themselves unto the Righteousness of God, Rom. x. 3.* For they are blind, and know not how they ought to judge of Faith and of the Promises, and therefore without all understanding, they rush into the Scripture, taking hold but of one Part thereof; *to wit*, the Law, and this they imagine that they are able to fulfil by Works. But this is a very Dream, a bewitching and Illusion of the Heart; and that Righteousness of the Law, which they think they do fulfil, is nothing else in very deed, but Idolatry and Blasphemy against God. Therefore it cannot be but they must needs abide under the Curse.

It is impossible therefore that we should do the Law in such Sort as they imagine, and much less that we should be justified thereby. This Thing first the Law itself testifieth, which hath a clean contrary Effect: For it increaseth Sin, it worketh Wrath, The Effect it accuseth, it terrifieth and condemneth. How then should of the Law, it justify? Moreover, the Promise also sheweth the very same Thing. For it was said unto Abraham; *In thee shall all Families of the Earth be blessed, Gen. xii. 3.* There is no Blessing therefore but in the Promise of Abraham; and if thou be without that Promise, thou art under the Curse. If thou be under the Curse, thou fulfillest not the Law; because thou art under Sin, the Devil, and everlasting Death; all which do assuredly follow the Curse. To conclude, If Righteousness should come by the Law, then should the Promise of God be in vain, and in vain should he pour out his Blessing in so great Abundance. Therefore when God saw that we could not fulfil the Law, he provided for this long before the Law, and promised the Blessing to Abraham, saying; *In thee shall all the Nations of the Earth be blessed.* And so hath he testified that all the Nations should be blessed, not by the Law, but thro' the Promise made unto Abraham. They therefore that lay hold on the Law, and seek to be justified thereby, despising the Promise are accursed.

Wherefore [to do] is first of all to believe, and so To fulfil the thro' Faith to perform the Law: We must first receive Law. the Holy Ghost, wherewith we being lightned and made new Creatures, begin to do the Law, that is to say, to How the Law is observed. love God and our Neighbour: But the Holy Ghost is not received thro' the Law (for they which are under the Law, as Paul saith, are under the Curse;) but by the hearing of Faith, that is to say, thro' the Promise; we must be blessed only with Abraham in the Promise made unto him, and in his Faith. Therefore before all Things, we must hear and receive the Promise, which setteth out Christ, and offereth him to all Believers; and when they have taken hold upon him by Faith, the Holy Ghost is given unto them for his Sake; then do they love God and their Neighbour; then do they good Works, then do

do they carry the Croſs patiently : This is to do the Law indeed, otherwiſe the Law remaineth always undone. Wherefore, if thou wilt define truly and plainly what it is to do the Law, it is nothing elſe, but to believe in Jeſus Chriſt, and when the Holy Ghoſt is received thro' Faith in Chriſt, to work thoſe Things which are commanded in the Law ; and otherwiſe we are not able to perform the Law. For the Scripture ſaith, that there is no Bleſſing without the Promiſe, no not in the Law. It is impoſſible therefore to accompliſh the Law without the Promiſe.

There is not one therefore to be found in all the World, unto whom this Name and Title, to be called a Doer of the Law, appertaineth without the Promiſe of the Goſpel. Wherefore this Word [Doer of the Law,] is a feigned Term, which no Man underſtandeth unleſs he be without and above the Law in the Bleſſing and Faith of *Abraham*. So that the true Doer of the Law is he, who receiving the Holy Ghoſt thro' Faith in Chriſt, beginneth to love God and to do good unto his Neighbour : So that this Word [to do the Law] muſt comprehend Faith alſo which maketh the Tree, and when the Tree is made, then follow the Fruits, the Tree muſt be firſt, and then the Fruit ; for the Apples make not the Tree, but the Tree maketh the Apples. So Faith firſt maketh the Perſon, which afterward bringeth forth Works.

In Divinity the Doer is made and framed thorough Faith before there be any Deeds.

Therefore to do the Law without Faith, is to make the Apples of Wood, and Earth without the Tree, which is not to make Apples, but mere Fantaſies. Contrariwiſe, if the Tree be made, that is to ſay, the Perſon or Doer which is made thro' Faith in Chriſt, Works will follow : For the Doer muſt needs be before the Things which are done, and not the Things which are done, before the Doer.

The Godly are not made righteous by doing righteous Things, &c.

The Doer then is not ſo called of the Things that are done, but of the Things that are to be done. For Chriſtians are not made righteous in doing righteous Things, but being now made righteous by Faith in Chriſt, they do righteous Things : In poliſtick Matters it cometh ſo to paſs that the Doer or Worker is made of the Things which are wrought, as a Man in playing the Carpenter becometh a Carpenter ; but in divine Matters the Workers are not

made of the Works going before, but the Perſons made and framed already by Faith which is in Chriſt. are now become Doers and Workers. Of ſuch ſpeaketh *Paul*, when he ſaith. *The Doers of the Law ſhall be juſtified*, Rom. ii. 13. that is, ſhall be counted righteous.

The Doctrine of the *Sophiſters* and School-men.

Yea, the very *Sophiſters* and School men are compelled to confeſs, and ſo they teach alſo, that a moral Work outwardly done, if it be not done with a pure Heart, a good Will, and true Intent, it is but Hypocriſy. And hereof cometh the Proverb among the *Germans* ; Such a Cowl covereth many a Knave : For the vileſt and wickedſt Knave in the World may counterfeit the ſame Works that a godly Man worketh by Faith : *Judas* did the ſame Works that the

other

other Apostles did. What Fault was there in the Works of *Judas*, seeing he did the self-same Works that the other Apostles did? Here mark what the Popish Sophister answereth out of his moral Philosophy. Altho' he did the self-same Works (saith he) which the other Apostles did, notwithstanding, because the Person was reprobate, and the Judgment of Reason perverse, therefore his Works were hypocritical and not true, as were the Works of the other Apostles, how like soever they seemed to be in outward Shew. Wherefore they themselves are constrained to grant that in poli-  
*Judas* did the same Works that the other Apostles did.

tick and external Matters, Works do not justify, unless there be joined withal an upright Heart, Will and Judgment. How much more are they compelled to confess the same in spiritual Matters, where, before all Things there must be a Knowledge of God, and Faith which may purify the Heart? They walk therefore in Works and in the Righteousness of the Law, as *Judas* did in the Works of the Apostles, not understanding what they say, or what they affirm. And altho' *Paul* saith plainly every where that the Law justifieth not, but causeth Wrath, uttereth Sin, revealeth the Indignation and Judgment of God, and threatneth everlasting Death; yet notwithstanding reading these Things they see them not, much less do they understand them. Therefore they deserve not to be called Hypocrites, but Vissours and Shadows of disguised Hypocrites, most miserably bewitched, in that they dream they are justified by the Works of the Law. Wherefore (as I have said) this Word [Doer of the Law] as they define it, is an imagined Term, a very Monster, and no where to be found.

In Policy the Work is not judged to be good, except it be done with a good Mind, much more in Divinity.

The Effects of the Law.

Wherefore, when *Paul* proveth this Place, *For as many as are of the Works of the Law, are under the Curse*, by this Sentence of *Moses*; *Cursed is every one that continueth not in all Things which are written in this Book*, Gal. iii. 10. he proveth not one contrary by another, as at the first Sight it may appear, but he proveth it rightly and in due Order. For *Moses* meaneth and teacheth the self-same Thing that *Paul* doth, when he saith, *Cursed is every one that continueth not in all*, &c. But no Man doth them; therefore whosoever

*Paul* doth not prove one contrary by another.

are of the Works of the Law, keep not the Law; if they keep it not, they are under the Curse. But seeing there be two Sorts of Men that are Doers of the Law (as before I have said) that is to say, true Doers and Hypocrites, the true Doers must be separated from the Hypocrites. The true Doers of the Law are they which thro' Faith are the good Tree before the Fruit, Doers and Workers before the Works: Of these speaketh *Moses* also; and except they be such, they are under the Curse. But the Hypocrites are not of this Sort; for they think to obtain Righteousness by Works, and by them to make the Person just and acceptable: For thus they dream, we that are Sinners and unrighteous will be made righteous. How shall that be? By good Works. Therefore

fore they do even like as a foolish Builder, which goeth about of the Roof to make the Foundation, of the Fruits to make the Tree. The Error and Impiety of Hypocrites. For when they seek to be justified by Works, of the Works they would make the Worker, which is directly against *Moses*, which maketh such a Worker subject to the Curse, as well as *Paul* doth. Therefore whiles they go about to do the Law, they not only do it not, but also deny, (as I have said) the first Commandment. the Promises of God, the promised Blessing of *Abraham*, they renounce Faith, and they go about to make themselves blessed by their own Works, that is to say, to justify themselves, to deliver themselves from Sin and Death, to overcome the Devil, and violently to lay hold upon the Kingdom of Heaven; and this is plainly to renounce God, and to set themselves in the Place of God: For all these are the Works of the divine Majesty alone, and not of any Creature either in Heaven or in Earth.

Hereupon *Paul* was able easily to foreshew out of the first Commandment, the Abominations that were to come, which Antichrist should bring into the Church. For all they which teach that any other Worship is necessary to Salvation, then that which God requireth of us by the first Commandment, which is the Fear of God, Faith and the Love of God, are plain Antichrists, and set themselves in the Place of God: That such should come, Christ himself foretold, when he saith, *Many shall come in my Name, saying, I am Christ*, Matth. xxiv, 5. So we also at this Day may boldly and easily pronounce, that whosoever seeketh Righteousness by Works without Faith, denieth God, and maketh himself God: For thus he thinketh; if I do this Work, I shall be righteous, I shall be a Conqueror of Sin, Death, the Devil, the Wrath of God, and of Hell, and shall obtain Life everlasting. And what is this else (I pray you) but to challenge that Work unto himself which doth belong to God alone, and to shew indeed that he himself is God? Therefore it is an easy Matter for us to prophesy, and most certainly to judge of all those which are without Faith, that they are not only Idolaters, but very Infidels which deny God, and set themselves in the Place of God. Upon the same Ground *Peter* also prephesieth when he saith, *There shall be false Teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable Heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them, &c. and make Merchandise of you*, 2 Pet. ii. 1,--3.

And in the old Testament all the Prophecies against Idolatry sprang out of the first Commandment. For all the wicked Kings and Prophets, with all the unfaithful People, did nothing else but that which the Pope and all Hypocrites always do. They, The Idolatry of the Jews. condemning the first Commandment and Worship appointed of God, and despising the Promise of *Abraham's* Seed, even that Seed in whom all Nations should be blessed and sanctified, ordained a wicked Worship clean contrary to the Word of God, and said; With this Worship will we serve God and set out his Praise, which hath brought us out of the Land of *Egypt*. So *Jeroboam* made

two golden Calves and said; *Behold thy gods, O Israel, which brought thee up out of the Land of Egypt,* 1 Kings xii. 28. This he said of the true God which had redeemed *Israel*, and yet both he and all his People were Idolaters: For they worshipped God contrary to the first Commandment. They only regarded the Work; which being done, they counted themselves righteous before God. And what was this else, but to deny God himself, whom they confessed with their Mouths, and said that he had brought them out of the Land of Egypt? Paul speaketh of such Idolaters when he saith; *They profess that they know God; but in Works they deny him,* Tit. i. 16.

Wherefore all Hypocrites and Idolaters go about to do those Works, which properly pertain to the divine Majesty, and belong to Christ only and alone. Indeed they say not in plain Words, I am God, I am Christ, and yet in very deed they proudly challenge unto themselves the Divinity and Office of Christ, and therefore it is as much in Effect as if they said; I am Christ, I am a Saviour, not only of myself, but also of others. This the *Mnks* have not only taught, but also have made the whole World to believe; to wit, that they are able, not only to make themselves righteous thro' their hypocritical Holiness, but also others unto whom they communicate the same; whereas notwithstanding it is the proper and only Office of Christ to justify the Sinner. The Pope in like Manner, by publishing and spreading his Divinity throughout the whole World, hath denied and utterly buried the Office and Divinity of Christ.

It is expedient that these Things should be well taught and well weighed, for thereby we may learn to judge of the whole Christian Doctrine, and the Life of Man; also to confirm Mens Consciences; to understand all Prophecies and all the holy Scriptures, and rightly to judge of all other Things. He that knoweth all these Things rightly, may certainly judge that the Pope is Antichrist, because he teacheth a far other Manner of Worship, then the first Table setteth out. He may perfectly know and understand, what it is to deny God, to deny Christ, and what Christ meaneth when he saith, *Many shall come in my Name, saying, I am Christ,* Matth. xxiv. 5. What it is to be against God, and to be lifted up above all that is called God, or that is worshipped: What it signifieth, that *Antichrist sitteth in the Temple of God, shewing himself as God,* 2 Thess. ii. 4. What it is, to see the *Abomination of Desolation standing in the holy Place,* &c. Matth. xxiv. 15. Mark xiii. 14. Dan. ix. 27.

Now hereof spring all these Mischiefs, that this cursed Hypocrisy will not be made righteous by the divine Blessing, nor created anew of God the Creator. It will in no wise be a patient, or suffer any Thing to be wrought in her, but will needs be altogether an Agent, and work

The two golden Calves of Jeroboam.

Hypocrites go about to do that Thing which belongeth only to Christ.

The Pope challengeth a Divinity or divine Power as well as God himself.

The Use of the Doctrine of Faith.

What a mischievous Thing Hypocrisy is.

those

those Things which she should suffer God to work in her and receive of him. Therefore she maketh herself a Creator and a Justifier thro' her own Works, despising the Blessing promised and given to Abraham and to his believing Children : So that every Hypocrite is both the Matter and the Worker (altho' this be against Philosophy, for one and the self-same Thing, cannot work upon itself :) The Matter, because he is a Sinner ; the Worker, because he putteth on a Cowl, or chooseth some other Work thro' the which he hopeth to deserve Grace, and to save himself and others ; therefore he is both the Creature and the Creator. No Man therefore can express with Words, how execrable and horrible it is, to seek Righteousness in the Law by Works, without the Blessing. For it is *the Abomination standing in the holy Place* which denieth God, and setteth up the Creature in the Place of the Creator.

The true Doers of the Law. The Doers of the Law therefore are not the Hypocrites, observing the Law outwardly ; but the true Believers, who receiving the Holy Ghost, do accomplish the Law, that is to say, they love God and their Neighbour, &c.

So that a true Doer of the Law, is to be understood, not in respect of the Works which he worketh, but in respect of the Person now regenerate by Faith. For according to the Gospel, they that are made righteous do righteous Things, but according to Philosophy it is not so ; but contrariwise, they that do righteous Things are made just and righteous. Therefore we being justified by Faith do good Works, thro' the which (as it is said, 2 Pet. i.) our Calling and Election is confirmed, and from Day to Day is made more sure. But because we have now only the first Fruits of the Spirit, and have not as yet the tenths, and the Remnants of Sin do still remain in us ; therefore we do not the Law perfectly. But this Imperfection is not imputed unto us which do believe in Christ, who was promised to Abraham, and hath blessed us. For we are nourished and tenderly cherished in the mean Season for Christ's Sake, in the Lap of God's Long-sufferance. We are that wounded Man, which fell into the Hands of Thieves, whose Wounds the Samaritan bound up, pouring in Oil and Wine, and afterwards laying him upon his Beast, he brought him into the Inn, and made Provision for him, and departing commended him to the Host, saying, *Take care of him*, Luke x. 35. And thus we in the mean Time are cherished, as it were in an Inn, until the Lord put to his Hand the second Time (as *Isaiab* saith) that he may deliver us, *Isa.* xi. 11.

The Godly do not the Law perfectly. Wherefore the Sentence of *Moses* ; *Cursed is every one that abideth not in all the Things that are written in this Book*, is not contrary to *Paul*, who pronounceth all them to be accursed, which are of the Works of the Law. For *Moses* requireth such a Doer, as may do the Law perfectly. But where shall we find him ? No where. For *David* saith, *Enter not into Judgment with thy Servant : For in thy Sight shall no Man*

What a Doer of the Law *Moses* requireth.

*Man*

*Man living be justified*, Pſal. cxliii. 2. And *Paul* ſaith, *For what I would, that do I not; but what I hate, that do I*, Rom. vii. 15. Wherefore *Moses* together with *Paul* made Doers of the Law, and are not accounted guilty of any Transgreſſion. How ſo? *Fiſt*, By Forgiveness of Sins and Imputation of Righteouſneſs becauſe of our Faith in Chriſt. *Secondly*, By the Gift of God and the Holy Ghoſt, which bringeth forth a new Life and new Motions in us, ſo that we may alſo do the Law effectually. Now, that which is not done, is pardoned for Chriſt's Sake; and moreover, what Sin ſoever is left in us, is not imputed. So *Moses* agreeth with *Paul*, and meaneth the ſelf ſame Thing that he doth, when he ſaith; *Cursed is every one that abideth not*, &c. For he ſaith that they do not the Law, becauſe they would juſtify themſelves by Works, and concludeth with *Paul*, *that they are under the Curſe*. Therefore *Moses* requireth true Doers of the Law, which are of Faith, even as *Paul* condemneth thoſe which are not true Doers of the Law, that is to ſay, which are not of Faith. Herein is no Repugnance, that *Moses* ſpake negatively and *Paul* affirmatively, ſo that you define rightly what is meant by this Word *Do*. So both Sentences are true, to wit, *that all are accursed which abide not in all that is written in this Book*: And, *that all they are accursed, which are of the Works of the Law*.

*An Answer to thoſe Arguments which the Adverſaries alledge againſt the Doctrine and Righteouſneſs of Faith.*

**S**eeing this Place offereth unto us Occaſion, we muſt ſay ſomething as touching the Arguments which our Adverſaries do object againſt the Doctrine of Faith, which is; *That we are juſtified by Faith alone*. There are many Places both in the Old Teſtament and in the New, as concerning Works and Rewards of Works, which our Adverſaries do alledge, and think themſelves able thereby utterly to overthrow the Doctrine of Faith which we teach and maintain. Therefore we muſt be well furniſhed and armed, and that we may be able, not only to inſtruct our Brethren, but alſo to answer the Objections of our Adverſaries.

The School-men and all ſuch as underſtand not the Article of Juſtification, do know no other Righteouſneſs then the civil Righteouſneſs and the Righteouſneſs of the Law, which after a Sort the *Gentiles* alſo do know. Therefore they borrow certain Words out of the Law and moral Philoſophy, as [ to do, to work ] and ſuch like, and they apply the ſame unto ſpiritual Matters; wherein they deal moſt perverſly and wickedly. We muſt put a Difference between Philoſophy, and Divinity. The School-men themſelves grant and teach, that in the order of Nature, being goeth before working, for naturally the Tree is before the Fruit. Again, in Philoſophy they grant, that a Work mo-  
rally

The Righte-  
ouſneſs of the  
Law was alſo  
known to the  
Heathen.

rally wrought, is not good, except there be first a right Judgment of Reason, and a Good will or a good Intent. So then they will have a right Judgment of Reason, and a good Intent to go before the Work, that is to say, they make the Person morally righteous before the Work. Contrariwise in Divinity, and in spiritual Matters, where they ought most of all so to do, such senseless Asses they are, that they pervert and turn all quite contrary, placing the Work before right Judgment of Reason and Intent.

To do naturally, morally, and spiritually.

Wherefore, Doing is one Thing in Nature, another in moral Philosophy, and another in Divinity. In Nature the Tree must be first, and then the Fruit. In moral Philosophy, Doing requireth a good Intent and a sound Judgment of Reason to work well, going before.

And here all the Philosophers are at a Stay, and can go no further. Therefore the Divines say, that moral Philosophy taketh not God for the Object and final Cause. For *Aristotle*, or a *Sadducee*, or a Man of any civil Honesty, calleth this right Reason and a good Intent, if he seek the publick Commodity of the Common-wealth, and the Quietness and Honesty thereof. A Philosopher or Law-worker ascendeth no higher. He thinketh not thro' a right Judgment of Reason, and a good Intent to

A Comparison between the Heathen Philosopher and the Monk, &c.

obtain Remission of Sins and everlasting Life, as the *Sophister* or *Monk* doth. Wherefore the Heathen Philosopher is much better then such an Hypocrite. For he abideth within his Bounds, having only Consideration of the Honesty and Tranquility of the Common-wealth, not mingling heavenly and earthly Things together. Contrariwise, the blind *Sophister* imagineth that God regardeth his good Intent and Works. Therefore he mingleth

earthly and heavenly Things together, and polluteth the Name of God. And this Imagination he learneth out of moral Philosophy, saying that he abuseth it much worse then the Heathen Man doth.

The Popish School-men think a right Judgment of Reason and a good Intent without Faith, to be sufficient to commend the Work.

Wherefore we must ascend up higher in Divinity with this Word Doing, then in natural Things and in Philosophy, so that now it must have a new Signification, and be made altogether new, joined with a right Judgment of Reason, and a Good-will, not morally, but divinely; which is, that I know and believe by the Word of the Gospel, that God hath sent his Son into the World to redeem us from Sin and Death. Here Doing is a new Thing, unknown to Reason, to Philosophers, to Law-workers, and unto all Men; for it is a Wisdom hidden in a Mystery. Therefore in Divinity the Work necessarily requireth Faith going before.

How we must answer our Adversaries, urging these Terms,

When our Adversaries do alledge against us the Sentences of the Scripture touching the Law and Works, when Mention is made of working and doing, thou must answer them, that they are Terms pertaining to Divinity,

and Doing and Working.

and not to natural or moral Things. If they be applied to natural or moral Things, they must be taken in their own Signification. But if they be applied to Matters of Divinity, they must include such a right Judgment, Reason and Good-will, as is incomprehensible to Man's Reason. Wherefore Doing in Divinity must be always understood of a faithful Doing. So that this faithful Doing is altogether as it were a new Kingdom separate from the natural or moral Doing. Therefore, when we that are Divines speak of Doing, we must needs speak of that faithful Doing; for in Divinity we have no other right Judgment of Reason, no Good-will or Intent besides Faith.

This Rule is well observed in the 11th Chapter to the Hebrews. There are recited many and sundry Works of the Saints, out of the holy Scripture; as of *David*, who killed a Lion and a Bear, and slew *Goliath*. There the *Sophister* or School-man, that foolish Ass, looking upon nothing else, but the outward Appearance of the Work. But this Work of *David* must be so looked upon, that first we must consider what Manner of Person *David* was, before he did this Work: Then shall we see that he was such a Person, whose Heart trusted in the Lord God of *Israel*, as the Text plainly witnesseth. *The Lord that delivered me out of the Paw of the Lion, and out of the Paw of the Bear, he will deliver me out of the Hand of this Philistine.* Moreover, *Thou comest to me with a Sword, and with a Spear, and with a Shield; but I come to thee in the Name of the Lord of Hosts, the God of the Armies of Israel, whom thou hast defied. This Day will the Lord deliver thee into mine Hand, and I will smite thee, and take thine Head from thee, &c. Because the Lord saveth not with Sword and Spear: For the Battle is the Lord's, and he will give you into our Hands,* 1 Sam. xvii. 37, 45, 46, 47. You see then that he was a righteous Man, beloved of God, strong and constant in Faith, before he did this Work. This Doing of *David* therefore, is not a natural or moral Doing, but a faithful Doing.

So it is said of *Abel* in the same Epistle, that thro' Faith he offered up a better Sacrifice unto God than *Cain*. If the School-men happen upon this Place, as it is read in Gen. iv. 4. (where it is simply set out, how that both *Cain* and *Abel* offered up their Gifts, and that the Lord had Respect unto *Abel* and his Offerings) by and by they take hold of these Words; *They offered their Oblations unto the Lord: The Lord had Respect to the Offerings of Abel*, and cry out, saying, here ye see that God had Respect to Offerings; therefore Works do justify. So that these filthy wretches do think that Righteousness is but a moral Thing, only beholding the Visor and outward Shew of the Work, and not the Heart of him that doth the Work; whereas notwithstanding even in Philosophy they are constrained, not to look upon the bare Work, but the Good-will of the Worker. But here they stand altogether upon these

To do according to the Scripture what it is.

A Rule to be observed as touching those Places which speak of Works.

The Sacrifice of *Abel* and *Cain*.

Not the Work, but the Heart of the Worker is to be considered.

these Words, *They offered up Gifts; the Lord had Respect unto Abel and to his Offerings*, and see not that the Text saith plainly in *Genesis*, that the Lord had Respect first to the Person of *Abel*, which pleased the Lord because of his Faith, and afterwards to his Offerings.

What Therefore in Divinity we speak of faithful Works, Sacrifices, Oblations and Gifts, that is to say, which are offered up and done in Faith, as the Epistle to the *Hebrews* Scripture declareth, saying; *Thro' Faith Abel offered up a better Sacrifice: Thro' Faith Enoch was taken away: Thro' Faith Abraham obeyed God, &c.*

We have here then a Rule set forth in the eleventh to the *Hebrews*, how we should simply answer to the Arguments objected of the Adversaries as touching the Law and Works, that is to say, this or that Man did this or that Work in Faith; and by this Means thou givest a Solution to all their Arguments, and so stoppest their Mouths, that they can have nothing to reply again.

The Work Hereby it appeareth manifestly that in Divinity and is nothing divine Matters the Work is nothing worth without Faith, worth with- but thou must needs have Faith before thou begin to out Faith. work, For *without Faith it is impossible to please God*, Heb. xi. 6. but he that will come unto God must believe.

Wherefore in the Epistle to the *Hebrews*, it is said, that the Sacrifice of *Abel* was better than the Sacrifice of *Cain*, because he believed; Therefore the Work or the Sacrifice of *Abel* was faithful. Contrariwise in *Cain*, because he was wicked and an Hypocrite, there was no Faith or Trust of God's Grace and Favour, but mere Presumption of his own Righteousness, and therefore his Work, whereby he went about to please God, was hypocritical and unfaithful; wherefore the Adversaries themselves are compelled to grant that in all the Works of the Saints, Faith is presupposed or goeth before, for the which their Works do please God, and are accepted of him. Therefore in Divinity there is a new Doing clean contrary to the moral Doing.

The Scrip- Moreover, we are also wont to distinguish Faith after- ture some- this Manner, that Faith is sometime taken without the time speak- Work, sometime with the Work. For like as an Artificer speaketh diversly of the Matter whereupon he worketh, and likewise a Gardiner of the Tree being barren or fruitful; even so the Holy Ghost speaketh diversly of Faith in the Scripture, sometime of an absolute Faith, sometime of a Compound, or (as a Man would say) an incarnate Faith. Now, an absolute Faith is this, when the Scripture speaketh absolutely of Justification or of the Justified, as is to be seen in the Epistles to the *Romans*, and to the *Galatians*.

But when the Scripture speaketh of Rewards and Works, then it speaketh of the Compound or incarnate Faith. We will rehearse some Examples of this Faith; As, *Faith which worketh by Love*, Gal. v. 6. *Do this, and thou shalt live*, Luke x. 28. *If thou wilt enter into Life, keep the Commandments*, Matth. xix. 17. *He that doth these Things shall live in them*, Rom. x. 5. *Depart from evil, and do good*, Psal. xxxvii. 27.

In these and such like Places (as there are many in the holy Scripture) where Mention is made of Doing, the Scripture always speaketh of faithful Doing. As when it saith; *Do this, and thou shalt live*, it meaneth thus: See first that thou be faithful, that thou have † a right Judgment of Reason and a Good will, that is to say, Faith in Christ. When thou hast this Faith, work on a God's Blessing.

† These Terms the Papists use, and set them in the Place of Faith.

What marvel is it then, if Rewards be promised to this incarnate Faith; that is to say, to the working Faith, as was the Faith of Abel, or to faithful Works? And why should not the

holy Scripture thus speak diversly of Faith, when it speaketh divers Ways of Christ, as he is God and Man; that is to say, sometime of his whole Person, sometime of his two Natures apart, either of his divine or of his human Nature? If it speak of the Natures apart, it speaketh of Christ absolutely; but if it speak of the divine Nature united in one Person to the human Nature, then it speaketh of Christ compound and incarnate. There is a com-

The Scripture sometime speaketh of one Nature in Christ, sometime of both.

mon Rule among the School-men of the Communication of the Properties, when the Properties belonging to the Divinity of Christ, are attributed to the Humanity; which we may see every where in the Scriptures. As in Luke ii. 11. the Angel calleth the Infant born of the Virgin Mary, the Saviour of Men, and the universal Lord both of the Angels and Men. And in Luke i. 31. he calleth him the Son of God. Hereupon I may truly say, that that

A Rule of the Communication of Properties called *Communicatio Idiomatum*.

Infant which lay in the Manger, and in the Lap of the Virgin, created Heaven and Earth, and is Lord of the Angels. Here I speak indeed of a Man; but Man in this Proposition is a new Word, and (as the School-men themselves do grant) hath Relation to the Divinity, that is to say, this God which was made Man, hath created all Things. Creation is attributed only to the Divinity of Christ; for the Humanity doth not create, and yet notwithstanding it is truly said, Man created, because the Divinity, which only createth, is incarnate with the Humanity, and therefore the Humanity, together with the Divinity, is Partaker of the same Properties. Wherefore it is well and godly said; This Man Jesus Christ brought Israel out of Egypt, struck Pharaoh, and wrought all the Wonders from the Beginning of the World.

The Man Christ created all Things.

Therefore when the Scripture saith; *If thou wilt enter into Life, keep the Commandments of God: Do this, and thou shalt live*, &c. First, We must see of what Manner of keeping and doing he speaketh: For in these and such like Places (as I have said) he speaketh of a compound Faith, and not of a naked and simple Faith: And the Meaning of this Place, *Do this, and thou shalt live*, is this; Thou shalt live because of this faithful Doing, or this Doing shall give unto thee Life, because of thy Faith alone. After this Manner Justification is attributed to Faith alone, as Creation is to the Divinity: And yet notwithstanding, as it is

truly said, Jesus the Son of *Mary* created all Things, so also Justification is attributed to the incarnate Faith, or to the faithful Doing. Therefore we must in no wise think with the *Sophisters* and Hypocrites, that Works do absolutely justify, or that Rewards are promised to moral Works, but to faithful Works only.

Let us therefore suffer the Holy Ghost to speak as he doth in the Scriptures, either of naked, simple and absolute Faith, or of compound and incarnate Faith : All Things which are attributed to Works, do properly belong unto Faith. For Works must not be looked upon morally, but faithfully and with a spiritual Eye ; Faith is the Divinity of Works, and is so spread throughout the Works of the Faithful, as is the Divinity throughout the Humanity of Christ. Faith therefore doth all alone in the Works of the Faithful, *Abraham* is called faithful, because Faith is spread throughout the whole Person of *Abraham* ; so that beholding him working, I see nothing of the carnal or of the working *Abraham*, but of the believing *Abraham*.

The Places concerning Works in the Scriptures, must be expounded as the Epistle to the *Hebrews* expoundeth them.

Wherefore when thou readest in the Scriptures, of the Fathers, Prophets, and Kings, how they wrought Righteousness, raised up the Dead, overcame Kingdoms, thou must remember that these and such like Sayings are to be expounded, as the Epistle to the *Hebrews* expoundeth them, that is, *By Faith they wrought Righteousness, by Faith they raised up the Dead, by Faith they subdued Kings and Kingdoms, &c.* Heb. xi. 33, 34, 35. So that Faith incorporateth the Work, and giveth it his Perfection : And this the Adversaries, if they be well in their Wits, cannot deny, neither have they any Thing to say or object against it. Indeed they can cry out that the Scripture

speaketh oftentimes of Doing and Working ; and we always answer them again, that it speaketh also of faithful Doing. For first, Reason must be lightened by Faith, before it can work. Now, when it hath a true Opinion and Knowledge of God, then is the Work incarnate and incorporate into it ; so that whatsoever is attributed to Faith, is afterwards attributed to Works also, but yet because of Faith only and alone.

The Difference between moral Doing, and spiritual Doing.

Wherefore in reading of the Scriptures we must learn to put a Difference between the true and the hypocritical, the moral and spiritual Doing of the Law : So shall we be able to declare the true Meaning of all those Places, which seem to maintain the Righteousness of Works. Now, the true Doing of the Law is a faithful and a spiritual Doing, which he hath not, that seeketh Righteousness by Works :

Therefore every Doer of the Law and every holy moral Worker is accursed ; for he walketh in the Presumption of his own Righteousness against God, whiles he will be justified by Man's Free-will and Reason, and so in Doing of the Law, he doth it not. And this according to *Paul*, is to be under the Works of the Law, that is to say, that Hypocrites do

Hypocrites do many Things, but without Faith.

the

the Law, and yet in doing, they do it not; for they understand this Word Doing, according to the literal Sense of the Law, which in true Christian Divinity is nothing worth. Indeed they work many Things, but in the Presumption of their own Righteousness, and without the Knowledge of God and Faith, as the *Pharisee* did, *Luke xviii. 11.* and as *Paul* did before his Conversion; therefore they are blind, and miserably err, and so remain under the Curse.

Wherefore, again I admonish you, that such Sentences as the Adversaries do alledge out of the Scriptures concerning Works and Rewards, must be spiritually expounded; as if they alledge this Sentence out of *Dan. v. 27. Redeem thy Sins by Alms-deeds*, thou must not here expound these Words morally, but spiritually: So shalt thou see that this Word *Redeem*, signifieth no moral, but a faithful Doing, that is to say, it includeth Faith. For in the Scriptures the Work (as I have said) requireth also a Good-will and right Judgment of Reason to go before, not moral as they would have it, but divine and spiritual, which is Faith. By this Means thou shalt be able to stop the Mouths of these peevish *Sophisters*. For they themselves are compelled to grant (and so teach they also out of *Aristotle*) that every good Work proceedeth out of Man's Choice or Free-will: If this be true in Philosophy, much more must this Good-will and right Judgment of Reason guided by Faith, go before the Work in Divinity and divine Matters. And this do all Words of the Imperative Mood, that is, all such Words as are commanding, signify in the Scriptures, and all such Words also as teach the Law, as the Epistle to the *Hebrews* doth plainly declare, *By Faith Abel offered, &c.*

Now, admit the Case that this Solution is not sufficient (altho' it be indeed most sure and certain;) yet notwithstanding let this be the Argument of all Arguments, and the principal Mirrour of Christians to behold, against all the Tentations and Objections, not only of the Adversaries, but also of the Devil himself, namely, to apprehend and to hold fast the Head, which is Christ. Moreover, admit that the *Sophisters* being more crafty and subtil then I, should so snare and intangle me with their Arguments, which they bring for the Maintenance of Works against Faith, that I should know no Way how to wind myself out, (which notwithstanding it is impossible for them to do) yet will I rather give Reverence and Credit to Christ alone, then be perswaded with all the Places they are able to alledge for the establishing of the Righteousness of Works against the Doctrine of Faith.

Wherefore, they must be simply and plainly answered after this Manner: Here is Christ, there are the Testimonies of the Scripture touching the Law and Works. Now, Christ is the Lord of the Scripture and of all Works: He also is Lord of Heaven, the Earth, the Sabbath, the Temple, Righteousness, Life, Wrath, Sin, Death, and generally of all Things whatsoever. And *Paul* his Apostle sheweth that he was made Sin and became accursed for me, *Gal. iii. 13.* I hear then

A general Answer to all the Arguments of the Adversaries. The Arguments of all Arguments, to hold fast the Head Christ.

that I could by no other Means be delivered from my Sin, my Death, and my Malediction, but by his Death and Blood-shedding. Wherefore I conclude that it behoveth Christ himself to overcome my Sin, Death and Malediction in his own Body, and not the Works of the Law or mine own Works. And hereunto Reason is constrained to yield and say, that Christ is not the Work of the Law, or my Work; that his Blood and Death is not Circumcision, the Observation of the Ceremonies of the Law, and much less a *Monk's Cowl*, a shaven Crown, Abstinence, Vows and such like. Wherefore if he be the Price of my Redemption, if he be made Sin and Malediction that he might justify me and bless me; I care not if thou bring a thousand Places of the Scripture for the Righteousness of Works, against the Righteousness of Faith, and try out never so much, that the Scripture is against me: I have the Author and Lord of the Scripture with me, on whose Side I will rather stand, then believe all the Rabblement of Law-workers and Meritmongers. Albeit it is impossible that the Scripture should be against this Doctrine, unless it be among the senseless and obdurate Hypocrites; but to the Godly and such as have Understanding, it giveth witness for Jesus Christ his Lord. See therefore how thou canst reconcile the Scripture, which thou sayest, is against my Doctrine. As for me, I will stick to the Author and Lord of the Scripture.

Therefore if any Man thinketh himself not well able to reconcile such Places of the Scripture, or answer unto the same sufficiently, and yet notwithstanding is constrained to hear the Objections and Cavillations of the Adversaries, let him answer simply and plainly after this Sort; Thou settest against me the Servant, that is to say, the Scripture and that not wholly, neither yet the principal Part thereof, but only certain Places as touching the Law and Works. But I come with the Lord himself, who is above the Scripture, and is made unto me the Merit and Price of Righteousness and everlasting Life: On him I lay hold, him I stick to, and leave Works unto thee, which notwithstanding thou never

didest. This Solution neither the Devil nor any *Justiciary* can ever wrest from thee or overthrow. Moreover thou art in Safety before God; for thy Heart abideth fixed in the Object, which is called Christ, who was nailed to the Cross and accursed, not for himself, but for us, as the Text saith, *made a Curse for us*. Hold fast this and lay it against all the Sentences of the Law and Works whatsoever, and say, Dost thou hear this Satan? Here he must needs give Place, for he knoweth that Christ is his Lord and Master.

*Heb. i. 4. Verse 11. But that no Man is justified by  
Rom. i. 17. the Law in the Sight of God, it is evident: For, The Just shall live by Faith.*

This is another Argument grounded upon the Testimony of the Prophet

phet *Habakkuk*. And it is a Sentence of great Weight and Authority, which *Paul* setteth against all the Sentences touching the Law and Works. As if he should say : What need we any long Disputation ? Here I bring forth a most evident Testimony of the Prophet, against the which no Man can cavil : *The just Man shall live by Faith*. If he live by Faith, then he liveth not by the Law : For the Law is not of Faith. And here *Paul* excludeth Works and the Law, as Things contrary to Faith.

The *Sophisters* (as they are always ready to corrupt the Scripture) do wrest and pervert this Place after this Manner ; *The just Man doth live by Faith* ; that is to say, by a working Faith, or formed or made perfect with Charity ; but if it be not formed with Charity, then doth it not justify. This Gloss they themselves have forged, and by the same they do Injury to the Words of the Prophet. If they did call this formed or furnished Faith, the true Faith which the Scripture teacheth, this their Gloss should not offend me, for then Faith should not be separated from Charity, but from the vain Opinion of Faith ; As we also put a Difference between a counterfeit Faith and a true Faith. The

The Difference between a true and a false Faith.

counterfeit Faith is that which heareth of God, of Christ, and of all the Mysteries of his Incarnation and our Redemption ; which also apprehendeth and beareth away those Things which it heareth, yea and can talk goodly thereof, and yet there remaineth nothing else in the Heart, but a naked Opinion and a Sound of the Gospel : For it neither reneweth nor changeth the Heart ; it maketh not a new Man, but leaveth him in the Vanity of his former Opinion and Conversation ; and this is a very pernicious Faith. The moral Philosopher is much better then the Hypocrite having such a Faith.

Wherefore, if they would make a Distinction between Faith formed (and take it as the Scripture taketh it) and the false or counterfeit Faith, their Distinction should nothing offend me. But they speak of Faith formed and made perfect with Charity, and make a double Faith, that is to say, formed and unformed. This pestilent and devilish Gloss I utterly detest. Altho' (say they) we have Faith infused, called (*Fides infusa*) which is the Gift of the Holy Ghost, and also Faith gotten by our own Industry, called (*Fides acquisita*) yet both of them lack their Form and Perfection, which is Charity, and are formed with Charity. This is to prefer Charity before Faith, and to attribute Righteousness, not to Faith, but to Charity. Wherefore when they do not attribute Righteousness to Faith, but only in respect of Charity, they attribute to Faith nothing at all.

Of this Faith infused, and what it is, read more, Page 112. Line 21.

Moreover, these Perversers of the Gospel of Christ do teach that even that Faith which they call Faith infused, and not received by hearing, nor gotten by any working, but created in Man by the Holy Ghost, may stand with deadly Sin, and that the worse Men may have this Faith. Therefore, say they, if it be alone, it is idle and utterly unprofitable. Thus they take from Faith her Office, and give it unto Charity ; so that Faith is nothing, except Charity which they call the Form and Perfection

tion thereof, be joined withal. This is a devilish and a blasphemous Kind of Doctrine, which utterly defaceth and overthroweth the Doctrine of Faith, and carrieth a Man clean from Christ the Mediator, and from Faith, which is the Hand and only Mean whereby we apprehend him. For if Charity be the Form and Perfection of Faith (as they dream) then am I by and by constrained to say, that Charity is the principal Part of Christian Religion, and so I lose Christ, his Blood, and all his Benefits, and now I rest altogether in a moral doing, even as the Pope, the heathen Philosopher, and the Turk doth.

But the Holy Ghost which giveth to all Men both Mouth and Tongue, knoweth how to speak. He could have said, (as the *Sophisters* do wickedly imagine;) The righteous Man shall live by Faith, formed and beautified or made perfect by Charity. But this he omitteth of Purpose, and saith plainly; *The righteous Man liveth by Faith.* Let these doltish *Sophisters* go therefore, with this their wicked and pestilent Gloss. We will still hold and extol this Faith, which God himself hath called Faith, that is to say, a true and a certain Faith, which doubteth not of God, nor of his Promise, nor of the Forgiveness of Sins thro' Christ, that we may dwell sure and safe in this our Object Christ, and may keep still before our Eyes the Passion and Blood of our Mediator and all his Benefits. Now, Faith alone which layeth hold upon Christ, is the only Mean that we suffer not these Benefits to be taken out of our Sight. Wherefore, rejecting this pestilent Gloss, we must understand this Place of Faith only and alone. And this *Paul* himself declareth, when he reasoneth against Faith formed with Charity, after this Sort.

### Verse 12. *And the Law is not of Faith:*

The School-men say; The righteous Man doth live, if his Faith be formed and adorned with Charity. But contrariwise *Paul* saith; *The Law is not of Faith.* But what is the Law? Is it not also a Commandment touching Charity? Yea, the Law commandeth nothing else but Charity, as we may see by the Text itself; *Thou shalt love the Lord thy God, with all thy Soul, &c.* Deut. vi. 5. Matth. xxii. 37. Again, *Shewing Mercy unto thousands that love him and keep his Commandments,* Exod. xx. 6. Also, *In these two Commandments consisteth the Law and the Prophets,* Matth. xxii. 4. If the Law then, that commandeth Charity be contrary to Faith, it must needs follow, that Charity is not of Faith. So *Paul* plainly confuteth that Gloss which the *Sophisters* have forged, touching their formed Faith, and speaketh only of Faith, as it is separate from the Law. Now, the Law being separate and set apart, Charity is also set apart, with all that belongeth to the Law, and Faith only is left, which justifieth and quickneth to everlasting Life.

*Paul* therefore reasoneth here out of a plain Testimony of the Prophet; that there is none which obtaineth Justification and Life before God, but the believing Man, who obtaineth Righteousness and everlasting Life without the Law and without Charity, by Faith alone. The Reason is, because the Law is not of Faith, that is, the Law is not Faith,

or any Thing belonging to Faith, for it believeth not ; neither are the Works of the Law Faith, nor yet of Faith ; therefore Faith is a Thing much differing from the Law, like as the Promise is a Thing much differing from the Law. For the Promise is not apprehended by working, but by believing. Yet there is as great a Difference between the Promise and the Law, and consequently between Faith and Works, as there is Distance between Heaven and Earth.

It is impossible therefore, that Faith should be of the Law. For Faith only resteth in the Promise, it only apprehendeth and knoweth God, and standeth only in receiving good Things of God. Contrariwise the Law and Works consist in exacting, in doing, and in giving unto God. As *Abel* offering his Sacrifice, giveth unto God ; but he believing receiveth of God. *Paul* therefore concludeth mightily out of that Place of *Habakkuk*, that the righteous Man liveth by Faith alone. For the Law in no wise belongeth unto Faith, because the Law is not the Promise. But Faith resteth only upon the Promise. Wherefore as there is a Difference between the Law and the Promise ; so is there also between Works and Faith. That Gloss therefore of the School-men is false and wicked, which joineth the Law and Faith together, yea rather it quencheth Faith, and setteth the Law in the Place of Faith. And here note, that *Paul* always speaketh of such as would do the Law morally, and not according to the Scripture. But whatsoever is said of such good Works as the Scripture requireth, the same is attributed to Faith alone.

Verse 12. *But, The Man that doth them shall live in them.*

*Paul* here goeth about to shew what is the very true Righteousness of the Law and of the Gospel. The Righteousness of the Law is to fulfil the Law, according to that Saying ; *He that shall do these Things shall live in them.* The Righteousness of Faith is to believe, according to that Saying ; *The righteous Man doth live by Faith.* The Law therefore requireth that we should yield somewhat unto God. But Faith requireth no Works of us, or that we should give any Thing unto God, but that we believing the Promise of God, should receive of him. Therefore the Office of the Law is to work, as the Office of Faith is to assent unto the Promise. For Faith is the Faith of the Promise, and the Work is the Work of the Law. *Paul* therefore standeth upon this Word *Doing* ; and that he may plainly shew, what is the Confidence of the Law, and what is the Confidence of Works, he compareth the one with the other, the Promise with the Law, and Faith with Works. He saith, that of the Law there cometh nothing else but only doing ; but Faith is a clean contrary Thing, namely, that which assenteth to the Promise, and layeth hold upon it.

These four Things therefore must be perfectly distinguished. For as the Law hath his proper Office, so hath the Promise. To the Law pertaineth Doing, and to the Promise, must be distinguished.

The Office  
of the Law  
and of Faith.

The Law  
and the Pro-  
mise, Doing  
and Believ-

Promise, Believing. Wherefore, as far as the Law and the Promise are separate asunder, so far also are Doing and Believing. By the which Distinction *Paul* here goeth about to separate Charity from Faith, and to teach that Charity justifieth not, because the Law worketh or hepeth nothing to Justification. Faith alone therefore justifieth and quicketh, and yet it standeth not alone, that is to say, it is not idle, albeit that in her Degree and Office it standeth alone. Ye see the Cause then why *Paul* here alledgeth this Place, namely, that he may separate Faith and Charity far asunder.

*Fides formata, informis, acquisita*, are monstrous Terms devised by the *Papists*.

Fy upon the *Sophisters* therefore with their cursed Glosses and their blind Distinction of Faith formed and unformed. For these new forged Terms, Faith formed, Faith unformed, Faith gotten by Man's Industry, and such like, are very Monsters devised by the Devil, to no other End but to deface and destroy the true Christian Doctrine and Faith, to blaspheme and tread Christ under Foot, and to stablsh the Righteousness of Works. Indeed Works must follow Faith, but Faith must not be Works, or Works Faith; but the Bounds and the Kingdoms of the Law or Works, and of Faith must be rightly distinguished the one from the other,

When we believe therefore, we live only by Faith in Christ, who is without Sin, who is also our Mercy-seat and Remission of Sins. Contrariwise, when we observe the Law, we work indeed, but we have no Righteousness nor Life. For the Office of the Law is not to justify and give Life, but to shew forth Sin, and to destroy. Indeed the Law saith; *He that shall do these Things, shall live in them*. But where is he which doth the Law; that is, which loveth God with all his Heart, and his Neighbour as himself? Therefore no Man doth the Law, and altho' he go about to do it never so much; yet in doing it he doth it not; therefore he abideth under the Curse. But Faith worketh not, but believeth in Christ the Justifier. Therefore a Man liveth not because of his Doing, but because of his Believing. But a faithful Man performeth the Law, and that which he doth not, is forgiven him thro' the Remission of Sins for Christ's Sake, and that which is remaining is not imputed unto him.

*Paul* therefore in this Place, and in the 10th Chapter to the *Romans*, compareth the Righteousness of the Law and of Faith together, where he saith; *He that shall do these Things, shall live in them*. As tho' he would say; It were indeed a goodly Matter if we could accomplish the Law; but because no Man doth it, we must fly unto Christ, *Who is the End of the Law for Righteousness to every one that believeth*, Rom. x. 4. *He was made under the Law, that he might redeem them that were under the Law*, Gal. iv. 4, 5. Believing in him we receive the Holy Ghost, and we begin to do the Law, and that which we do not, is not imputed unto us because of our Faith in Christ. But in the Life to come we shall no more have Need of Faith. For then we shall not see darkly thro' a Glass (as we now do) but we shall see Face to Face, 1 Cor. xiii. 12. that is to say, there shall be a most glorious Brightness of the eternal

nal Majesty, in which we shall see God even as he is. There shall be a true and a perfect Knowledge and Love of God, a perfect Light of Reason and a Good-will; not such a moral and philolophical Will as the Popish School-men dream of, but an heavenly, divine, and eternal Will. Here in the mean Time, in Spirit by Faith, we look for the Hope of Righteousness. Contrariwise, they that seek for Righteousness of Sins by the Law and not by Christ, do never perform the Law, but abide under the Curse.

*Paul* therefore calleth them only righteous, which are justified thro' the Promise, or thro' Faith in the Promise without the Law. Wherefore, they that are of the Works of the Law, and will seem to do the Law, do it not. For the Apostle generally concludeth, that all they which are of the Works of the Law, are under the Curse; under the which they should not be, if they fulfilled the Law. Indeed it is true, that a Man doing the Works of the Law, shall live in them, that is, shall be blessed; but such a one cannot be found. Now seeing there is a double Use of the Law, the one politick, and the other spiritual, he that will understand this Sentence civilly, may do it after this Sort: *He that shall do these Things, shall live in them*: That is, if a Man obey the Magistrate outwardly and in the politick Government, he shall avoid Punishment and Death; for then the civil Magistrate hath no Power over him. This is the politick Use of the Law, which serveth to bridle those that are rude and untractable. But *Paul* here speaketh not of this Use, but intreateth of this Place like a Divine, therefore there is a Condition necessarily included. As if he said; If Men could keep the Law, they should be happy. But where are they? They are not therefore Doers of the Law, except they be justified before and without the Law, thro' Faith.

Wherefore, when *Paul* curseth and condemneth those which are of the Works of the Law, he speaketh not of such as are justified thro' Faith, but of such as go about to be justified by Works, without Faith in Christ: This I say, lest any Man should follow the fond Imagination of *Jerome*, who being deceived by *Origen*, understood nothing at all in *Paul*, but took him as a mere civil Lawyer. Hereupon he reasoneth after this Manner: The holy Patriarchs, Prophets and Kings were circumcised and offered Sacrifice, therefore they observed the Law. But it were a wicked Thing to say, that they are under the Curse; therefore all they that are of the Works of the Law are not under the Curse. Thus he setteth himself against *Paul* without all Judgment, making no Difference between the true Doers of the Law justified by Faith, and those Workers which seek to be justified by the Law, without Faith.

But *Paul* speaketh here nothing against those that are justified by Faith, and are true Doers of the Law indeed, for they are not of the Works of the Law; but against those which not only do not keep the Law,

Who they are that *Paul* calleth righteous,

The Imagination of *Jerome* understanding *Paul* as tho' he spake of the Law but morally, and as it is separate from Faith.

Law, but also sin against the same. For the Law commandeth that we should fear, love and worship God with a true Faith. A Picture of This they do not, but choose out new Kinds of Worship Hypocrites. and Works which were never commanded of God, by the which God is not pacified, but more provoked to Anger, according to that Saying, *But in vain they do worship me, teaching for Doctrines the Commandments of Men*, Matth. xv. 9. Therefore they are full of Impiety, Rebels against God and Idolaters, sinning grievously against the first Commandment above all the rest. Moreover, they are full of wicked Concupiscence, Wrath and other great Passions. Briefly, there is no good Thing in them, but that outwardly they would seem to be righteous and to accomplish the Law.

So we also which are justified by Faith, as were the Patriarchs, Prophets and all the Saints, are not of the Works of the Law, as concerning Justification. But in that we are in the Flesh, and have as yet the Remnants of Sin in us, we are under the Law, and yet not under the Curse, because the Remnants of Sin are not imputed unto us for Christ's Sake, in whom we believe: For the Flesh is an Enemy unto God, and that Concupiscence which yet remaineth in us, not only fulfilleth not the Law, but also sinneth against the same, rebelling against us, and leading us captive into Bondage, *Rem. vii.* Now, if the Law be not fulfilled in the Saints, but that many Things are done in them contrary to the Law, if evil Concupiscence and the Remnants of Sin are yet remaining in them, which do so hinder them that they cannot fear and love God, they cannot call upon God with assured Trust, they cannot praise God and reverence his Word as they should do; much more is this true in a Man which is not yet justified by Faith, but is an Enemy unto God, and with all his Heart despiseth and hateth the Word and Work of God. Ye see then that *Paul* speaketh here of such as will fulfill the Law, and be justified thereby, altho' they have not yet received Faith, and not of the Fathers and Saints (as *Jerome* imagineth) which are justified by Faith already.

*Deut. xxi. 23. Verse 13. Christ hath redeemed us from the Curse of the Law, being made a Curse for us: For it is written, Cursed is every one that hangeth on a Tree:*

This Sentence which *Paul* reciteth out of *Deut.* is miserably wrested and racked of the *Papists*. Hear again *Jerome*, and the Popish *Sophisters* which follow him, are much troubled, and miserably rack this most comfortable Place, seeking, as they would seem, with a godly Zeal to turn away this Reproach from Christ, that he should be called a Curse or Execration. They shift off this Sentence after this Manner; that *Paul* spake not here

here in good earnest; and therefore they most wickedly affirm, that the Scripture in *Paul* agreeth not with itself. And this they prove after this Manner: The Sentence (say they) of *Moses*, which *Paul* here alledgeth, speaketh not of Christ. Moreover this general Clause [*whosoever*] which *Paul* alledgeth, is not added in *Moses*. Again, *Paul* omitteth this Word [*of God*] which is in *Moses*. To conclude, it is evident enough, that *Moses* speaketh of a Thief or a Malefactor, which by his evil Deeds had deserved the Gallows, as the Scripture plainly witnesseth in the 21<sup>st</sup> Chap. of *Deut.* Therefore they ask this Question, How this Sentence may be applied to Christ, that he is accursed of God and hanged upon a Tree, seeing that he is no Malefactor or Thief, but righteous and holy? This may peradventure move the simple and ignorant, thinking that the *Sophisters* do speak it, not only wittily, but also very godly, and thereby do defend the Honour and Glory of Christ, and give warning to all Christians to beware that they think not so wickedly of Christ, that he should be made a Curse, &c. Let us see therefore what the Meaning and Purpose of *Paul* is.

But here again we must make a Distinction, as the Words of *Paul* do plainly shew. For he saith not, that Christ was made a Curse for himself, but for us. Therefore all the Weight of the Matter standeth in this Word, *For us*. For Christ is innocent as concerning his own Person, and therefore he ought not to have been hanged on a Tree; but because, according to the Law of *Moses*, every Thief and Malefactor ought to be hanged, therefore Christ also according to the Law ought to be hanged, for he sustained the Person of a Sinner and of a Thief, not of one, but of all Sinners and Thieves. For we are Sinners and Thieves, and therefore guilty of Death and everlasting Damnation. But Christ took all our Sins upon him, and for them died upon the Cross; therefore it behoved that he should become a Transgressor, (as *Isaiah* the Prophet saith, Chap. liii.) *to be reckoned and accounted among Transgressors and Trespassors.*

And this (no doubt) all the Prophets did fore-see in Spirit, that Christ should become the greatest Transgressor, Murderer, Adulterer, Thief, Rebel and Blasphemer, that ever was or could be in all the World. For he being made a Sacrifice for the Sins of the whole World, is not now an innocent Person and without Sins, is not now the Son of God, born of the Virgin *Mary*; but a Sinner, which hath and carrieth the Sin of *Paul*, who was a Blasphemer, an Oppressor and a Persecutor; of *Peter*, which denied Christ; of *David*, which was an Adulterer, a Murderer, and caused the *Gentiles* to blaspheme the Name of the Lord, *I/a. liii. 5. Matth. viii. 17.* and briefly, which hath and beareth all the Sins of all Men in his Body; not that he himself committed them, but for that he received them being committed or done of us, and laid them upon his own Body, that he might make Satisfaction for them with his own Blood. Therefore this general Sentence of *Moses* comprehendeth him

This Clause  
for us, is ef-  
fectual and  
full of  
Power.

Christ the  
greatest Sin-  
ner of all o-  
thers, be-  
cause he bare  
the Sins of  
the whole  
World.

him also (albeit in his own Person he was innocent) because it found him amongst Sinners and Transgressors : Like as the Magistrate taketh him for a Thief, and punisheth him whom he findeth among other Thieves and Transgressors, tho' he never committed any Thing worthy of Death. Now, Christ was not only found amongst Sinners, but of his own Accord and by the Will of his Father he would also be a Companion of Sinners, taking upon him the Flesh and Blood of those which were Sinners, Thieves and plunged in all Kinds of Sin. When the Law therefore found him among Thieves it condemned and killed him as a Thief.

What In-commodities follow the Doctrine of the School-men.

The Popish *Sophisters* do spoil us of this Knowledge of Christ and most heavenly Comfort, (namely, that Christ was made a Curse, that he might deliver us from the Curse of the Law) when they separate him from Sins and Sinners, and only set him out unto us as an Example to be followed. By this Means they make Christ, not only unprofitable unto us, but also a Judge and a Tyrant, which is angry with our Sins, and condemneth Sinners. But

Christ must be wrapped as well in Sins, as in our Flesh and Blood.

we must as well wrap Christ, and know him to be wrapped in our Sins, in our Malediction, in our Death, and in all our Evils, as he is wrapped in our Flesh and in our Blood.

But some Man will say ; It is very absurd and slanderous, to call the Son of God a cursed Sinner. I answer, if thou wilt deny him to be a Sinner and to be accursed, deny also that he was crucified and died. For it is no less absurd to say, that the Son of God (as our Faith confesseth and believeth) was crucified and suffered the Pains of Sin and Death, then to say, that he is a Sinner and accursed. But if it be not absurd to confess

Christ is made a Curse and become Sin for us.

and believe, that Christ was crucified between two Thieves, then is it not absurd to say also that he was accursed and of all Sinners the greatest. These Words of *Paul* are not spoken in vain ; *Christ was made a Curse for us. For he hath made him to be Sin for us, who knew no Sin ; that we might be made the Righteousness of God in him, 2 Cor. v. 21.*

After the same Manner *John the Baptist* calleth him, *The Lamb of God, which taketh away the Sin of the World, John i. 29.* He verily is innocent, because he is the unspotted and undefiled Lamb of God. But because he beareth the Sins of the World, his Innocency is burdened with the Sins and Guilt of the whole World. Whatsoever

Our Sin must be Christ's own Sin, or else we shall perish for ever.

Sins, I, thou, and we all have done or shall do hereafter, they are Christ's own Sins, as verily as if he himself had done them. To be brief, our Sins must needs become Christ's own Sins, or else we shall perish for ever. This true Knowledge of Christ, which *Paul* and the Prophets have most plainly delivered unto us, the wicked *Sophisters* have darkned and defaced.

*Isaiah* in the 53 Chapter speaketh thus of Christ : *God (saith he) layed the Iniquity of us all upon him.* We must not make these Words less then they are.

are, but leave them in their own proper Signification : For God dallieth not in the Words of the Prophet, but speaketh earnestly, and of great Love ; *to wit*, that Christ this Lamb of God should bear the Sins of us all. But what is it to bear ? The *Sophisters* answer, to be punished. Very well. But wherefore is Christ punished ? Is it not because he hath Sin and beareth Sin ? Now that Christ hath Sin the Holy Ghost witnesseth in *Psal. xl. 12. Mine Iniquities have taken hold upon me, so that I am not able to look up : They are more than the Hairs of mine Head.* In this Psalm and certain others, the Holy Ghost speaketh in the Person of Christ, and in plain Words witnesseth, that he had Sins. For this Testimony is not the Voice of an innocent, but of a suffering Christ, which took upon him to bear the Person of all Sinners, and therefore was made guilty of the Sins of the whole World.

Wherefore Christ was not only crucified and died, but Sin also (thro' the Love of the Divine Majesty) was laid upon him. When Sin was laid upon him, then cometh the Law and saith ; every Sinner must die. Therefore, O Christ, if thou wilt answer, become guilty, and suffer Punishment for Sinners, thou must also bear Sin and Malediction. *Paul* therefore doth very well alledge this general Sentence out of *Moses* as concerning Christ ; *Every one that hangeth upon the Tree is the accursed of God ;* but Christ hath hanged upon the Tree, therefore Christ is the accursed of God.

And this is a singular Consolation for all Christians, so to clothe Christ with our Sins, and to wrap him in my Sins, thy Sins, and in the Sins of the whole World, and so to \* behold him bearing all our Iniquities : For the beholding of him after this Manner, shall easily vanquish all the fantastical Opinions of the *Papists* concerning the Justification of Works. For they do imagine (as I have said) a certain Faith formed and adorned with Charity. By this (say they) Sins are taken away, and Men are justified before God : And what is this else (I pray you) but to unwrap Christ, and to strip him quite out of our Sins, to make him innocent, and to charge and overwhelm ourselves with our own Sins, and to look upon them, not in Christ, but upon ourselves ? Yea, what is this else but to take Christ clean away, and to make him utterly unprofitable unto us ? For if it be so that we put away Sin by the Works of the Law and Charity, then Christ taketh them not away. For if he be the Lamb of God, ordained from everlasting to take away the Sins of the whole World ; and moreover, if he be so wrapped in our Sins, that he became accursed for us, it must needs follow that we cannot be justified by Works : For God hath laid our Sins, not upon us, but upon his Son Christ, that he bearing the Punishment thereof, might be our Peace, and that by his Stripes we might be healed, *Isa. liii. 5.* Therefore they cannot be taken away by us.

To this all the Scripture beareth witness ; and we also do confess the

Christ not only beareth Sin, but the Psalm witnesseth that he himself also hath Sin indeed.

\* He alludeth to the brazen Serpent.

The Faith of the *Papists* formed with Charity.

Our Sins are taken away by Christ alone.

same in the Articles of the Christian Belief, when we say, I believe in Jesus Christ the Son of God, which suffered, was crucified and died for us.

Hereby it appeareth that the Doctrine of the Gospel (which of all other is most sweet and full of singular Consolation) speaketh nothing of our Works, or of the Works of the Law, but of the inestimable Mercy and Love of God towards us most wretched and miserable Sinners, *to wit*, that our most merciful Father seeing us to be oppressed and overwhelmed with the Curse of the Law, and so to be holden under the same, that we could never be delivered from it by our own Power, sent his only Son into the World, and laid upon him all the Sins of all Men, saying, Be thou *Peter* that Denier; *Paul* that Persecutor, Blasphemer, and cruel Oppressor; *David* that Adulterer; that Sinner which did eat the Apple in Paradise; that Thief which hanged upon the Cross: And briefly, be thou the Person which hath committed the Sins of all Men: See therefore that thou pay and satisfy for them. Here now cometh the Law, and faith, I find him a Sinner, and that such an one, as hath taken upon him the Sins of all Men, and I see no Sins else but in him; therefore let him die upon the Cross; and so he setteth upon him, and killeth him. By this Means the whole World is purged and cleansed from all Sins, and so delivered from Death and all Evils. Now, Sin being vanquished and Death abolished by this one Man, God would see nothing else in the whole World if it did believe, but a mere cleansing and Righteousness. And if any Remnants of Sin should remain, yet for the great Glory that is in Christ, God would wink at them and would not see them.

Of what Points the Doctrine of the Gospel intreateth.

The Law accused and killed Christ.

The Article of Justification and Christian Righteousness.

† This Opposition is a comparing of two Contraries, Christ and the World together.

Thus we must magnify the Article of Christian Righteousness against the Righteousness of the Law and Works: Albeit no Eloquence is able sufficiently to set forth the inestimable Greatness thereof. Wherefore the Argument that *Paul* handleth in this Place, of all other is most mighty against all the Righteousness of the Law: For it containeth this invincible † Opposition, that is, if the Sins of the whole World be in that one Man Jesus Christ, then are they not in the World. But if they be not in him, then are they yet in the World: Also, if Christ be made guilty of all the Sins which we all have committed, then are we delivered from all Sins, but not by ourselves, nor by our own Works or Merits, but by him. But if he be innocent and bear not our Sins, then do we bear them, and in them we shall die and be damned. *But thanks be to God, which giveth us the Victory, thro' our Lord Jesus Christ, Amen.* 1 Cor. xv. 57.

But now let us see by what Means these two Things so contrary and so repugnant, may be reconciled in this one Person Christ: Not only my Sins and thine, but also the Sins of the whole World, either past, present,

resent, or to come, take hold upon him, go about to condemn him, and do indeed condemn him. But because in the self-same Person, which is the highest, the greatest and the only Sinner, there is also an everlasting and invincible Righteousness; therefore these two do encounter together, the highest, the greatest, and the only Sin, and the highest, the greatest, and the only Righteousness. Here one of them must needs be overcome and give Place to the other, seeing they fight together with so great Force and Power. The Sin therefore of the whole World cometh upon Righteousness with all Might and Main. In this Combate, What is done? Righteousness is everlasting, immortal and invincible. Sin also is a most mighty and cruel Tyrant, ruling and reigning over the whole World, subduing and bringing all Men into Bondage. To conclude, there is a strong and a mighty God, which devoureth all Mankind, learned, unlearned, holy, mighty and wise Men. This Tyrant (I say) lieth upon Christ, and will needs swallow him up, as he doth all other: But we seeeth not that he is a Person of invincible and everlasting Righteousness. Therefore in this Combate Sin must needs be vanquished and killed, and Righteousness must overcome, live and reign. So in Christ all Sin is vanquished, killed and buried, and Righteousness remaineth a conqueror and reigneth for ever.

A marvelous Combate between Sin and Righteousness in Christ.

In like Manner, Death, which is an omnipotent Queen and Empress of the whole World, killing Kings, Princes, and generally all Men, doth mightily encounter with Life, thinking utterly to overcome it, and to swallow it up; and that which it goeth about, it bringeth to pass indeed. But because Life was immortal, therefore when it was overcome, yet did it overcome and get the Victory, vanquishing and killing Death. Death therefore thro' Christ is vanquished and abolished throughout the whole World, so that now it is but a painted Death, which losing his sting, can no more hurt those that believe in Christ, who is become the Death of Death, as *Hosea* the Prophet saith, *O Death I will be thy Death*, Hof. xiii. 14.

The Combate between Life and Death.

Life conquered, is the Conqueror of Death.

So the Curse, which is the Wrath of God upon the whole World, hath the like Conflict with the Blessing; that is to say, with Grace, and the eternal Mercy of God in Christ. The Curse therefore fighteth against the Blessing, and would condemn it and bring it to nought; but cannot so do: For the Blessing is divine and everlasting, the Curse must needs give Place. For if the Blessing in Christ could be overcome, then should God himself also be overcome. But this is impossible; therefore Christ by the Power of God, Righteousness, Blessing, Grace and Life, overcometh and destroyeth these Monsters, Sin, Death and the Curse, without War or Weapons, in his own Body, and in himself, as *Paul* delighteth to speak;

The Conflict of the Curse, with the Blessing.

and therefore

Christ is the Vanquisher of the Curse and Malediction.

*Spoiling* (saith he) *Principalities and Powers, triumphing over them in himself*, Col. ii. 15. so that they cannot any more hurt those that do believe.

And this Circumstance, *In himself*, maketh that Combate much more wonderful and glorious: For it sheweth that it was necessary, that these inestimable Things should be accomplished in that one only Person Christ, (*to wit*, that the Curse, Sin and Death should be destroyed, and the Blessing, Righteousness and Life should succeed in their Place) and that so the whole Creature thro' this one Person should be renewed. Therefore if thou look upon this Person Christ, thou shalt see Sin, Death, the Wrath of God, Hell, the Devil, and all Evils vanquished and mortified in him. Forasmuch then as Christ reigneth by his Grace in the Hearts of the Faithful, there is no Sin, no Death, no Curse; but where Christ is not known, there all these Things do still remain. Therefore all they which believe not, do lack this inestimable Benefit and glorious Victory: *For this* (as *St. John* saith) *is the Victory that overcometh the World, even our Faith*, 1 John v. 4.

This is the principal Article of all Christian Doctrine, which the Popish School-men have altogether darkned. And here ye see how necessary a Thing it is to believe and to confess the Article of the Divinity of Christ; which when *Arrius* denied, he must needs also deny the Article of our Redemption: For to overcome the Sin of the World, Death, the Curse, and the Wrath of God in himself, is not the Work of any Creature, but of the divine Power. Therefore he which *in himself* should overcome these, must needs be truly and naturally God. For against this mighty Power of Sin, Death and the Curse (which of itself reigneth throughout the World and in the whole Creature) it was necessary to set a more high and mighty Power. But besides the sovereign and divine Power, no such Power can be found: Wherefore to abolish Sin, to destroy Death, to take away the Curse *in himself*: And again, to give Righteousness, to bring Life to Light, and to give the Blessing, are the Works of the Divine Power only and alone. Now because the Scripture doth attribute all these to Christ, therefore he in himself is Life, Righteousness and Blessing, which is naturally and substantially God. Wherefore they that deny the Divinity of Christ, do lose all Christianity and become altogether *Gentiles* and *Turks*. We must learn therefore diligently the Article of Justification (as I often admonish you;) for all the other Articles of our Faith are comprehended in it, and if that remain sound, then are all the rest sound. Wherefore, when we teach that Men are justified by Christ, that Christ is the Conqueror of Sin, Death, and the everlasting Curse; we witness therewith all that he is naturally and substantially God.

They that deny the Divinity of Christ become *Turks* and *Gentiles*.

Hereby we may plainly see how horrible the Wickedness and Blindness of the *Papists* was, which taught that these cruel and mighty Tyrants, Sin, Death and the Curse (which swallow up all Mankind) must be vanquished, not by the Righteousness of the Law of God (which, altho' it be just, good and holy, can do nothing but bring Men under the Curse; ) but by the Righteousness of Man's own Works, as by Fasting, Pilgrimages, Masses, Vows, and such other like Paltry. But (I pray you) was there ever any found that being furnished with this Armour, overcame Sin, Death and the Devil? *Paul* in *Ephes. vi.*

13, 14. describeth a far other Manner of Armour, which we must use against these most cruel and raging Beasts. Therefore in that these blind Buzzards and Leaders of the Blind, have set us naked and without Armour before these invincible and most mighty Tyrants, they have not only delivered us unto them to be devoured, but also have made us ten Times greater and more wicked Sinners then either Thieves, Whores or Murderers; for it belongeth only to the divine Power to destroy Sin and to abolish Death, to create Righteousness and to give Life. These have attributed this divine Power to our own Works, saying; If thou do this Work or that, thou shalt overcome Sin, Death and the Wrath of God; and by this Means they set us in God's Place, making us in very deed naturally (if I may so say) God himself. And herein the *Papists* under the Name of Christ, have shewed themselves to be seven-fold more wicked Idolaters, then ever were the *Gentiles*. For it happened to them, as it doth to the Sow, which after she is washed, walloweth herself again in the Mire, *2 Pet. ii. 22.* And as Christ saith; After they are fallen away from Faith, an evil Spirit entereth again into the House, out of the which he was driven, and taketh to him seven other Spirits more wicked than himself, and they enter in, and dwell there; and the last State of that Man is worse than the first, *Luke xi. 26.*

Let us therefore receive this most sweet Doctrine and full of Comfort, with Thanksgiving, and with an assured Faith, which teacheth that Christ being made a Curse for us (that is, a Sinner subject to the Wrath of God) did put upon him our Person, and laid our Sins upon his own Shoulders, saying; I have committed the Sins which all Men have committed. Therefore he was made a Curse indeed according to the Law, not for himself, but (as *Paul* saith) for us. For unless he had taken upon himself my Sins and thine, and the Sins of the whole World, the Law had had no Right over him, which condemneth none but Sinners only, and holdeth them under the Curse. Wherefore he could neither have been made a Curse nor die, sith the only Cause of the Curse and of Death is Sin, from the which he was free. But because he had taken upon him our Sins, not by Constraint, but of his own

The Armour of Christians set out.

It is the Work of God, to abolish Death and to give Life.

What Doctrine the Gospel setteth forth.

Christ took our Sins upon him of his own Accord, and therefore it

Good-will; it behoved him to bear the Punishment and Wrath of God; not for his own Person (which was just and invincible, and therefore could be found in no ways guilty) but for our Person.

So making a happy Change with us, he took upon him our sinful Person, and gave unto us his innocent and victorious Person; where-with we being now clothed, are freed from the Curse of the Law. For Christ was willingly made a Curse for us, saying; As touching mine own Person, I am blessed, and need nothing; but I will abase myself, and will put upon me your Person, that is to say, your human Nature,

*Phil. ii. 7.* and will walk in the same among you, and Christ is our will suffer Death, to deliver you from Death. Now, he Righteous- thus bearing the Sin of the whole World in our Person, ness, and our was taken, suffered, was crucified and put to Death, and Sin is his. became a Curse for us. But because he was a Person di-

vine and everlasting, it was impossible that Death should hold him. Wherefore he rose up again the third Day from Death, and now liveth for ever; and there is neither Sin nor Death found in him any more, but mere Righteousness, Life and everlasting Blessedness.

This Image and this Mirrour we must have continually before us, and behold the same with a stedfast Eye of Faith. An inesti- He that doth so, hath this Innocency and Victory of mable Com- Christ, altho' he be never so great a Sinner. By Faith fort for all poor Consci- only therefore we are made righteous, for Faith layeth ences beaten down with Sin. hold upon this Innocency and this Victory of Christ. Look then how much thou believest this, so much thou

doest enjoy it. If thou believe Sin, Death, and the Curse to be abolished, they are abolished. For Christ hath overcome and taken away these in himself, and will have us to believe, that like as in his own Person, there is now no Sin nor Death, even so there is none in ours, seeing he hath performed and accomplished all Things for us.

Wherefore, if Sin vex thee and Death terrify thee, A Remedy think that it is (as it is indeed) but an Imagination and a Corn- and a Corn- a false Illusion of the Devil. For in very deed there is fort against the Terrors of Sin, &c. now no Sin, no Curse, no Death, no Devil to hurt us any more, for Christ hath vanquished and abolished all these Things. Therefore the Victory of Christ is most certain, and there is no Defect in the Thing itself, (since it is most true)

but in our Incredulity; for to Reason it is a hard Matter to believe these inestimable good Things and unspeakable Riches. Moreover, Satan with his fiery Darts, and his Ministers with their wicked and false Doctrine, go about to wrest from us and utterly to deface this Doctrine: And specially for this Article, which we so diligently teach, we sustain the Hatred and cruel Persecution of Satan and of the World. For Satan feeleth the Power and Fruit

of this Article. And of this Ar- ticle of Christian Righteousness destroyeth Satan's Kingdom.

And that there is no more Sin, Death, or Malediction, since Christ now reigneth, we daily confess also in the Creed of the Apostles, when we say; *I believe that there is an holy Church.* Which is indeed nothing else but as if we should say; I believe that there is no Sin, no Malediction, no Death in the Church of God. For they which do believe in Christ are no Sinners, are not guilty of Death, but are holy and righteous, Lords over Sin and Death, and living for ever. But Faith only seeth this: For we say, *I believe that there is an holy Church.* But if thou believe Reason and thine own Eyes, thou wilt judge clean contrary. For thou seest many Things in the Godly which offend thee.

Thou seest them sometime to fall into Sin, and to be weak in Faith, to be subject unto Wrath, Envy and such other evil Affections; therefore the Church is not holy. I deny the Consequence. If I look upon mine own Person, or the Person of my Brother, it shall never be holy. But if I behold Christ, who hath sanctified and cleansed his Church, then is it altogether holy: For he hath taken away the Sins of the whole World.

The Weakness of the Godly.

Therefore where Sins are seen and felt, there are they indeed no Sins. For according to *Paul's* Divinity, there is no Sin, no Death, no Malediction any more in the World but in Christ, who is the Lamb of God that hath taken away the Sins of the World; who is made a Curse that he might deliver us from the Curse. Contrariwise, according to Philosophy and Reason, Sin, Death and the Curse are no where else but in the World, in the Flesh, or in Sinners. For a sophistical Divine can speak no otherwise of Sin, then doth the Heathen Philosopher. Like as the Courser (saith he) cleaveth in the Wall, even so doth Sin in the World, in the Flesh, or in the Conscience; therefore it is to be purged by contrary Operations, *to wit*, by Charity. But the true Divinity teacheth that there is no Sin in the World any more; for Christ, upon whom the Father hath cast the Sins of the whole World, hath vanquished and killed the same in his own Body, *Isa.* liii. 6. He once dying for Sin and raised up again, dieth now no more. Therefore wheresoever is a true Faith in Christ, there Sin is abolished, dead and buried. But where no Faith in Christ is, there Sin doth still remain. And albeit the Remnants of Sin be as yet in the Saints, because they believe not perfectly, yet are they dead in that they are not imputed unto them, because of their Faith in Christ.

A feeling Sinner bruised and broken-hearted for his Sins is counted no Sinner.

To the Believers Sin and Death are abolished.

This is therefore a strong and mighty Argument, which *Paul* here prosecuteth against the Righteousness of Works. It is not the Law nor Works that do deliver us from the everlasting Curse, but Christ alone. I beseech therefore good Christian Reader, I beseech thee, that thou distinguish Christ from the Law; and diligently mark how *Paul* speaketh, and what he saith. All saith he which do not fulfil the Law, are necessarily under the Curse. But no Man fulfilleth the Law, therefore

all Men are under the Curse. He addeth moreover another Proposition : Christ hath redeemed us from the Curse of the Law, being made a Curse for us ; therefore it followeth, that the Law and Works do not redeem us from the Curse, but bring us rather under the Curse. Charity therefore (which as the School-men say, giveth Form and Perfection unto Faith) hath not only not redeemed us from the Curse, but rather it wrappeth us more and more in the Curse.

This Text then is plain, that all Men, yea the Apostles, Prophets and Patriarchs had remained under the Curse, if Christ had not set himself against Sin, Death, the Curse of the Law, the Wrath and Judgment of God, and overcome them in his own Body : For no Power of Flesh and Blood could overcome these huge and hideous Monsters. But now, Christ is not the Law, or the Work of the Law, but a divine and human Person, which took upon him Sin, the Condemnation of the Law and Death, not for himself, but for us. Therefore all the Weight and Force hereof consisteth in this Word, *For us*.

We must not then imagine Christ to be innocent, and as a private Person (as do the School-men, and almost all the Fathers have done) which is holy and righteous for himself only. True it is indeed that Christ is a Person most pure and unspotted ; but thou must not stay there ; for thou hast not yet Christ, altho' thou know him to be God and Man ; but then thou hast him indeed, when thou believest that

How Christ is truly known. this most pure and innocent Person is freely given unto thee of the Father to be thy High Priest and Saviour, yea rather thy Servant, that he putting off his Innocency and Holiness, and taking thy sinful Person upon him,

might bear thy Sin, thy Death and thy Curse, and might be made a Sacrifice and a Curse for thee, that by this Means he might deliver thee from the Curse of the Law.

Ye see then with what an Apostolick Spirit *Paul* handleth this Argument of the Blessing and of the Curse, whilst he not only maketh Christ subject to the Curse, but saith also that he is made a Curse. So in the 2 *Cor.* v. 21. he calleth him Sin when he saith ; *He hath made him to be Sin for us, who knew no Sin ; that we might be made the Righteousness of God in him.* And altho' these Sentences may be well expounded after this Manner ; Christ is made a Curse, that is to say, a Sacrifice for the Curse ; and Sin, that is, a Sacrifice for Sin, yet in my Judgment it is better to keep the proper Signification of the Words, because there is a greater Force and Vehemency therein. For when a Sinner cometh to the Knowledge of himself indeed, he feeleth not only that he is miserable, but Misery itself ; not only that he is a Sinner and is accursed, but even Sin and Malediction itself. For it is a terrible Thing to bear Sin, the Wrath of God, Malediction and Death ; wherefore that Man which hath a true feeling of these Things (as Christ did truly and effectually feel them for all Mankind) is made even Sin, Death, Malediction, &c.

*Paul* therefore handleth this Place with a true Apostolical Spirit. There is neither *Sophister*, nor *Lawyer*, nor *Jew*, nor *Anabaptist*, nor

any other that speaketh as he doth. For who durst alledge this Place out of *Moses*; *Accursed is every one that hangeth on a Tree*, and apply it unto Christ? Like as *Paul* then applied this Sentence to Christ, even so may we apply unto Christ, not only that whole 27 Chap. of *Deuteronomy*, but also may gather all the Curses of *Moses's* Law together, and expound the same of Christ. For as Christ is innocent in this general Law, touching his own Person; so is he also in all the rest. And as he is guilty in this general Law, in that he is made a Curse for us, and is hanged upon the Cross as a wicked Man, a Blasphemer, a Murderer and a Traitor; even so is he also guilty in all others. For all the Curses of the Law are heaped together and laid upon him, and therefore he did bear and suffer them in his own Body for us. He was therefore not only accursed, but also was made a Curse for us.

This is to interpret the Scriptures truly and like an Apostle. For a Man is not able to speak after this Manner without the Holy Ghost; that is to say, to comprehend the whole Law in this one Saying, *Christ is made a Curse for us*, and lay the same altogether upon Christ: And contrariwise to comprehend all the Promises of the Scripture, and say that they are all at once fulfilled in Christ. Wherefore this is indeed an Apostolick and invincible Argument, not taken out of one Place of the Law, but out of the whole Law, which *Paul* also useth as a sure Ground.

Here we may see with what Diligence *Paul* read the holy Scriptures, and how exactly he weighed every Word of this Place; *In thy Seed shall all the Nations of the Earth be blessed*. First, Out of this Word Blessing he gathereth this Argument: If Blessing shall be given unto all Nations, then are all Nations under the Curse, yea the *Jews* also who have the Law. And he alledgeth a Testimony of the Scripture, whereby he proveth that all the *Jews* which are under the Law, are under the Curse; *Cursed is every one which abideth not in all the Things that are written in this Book*.

Moreover, he diligently weigheth this Clause; *All Nations*. Out of the which he gathereth thus; that the Blessing belongeth not only to the *Jews*, but also to all the Nations of the whole World. Seeing then it belongeth to all Nations, it is impossible that it should be obtained thro' the Law of *Moses*, for as much as there was no Nation that had the Law, but only the *Jews*. And altho' they had the Law, yet were they so far off from obtaining the Blessing thro' it, that the more they endeavoured to accomplish it, the more they were subject to the Curse of the Law. Wherefore there must needs be another Righteousness, which must be far more excellent then the Righteousness of the Law, thro' the which, not only the *Jews*, but also all Nations throughout the whole World, must obtain the Blessing.

The true Meaning of these Words of *Paul*, *Christ was made Sin, a Curse, &c.*

All the Curses of the Law must be applied to Christ.

*Paul* diligently weigheth this Sentence of *Genesis*; *In thy Seed, &c.*

The *Jews* obtained not to Righteousness thro' the Law.

Finally, These Words, *In thy Seed*, he expoundeth after this Manner; that a certain Man should issue out of the Seed of *Abraham*, that is to say, Christ, thro' whom the Blessing should come afterwards upon all Nations. Seeing therefore it was Christ that should bless all Nations, it was he also that should take away the Curse from them: But he could not take it away by the Law, for by the Law it is more and more increased. What did he then? He joined himself to the Company of the Accursed, taking unto him their Flesh and their Blood, and so set himself

How the Nations were delivered from the Curse.

for a Mediator between God and Men, saying; Altho' I be Flesh and Blood, and now dwell among the Accursed, yet notwithstanding I am that blessed One, thro' whom all Men must be blessed. So in one Person he joineth God and Man together, and being united unto us which were accursed, he was made a Curse for us, and hid his Blessing in our Sin, in our Death, and in our Curse, which

condemned him and put him to Death. But because he was the Son of God, he could not be holden of them, but overcame them, led them captive, and triumphed over them; and whatsoever did hang upon Flesh, which for our Sake he took upon him, he carried it with him. Wherefore all they that cleave unto this Flesh, are blessed and delivered from the Curse, that is, from Sin, and everlasting Death.

They that understand not this Benefit of Christ (whereof the Gospel especially intreateth) and know not another Righteousness besides the Righteousness of the Law, when they hear that the Works of the Law are not necessary to Salvation, but that Men do obtain the same by only hearing and believing that Christ the Son of God hath taken upon him our Flesh, and joined himself to the Accursed, to the End that all Nations might be blessed, they (I say) are, offended; for all this they understand nothing, or else they understand it carnally: For their Minds are occupied with other Cogitations and fantastical Imaginations; therefore these Things seem unto them strange Matters. Yea even unto us which have received the first Fruits of the Spirit, it is impossible to understand these Things perfectly, for they mightily fight against Reason.

To conclude, all Evils should have overwhelmed us, as they shall overwhelm the Wicked for ever. But Christ being made for us a Transgressor of all Laws, guilty of all our Malediction, our Sins, and all our Evils, cometh between as a Mediator, embracing us wicked and damnable Sinners. He took upon him and bare all our Evils, which should have oppressed and tormented us for ever; and these cast him down for a little while, and ran over his Head like Water, as the Prophet in the Person of Christ complaineth, when he saith, *Thy Indignation fore presseth me, and thou hast vexed me with all thy Storms.* Again, *Thine Indignations have gone over me, and thy Terrors have troubled me.* By this Means we being delivered from these everlasting Terrors and Anguish thro' Christ, shall enjoy an everlasting and inestimable Peace and Felicity, so that we believe this.

These are the reverend Mysteries of the Scripture, which *Moses* also somewhat darkly in some Places did fore-shew; which also the Prophets and Apostles did know, and did deliver to their Posterity. For this Knowledge and Benefit of Christ to come, the Saints of the Old Testament rejoiced more, then we now do when he is so comfortably revealed and exhibited unto us. Indeed we do acknowledge that this Knowledge of Christ and of the Righteousness of Faith, is an inestimable Treasure; but we conceive not thereby such a full Joy of Spirit, as the Prophets and Apostles did. Hereof it cometh, that they (and especially *Paul*) so plentifully set forth and so diligently taught the Article of Justification. For this is the proper Office of an Apostle, to set forth the Glory and Benefit of Christ, and thereby to raise up and comfort troubled and afflicted Consciences.

The Fathers of the Old Testament rejoiced more for the Benefit of Christ, then we do.

*Verse 14. That the Blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles thro' Jesus Christ;*

*Paul* hath always this Place before his Eyes, *In thy Seed*, &c. For the Blessing promised unto *Abraham*, could not come upon the *Gentiles*, but only by Christ the Seed of *Abraham*, and that by this Means, that it behoved him to be made a Curse, that this Promise made unto *Abraham*, *In thy Seed shall all Families of the Earth be blessed*, might so be fulfilled. Therefore by no other Means could this be done that here is promised, but that Christ Jesus must needs become a Curse, and join himself to those that were accursed, that so he might take away the Curse from them, and thro' his Blessing might bring unto them Righteousness and Life. And here mark (as I have also forewarned you) that this Word Blessing is not in vain, as the *Jews* dream, who expound it to be but a Salutation by Word of Mouth or by Writing. But *Paul* intreateth here of Sin and Righteousness, of Death and Life before God. He speaketh therefore of inestimable and incomprehensible Things, when he saith, *that the Blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles thro' Jesus Christ*.

Ye see moreover what Merits we bring, and by what Means we obtain this Blessing. This is the Merit of Congruence and Worthiness, these are the Works preparative, whereby we obtain this Righteousness, that Christ Jesus was made a Curse for us: For we are ignorant of God, Enemies of God, dead in Sin, and accursed: And what is our Desert then? What can he deserve that is accursed, ignorant of God, dead in Sins, and subject to the Wrath and Judgment of God? When the Pope excommunicateth a Man, whatsoever he doth, is counted accursed. How much more then may we say, that he is accursed before God (as all we are before we know Christ) which doth nothing else but cursed Things? Wherefore there is no other Way to avoid the Curse, but to believe, and with assured Confidence to say; Thou Christ art my Sin and my Curse, or rather, I am thy Sin, thy Curse, thy Death, thy Wrath of God, thy Hell: And contrariwise,

The Way how to escape the Curse.

trariwise, thou art my Righteousness, my Blessing, my Life, my Grace of God, and my Heaven. For the Text saith plainly, *Christ is made a Curse for us.* Therefore we are the Cause that he was made a Curse; nay rather we are his Curse.

This is an excellent Place, and full of spiritual Consolation, and albeit it satisfy not the blind and hard-hearted *Jews*, yet it satisfieth us that are baptized and have received this Doctrine, and concludeth most mightily, that we are blessed thro' the Curse, the Sin, and the Death of Christ, that is to say, we are justified and quickned unto Life. So long as Sin, Death and the Curse do abide in us, Sin terrifieth, Death killeth, and the Curse condemneth us. But when these are translated and laid upon Christ's Back, then are all these Evils made his own, and his Benefits are made ours. Let us therefore learn in all Tentations to translate Sin, Death, the Curse, and all Evils which oppress us, from ourselves unto Christ; and again, from him unto ourselves, Righteousness, Mercy, Life and Blessing. For he beareth all our Evils and our Miseries; God the Father cast the Iniquities of us all, as *Isaiah* the Prophet saith, upon him; and he hath taken them upon him willingly, which was not guilty: But this he did, that he might fulfil the Will of his Father, by the which we are sanctified for ever.

The Mercy of God towards us Sinners, unspeakable.

This is that infinite and unmeasurable Mercy of God, which *Paul* would gladly amplify with all Eloquence and Plenty of Words, but the slender Capacity of Man's Heart cannot comprehend, and much less utter that unsearchable Depth, and burning Zeal of God's Love towards us. And verily the inestimable Greatness of God's

Mercy, not only ingendreth in us an Hardness to believe, but also Incredulity itself: For I do not only hear that this Almighty God the Creator and Maker of all Things is good and merciful, but also that the same high sovereign Majesty was so careful for me a damnable Sinner, a Child of Wrath, and of everlasting Death, that he spared not his own dear Son, but delivered him to a most shameful Death, that he hanging between two Thieves, might be made a Curse and Sin for me a cursed Sinner, that I might be made blessed, that is to say, the Child and Heir of God: Who can sufficiently praise and magnify this exceeding great Goodness of God? Not all the Angels in Hea-

Of what Things the Gospel intreateth.

ven. Therefore the Doctrine of the Gospel speaketh of far other Matters then any Book of Policy or Philosophy, yea, or the Book of *Moses* himself, to wit, of the unspeakable and most divine Gifts of God, which far pass the Capacity and Understanding both of Men and Angels.

**Verse 14.** *That we might receive the Promise of the Spirit thro' Faith.*

This is a Phrase of the *Hebrew*, *The Promise of the Spirit*, that is to say, the Spirit promised. Now, the Spirit is Freedom from the Law, Sin, Death, the Curse, Hell, and from the Wrath and Judgment of God:

Here

Here is no Merit or Worthiness of ours, but a free Promise and a Gift given thro' the Seed of *Abraham*, that we may be free from all Evils, and obtain all good Things. And this Liberty and Gift of the Spirit, we receive not by any other Merits then by Faith alone. For that only taketh hold of the Promise of God, as *Paul* plainly saith in this Place; *That we might receive the Promise of the Spirit, not by Works, but by Faith.*

The Nature of Faith.

This is indeed a sweet and a true Apostolick Doctrine, which sheweth that those Things are fulfilled for us, and now given to us, which many Prophets and Kings desired to see and hear. And such like Places as this one is, were gathered together out of divers Sayings of the Prophets, which fore-saw long before in Spirit, that all Things should be changed, repaired, and governed by this Man Christ. The *Jews* therefore altho' they had the Law of God, notwithstanding besides that Law, looked for Christ. None of the Prophets or Governours of the People of God, did make any new Law, but *Elias*, *Samuel*, *David*, and all the other Prophets did abide under the Law of *Moses*; they did not appoint any new Tables, or a new Kingdom and Priesthood: For that new Change of the kingly Priesthood of the Law and the Worship, was referred and kept to him only, of whom *Moses* had prophesied long before: *The Lord thy God shall raise up a Prophet unto thee, of thine own Nation, and from among thy Brethren: Him shalt thou hear: As if he should say; Thou shalt hear him only, and none besides him.*

What Manner of Doctrine the Apostolick Doctrine is.

The Change of all Things reserved to Christ alone.

This the Father well understood, for none could teach greater and higher Points then *Moses* himself, who made excellent Laws of high and great Matters, as are the Ten Commandments, especially the first Commandment; *I am the Lord thy God: Thou shalt have no other gods before me*, *Exod. xx. 1. 3. Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thine Heart, &c. Deut. vi. 5.* This Law concerning the Love of God, comprehendeth the very Angels also. Therefore it is the Head-spring of all divine Wisdom. And yet was it necessary notwithstanding, that another Teacher should come, that is to say Christ, which should bring and teach another Thing far passing these excellent Laws; to wit, Grace and Remission of Sins. This Text therefore is full of Power; for in this short Sentence; *That we might receive the Promise of the Spirit by Faith; Paul* poureth out at once whatsoever he was able to say. Therefore when he can go no further (for he could not utter any greater or more excellent Thing,) he breaketh off, and here he stayeth.

The first Commandment is the Spring of all the Wisdom of God.

Verse 15. *Brethren, I speak after the Manner of Men; tho' it be but a Man's Covenant, yet if it be confirmed, no Man disannulleth, or addeth thereto.*

After

After this Principle and invincible Argument, *Paul* addeth another, grounded upon the Similitude of a Man's Testament; which seemeth to be very weak, and such as the Apostle ought not to use for the Confirmation of a Matter of so great Importance. For

Human Things must be confirmed by divine Things, and not divine Things by human Things.

in high and weighty Matters, we ought to confirm earthly Things by divine Things, and not divine and heavenly Things by earthly and worldly Things. And indeed it is true, that these Arguments of all other are most weak, but when we go about to prove and confirm heavenly Matters with earthly and corruptible Things, as *Scotus* is wont to do. A Man (saith he) is able to love God above all Things, for he loveth himself above all Things; therefore much more is he able to love God above all Things. For a good Thing, the greater it is, the more it is to be loved, and hereof he inferreth, that a Man is able, *ex puris naturalibus*, that is to say, even of his own pure natural Strength, easily to fulfil that high Commandment; *Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy Heart*, &c. For (saith he) a Man is able to love the least good Thing above all Things; yea he setteth at naught his Life (of all other Things most dear unto him) for a little vile Moneey; therefore he can much more do it for God's Cause.

Ye have oftentimes heard of me, that civil Ordinances are of God; for God hath ordained them and alloweth them, as he doth the Sun, the Moon, and other Creatures. Therefore an Argument taken of the Ordinance or of the Creatures of God, is good, so that we use the same rightly. So the Prophets have very often used Similitudes and Comparisons taken of Creatures, calling Christ the Sun, the Church the Moon; the Preachers and Teachers of the Word, the Stars. Also there are many Similitudes in the Prophets, of Trees, Thorns, Flowers, and Fruits of the Earth. The New Testament likewise is full of such Similitudes. Therefore where God's Ordinance is in the Creature, there may an Argument be well borrowed and applied to divine and heavenly Things.

So our Saviour Christ in *Matth. vii. 11.* argueth from earth'y Things to heavenly Things, when he saith; *If ye then being evil, know how to give good Gifts unto your Children, How much more shall your Father which is in Heaven give good Things to them that ask him?* Likewise *Paul* saith, *Acts v. 29.* *We ought to obey God rather than Men.* *Jeremiah* also in the 35 Chapter saith, *The Rechabites obeyed their Father: How much more ought ye to have obeyed me?* Now, these Things are appointed of God, and are his Ordinances, that Fathers should give unto their Children, and that Children should obey their Parents. Therefore such Manner of Arguments are good when they are grounded upon the Ordinance of God. But if they be taken from Mens corrupt Affections, they are naught. Such is the Argument of *Scotus*; I love the lesser good Thing, therefore I love the greater more. I deny the Consequence.

quence. For my loving is not God's Ordinance, but a devilish Corruption. Indeed it should be so, that I loving myself or another Creature, should much more love God the Creator; but it is not so. For the Love wherewith I love myself, is corrupt and against God.

This I say, lest any Man should cavil that an Argument taken of corruptible Things, and applied to divine and spiritual Matters, is nothing worth. For, this Argument (as I have said) is strong enough, so that we ground the same upon the Ordinance of God, as we see in this Argument which we have in Hand. For the civil Law which is an Ordinance of God, saith, that it is not lawful to break or to change the Testament of a Man: Yea it commandeth that the last Will or Testament of a Man be straitly kept; for it is one of the holiest and most laudable Customes that are among Men. Now therefore, upon this Custom of Man's Testament, *Paul* argueth after this Manner; How cometh it to pass that Man is obeyed and not God? Politick and civil Ordinances, as concerning Testaments and other Things, are diligently kept. There nothing is changed, nothing is added or taken away. But the Testament of God is changed; that is to say, his Promise concerning the spiritual Blessing, that is concerning heavenly and everlasting Things, which the whole World ought not only to receive with great Zeal and Affection, but also ought most religiously to reverence and honour. This perswadeth vehemently, when we so argue from the Examples and Laws of Men. Therefore he saith; *I speak after the Manner of Men*; that is to say, I bring unto you a Similitude taken of the Custom and Manner of Men. As if he should say; The Testament of Men and such other corruptible Things are straitly executed, and that which the Law commandeth, is diligently observed and kept. For when a Man maketh his last Will, bequeathing his Lands and Goods to his Heirs, and thereupon dieth, this last Will is confirmed and ratified by the Death of the Testator, so that nothing now may be either added to it, or taken from it, according to all Law and Equity. Now, if a Man's Will be kept with so great Fidelity, that nothing is added to it or taken from it after his Death; How much more ought the last Will of God to be faithfully kept, which he promised and gave unto *Abraham* and his Seed after him? For when *Christ* died, then was it confirmed in him, and after his Death the writing of his last Testament was opened; that is to say, the promised Blessing of *Abraham* was preached among all Nations dispersed throughout the whole World. This was the last Will and Testament of God the great Testator, confirmed by the Death of *Christ*, therefore no Man ought to change it or to add any Thing to it, as they that teach the Law and Man's Traditions do. For they say, unless thou be circumcised, keep the Law, do many Works, and suffer many Things, thou canst not be saved. This is not the last Will and Testament of God. For he

A Testament or last Will is confirmed by the Death of him that maketh it.

The Testament of God ought to be kept more faithfully then Man's Testament.

said

said not unto *Abraham*, if thou do this or that, thou shalt obtain the Blessing; or they that be circumcised and keep the Law shall obtain the same; but he saith, *In thy Seed shall all the Nations of the Earth be blessed*. As if he would say; I of mere Mercy do promise unto thee, that Christ shall come of thy Seed, who shall bring the Blessing upon all Nations oppressed with Sin and Death; that is to say, which shall deliver the Nations from the everlasting Curse; to wit, from Sin and Death, receiving this Promise by Faith; *In thy Seed*, &c.

Who are the Destroyers of God's Testament. Wherefore, even as the false Apostles were in Time past, so are all the *Papists* and *Justiciaries* at this Day, Perverters and Destroyers, not of Man's Testament (because they are forbidden by the Law) but of God's Testament, whom they fear nothing at all, altho' he be a consuming Fire. For such is the Nature of all Hypocrites, that they will observe Man's Law exactly. But the Laws of God they do despise, and most wickedly transgress. But the Time shall come when they shall bear an horrible Judgment, and shall feel what it is to condemn and pervert the Testament of God. This Argument then grounded upon the Ordinance of God, is strong enough.

**Verse 16.** *Now to Abraham and his Seed were the Promises made. He saith not, And to Seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy Seed, which is Christ.*

Here by a new Name he calleth the Promises of God made unto *Abraham*, concerning Christ that should bring the Blessing unto all Nations, a Testament. And indeed the Promise is nothing else but a Testament, not yet revealed but sealed up. Now, a Testament is not a Law, but a Donation or free Gift. For Heirs look not for Laws, Exactions, or any Burdens to be laid upon them by the Testament, but they look for the Inheritance confirmed thereby.

First of all therefore he expoundeth the Words. Afterwards he applyeth the Similitude, and standeth upon this Word *Seed*. There were no Laws given unto *Abraham* (saith he) but a Testament was made and delivered unto him; that is to say, the Promises were pronounced unto him as touching the spiritual Blessing; therefore somewhat was promised and given unto him. If then the Testament of a Man be kept; Why should not rather the Testament of God be kept, whereof the Testament of Man is but a Sign. Again, if we will keep the Signs, Why do we not rather keep the Things which they signify?

Now, the Promises are made unto him, not in all the *Jews* or in many Seeds, but in one *Seed*, which is Christ. The *Jews* will not receive this Interpretation of *Paul*; for they say, that the singular Num-

ber is here put for the plural, one for many. But we gladly receive the Meaning and Interpretation of *Paul*, who oftentimes repeateth this Word *Seed*, and expoundeth this *Seed* to be Christ; and this he doth with an Apostolick Spirit. Let the *Jews* deny it as much as they will; we notwithstanding have Arguments strong enough, which *Paul* hath before rehearsed, which also confirm this Thing, and they cannot deny them. Hitherto, as touching the Similitude of God's Ordinance, that is to say of Man's Testament. Now he expoundeth and applieth the same.

Christ is the Seed promised to *Abraham*.

*Verse 17. And this I say, that the Covenant that was confirmed before of God in Christ, the Law which was four hundred and thirty Years after, cannot disannul, that it should make the Promise of none Effect.*

Here the *Jews* might object, that God was not only content to give Promises to *Abraham*, but also after four hundred and thirty Years he made the Law. God therefore mistrusting his own Promises, as insufficient to justify, added there-to a better Thing, that is to say, the Law, to the End that when the same, as a better Successor, was come, not the idle, but the Doers of the Law might be made righteous thereby: The Law therefore which followed the Promise, did abrogate the Promise. Such Evasions and starting Holes the *Jews* seek out.

An Objection of the *Jews*.

To this Cavillation *Paul* answereth very well and to the Purpose, and strongly confuteth the same. The Law (saith he) was given four hundred and thirty Years after this Promise was made, *In thy Seed*, &c. and it could not make the Promise void and unprofitable: For the Promise is the Testament of God, confirmed by God himself in Christ so many Years before the Law. Now, that which God once hath promised and confirmed, he calleth not back again, but it remaineth ratified and sure for ever.

*Paul* confuteth the Objection of the *Jews*.

Why then was the Law added? Indeed it was delivered so many Ages after, to the Posterity of *Abraham*, not to the End he might thro' it obtain the Blessing (for it is the Office of the Law to bring Men under the Curse, and not to bless;) but that there might be in the World a certain People which might have the Word and Testimony of Christ, out of the which, Christ also according to the Flesh, might be born; and that Men being kept and shut up under the Law, might sigh and grone for their Deliverance thro' the Seed of *Abraham*, which is Christ; which only should and could bless, that is to say, deliver all Nations from Sin and everlasting Death. Moreover the Ceremonies commanded in the Law, did foreshadow Christ. Wherefore the Promise was not abolished.

Why the Law is added to the Promise.

The Promise is confirmed, and therefore not abolished by the Law.

ed either by the Law, or by the Ceremonies of the Law ; but rather by the same, as by certain Seals, it was for a Time confirmed, until the Letters themselves or the Writing of the Testament (*to wit*, the Promise) might be opened, and by the Preaching of the Gospel might be spread abroad among all Nations.

But let us suffer the Law and the Promise to encounter together, and then shall we see which of them is the stronger, that is to say, whether the Promise be able to abolish the Law, or the Law the Promise : If the Law abolish the Promise, then it followeth, that we by

What Incommodity should follow, if the Law should abolish the Promise.

our Works make God a Liar, and his Promise of none Effect. For if the Law do justify us and deliver us from Sin and Death, and consequently our Works and our own Strength accomplishing the Law, then the Promise made unto *Abraham* is utterly void and unprofitable, and so consequently God is a Liar and a Dissembler. For when he which promiseth, will not perform his Promise, but maketh it of none Effect, What doth he else but shew himself to be a Liar and a Dissembler ? But it is impossi-

ble that the Law should make God a Liar, or that our Works should make the Promise void, nay rather it must needs be firm and stable for ever (for God promiseth not in vain) altho' we are able to keep and fulfil the Law. And let us admit that all Men were as holy as Angels, so that they should not need the Promise (which notwithstanding is impossible) yet must we think that the same Promise abideth most sure and certain, or else God should be found a Liar, which either hath promised in vain, or else will not or cannot perform his Promises. Therefore, like as the Promise was before the Law, so is it far more excellent then the Law.

The Law doth not abrogate the Promise; but Faith laying hold upon the Promise, doth abrogate the Law.

And God did excellently well in that he gave the Promise so long before the Law : Which he did of Purpose and to this End, that it should not be said, that Righteousness was given thro' the Law, and not thro' the Promise. For if he would that we should have been justified by the Law, then would he have given the Law four hundred and thirty Years before the Promise, or else together with the Promise. . But now at the first he speaketh not a Word as concerning the Law, but at the length after four hundred and thirty Years he giveth the Law.

In the mean while, all that Time he speaketh only of his Promises. Therefore the Blessing and free Gift of Righteousness came before the Law thro' the Promise : The Promise therefore is far more excellent then the Law. And so the Law doth not abolish the Promise, but Faith in the Promise (whereby the Believers even before Christ's Time were saved) which is now published by the Gospel throughout the whole World, destroyeth the Law, so that it cannot increase Sin any more, terrify Sinners, or bring them into Desperation, laying hold upon the Promise thro' Faith.

And in this also lieth a certain Vehemency specially to be noted, that he expressly setteth down the Number of four hundred and thirty Years. As if he would say; Consider with yourselves how long it was between the Promise given, and the Law. It is plain that *Abraham* received the Promise a long Time before the Law; for the Law was given to the People of *Israel* four hundred and thirty Years after: And this is an invincible Argument gathered and grounded upon a certain Time. And he speaketh not here of the Law in general, but only of the written Law. As if he would say; God could not then have regard to the Ceremonies and Works of the Law, and give Righteousness to the Observers thereof: For as yet the Law was not given, which commandeth Ceremonies, requireth Works, and promiseth Life to those that observe them, saying, *The Man that shall do these Things, shall live in them.* And altho' it promise such Things, yet it followeth not therefore that we obtain these Promises: For it saith, plainly, *The Man that shall do these Things, &c.* Now, it is certain that no Man can do them. Moreover, *Paul* saith that the Law cannot abolish the Promise; therefore that Promise made unto *Abraham* four hundred and thirty Years before the Law, remaineth firm and constant. And that the Matter may be better understood, I will declare the same by a Similitude; If a rich Man, not constrained, but of his own Good-will, should adopt one to be his Son, whom he knoweth not, and to whom he oweth nothing, and should appoint him to be the Heir of all his Lands and Goods, and certain Years after that he hath bestowed this Benefit upon him, he should lay upon him a Law to do this or that; he cannot now say that he hath deserved this Benefit by his own Works, seeing that many Years before, he asking nothing, had received the same freely and of mere Favour: So God could not respect our Works and Deserts going before Righteousness, for the Promise and the Gift of the Holy Ghost was four hundred and thirty Years before the Law.

Hereby it appeareth that *Abraham* obtained not Righteousness before God thro' the Law, for there was yet no Law: If there were yet no Law, then was there neither Work nor Merit. What then? Nothing else but the mere Promise: This Promise *Abraham* believed, and it was counted to him for Righteousness. By the self-same Means then that the Father obtained this Promise, the Children do also obtain it and retain it. So say we also at this Day, our Sins were purged by the Death of Christ above a thousand five hundred Years ago, when there were yet no religious Orders, no Canon or Rule of Penance; no Merits of Congruence and Worthiness. We cannot now therefore begin to abolish the same by our own Works and Merits.

Thus *Paul* gathereth Arguments of Similitudes, of a certain Time, and of Persons, so sure and strong on every Side, that no Man can deny them. Let us therefore arm and fortify our Consciences with such like Arguments; for it helpeth us exceedingly to have them always ready

*Abraham* was not made righteous by the Law, for when he lived there was no Law.

What Manner of Arguments *Paul* useth.

in Tentations : For they lead us from the Law and Works, to the Promise and to Faith, from Wrath to Grace, from Sin to Righteousness, and from Death to Life. Therefore these two Things, (as I do often repeat)

The Law  
and the Pro-  
mise must be  
distinguish-  
ed

to wit, the Law and the Promise, must be diligently distinguished : For in Time, in Place, and in Person, and generally in all other Circumstances they are separate as far asunder as Heaven and Earth, the Beginning of the World, and the latter End. Indeed they are near Neighbours, for they are joined together in one Man or in one Soul ; but in the outward Affection, and as touch-

ing their Office, they ought to be separate far asunder ; so that the Law may have Dominion over the Flesh, and the Promise may sweetly and comfortably reign in the Conscience. When thou hast thus appointed unto them both their own proper Place, then thou walkest safely between them both, in the Heaven of the Promise, and in the Earth of the Law : In Spirit thou walkest in the Paradise of Grace and Peace : In the Flesh thou walkest in the Earth of Works and of the Cross. And now the Troubles which the Flesh is

compelled to bear, shall not be hard unto thee, because of the Sweetness of the Promise, which comforteth and rejoiceth the Heart exceedingly. But now, if thou confound and mingle these two together, and place the Law in the Conscience, and the Promise of Liberty in the Flesh, then thou makest a Confusion (such as was in Poperie,) so that thou shalt not know what the Law, what the Promise, what Sin, or what Righteousness is.

Wherefore if thou wilt rightly divide the Word of Truth, thou must put a great Difference between the Promise and the Law, as touching the inward Affections and whole Practice of Life. It is not for naught that Paul persecuteth this Argument so diligently : For he foresaw in Spirit that this Mischief should creep into the Church, that the Word of God should be confounded,

that is to say, that the Promise should be mingled with the Law, and so the Promise should be utterly lost. For when the Promise is mingled with the Law, it is now made nothing else but the very Law. Therefore accustom thyself to separate the Promise and the Law asunder, even in respect of Time, that when the Law cometh and accuseth thy Conscience, thou mayst say ; Lady Law, thou comest not in Season, for thou comest too soon : Tarry yet until four hundred and thirty Years be expired, and when they are past, then come and spare not : But if thou come then, yet shalt thou come too late : For then hath the Promise prevented the four hundred and thirty Years ; to the which I assent, and sweetly repose myself in the same. Therefore I have nothing to do with thee, I hear thee not : For now I live with the believing Abraham, or rather, since Christ is now revealed and given unto me, I live in him, who is my Righteousness, who also hath abolished thee

thee O Law. And thus let Christ be always before thine Eyes, as a certain Summary of all Arguments for the Defence of Faith, against the Righteousness of the Flesh, against the Law, and against all Works and Merits whatsoever.

Hitherto I have rehearsed almost all, but specially the principal Arguments which the Apostle *Paul* handleth in this Epistle, for the Confirmation of this Doctrine of Justification. Among which, the Argument as touching the Promise made unto *Abraham* and to the other Fathers, is the weightiest and of greatest Efficacy, which *Paul* doth chiefly prosecute both here and in the Epistle to the *Romans*, the Words whereof he diligently weigheth, and moreover intreateth both of the Times and Persons. Also he standeth upon this Word *Seed*, applying the same unto Christ. Finally, He declareth by the contrary, what the Law worketh, namely, that it holdeth Men under the Curse. And thus he fortifieth the Article of Christian Righteousness with strong and mighty Arguments. On the other Side, he overthroweth the Arguments of the false Apostles, which they used in Defence of the Righteousness of the Law, and turneth them upon their own Heads, that is to say, whereas they contended that Righteousness and Life is obtained by the Law. *Paul* sheweth that it worketh nothing but Malediction and Death in us. Ye contend (saith he) that the Law is necessary to Salvation: Have ye not read that it saith, *He that shall do these Things shall live in them?* *Lev. xviii. 5.* Now, who is he that performeth and accomplisheth them? No Man living. Therefore, as many as are of the Works of the Law, are under the Curse, *Gal. iii. 10.* And again, in another Place, *The Sting of Death is Sin; and the Strength of Sin is the Law,* *1 Cor. xv. 56.* Now followeth the Conclusion of all these Arguments.

The Office  
of the Law.

Verse 18. *For if the Inheritance be of the Law, it is no more of Promise, &c.*

So he saith in *Rom. iv. 14.* *For if they which are of the Law be Heirs, Faith is made void, and the Promise made of none Effect.* And it cannot otherwise be; for this Distinction is plain, that the Law is a Thing differing from the Promise. Yea natural Reason, altho' it be never so blind, is compelled to confess, that it is one Thing to promise, and another Thing to require; one Thing to give, and another Thing to take; the Law requireth and exacteth of us our Works; the Promise of the *Seed* doth offer unto us the spiritual and everlasting Benefits of God, and that freely for Christ's Sake. Therefore we obtain the Inheritance or Blessing thro' the Promise, and not thro' the Law. For the Promise saith, *In thy Seed shall all Nations of the Earth be blessed.* Therefore he that hath the Law hath not enough, because he hath not yet the Blessing, without the which he is com-

To promise  
and to re-  
quire, are  
distinct  
Things.

The Inheri-  
tance is gi-  
ven by the  
Promise, and  
not by the  
Law.

pelled to abide under the Curse. The Law therefore cannot justify, because the Blessing is not joined unto it. Moreover, if the Inheritance were of the Law, then should God be found a Liar, and the Promise should be in vain. Again, if the Law could obtain the Blessing, Why did God then make this Promise, *In thy Seed*, &c? Why did he not rather say; Do this and thou shalt receive the Blessing; or else, by keeping of the Law, thou mayest deserve everlasting Life? This Argument is grounded upon Contraries: The Inheritance is given by the Promise; therefore not by the Law.

Verse 18. *But God gave it to Abraham by Promise.*

What the Blessing is which is given us thro' Christ.

It cannot be denied but that God, before the Law was, gave unto *Abraham* the Inheritance or Blessing by the Promise, that is to say, Remission of Sins, Righteousness, Salvation, and everlasting Life, that we should be Sons and Heirs of God, and Fellow-Heirs with Christ. For it is plainly said in *Genesis*, *In thy Seed shall all Families of the Earth be blessed.* There the Blessing is given freely without respect of the Law or Works. For God gave the Inheritance before *Moses* was born, or before any Man had yet once thought of the Law. Why vaunt ye then, that Righteousness cometh by the Law, seeing that Righteousness, Life and Salvation was given to your Father *Abraham* without the Law, yea before there was any Law? He that is not moved with these Things, is blind and obstinate. But this Argument of the Promise I have before handled more largely, and therefore I will but touch it by the Way.

The Sum of that which followeth in this Epistle.

Hitherto we have heard the 'principal Part of this Epistle. Now the Apostle goeth about to shew the Use and Office of the Law, adding certain Similitudes of the School-master, and of the little Heir: Also the Allegory of the two Sons of *Abraham*, *Isaac* and *Ishmael*, &c. Last of all he setteth forth certain Precepts concerning Manners.

Verse 19. *Wherefore then serveth the Law?*

When we teach that a Man is justified without the Law and Works, then doth this Question necessarily follow; If the Law do not justify, Why then was it given? Also why doth God charge us and burden us with the Law, if it do not justify? What is the Cause that we are so hardly exercised and vexed with it, if they which work but one Hour, are made equal with us which have born the Heat and Burden of the Day? When as that Grace is once published unto us which the Gospel setteth out, by and by ariseth this great murmuring, without the which the Gospel cannot be preached. The *Jews* had this Opinion, that if they kept the Law, they should be justified thereby, *Matth. xxii. 3.* Therefore when they heard the Gospel was preached concerning Christ, who

who came into the World to save, not the Righteous, but Sinners, and that they should go before them into the Kingdom of God, they were wonderfully offended, complaining that they had born the heavy Yoke of the Law so many Years with great Labour and Toil, and that they were miserably vexed and oppressed with the Tyranny of the Law, without any Profit, yea rather to their great hurt. Again, that the *Gentiles* who were Idolaters, obtained Grace without any Labour or Travel. So do our *Papists* mutmur at this Day, saying: What hath it profited us that we have lived in a Cloister 20, 30, or 40 Years; that we have vowed Chastity, Poverty, Obedience; that we have said so many Masses and so many Canonical Hours, and so many Masses; that we have so punished our Bodies with Fasting, Prayers, Chastisements, &c. if a Husband, a Wife, a Prince, a Governour, a Master, a Schollar; if an Hireling or a Drudge bearing Sacks, if a Wench sweeping the House shall not only be made equal with us, but also be accepted as better and more worthy before God then we?

This is therefore an hard Question, whereunto Reason cannot answer, but is greatly offended with it. Reason after a Sort understandeth the Righteousness of the Law, which also teacheth and urgeth, and imagineth that the Doers of it are righteous; but it understandeth not the Office and End of the Law. Therefore when it heareth this Sentence of *Paul*, (which is strange and unknown to the World) *that the Law was given for Transgressions*; Thus it judgeth; *Paul* abolisheth the Law, for he saith, that we are not justified thro' it: Yea, he is a Blasphemer against God which gave the Law, when he saith, *that the Law was given for Transgressions*. Let us live therefore as *Gentiles* which have no Law. Yea, let us sin and abide in Sin, that Grace may abound; Also, let us do evil that good may come thereof. This happened to the Apostle *Paul*, and the self-same happeneth at this Day unto us. For when the common People hear out of the Gospel, that Righteousness cometh by the mere Grace of God thro' Faith only, without the Law and without Works, they gather by and by of it, as did the *Jews* in Times past: If the Law do not justify, then let us work nothing; and this do they truly perform.

What should we then do? This Impiety doth indeed very much vex us, but we cannot remedy it. For when Christ preached, he must needs hear, that he was a Blasphemer and a seditious Person; that is to say, that thro' his Doctrine he deceived Men, and made them Rebels against *Jesus*. The self-same Thing happened to *Paul* and all the rest of the Apostles. And what marvel is it if the World in a like Manner accuse us at this Day? Let it accuse us, let it slander us, let it persecute us and spare not; yet must not we, therefore hold

The murmuring of the *Jews* against the Doctrine of *Paul*, for the stablishing of the Law.

The murmuring of the *Papists* against the Gospel.

The Judgment of Reason concerning the Doctrine of the Gospel, which teacheth that the Law was given for Transgressions.

Christ is judged to be a Blasphemer and a seditious Person.

our Peace, but speak freely, that afflicted Consciences may be delivered out of the Snares of the Devil. And we must not regard the foolish and ungodly People in that they do abuse our Doctrine; for whether they have a Law or no Law, they cannot be reformed. But we must consider how afflicted Consciences may be comforted, that they perish not with the Multitude. If we should dissemble and hold our Peace, miserable and afflicted Consciences should have no Comfort, which are so entangled and snared with Mens Laws and Traditions, that they can wind themselves out by no Means.

As *Paul* therefore, when he saw that some resisted his Doctrine, and other some sought the Liberty of the Flesh, and thereby became worse,

comforted himself after this Sort, that he was an Apostle of Jesus Christ sent to preach the Faith of God's Elect, and that he must suffer all Things for the Elects Sake, that they also might obtain Salvation; for we at this Day do all Things for the Elects Sake, whom we know to be edified and comforted thro' our Doctrine. But as for the

Dogs and Swine (of whom the one Sort persecuteth our Doctrine, and the other Sort treadeth under Foot the Liberty which we have in Christ Jesus) I am so offended with them, that in all my Life for their Sakes I would not utter so much as one Word; but I would rather wish that these Swine, together with our Adversaries the Dogs, were yet still subject to the Pope's Tyranny, rather then that the holy Name of God should be so blasphemed and evil spoken of thro' them.

Therefore, albeit not only the foolish and ignorant People, but they

The Law  
justifieth not,  
therefore it is  
unprofitable;  
is a naughty  
Conse-  
quence.

also which seem in their own Conceits to be very wise, do argue after this Sort; If the Law do not justify, then is it in vain and of none Effect; yet is it not therefore true. For like as this Consequence is nothing worth; Money doth not justify or make a Man righteous, therefore it is unprofitable; the Eyes do not justify, therefore they must be plucked out; the Hands make not a Man righteous, therefore they must be cut off: So is this naughty also; the Law doth not justify, therefore it is unprofitable;

for we must attribute unto every Thing his proper Effect and Use. We do not therefore destroy and condemn the Law, because we say, that it doth not justify; but we answer otherwise to this Question: *To what End then serveth the Law?* Then our Adversaries do, who do wickedly and perversely counterfeite an Office and Use of the Law which belongeth not unto it.

Against this Abuse and forged Office of the Law, we dispute and answer with *Paul*, that the Law doth not justify. But in so saying, we affirm not that the Law is unprofitable, as they do by and by gather.

If the Law do not justify (say they) then is it given in vain. No not so. For it hath his proper Office and Use, but not that which the Adversaries do imagine, namely, to make Men righteous; but it accuseth, terrifieth, and condemneth them. We say with *Paul*, that the Law is

good,

good, if a Man do rightly use it ; that is to say, if he use the Law as the Law. If I give unto the Law his proper Definition, and keep it within the Compass of his Office and Use, it is an excellent Thing. But if I translate it to another Use, and attribute that unto it which I should not, then do I not only pervert the Law, but also the whole Scripture.

Therefore *Paul* fighteth here against those pestilent Hypocrites, who could not abide this Sentence : *The Law was added for Transgressions*. For they think that the Office of the Law is to justify. And this is the general Opinion of Man's Reason among the *Sophisters*, and throughout the whole World, that Righteousness is gotten thro' the Works of the Law. And Reason will by no Means suffer this pernicious Opinion to be wrested from it, because it understandeth not the Righteousness of Faith. Hereof it cometh that the *Papists* both foolishly and wickedly do say ; The Church hath the Law of God, the Traditions of the Fathers, the Decrees of Councils ; if it live after them, it is holy. No Man shall persuade these Men, that when they keep these Things, they please not God, but provoke his Wrath. To conclude, they that trust in their own Righteousness, think to pacify the Wrath of God by their Will-worship and voluntary Religion. Therefore this Opinion of the Righteousness of the Law is the Sink of all Evils, and the Sin of Sins of the whole World. For gross Sins and Vices may be known and so amended, or else repressed by the Punishment of the Magistrate. But this Sin, *to wit*, Man's Opinion concerning his own Righteousness, will not only be counted no Sin, but also will be esteemed for an high Religion and Righteousness. This pestilent Sin therefore is the mighty Power of the Devil over the whole World, the very Head of the Serpent, and the Snare whereby the Devil intangleth and holdeth all Men captive. For naturally all Men have this Opinion, that they are made righteous by keeping of the Law. *Paul* therefore to the End he might shew the true Office and Use of the Law, and might root out of Mens Hearts that false Opinion concerning the Righteousness thereof, answereth to this Objection : Wherefore then serveth the Law if it justify not ? After this Sort : It was not given to make Men righteous (saith he) but,

When the Law is good.

All Men naturally judge that the Law doth justify.

Reason is ignorant of the Righteousness of Faith.

The great Power of the Devil throughout the whole World.

Verse 19. *It was added because of Transgressions,*

As Things are divers and distinct, so the Uses thereof are divers and distinct : Therefore they may not be confounded. For if they be, there must needs be a Confusion of the Things also. A Woman may not wear a Man's Apparel, nor a Man a Woman's Attire. Let a Man do the Works that belong to a Man, and a Woman the Works that belong to a Woman. Let every Man do that which his Vocation and

Office requireth. Let Pastors and Preachers teach the Word of God purely. Let Magistrates govern their Subjects, and let Subjects obey their Magistrates. Let every Thing serve in his due Place and Order. Let the Sun shine by Day, the Moon and the Stars by Night; let the Sea give Fishes; the Earth, Grain; the Woods, wild Beasts and Trees, &c. In like Manner let not the Law usurp the Office and Use of another, that is to say, of Justification, but let it leave this only to Grace, to the Promise and to Faith. What is then the Office of the Law? Transgressions, or else (as he saith in another Place;) *The Law entred in, that Sin might abound*, Rom. v. 20. A goodly Office footsooth. *The Law* (saith he) *was added for Transgressions*; that is to say, it was added besides and after the Promise, until Christ the Seed should come, unto whom it was promised.

### Of the double Use of the Law.

The Use of  
politick  
Laws.

All Laws are  
given to  
bridle Trans-  
gressions.

**H**ere ye must understand that there is a double Use of the Law: One is civil: For God hath ordained civil Laws, yea all Laws to punish Transgressions. Every Law then is given to restrain Sin. If it restrain Sin, then it maketh Men righteous. No, nothing less. For in that I do not kill, I do not commit Adultery, I do not steal, or in that I abstain from other Sins, I do it not willingly or for the Love of Vertue, but I fear the

Prison, the Sword and the Hangman. These do bridle and restrain me that I sin not, as Bonds and Chains restrain a Lion or a Bear, that he tear and devour not every Thing that he meeteth; therefore the restraining from Sin is not Righteousness, but rather a Signification of Unrighteousness. For as a mad or wild Beast is bound lest he should destroy every Thing that he meeteth, even so the Law doth bridle a mad and a furious Man, that he sin not after his own Lust. This Restraint sheweth plainly enough that they which have need of the Law (as all they have which are without Christ) are not righteous, but rather wicked and mad Men, whom it is necessary by the Bonds and Prison of the Law so to bridle that they sin not. Therefore the Law justifieth not.

The first Use then of the Law is, to bridle the Wicked. For the Devil reigneth throughout the whole World, and enforceth Men to all Kinds of horrible Wickedness. Therefore God hath ordained Magistrates, Parents, Ministers, Laws, Bonds, and all civil Ordinances, that if they can do no more, yet at the least they may bind the Devil's Hands, that he rage not in his Bond-slaves after his own Lust. Like as therefore they that are possessed, in whom the Devil mightily reigneth, are kept in Bonds and Chains lest they should hurt others; even so in the World, which is possessed of the Devil, and carried headlong into all

Kinds of Wickedness, the Magistrate is present with his Bonds and Chains; that is to say, with his Laws, binding his Hands and Feet that

that he run not headlong into all Mischief. And if he suffer not himself to be bridled after this Sort, then he loseth his Head. This civil Restraint is very necessary and appointed of God, as well for publick Peace, as also for the Preservation of all Things, but especially lest the Course of the Gospel should be hindered by the Tumults and Seditions of wicked, outrageous and proud Men. But *Paul* intreateth not here of this civil Use and Office of the Law. It is indeed very necessary, but it justifieth not. For as a possessed or mad Man is not therefore free from the Snares of the Devil or well in his Mind, because he hath his Hands and his Feet bound and can do no hurt; even so the World, altho' it be bridled by the Law from outward Wickedness and Mischief, yet it is not therefore righteous, but still continueth wicked; yea this Restraint sheweth plainly that the World is wicked and outrageous, stirred up and enforced to all Wickedness by his Prince the Devil; for otherwise it need not to be bridled by Laws that it should not sin.

Another Use of the Law is divine and spiritual, which is (as *Paul* saith) to increase Transgressions; that is to say, to reveal unto a Man his Sins, his Blindness, his Misery, his Impiety, Ignorance, Hatred, and Contempt of God, Death, Hell, the Judgment and deserved Wrath of God. Of this Use the Apostle intreateth notably in the 7th to the *Romans*. This is altogether unknown to Hypocrites, to the Popish *Sophisters* and School-divines, and to all that walk in the Opinion of the Righteousness of the Law, or of their own Righteousness. But to the End that God might bridle and beat down this Monster and this mad Beast (I mean the Presumption of Man's Righteousness and Religion) which naturally maketh Men proud, and puffeth them up in such Sort, that they think themselves thereby to please God highly; it behoved him to send some \* *Hercules* which might set upon this Monster with all Force and Courage to overthrow him, and utterly to destroy him; that is to say, he was constrained to give a Law in Mount *Sinai*, with so great Majesty and with so terrible a Shew, that the whole Multitude was astonished, *Exod.* xix. and xx.

This, as it is the proper and the principal Use of the Law: So is it very profitable and also most necessary. For if any be not a Murderer, an Adulterer, a Thief, and outwardly refrain from Sin, as the *Pharisee* did which is mentioned in the Gospel, he would swear (because he is possessed with the Devil) that he is righteous, and therefore he continueth an Opinion of Righteousness, and presumeth of his good Works and Merits. Such a one God cannot otherwise mollify and humble, that he may acknowledge his Misery and Damnation but by the Law. For that is the Hammer of Death, the thundering

This civil Restraint of the Law is necessary.

The spiritual Use of the Law unknown to Reason.

\* *Hercules* was a mighty Champion which slew the great Monster *Hydra* (as the Poets feign) which had a hundred Necks with Serpents Heads.

Hypocrites are feared and humbled by the Law.

of

of Hell, and lightning of God's Wrath, that beateth to Powder the obstinate and senseless Hypocrites. Wherefore this is the proper and true Use of the Law, by Lightning, by Tempest, and by the Sound of the Trumpet (as in the Mount *Sinai*) to terrify, and by thundring to beat down and rent in Pieces that Beast which is called the Opinion of Righteousness.

Therefore saith God by *Jeremiah* the Prophet; *My Word is a Hammer breaking Rocks*, Jer. xxiii. 29. For, as long as the Opinion of Righteousness abideth in Man, so long there abideth also in him incomprehensible Pride, Presumption, Security, Hatred of God, Contempt of his Grace and Mercy, Ignorance of the Promises and of Christ. The Preaching of free Remission of Sin thro' Christ cannot enter into the Heart of such a one, neither can he feel any Taste or Savour thereof. For that mighty Rock and Adamant Wall, *to wit*, the Opinion of Righteousness, wherewith the Heart is environed, doth resist it.

As therefore the Opinion of Righteousness is a great and an horrible Monster, a rebellious, obstinate and stiff-necked Beast; so for the destroying and overthrowing thereof, God hath need of a mighty Hammer, that is to say, the Law; which then is in his proper Use and Office, when it accuseth and revealeth Sin after this Sort: Behold thou hast transgressed all the Commandments of God, &c. and so it striketh a Terror into the Conscience, so that it feeleth God to be offended and angry indeed, and itself to be guilty of eternal Death.

Here the poor afflicted Sinner feeleth the intollerable Burden of the Law, and is beaten down even to Desperation, so that now being oppressed with great Anguish and Terror, he desireth Death, or else seeketh to destroy himself.

Wherefore the Law is that Hammer, that Fire, that mighty strong Wind, and that terrible Earthquake renting the Mountains, and breaking the Rocks, that is to say, the proud and obstinate Hypocrites. *Elias*, not being able to abide these Terrors of the Law, which by these Things are signified, covered his Face with his Mantle. Notwithstanding when the Tempest ceased, of which he was a Beholder, there came a soft and a gracious Wind, in the which the Lord was. But it behoved that the Tempest of Fire, of Wind, and the Earthquake should pass, before the Lord should reveal himself in that gracious Wind, 1 *Kings* xix. 11, 12, 13.

This terrible Shew and Majesty wherein God gave his Law in Mount *Sinai*, did represent the Use of the Law. There was in the People of *Israel* which came out of *Egypt*, a singular Holiness. They gloried and said; *We are the People of God: We will do all those Things which the Lord our God hath commanded*, Exod. xix. 18. Moreover, *Moses* did sanctify the People, and bad them wash their Garments, refrain from their Wives, and prepare themselves against the third Day. There was not one of them but he was full of Holiness. The third Day *Moses* bringeth the People out of their Tents to the Mountains unto the Sight of the Lord, that they might

might hear his Voice. What followed then? When the Children of *Israel* did behold the horrible Sight of the Mount smoaking and burning, the black Clouds, and the Lightnings flashing up and down in this horrible Darkness, and heard the Sound of the Trumpet blowing long and waxing louder and louder: And moreover, when they heard the Thunderings and Lightnings, they were afraid, and standing afar off, they said unto *Moses*; *We will do all Things willingly, so that the Lord speak not unto us, lest that we die, and this great Fire consume us. Teach thou us, and we will hearken unto thee,* *Exod. xx. 19.*

I pray you, What did their Purifying, their Holiness, their white Garments, and refraining from their Wives profit them? Nothing at all. There was not one of them that could abide this Presence of the Lord in his Majesty and Glory; but all being amazed and shaken with Terror, fled back as if they had been driven by the Devil. For God is a consuming Fire, in whose Sight no Flesh is able to stand, *Deut. iv. 24.*

The Law of God therefore hath properly and peculiarly that Office which it had then in Mount *Sinai*, when it was first given, and was first heard of them that were washed, righteous, purified and chaste; and yet notwithstanding it brought that holy People unto such a Knowledge of their own Misery, that they were thrown down even to Death and Desperation. No Purity nor Holiness could then help them; but there was in them such a feeling of their own Uncleanneſs, Unworthineſs and Sin, and of the Judgment and Wrath of God, that they fled from the Sight of the Lord, and could not abide to hear his Voice. *For who is there of all Flesh, (say they) that hath heard the Voice of the living God, speaking out of the midst of the Fire (as we have) and lived? We have seen this Day that God doth talk with Man, and he liveth,* *Deut. v. 24, 26.* They speak now far otherwise then they did a little before, when they said; We are the holy People of God, whom the Lord hath chosen for his own peculiar People before all Nations upon the Earth: We will do all Things which the Lord hath spoken. So it happeneth at length to all Justiciaries, who being drunken with the Opinion of their own Righteousness, do think when they are out of Tentation, that they are beloved of God, and that God regardeth their Vows, their Fastings, their Prayers, and their Will-works, and that for the same he must give unto them a singular Crown in Heaven. But when that Thundring, Lightning, Fire, and that Hammer which breaketh in Pieces the Rocks, that is to say, the Law of God cometh suddenly upon them, revealing unto them their Sin, the Wrath and Judgment of God; then the self-same Thing happeneth unto them which happened to the *Jews* standing at the Foot of Mount *Sinai*.

The Children of *Israel* could not abide the Voice of God speaking out of the Fire.

The *Jews* were afraid at the Voice of the Law.

The same happeneth to Hypocrites and such as put Righteousness in Works, that happened to the *Jews* standing at Mount *Sinai*.

Here

Here I admonish all such as fear God, and especially such as shall become Teachers of others hereafter, that they diligently learn out of *Paul* to understand the true and proper Use of the Law; which (I fear) after our Time will be trodden under Foot, and utterly abolished by the Enemies of the Truth. For even now, whiles we are yet living, and employ all our Diligence to set forth the Office and Use both of the Law and the Gospel, there be very few, yea even among those which will be counted Christians, and make a Profession of the Gospel with us, that understand these Things rightly, and as they should do.

What think ye then shall come to pass when we are dead and gone? I speak nothing of the *Anabaptists*, of the new *Arrians*, and such other vain Spirits, who are no less ignorant of these Matters, then are the *Papists*, altho' they talk never so much to the contrary. For they are revolted from the pure Doctrine of the Gospel, to Laws and Traditions, and therefore they teach not Christ. They brag and they swear that they seek nothing else but the Glory of Christ, and the Salvation of their Brethren, and that they teach the Word of God purely; but in very deed they corrupt it and wrest it to another Sense, so that they make it to sound according to their own Imagination. Therefore under the Name of Christ, they teach nothing else but their own Dreams, and under the Name of the Gospel, Ceremonies and Laws. They are like therefore unto themselves, and so they still continue; that is to say, *Monks*, Workers of the Law, and Teachers of Ceremonies saving that they devise new Names and new Works.

It is no small Matter then to understand rightly what the Law is, and what is the true Use and Office thereof. And forasmuch as we teach these Things both diligently and faithfully, we do thereby plainly testify, that we reject not the Law and Works, as our Adversaries do falsely accuse us; but we do altogether stablish the Law, and require the Works thereof, and we say that the Law is good and profitable; but in his own proper Use; which is, first to bridle civil Transgressions, and then, to reveal and to increase spiritual Transgressions. Wherefore the Law is also a Light, which sheweth and revealeth, not the Grace of God, not Righteousness and Life; but Sin and Death. the Wrath and Judgment of God. For, as in the Mount *Sinai*, the Thundring, Lightning, the thick and dark Cloud, the Hill smoaking and flaming, and all that terrible Shew did not rejoice nor quicken the Children of *Israel*, but terrified and astonished them, and shewed how unable they were, with all their Purity and Holiness, to abide the Majesty of God speaking to them out of the Cloud; even so the Law, when it is in his true Use, doth nothing else but reveal Sin, ingender Wrath, accuse and terrify Men, so that it bringeth them to the very Brink of Desperation. This is the proper Use of the Law, and here it hath an End, and it ought to go no further.

Contrariwise, the Gospel is a Light which lightneth, quickneth, comforteth and raiseth up fearful Consciences. For it sheweth that God for Christ's Sake is merciful unto Sinners,

The Light of the Gospel.

For it sheweth that God for Christ's Sake is merciful unto Sinners,

Sinners, yea and to such as are most unworthy, if they believe that by his Death they are delivered from the Curse, that is to say, from Sin and everlasting Death; and that thro' his Victory the Blessing is freely given unto them, that is to say, Grace, Forgiveness of Sins, Righteousness and everlasting Life. Thus putting a Difference between the Law and the Gospel, we give to them both their own proper Use and Office. Of this Difference between the Law and the Gospel, there is nothing to be found in the Books of the *Monks, Canonists, Schoolmen*, no nor in the Books of the ancient Fathers. *Augustine* did somewhat understand this Difference and shewed it. *Jerome* and others knew it not. Briefly, there was wonderful Silence many Years as touching this Difference in all Schools and Churches: And this brought Mens Consciences into great Danger. For unless the Gospel be plainly discerned from the Law, the true Christian Doctrine cannot be kept sound and uncorrupt. Contrariwise, if this Difference be well known, then is also the true Manner of Justification known, and then it is an easy Matter to discern Faith from Works, Christ from *Moses* and all polinick Works. For all Things without Christ are the Ministers of Death for the punishing of the Wicked. Therefore *Paul* answereth to this Question after this Manner:

The proper Use and Office of the Gospel.

The Doctrine of Faith cannot remain sound, unless the Law be rightly discerned from the Gospel.

Verse 19. *It was added because of Transgressions,*

That is to say, that Transgressions might increase and be more known and seen. And indeed so it cometh to pass. For when Sin, Death, the Wrath and Judgment of God and Hell, are revealed to a Man thro' the Law; it is impossible but that he should become impatient, murmur against God, and despise his Will. For he cannot bear the Judgment of God, his own Death and Damnation; and yet notwithstanding he cannot escape them. Here he must needs fall into the Hatred of God, and Blasphemy against God. Before, when he was out of Temptation, he was a very holy Man, he worshipped and praised God, he bowed his Knee before God, and gave him Thanks, as the *Pharisee* did, *Luke xviii. 11.* But now, when Sin and Death is revealed unto him, he wisheth that there were no God. The Law therefore of itself bringeth a special Hatred of God. And thus Sin is not only revealed and known by the Law, but also is increased and stirred up by the Law. Therefore *Paul* saith, *Rom. vii. Sin that it might appear to be Sin, wrought Death in me by that which was good, that Sin might be out of Measure sinful by the Commandment.* There he intreateth of this Effect of the Law very largely.

*Paul* answereth therefore to this Question; If the Law do not justify, To what End then serveth it? Altho' (saith he) it justify not, yet is it very profitable and necessary. For first it civilly restraineth such as are car-

The double Use of the Law.

nal, rebellious and obstinate. Moreover it is a Glass that sheweth unto a Man himself, that he is a Sinner, guilty of Death, and worthy of God's everlasting Wrath and Indignation. To what End serveth this humbling, this bruising and beating down by this Hammer, the Law I mean? To this End, that we may have an Entrance un-

The Law a Minister for the obtaining of Grace. So then the Law is a Minister that prepareth the Way unto Grace. For God is the God of the humble, the miserable, the afflicted, the oppressed and the desperate, and of those that are brought even to nothing;

and his Nature is to exalt the humble, to feed the hungry, to give Sight to the blind, to comfort the miserable, the afflicted, the bruised and broken-hearted, to justify Sinners, to quicken the dead, and to save the very desperate and damned. For he is an almighty Creator, making all Things of nothing. Now, that pernicious and pestilent Opinion of Man's own Righteousness, which will not be a Sinner, unclean, miserable, and damnable; but righteous and holy, suffereth not God to come to his own natural and proper Work. Therefore God must needs take this Maul in Hand, the Law I mean, to drive down, to beat in Pieces, and to bring to nothing this Beast, with her vain Confidence, Wisdom, Righteousness and Power, that she may so

The Doctrine of the Gospel belongeth to those which are terrified with the Law.

learn at the length by her own Misery and Mischief, that she is utterly forelorn, lost and damned. Here now when the Conscience is thus terrified with the Law, then cometh the Doctrine of the Gospel and Grace, which raiseth up and comforteth the same again, saying, Christ came into the World, *not to break the bruised Reed, nor to quench the smoking Flax*, Isa. xlii. 3. *but to preach the Gospel of glad Tidings to the poor, to heal the broken and contrite in Heart, to preach Forgiveness of Sins to the Captives, &c.* Matth. xii. 20.

But here lieth all the Difficulty of this Matter, that when a Man is terrified and cast down he may be able to raise up himself again, and say; Now I am bruised and afflicted enough, the Time of the Law hath tormented and vexed me sharply enough. Now is the Time of Grace, now is the Time to hear Christ, out of whose Mouth proceed the Words of Grace and Life. Now is the Time to see,

not the smoking and burning Mount *Sinai*, but the Mount *Moria*, where is the Throne, the Temple, the Mercy-Seat of God, that is to say, Christ, who is the King of Righteousness and Peace. There will I hearken what the Lord speaketh unto him, who speaketh nothing else but Peace unto his People.

Reason flieth not to the Doctrine of Grace in Temptations but to the Doctrine of the Law.

Nay the Foolishness of Man's Heart is so great, that in this Conflict of Conscience, when the Law hath done his Office and exercised his true Ministry, he doth not only not lay hold upon the Doctrine of Grace, which promiseth most assuredly the Forgiveness of Sins for Christ's Sake,

but

it seeketh and procureth to himself more Laws to satisfy and quiet his conscience. If I live (saith he) I will amend my Life, I will do this, I will do that. Here, except thou do the quite contrary, that is to say, except thou send *Moses* away with his Law, to those that are secure, proud and obstinate, and in these Terrors and this Anguish lay hold upon Christ, who was crucified and died for thy Sins, look for no Salvation.

So the Law with his Office helpeth by Occasion to Justification, in that it driveth a Man to the Promise of Grace, and maketh the same sweet and comfortable unto him. Wherefore we do not abrogate the Law, but we shew the true Office and Use of the Law, *to wit*, that it is a true and a profitable Minister, which driveth a Man to Christ. Therefore, after that the Law hath humbled thee, terrified thee, and utterly beaten thee down, so that now thou art at the very Brink of Desperation, see that thou learn how to use the Law rightly. For the Office and Use of it is, not only to reveal Sin and the Wrath of God, but also to drive Men unto Christ. This Use of the Law the Holy Ghost only setteth forth in the Gospel, where he witnesseth that God is present unto the afflicted and broken-hearted. Wherefore if thou be bruised with this Hammer, use not this bruising perversely, so that thou load thyself with more Laws, but hear Christ saying, *Come unto me all ye that labour, and are heavy laden, and I will give you Rest*, Matth. xi. 28. When the Law so oppresseth thee that all Things seem to be utterly desperate, and thereby driveth thee unto Christ to seek Help and Succour at his Hands, then is the Law in his true Use, and thro' the Gospel it helpeth to Justification. And this is the best and most perfect Use of the Law.

The Law not only sheweth unto a Man his Sin, but also driveth him to Christ.

The most perfect Use of the Law.

Wherefore *Paul* here beginneth afresh to intreat of the Law, and defineth what it is, taking Occasion of that which he said before, *to wit*, that the Law justifieth not. For Reason bearing this, by and by doth thus infer: Then God gave the Law in vain. It was necessary therefore to seek how to define the Law truly, and to shew what the Law is, and how it ought to be understood, that it be not taken more largely or more straitly then it should be. There is no Law (saith he) that is of itself necessary to Justification. Therefore when we reason as touching Righteousness, Life, and everlasting Salvation, the Law must be utterly removed out of our Sight, as if it had never been, or never should be, but as tho' it were nothing at all. For in the Matter of Justification no Man can remove the Law far enough out of his Sight, or behold the only Promise of God sufficiently and as he should do. Therefore I said before that the Law and the Promise must be separate far asunder as touching the inward Affections and the inward Man, albeit indeed they are nearly joined together.

Verse 19. Till the Seed should come, to whom the Promise was made;

*Paul*

*Paul* maketh not the Law perpetual, but he saith that it was given and added to the Promises for Transgressions ; that is to say, to restrain them civilly, but specially to reveal and to increase them spiritually, and that not continually, but for a Time. Here it is necessary to know how long the Power and the Tyranny of the Law ought to endure, which discovereth Sin, sheweth unto us what we are, and revealeth the Wrath of God. They whose Hearts are touched with an inward Feeling of these Matters, should suddenly perish if they should not receive Comfort. Therefore if the Days of the Law should not be shortened, no Man should be saved. A Time therefore must be set, and Bounds li-

mitted to the Law, beyond the which it may not reign.

How long  
the Domi-  
nion of the  
Law endu-  
reth.

How long then ought the Dominion of the Law to endure? Until the Seed come, *to wit*, that Seed of which it is written, *In thy Seed shall all the Families of the Earth be blessed.* The Tyranny of the Law then must so long continue until the Fulness of the Time, and until that Seed of the Blessing come ; not to the End that the Law should

bring this Seed or give Righteousness, but that it should civilly restrain the rebellious and obstinate, and shut them up, as it were in a Prison ; and then spiritually should reprove them of Sin, humble them and terrify them, and when they are thus humbled and beaten down, it should constrain them to look up to that blessed Seed.

The Law ac-  
cording to  
the letter  
ceased at the  
coming of  
Christ.

We may understand the Continuance of the Law both according to the letter, and also spiritually. According to the letter thus ; that the Law continued until the Time of Grace. *For all the Prophets and the Law* (saith Christ) *prophefied until John. And from the Days of John the Baptist, until now, the Kingdom of Heaven suffereth Violence, and the violent take it by Force,* Matth. xi. 12,

13. In this Time Christ was baptized and began to preach. At what Time also, after the letter, the Law and all the Ceremonies of *Moses* ceased.

How long  
the Law must  
reign in the  
Conscience.

Spiritually the Law may be thus understood, that it ought not to reign in the Conscience any longer then to the appointed Time of this blessed Seed. When the Law sheweth unto me my Sin, terrifieth me, and revealeth the Wrath and Judgment of God, so that I begin to trem-

ble and to despair ; there hath the Law his Bounds, his Time and his End limited, so that he now ceaseth to exercise his Tyranny any more. For when he hath done his Office sufficiently, he hath revealed the Wrath of God, and terrified enough. Here we must say ; now leave off Law ; thou hast done enough ; thou hast terrified and tormented me enough. *All thy Waves and thy Billows are gone over me, and thy Terrors have troubled me,* Psal. xlii. 7. *lxix. 2. Lord hide not thy Face far from me, put not thy Servant away in Anger,* Psal. xxvii. 9. *Rebuke me not, I beseech thee, in thine Anger, &c.* Psal. vi. 1. When these Terrors and Troubles come, then is the Time and the Hour of the blessed Seed come. Let the Law then give Place, which indeed is added to reveal

and to increase Transgressions, and yet no longer, but until that blessed Seed be come. When it is come, then let the Law leave off to reveal Sin and to terrify more; and let him deliver up his Kingdom to another; that is to say, to the blessed Seed, which is Christ; who hath gracious Lips, wherewith he accuseth and terrifieth not, but speaketh of far better Things then doth the Law, namely, of Grace, Peace, Forgiveness of Sins, Victory over Sin, Death, the Devil and Damnation, gotten by his Death and Passion unto all Believers.

Paul therefore sheweth by these Words, *Untill the Seed should come*, unto whom the Blessing was promised, how long the Law should endure literally and spiritually. According to the letter, it ceased after the blessed Seed came into the World, taking upon him our Flesh, giving the Holy Ghost, and writing a new Law in our Hearts. But the spiritual Time of the Law doth not end at once, but continueth fast rooted to the Conscience. Therefore it is a hard Matter for a Man which is exercised with the spiritual Use of the Law, to see the End of the Law.

For in these Terrors and feeling of Sin the Mind cannot conceive this Hope, that God is merciful, and that he will forgive Sins for Christ's Sake; but it judgeth only that God is angry with Sinners, and that he accuseth and condemneth them. If Faith comenot here to raise up again the troubled and afflicted Conscience, or else (according to that Saying of Christ; *Where two or three are gathered*

The Terrors of the Law are driven away by Faith.

*together in my Name*, &c. *Matth. xviii. 20.*) there be some faithful Brother at Hand that may comfort him by the Word of God, which is so oppressed and beaten down by the Law, Desperation and Death must needs follow. There it is a perilous Thing for a Man to be alone, *For he is to him that is alone* (saith the Preacher) *when he falleth; for he hath not another to help him up*, *Eccles. iv. 10.*

Wherefore they that ordained that cursed Monkish and solitary Life, gave Occasion to many Thousands to despair. If a Man should separate himself from the Company of others for a Day or two to be occupied in Prayer

The solitary or Monkish Life hath hurt many.

as we read of Christ, that sometime he went aside alone into the Mount, and by Night continued in Prayer, *Matth. xxvi. 39. Luke. xxii. 41.* there were no Danger therein. But when they constrained Men continually to live a solitary Life, it was a Device of the Devil himself. For when a Man is tempted and is alone, he is not able to raise up himself, no nor in the least Temptation that can be.

Verse 19. *And it was ordained by Angels in the Hand of a Mediator.*

This is a little Digression from this Purpose, which he neither denieth nor finisheth, but only toucheth it by the Way, and so proceedeth. For he returneth incontinent to his Purpose, when he saith; What, the Law then contrary to the Promises of God? Now, this was the

Occasion of his Digression. He fell into this Difference between the Law and the Gospel, that the Law added to the Promises, did differ from the Gospel, not only in Respect of the Time, but also of the Author and efficient Cause thereof. For the Law was delivered by the Angels, *Heb. i.* but the Gospel by the Lord himself. Wherefore the Gospel is far more excellent than the Law. For the Law is the Voice of the Servants, but the Gospel is the Voice of the Lord himself. Therefore to abase and to diminish the Authority of the Law, and to exalt and magnify the Gospel, he saith that the Law was a Doctrine given to continue but for a small Time (for it endured but only until the Fulness of the Promise; that is to say, until the blessed Seed came which fulfilled the Promise;) but the Gospel was for ever. For all the Faithful have had alway one and the self-same Gospel from the Beginning of the World, and by that they were saved. The Law therefore is far inferior to the Gospel, because it was ordained by the Angels which are but Servants, and endured but for a short Time, whereas the Gospel was ordained by the Lord himself, to continue for ever, *Heb. i.* For it was promised before the World began, *Tit. i. 2.*

Moreover the Word of the Law was not only ordained by the Angels being but Servants, but also by another Servant far inferior to the Angels, namely, by a Man, that is (as here he saith) by the Hand of a Mediator, that is to say, *Moses*. Now, Christ is not a Servant, but the Lord himself. He is not a Mediator between God and Man according to the Law, as *Moses* was; but he is a Mediator of a better Testament. The Law therefore was ordained by Angels as Servants. For *Moses* and the People heard God speaking in the Mount *Sinai*; that is to say, they heard the Angels speaking in the Person of God. Therefore *Stephen* saith in *Acts vii. 53.* *Ye have received the Law by the Disposition of Angels, and have not kept it.* Also the Text in *Exod. iii.* sheweth plainly, that the Angel appeared unto *Moses* in a Flame of Fire, and spake unto him from the midst of the Bush.

*Paul* therewith signifieth that Christ is a Mediator of a far better Testament then *Moses*. And here he alludeth to that History in *Moses* concerning the giving of the Law, which saith, that *Moses* led the People out of their Tents to meet with God, and that he placed them at the Foot of Mount *Sinai*. There was an heavy and an horrible Sight. The whole Mount was on a flaming Fire. When the People saw this, they began to tremble; for they thought that they should have been suddenly destroyed in this fearful Tempest. Because therefore they could not abide the Law sounding so horribly out of Mount *Sinai*, (for that terrifying Voice of the Law would have killed the People) they said unto *Moses* their Mediator; *Come thou hither and hear what the Lord saith, and speak thou unto us.* And he answered; *I myself* (saith he) *was a Mediator and one that stood between God and you, &c.* By these Places it is plain enough that *Moses* was appointed a Mediator between the People, and the Law speaking.

Wherefore *Paul* by this History goeth about to declare, that it is impossible that Righteousness should come by the Law. As if he should say

ay. How can the Law justify, seeing the whole People of *Israel*, being purified and sanctified, yea and *Moses* himself the Mediator between God and the People, were afraid and trembled at the Voice of the Law, as it is said in the Epistle to the *Hebrews*: Here was nothing but Fear and Trembling. But what Righteousness and Holiness is this, not to be able to bear, yea not to be able or willing to hear the Law, but to fly from it, and so to hate it, that it is impossible to hate and abhor any Thing more in the whole World? As the History most plainly testifieth, that the People when they heard the Law, did hate nothing more then the Law, and rather wished Death then to hear the Law.

So when Sin is discovered, as it were by certain bright Beams which the Law striketh into the Heart, there is nothing more odious and more intollerable to Man then the Law is. Here he would rather choose Death, than be constrained to bear these Terrors of the Law never so little a Time; which is a most certain Token that the Law justifieth not. For if the Law did justify, then (no doubt) Men would love it, they would delight and take Pleasure in it, and would embrace it with hearty Good-will. But where is this Good-will? No where; neither in *Moses*, nor in the whole People, for they were all astonished and fled back. And how doth a Man love that which he fleeth? Or how delighteth he in that which he deadly hateth.

Wherefore this Flight sheweth a deadly Hatred of Man's Heart against the Law, and so consequently against God himself the Author of the Law. And if there were no other Argument to prove that Righteousness cometh not by the Law, this one History were enough, which *Paul* setteth out in these Words; *In the Hand of a Mediator*. As tho' he would say; Do ye not remember that your Fathers were so far unable to hear the Law, that they had need of *Moses* to be their Mediator? And when he was now appointed to that Office, they were so far off from loving of the Law, that they by a fearful Flight, together with their Mediator, shewed themselves to hate the same, as the Epistle to the *Hebrews* witnesseth, and if they could, they would have gone even thro' an Iron Mountain back again into *Egypt*: But they were inclosed round about, so that they had no Way to escape. Therefore they cry unto *Moses*; *Speak thou with us, and we will hear: But let not God speak with us, lest we die*, *Exod. xx. 19. Dent. v. 24*. Now therefore, if they be not able to hear the Law, How should they be able to accomplish it?

Wherefore, if the People that were under the Law, were constrained of Necessity to have a Mediator, it followeth by an infallible Consequence, that the Law justified them not. What did it then? even the same Thing that *Paul* saith; *The Law entered, that the*

The Law  
terrifieth,  
therefore it  
justifieth  
not.

Nothing is  
more intol-  
lerable to  
Man then  
the Law.

All the Peo-  
ple fled a-  
way at the  
Voice of the  
Law, there-  
fore the Law  
justifieth not.

The whole  
History of  
giving the  
Law, wit-  
nesseth that  
Righteous-  
ness cometh  
not by the  
Law.

*Offence might abound*, Rom. v. 20. The Law therefore was a Light and a Sun which struck his Beams into the Hearts of the Children of *Israel*, whereby it terrified them, and struck into them such a Fear of God, that they hated both the Law. Law and the Author thereof; which is an horrible Impiety. Would ye now say that these Men were righteous? They are righteous which hear the Law, and with a Good-will embrace the same and delight therein. But the History of giving the Law witnesseth that all Men in the whole World, be they never so holy (especially seeing they which were purified and sanctified could not hear the Law) do hate and abhor the Law, and wish that the Law were not. Therefore it is impossible that Men should be justified by the Law; nay it hath a clean contrary Effect.

Altho' *Paul* (as I have said) doth but only touch this Place by the Way, and doth not thoroughly weigh it, nor fully finish the same, yet he that shall diligently and attentively read it, may easily understand that he speaketh very well of both Mediators; *Moses* and *Christ* both that is to say, of *Moses* and of *Christ*, and compareth Mediators. the one with the other, as hereafter we will declare. If he should have prosecuted this Matter more largely, this only Place would have ministered unto him an Argument and Occasion plentiful enough to write a new Epistle; and that History also in the 19 and 20 of *Exodus*, concerning the giving of the Law, would minister Matter enough to write a great Volume, altho' it were read but slightly and without Affection; albeit it may seem to be very barren to those which know not the true Office and Use of the Law, if it be compared with other holy Histories.

Hereby we may see that if all the World had stood at the Mount, as the People of *Israel* did, they would have hated the Law and would have fled from it as they did. The whole World therefore is an Enemy to the Law and hateth it most deadly. But the Law is holy, righteous and good, and is the perfect Rule of the Will of God. How then can he be righteous which doth not only abhor and detest the Law and fly from it, but moreover is an Enemy of God, who is the Author of the Law? And true it is that the Flesh can do no otherwise, as *Paul* witnesseth, *The carnal Mind is Enmity against God: For it is not subject to the Law of God, neither indeed can be*, Rom. viii. 7. Therefore it is an extream Madnes so to hate God and his Law, that thou canst not abide to hear it, and yet notwithstanding to affirm that we are made righteous thereby.

Wherefore the *Sophisters* and School-divines are stark blind, and understand nothing at all of this Doctrine. They look only upon the outward Visor of the Law, thinking that it is accomplished by civil Works, and that they are righteous before God, which do the same externally, not considering the true and spiritual Effect thereof; which is, not to justify, and to quiet and pacify afflicted Consciences, but to increase Sin, to terrify the Conscience, and to ingender Wrath.

They

They being ignorant of this, do vaunt that a Man hath a Good-will, and a right Judgment of Reason to do the Law of God. But whether this be true or not, ask the People of the Law with their Mediator, who heard the Voice of the Law in the Mount *Sinai*. Ask \* *David* himself, who as often as he complaineth in the *Psalms*, that he was cast from the Face of God, that he was even in Hell, and that he was terrified and oppressed with the Greatness of his Sin, with the Wrath and Judgment of God, set not Sacrifices nor yet the Law itself, against these mighty Tyrants, but was raised up and comforted by the only free Mercy of God. Therefore the Law justifieth not.

If the Law should serve mine Affections, that is to say, if it should approve mine Hypocrisy, mine Opinion and Confidence of mine own Righteousness; if it should say that without the Mercy of God, and Faith in Christ, thro' the Help of it alone (as all the World naturally judgeth of the Law) I might be justified before God; and moreover, if it should say that God is pacified and overcome by Works and is bound to reward the Doers thereof; that so having no Need of God, I might be a God unto myself, and merit Grace by my Works, and setting my Sayiour Christ apart, might save myself by mine own Merits: If (I say) the Law should thus serve mine Affections, then should it be sweet, delectable, and pleasant indeed. So well can Reason flatter itself. Notwithstanding this should no longer continue, but until the Law should come to his own Use and Office; then should it appear that Reason cannot suffer those bright Beams of the Law. There some *Moses* must needs come between as a Mediator, and yet notwithstanding without any Fruit, as I will declare hereafter.

To this Purpose serveth that Place in 2 *Cor.* iii. concerning the covered Face of *Moses*, when *Paul* out of the History of *Exod.* xxxiv. sheweth that the Children of *Israel*, not only did not know, but also could not abide the true and spiritual Use of the Law: First, for that they could not look unto the End of the Law, (saith *Paul*) because of the Vail which *Moses* put upon his Face: Again, they could not look upon the Face of *Moses* being bare and uncovered, for the Glory of his Countenance. For when *Moses* went about to talk with them, he covered his Face with a Vail; without the which they could not hear his Talk, that is, they could not hear *Moses* himself their Mediator, unless he had set another Mediator between, that is to say, the Vail. How then should they hear the Voice of God, or of an Angel, when they could not hear the Voice of *Moses* being but a Man, yea and also their Mediator,

The Faith of the *Papists* is nothing else but a Good-will and a right Judgment of Reason, which the very Infidels have.

\* How *David* behaved himself in Tentations

The Law flattereth not Reason, and therefore Reason hateth it.

The Places of *Paul* expounded as touching the covering of *Moses's* Face

Faith in  
Christ driv-  
eth away  
the Terrors  
of the Law.

except his Face had been covered? Therefore except the blessed Seed come to raise up and comfort him which hath heard the Law, he perisheth thro' Desperation, in detesting of the Law, in hating and blaspheming of God, and daily more and more offending against God.

For this Fear and Conclusion of Conscience which the

Law bringeth, the deeper it pierceth and the longer it continueth, the more it increaseth Hatred and Blasphemy against God.

This History therefore teacheth what is the Power of Free-will. The People are stricken with Fear, they tremble and they fly back. Where is now Free-will? Where is now that Good will, that good Intent, that right Judgment of Reason which the *Papists* do so much brag of? What availeth Free-will here in these sanctified and holy Men? It can say nothing: It blindeth their Reason; it perverteth their Will; it receiveth not, it saluteth not, it embraceth not with Joy the Lord coming with Thundring, Lightning, and Fire into the Mount *Sinai*; it cannot hear the Voice of the Lord; but contrariwise it saith; *Let not the Lord speak unto us lest we die.* We see then what the Strength and Power of Free-will is in the Children of *Israel*, who tho' they were cleansed and sanctified, could not abide the hearing of one Syllable or Letter of the Law. Therefore these high Commendations which the *Papists* give to their Free-will, are nothing else but mere Toys and doting Dreams.

*Versé 20. Now a Mediator is not a Mediator of one;*

Here he compareth these two Mediators together, and that with a marvellous Brevity: Yet so notwithstanding, that he satisfieth the attentive Reader, who, because this Word Mediator is general, by and by understandeth that *Paul* speaketh also of the Mediator generally, and not of *Moses* only. *A Mediator* (saith he) *is not a Mediator of one only*; but this Word necessarily comprehendeth two, that is to say, him that is offended, and him that is the Offender; of whom the one hath need of Intercession, and the other needeth none. Wherefore a Mediator is not of one, but of two, and of such two, as be at Variance between themselves: So *Moses* by a general Definition is a Mediator, because he doth the Office of a Mediator between the Law and the People, which cannot abide the true and spiritual Use of the Law. The Law therefore must have a new Face, and his Voice must be changed, that is to say, the Voice of the Law must be made spiritual, or the Law must be made lively in the inward Affection, and must put on a Visour or a Vail, that it may now become more tollerable, so that the People may be able to hear it by the Voice of *Moses*.

Now

Now the Law being thus covered, speaketh no more in his Majesty, but by the Mouth of *Moses*. After this Manner it doth not his Office any more, that is, it terrifieth not the Conscience: And this is the Cause that they do neither understand, nor regard it; by Means whereof they become secure, negligent, and presumptuous Hypocrites. And yet notwithstanding the one of these two must needs be done, *to wit*, that either the Law must be without his Use, and covered with a Vail, (but then, as I have said, it maketh Hypocrites,) or else it must be in his Use without the Vail, and then it killeth. For Man's Heart cannot abide the Law in his true Use, without the Vail. It behoveth thee therefore, if thou look to the End of the Law without the Vail, either to lay hold on that blessed Seed by Faith, that is to say, thou must look beyond the End of the Law unto Christ, which is the Accomplishment of the Law, which may say unto thee; The Law hath terrified thee enough; *Be of good Comfort my Son, thy Sins are forgiven thee*, (whereof I will speak more anon;) or else surely thou must have *Moses* for thy Mediator with his Vail.

Because God speaketh not now in his Majesty as he did in the Mount, but by the Voice of Men, therefore Men fear him not, nor regard his Law.

For this Cause *Paul* saith; *A Mediator is not a Mediator of one*. For it could not be that *Moses* should be a Mediator of God alone, for God needeth no Mediator. And again, he is not a Mediator of the People only, but he doth the Office of a Mediator between God and the People, which were at Variance with God. For it is the Office of a Mediator to pacify the Party that is offended, and to reconcile unto him the Party which is the Offender. Notwithstanding *Moses* is such a Mediator (as I have said) as doth nothing else but change the Voice of the Law, and maketh it tollerable, so that the People may abide the hearing thereof, but he giveth no Power to accomplish the same. To conclude, he is a Mediator of the Vail, and therefore he giveth no Power to perform the Law, but only in the Vail. Therefore his Disciples, in that he is a Mediator of the Vail, must always be Hypocrites.

But what should have come to pass (think ye) if the Law had been given without *Moses*, either else before or after *Moses*, and that there had been no Mediator, and moreover, that the People should neither have been suffered to fly, nor to have a Mediator? Here the People being beaten down with intollerable Fear, should either have perished forthwith, or if they should have escaped, there must needs have come some other Mediator, which should have set himself between the Law and the People, to the End that both the People might be preserved, and the Law remain in his Force, and also an Attenuation might be made between the Law and the People. Indeed *Moses* cometh in the mean Time, and is made a Mediator, he putteth on a Vail, and covereth his Face; but he cannot deliver Mens Consciences from the Anguish and Terror which the Law bringeth. Therefore when the poor Sinner, at the Hour

When we are terrified by the Law, we have need of another Manner of Mediator then *Moses*.

of Death or in the Conflict of Conscience, seeleth the Wrath and Judgment of God for Sin, which the Law revealeth and increaseth ; here to keep him from Desperation, setting *Moses* aside with his Law, he must have a Mediator which may say unto him ; Altho' thou be a Sinner, yet shalt thou remain, that is, thou shalt not die, altho' the Law, with his Wrath and Malediction do still remain.

Christ covereth not the Law with a Vail, but taketh it away, and therefore he is a better Mediator then *Moses*.

This Mediator is Jesus Christ, which changeth not the Voice of the Law, nor hideth the same with a Vail as *Moses* did, nor leadeth me out of the Sight of the Law ; but he setteth himself against the Wrath of the Law and taketh it away, and satisfieth the Law in his own Body by himself, and by the Gospel he saith unto me ; Indeed the Law threatneth unto thee the Wrath of God and eternal Death ; but be not afraid ; fly not away, but stand fast ; I supply and perform all Things for thee ; I satisfy the Law for thee.

This is a Mediator which far excelleth *Moses*, who setteth himself between God being offended, and the Offender. The Intercession of *Moses* here profiteth nothing, he hath done his Office, and he with his Vail is now vanished away. Here the miserable Sinner being utterly desperate, or a Man now approaching unto Death, and God being offended, do encounter together. Therefore there must come a far better Mediator then *Moses*, which may satisfy the Law, take away the Wrath thereof, and may reconcile unto God which is angry, that poor Sinner, miserable, and guilty of eternal Death.

A Mediator is he that standeth between the Offender and the Person offended. God of his Justice cannot forgive Sin without Satisfaction, which is done by Christ.

Of this Mediator *Paul* speaketh briefly, when he saith ; *A Mediator is not a Mediator of one.* For this Word Mediator properly signifieth such an one as doth the Office of a Mediator between the Party that is offended, and the Offender : We are the Offenders ; God with his Law is he which is offended ; And the Offence is such, that God cannot pardon it, neither can we satisfy for the same. Therefore between God, who of himself is but one, and us, there is wonderful Discord. Moreover, God cannot revoke his Law, but he will have it observed and kept : And we which have transgressed the Law, cannot fly from the Presence of God. Christ therefore hath set himself a Mediator between two, which are quite contrary and separate asunder with an infinite and everlasting Separation, and hath reconciled them together. And how hath he

done this ? *He hath put away* (as *Paul* saith in another Place) *the Hand-writing of Ordinances that was against us*, (that is, by the Law) *which was contrary to us, and took it out of the Way, nailing it to his Cross : And having spoiled Principalties and Powers, he made a Shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it*, Col. ii. 14, 15. Therefore he is not a Mediator of one, but of two, utterly disagreeing between themselves.

This is also a Place full of Power and Efficacy, to confound the Righteousness of the Law, and to teach us that in the Matter of Justification,

on, it ought to be utterly removed out of our Sight. Also this Word (*Mediator*) ministreth sufficient Matter to prove that the Law justifieth not; For else what need should we have of a Mediator? Seeing then that Man's Nature cannot abide the hearing of the Law, much less is it able to accomplish the Law, or to agree with the Law.

Man cannot abide the hearing of the Law, therefore he cannot keep the Law.

This Doctrine (which I do so often repeat and not without Tediousness do still beat into your Heads) is the true Doctrine of the Law, which every Christian ought with all Diligence to learn, that he may be able truly to define what the Law is, what is the true Use and Office, what are the Limits, what is the Power, the Time and the End thereof. For it hath an Effect clean contrary to the Judgment of all Men, which have this pestilent and pernicious Opinion naturally rooted in them, that the Law justifieth. Therefore I fear lest this Doctrine will be defaced and darkened again, when we are dead. For the World must be replenished with horrible Darkpess and Errors before the Latter-Day come.

Who so therefore is able to understand this, let him understand it, that the Law in true Christian Divinity, and in his true and proper Definition, doth not justify, but hath a quite contrary Effect. For it sheweth and revealeth unto us ourselves, it setteth God before us in his Anger, it revealeth God's Wrath, it terrifieth us, and it doth not only reveal Sin, but also mightily increaseth Sin, so that where Sin was before but little, now by the Law which bringeth the same to Light, it becometh exceeding sinful; so that a Man now beginneth to hate the Law and to fly from it, and with a perfect Hatred to abhor God the Maker of the Law. This is not to be justified by the Law (and that Reason itself is compelled to grant) but to commit a double Sin against the Law. *First*, Not only to have a Will so disagreeing from the Law that thou canst not hear it; but also to do contrary to that which it commandeth. And *secondly*, So to hate it that thou would wish it were abolished, together with God himself, who is the Author thereof and absolutely good.

The proper Office of the Law.

Now, what greater Blasphemy, what Sin more horrible can be imagined then to hate God, to abhor his Law, and not to suffer the hearing thereof, which notwithstanding is good and holy? For the History doth plainly witness that the People of *Israel* refused to hear that excellent Law, those holy and most gracious Words (namely, *I am the Lord thy God, which have brought thee out of the Land of Egypt, out of the House of Bondage, Exod. xx. 2. Thou shalt have no other Gods, &c. Shewing Mercy unto Thousands, &c. Honour thy Father and thy Mother, that thy Days may be prolonged, and that it may go well with thee, &c. Deut. v. 7,--10,--16.*) and that they had need of a Mediator. They could not abide this most excellent, perfect, and divine Wisdom; this most gracious, sweet and comfortable Doctrine. *Let not God*

The Law is good and holy, and yet intollerable to Man's Nature.

The Law containeth profitable Doctrine,

and yet Men cannot hear it.

*Speak*

*Speak with us, (say they) lest we die: Speak thou with us, &c.* Doubtless it is a marvellous Thing that a Man cannot hear that which is his whole Felicity, namely, that he hath a God, yea and a merciful God, which will shew Mercy unto him in many Thousandds of Generations, &c. And moreover, that he cannot abide that which is his chief Safety and Defence, namely, *Thou shalt not kill: Thou shalt not commit Adultery: Thou shalt not steal:* For by these Words the Lord hath defended and fortified the Life of Man, his Wife, his Children, and his Goods, as it were with a Wall against the Force and Violence of the Wicked.

The Law then can do nothing, saving that by his Light it lightneth the Conscience that it may know Sin, Death, the Judgment, and the Wrath of God. Before the Law come, I am secure, I feel no Sin, but when the Law cometh, Sin, Death and Hell are revealed unto me. This is not to be made righteous, but guilty, and the Enemy of God, to be condemned to Death and Hell-Fire. The principal Point therefore of the Law in true Christian Divinity is, to make Men, not better, but worse, that is to say, it sheweth unto them their Sin, that by the Knowledge thereof they may be humbled, terrified, bruised and broken, and by this Means may be driven to seek Comfort, and so to come to that blessed Seed.

### Verse 20. *But God is one.*

God offendeth no Man, and therefore needeth no Mediator. But we offend God, and therefore we have need of a Mediator, not *Moses*, but *Christ*, which *speaketh far better Things for us, &c.* Hitherto he hath continued in his Digression: Now he returneth to his Purpose.

### Verse 21. *Is the Law then against the Promises of God?*

*Paul* said before that the Law justifieth not. Shall we then take away the Law? No, not so: For it bringeth with it a certain Commodity. What is that? It bringeth Men unto the Knowledge of themselves, it discovereth and increaseth Sin, &c. Here now riseth another Objection. If the Law do nothing else but make Men worse in shewing unto them their Sin, then is it contrary to the Promises of God. For it seemeth that God is but only provoked to Anger and offended thro' the Law, and therefore he regardeth not, nor performeth his Promises. We *Jews* have thought the contrary, to wit, that we are restrained and bridled by this external Discipline, to the End that God being provoked thereby, might hasten the performing of his Promise, and that by his Discipline we might deserve the Promise.

The Judgment of the *Jews* and of all others as touching the Law.

*Paul* answereth, It is nothing so. But contrariwise, If ye have Regard to the Law, the Promise is rather hindered. For natural Reason offendeth God, which so faithfully promiseth, whiles it will not hear his good and holy Law. For it saith, *Let not God speak with us, &c.* How

Can it be then that God should perform his Promise unto those, which, not only receive not his Law and his Discipline, but also with a mortal hatred do shun it and fly from it? Here therefore (as I said) riseth this Objection, *Is the Law against the Promise of God?* This Objection shall toucheth by the Way and briefly answereth, saying,

### Verse 21. *God forbid:*

Why so? *First*, For that God maketh no Promise unto us, because of our Worthiness, our Merits, our good Works; but for his own Goodness and Mercies Sake in Christ. He saith not to *Abraham*; all Nations shall be blessed in thee, because thou hast kept the Law; but when he was uncircumcised, had no Law, and was yet an Idolater, he said unto him; *Get thee out of thy own Country, &c.* Gen. xii. 1. *I will be thy Shield, &c.* Chap. xv. 1. Also, *In thy Seed shall all the Nations of the Earth be blessed,* Chap. xxii. 18. These are absolute and free Promises, which God freely giveth unto *Abraham*, without any Condition or Respect of Works, either going before or coming after.

This maketh specially against the *Jews*, which think that the Promises of God are hindered, because of their Sins. The Promises of God are not hindered because of our Sins, or hasten the same for our Righteousness and Merits, he regardeth neither the one nor the other. Wherefore, altho' we become more sinful, and are brought into greater Contempt and Hatred of God by Means of the Law, yet notwithstanding God is not moved thereby to defer his Promise, *1 Pet. iii. 9.* For his Promise doth not stand upon our Worthiness, but upon his only Goodness and Mercy. Therefore, where the *Jews* say; The *Messias* is not yet come, because our Sins do hinder his coming, it is a detestable Dream. As tho' God should become unrighteous, because of our Sins, or made a Liar, because we are Liars. He abideth always just and true, his Truth therefore is the only Cause that he accomplisheth and performeth his Promise.

Moreover altho' the Law do reveal and increase Sin, yet is it not against the Promises of God, yea rather it confirmeth the Promises. For as concerning his proper Work and End, it humbleth and prepareth a Man (so that he useth it rightly) to sigh and seek for Mercy. For when Sin is revealed to a Man and so increased by the Law, then he beginneth to perceive the Wickedness and Hatred of Man's Heart against the Law, and against God himself the Author of the Law. Then he feeleth indeed, that, not only he loveth not God, but also hateth and blasphemeth God, who is full of Goodness and Mercy; and his Law, which is just and holy. Then is he constrained to confess that there is no good Thing in him. And thus, when he is thrown down and humbled by the Law, he acknowledgeth himself to be most miserable and damnable. When the Law therefore constraineth a Man so to

The Promises of God are not hindered because of our Sins.

A devilish Dream of the *Jews*.

When the  
Office and  
Time of the  
Law is ac-  
complished.

acknowledge his own Corruption, and to confess his Sin from the Bottom of his Heart, then it hath done his Office truly, and his Time is accomplished and ended; and now is the Time of Grace, that the blessed Seed may come to raise up and to comfort him that is so cast down and humbled by the Law.

After this Manner the Law is not against the Promises of God. For *first*, The Promise hangeth not upon the Law, but upon the Truth and Mercy of God only and alone. *Secondly*, When the Law is in his chief End and Office, it humbleth a Man, and in humbling him, it maketh him to sigh and groan, and to seek the Hand and Aid of the Mediator, and maketh his Grace and his Mercy exceeding sweet and comfortable (as is said, *Psal. cix. 21. Thy Mercy is sweet*) and his Gift precious and inestimable. And by this Means it prepareth us, and maketh us apt to apprehend and to receive Christ. For as the Poet saith:

*Dulcia non meruit, qui non gustavit amara; that is,  
Whoso hath not tasted the Things that are bitter,  
Is not worthy to taste the Things that are sweeter.*

There is a common Proverb, that Hunger is the best Cook.

Like as therefore the dry Earth coveteth the Rain, even so the Law maketh troubled and afflicted Souls to thirst after Christ. To such Christ savoureth sweetly; to them he is nothing else but Joy, Consolation and Life; and there beginneth Christ and his Benefit rightly to be known.

This is then the principal Use of the Law; namely, when a Man can so use it, that it may humble him and make him to thirst after Christ. And indeed Christ requireth thirsty Souls, whom he most lovingly and graciously allureth and calleth unto him, when he saith; *Come unto me all ye that labour, and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest.* He delight-

Upon  
whom  
Christ be-  
stoweth his  
Benefits.

eth therefore to water these dry Grounds. He poureth not his Water upon fat and rank Grounds, or such as are not dry and covet no Water. His Benefits are inestimable, and therefore he giveth them to none but unto such as have need of them, and earnestly desire them. He preacheth glad Tidings to the Poor, *Isa. lxi. 1. Luke iv. 18.* He giveth Drink to the thirsty; *If any thirst, (saith John)*

*let him come unto me, &c. John vii. 37. He healeth the broken-hearted, &c. Psal. cxlviii. 3.* That is, he comforteth those that are bruised and afflicted by the Law. Therefore the Law is not against the Promises of God.

Verse 21. *For if there had been a Law given which could have given Life, verily Righteousness should have been by the Law.*

By these Words Paul signifieth that no Law of itself is able to quicken

give Life, but only killeth. Therefore such Works as are done, not by according to the Laws and Traditions of the Pope, but also according to the very Law of God, do not justify a Man before God, but make him a Sinner; they do not pacify the Wrath of God, but they kindle it; they obtain not Righteousness, but they hinder it; they sicken not, but they kill and destroy. Therefore when he saith; *If a Law had been given which could have brought Life, &c.* he teacheth plainly that the Law of itself justifieth not, but that it hath a clean contrary Effect.

Altho' these Words of *Paul* be plain enough, yet are they obscure and utterly unknown to the *Papists*. For if they did understand them indeed, they would not so magnify their free-will, their natural Strength, the keeping of the Counsels, the Works of Supererogation, &c. But lest they should seem to be manifestly wicked and plain Infidels in denying the Words of the Apostle of Christ so evidently, they have this pestilent Gloss always ready, whereby they pervert the Places of *Paul* concerning the Law, which revealeth Sin and ingendreth Wrath, (that is to say, the Ten Commandments) that *Paul* speaketh only of the ceremonial and not of the moral Law. But *Paul* speaketh plainly, when he saith; *If a Law had been given, &c.* and he excepteth no Law. Wherefore this Gloss of the *Papists* is not worth a Rush. For the Laws of the Ceremonies were as well commanded of God, and as straitly kept as the moral Laws. The *Jews* also kept Circumcision as precisely as they did the Sabbath-day. It is evident enough therefore that *Paul* speaketh of the whole Law.

These Words of the Apostle are sung and said in the Papacy and in all their Churches, and yet notwithstanding they both teach and live quite contrary. *Paul* saith simply that no Law was given to quicken and to bring Life; but the *Papists* teach the contrary, and affirm that many and infinite Laws are given to quicken and to bring Life. Altho' they say not this in plain Words, yet in every deed such is their Opinion, as their Monkish Religion doth plainly witness, besides many other Laws and Traditions of Men, their Works and Merits before Grace and after, and innumerable wicked Ceremonies and false Worshippings, which they have devised of their own Heads, and those only have they preached, treading the Gospel under their Feet, and assuredly promising Grace, Remission of Sin, and Life everlasting to all such as should keep and accomplish the same. This that I say cannot be denied; for their Books which are yet extant, give certain Testimony thereof.

But contrariwise, we affirm with *Paul*, that there is no Law, whether it be Man's Law or God's, that giveth Life. Therefore we put as

\* The *Papists* brag that they keep, not only the Commandments, but also the Counsels, which they call the Exhortations of the Gospel; and other Works not commanded in the Scripture, which they call Works of Supererogation.

*Paul* teacheth that no Law was given to bring Life, but the Pope teacheth quite contrary.

great Difference between the Law and Righteousness, as is between Life and Death, between Heaven and Hell. And the Cause that moveth us so to affirm, is that plain and evident Place of *Paul*, where he saith, that the Law is not given to justify, to give Life and to save, but only to kill and to destroy, contrary to the Opinion of all Men; for naturally they can judge no otherwise of the Law, but that it is given to work Righteousness, and to give Life and Salvation.

**The Judgment of Men as touching the Law.** This Difference of the Offices of the Law and the Gospel, keepeth all Christian Doctrine in his true and proper Use. Also it maketh a faithful Man judge over all Kinds of Life, over the Laws and Decrees of all Men, and over all Doctrine whatsoever, and it giveth them Power to try all Manner of Spirits. On the other Side, the *Papists*, because they confound and mingle the Law and the Gospel together, can teach no Certainty touching Faith, Works, the States and Conditions of Life, nor of the Difference of Spirits.

**What Profit cometh by knowing the Difference between the Law and the Gospel.** Now therefore, after that *Paul* hath prosecuted his Confutations and Arguments sufficiently and in good Order, he teacheth that the Law (if ye consider his true and perfect Use) is nothing else but as a certain School-master to lead us unto Righteousness: For it humbleth Men, it prepareth and maketh them apt to receive the Righteousness of Christ, when it doth his own proper Work and Office, that is, when it maketh them guilty, terrifieth and bringeth them to the Knowledge of Sin, Wrath, Death and Hell. For when it hath done this, the Opinion of Man's own Righteousness and Holiness vanisheth away, and Christ with his Benefits beginneth to wax sweet unto him. Wherefore the Law is not against the Promises of God, but rather confirmeth them. True it is, that it doth not accomplish the Promise, nor bring Righteousness; notwithstanding it humbleth us with his Exercise and Office, and so maketh us more thirsty and more apt to receive the Benefit of Christ. Therefore (saith he) if any Law had been given which might have brought Righteousness, and thro' Righteousness Life (for no Man can obtain Life except first he be righteous,) then indeed Righteousness should come by the Law. Moreover, if there were any State of Life, any Work, any Religion, whereby a Man might obtain Remission of Sins, Righteousness and Life, then should these Things indeed justify and give Life. But this is impossible; for,

**Verse 22.** *The Scripture hath concluded all under Sin,*

**The Scripture sheweth all under the Curse, First, By the Promise,**

Where? First in the Promises themselves as touching Christ, as *Gen. iii. 15. The Seed of the Woman shall bruise the Head of the Serpent.* And *Gen. xxii. 18. In thy Seed, &c.* Wheresoever then is any Promise in the Scriptures made unto the Fathers concerning Christ, there

The Blessing is promised, that is, Righteousness, Salvation and eternal life. Therefore by the contrary it is evident, that they which must receive the Blessing are subject to the Curse, that is to say, Sin and eternal death; For else to what End was the Blessing promised?

*Secondly*, The Scripture shutteth Men under Sin and under the Curse, especially by the Law, because it is his *Secondly*, By the Law.

particular Office to reveal Sin and ingender Wrath, as we have declared throughout this Epistle, but chiefly by this Sentence of *Paul*, For as many as are of the Works of the Law, are under the Curse, *Gal. iii. 10.* Also by that Place which the Apostle alledgeth out of *Leviticus. xxvii. ult.* Cursed be he that confirmeth not all the Words of this Law to do them, &c. For these Sentences in plain Words do shut under Sin and under the Curse, not only those which sin manifestly against the Law, or do not outwardly accomplish the Law; but also those which are under the Law, and with all Endeavour go about to perform the same, and such were the *Jews*, as before I have said. Much more doth the same Place of *Paul* shut up under Sin and under the Curse, *Monks, Friars, Hermites, Carthusians* and such like, with their Professions, Rules and Religions, to the which they attributed such Holiness, that when a Man had once made a Vow of his Profession, if he died by and by, they dreamed that he went straight to Heaven. But ye hear plainly that the Scripture shutteth all under Sin. Therefore neither the Vow nor Religion of the *Carthusian*, be it never so antient, is Righteousness before God; for the Scripture hath shut all under Sin, all are accursed and damned. Who pronounceth this Sentence? The Scripture. And where? *First*, By this Promise, *The Seed of the Woman shall bruise the Serpent's Head: In thee shalt be blessed, &c.* In such like Places: Moreover, by the whole Law, whereof the principal Office is to make Men guilty of Sin. Therefore no *Monk*, no *Carthusian*, no *Celestine* bruise the Head of the Serpent, but they abide cursed and broken under the Serpent's Head, that is, under the Power of the Devil. Who will believe this?

Briefly, whatsoever is without Christ and his Promise, whether it be the Law of God or the Law of Man, the ceremonial or the moral Law, without all Exception is shut under Sin: For the Scripture shutteth all under Sin. Now, he that saith All, excepteth nothing. Therefore we conclude with *Paul*, that the Policies and Laws of all Religions, be they never so good and necessary, with all Ceremonies and Religions without Faith in Christ, are shut under Sin, Death and eternal Damnation, except Faith in Jesus Christ go withal or rather before, as sheweth in the next. Of this Matter we have spoken already before.

Wherefore this is a true Proposition; Only Faith justifieth without Works (which notwithstanding our Adversaries can by no Means abide:) *Paul* here strongly concludeth that the Law doth not quicken nor give Life, because it is not given to that End. If then the Law do not

not justify and give Life, much less do Works justify. For when *Paul* saith that the Law giveth not Life, his Meaning is that Works also do not give Life. For it is more to say, that the Law quickneth and giveth Life, then to say that Works do quicken and give Life. If then the Law itself being fulfilled (altho' it be impossible that it should be accomplished) do not justify, much less do Works justify. I conclude therefore that Faith only justifieth and bringeth Life, without Works. *Paul* cannot suffer this Addition, Faith joined with Works justifieth; but he proceedeth simply by the Negative, *Rom. iii. 20.* as he doth also before in the second Chapter; *Therefore by the Deeds of the Law (saith he) shall no Flesh be justified.* And again in this Place; *The Law is not given to bring Life.*

**Verse 22.** *That the Promise by Faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe.*

**The Promise** He said before that the Scripture hath shut all under Sin. What, for ever? No, but until the Promise should be given. Now, the Promise is the Inheritance itself, or the Blessing promised to *Abraham*; to wit, the Deliverance from the Law, Sin, Death and the Devil; and a free giving of Grace, Righteousness, Salvation and eternal Life. This Promise (saith he) is not obtained by any Merit, by any Law, or by any Work, but it is given. To whom? To those that believe. In whom? In *Jesus Christ*, who is the blessed Seed which hath redeemed all Believers from the Curse that they might receive the Blessing. These Words be not obscure, but plain enough; notwithstanding we must mark them diligently and weigh well the Force and Weight thereof. For if all be shut under Sin, it followeth that all Nations are accursed and are destitute of the Grace of God: Also that they are under the Wrath of God and the Power of the Devil, and that no Man can be delivered from them by any other Means, then by Faith in *Jesus Christ*. With these Words therefore *Paul* enveigheth mightily against the fantastical Opinions of the *Papists* and all *Justiciaries* touching the Law and Works, when he saith, *that the Promise by Faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe.*

Now, how we would answer to these Sentences which speak of Works and Rewards, I have sufficiently declared before. And the Matter requireth not now, that we should speak any Thing of Works. For we have not here taken in hand to intreat of Works, but of Justification; to wit, that it is not obtained by the Law and Works,

**The Commendation of good Works,** since all Things are shut under Sin, and under the Curse; but by Faith in Christ. When we are out of the Matter of Justification, we cannot sufficiently praise and magnify those Works which are commanded of God. For who can sufficiently commend and set forth the Profit and Fruit of one holy Work, which a Christian doth thro'

no' Faith and in Faith? Indeed it is more precious then Heaven or Earth. The whole World therefore is not able to give a worthy Recompence to such a good Work. Yea the World have not the Grace to magnify the holy Works of the Faithful as they are worthy, and much less to reward them: For it seeth them not, or if it do, it esteemeth them not as good Works, but as most wicked and detestable Crimes, and riddeth the World of those which are the Doers thereof, as most pestilent Plagues to Mankind.

So Christ the Saviour of the World, for a Recompence of his incomprehensible and inestimable Benefits, was put to the most opprobrious Death of the Cross. The Apostles also bringing the Word of Grace and eternal Life into the World, were counted the Offscouring, and the Outcasts of the whole World. This is the goodly Reward which the World giveth for so great and unspeakable Benefits. But Works done without Faith, altho' they have never so goodly a Shew of Holiness, are under the Curse. Wherefore so far off it is, that the Doers thereof should deserve Grace, Righteousness and eternal Life, that rather they heap Sin upon Sin. After this Manner the Pope, that Child of Perdition, and all that follow him, do work. So work all Merit-mongers and Heriticks which are fallen from the Faith.

### Verse 23. *But before Faith came,*

He proceedeth in declaring the Profit and Necessity of the Law. He said before that the Law was added for Transgressions: Not that it was the principal Purpose of God to make a Law that should bring Death and damnation, as he saith, *Was then that which is good, made Death unto you? God forbid,* Rom. vii. 13. For the Law is a Word that sheweth Life, and driveth Men unto it. Therefore The Use of the Law is not only given as a Minister of Death, but the principal Use and End thereof is to reveal Death, that so it might be seen and known how horrible Sin is. Notwithstanding it doth not so reveal Death as tho' it tended to no other End but to kill and destroy; but to this End it revealeth Death, that when Men are terrified, cast down, and humbled, they should fear God. And this hath Exod. xx. 20. declare; *Fear not (saith Moses) for God is come to prove you, and that his Fear may be before your Faces, that ye sin not.* The Office therefore of the Law is to kill, and yet so, that God may revive and quicken again. The Law then is not given only to kill; but because Man is proud and dreameth that he is wise, righteous and holy; therefore it is necessary he should be humbled by the Law, that so this false Opinion of Righteousness I say, might be slain; for otherwise Man can obtain Life.

Albeit then that the Law killeth, yet God useth this Effect of the Law, this Death I mean, to a good End, that is, to bring Life. For God seeing that this universal Plague of the whole World, *to wit*, Man's Opinion of his own Righteousness, his Hypocrisy, and Confidence in his

his own Holiness could not be beaten down by any other Means, he would that it should be slain by the Law; not for ever, but that when it is once slain, Man might be raised up again above and beyond the Law, and there might hear this Voice, *Fear not*; I have not given the Law, and killed thee by the Law, that thou shouldst abide in this Death; but that thou shouldst fear me and live. For the presuming of good Works, and Righteousness standeth not with the Fear of God: And where the Fear of God is not, there can be no thirsting for Grace or Life. God must therefore have a strong Hammer, or a mighty Maul to break the Rocks, and a hot burning Fire in the midst of Heaven to overthrow the Mountains; that is to say, to destroy this furious and obstinate Beast (this Presumption I say) that when a Man by this bruising and breaking is brought to nothing, he should despair of his own Strength, Righteousness and Holiness, and being thus thoroughly terrified, should thirst after Mercy and Remission of Sins.

*Verse 23. But before Faith came, we were kept under the Law, shut up unto the Faith which should afterwards be revealed.*

This is to say, before the Time of the Gospel and Grace came, the Office of the Law was, that we should be shut up and kept under the same, as it were in Prison. This is a goodly and a fit Similitude, shewing the Effect of the Law, and how righteous it maketh Men; therefore it is diligently to be weighed. No Thief, no Murderer, no Adulterer or other Malefactor loveth the Chains and Fetters, the dark and lothesome Prison wherein he lieth fast bound; but rather, if he could, he would break and beat into Powder the Prison with his Irons and Fetters. Indeed whiles he is in Prison he refraineth from doing of evil; but not of a Good will or for Righteousness Sake; but because the Prison restraineth him that he cannot do it: And now being fast fettered he hateth not his Theft and his Murder; (yea he is sorry with all his Heart that he cannot rob and steal, cut and slay) but he hateth the Prison, and if he could escape, he would rob and kill, as he did before.

*The Law shutteth Men under Sin two Ways, civilly and spiritually.*

What the Righteousness of the Law is.

Such is the Force of the Law and the Righteousness that cometh of the Law, compelling us to be outwardly good, when it threatneth Death or any other Punishment to the Transgressors thereof. Here we obey the Law indeed, but for Fear of Punishment; that is, unwillingly and with great Indignation. But what Righteousness is this, when we abstain

from

from doing evil for Fear of Punishment? Wherefore this Righteousness of Works is indeed nothing else, but to love Sin and to hate Righteousness, to detest God with his Law, and to love and reverence that which is most horrible and abominable? For look how heartily the Thief loveth the Prison and hateth his Theft; so gladly do we obey the Law in accomplishing that which it commandeth, and avoiding that which it forbiddeth.

Notwithstanding, this Fruit and this Profit the Law bringeth, altho' Mens Hearts remain never so wicked, that it reit outwardly and civilly after a Sort it restraineth Thieves, Murderers and other Malefactors. For if they did not see and understand, that Sin is punished in this Life by Imprisonment, by the Gallows, by the Sword and such like, and after this Life with eternal Damnation and Hell-fire; no Magistrate should be able to bridle the Fury and Rage of Men by any Laws, Bonds or Chains. But the Threatnings of the Law strike a Terror into the Hearts of the wicked whereby they are bridled after a Sort, that they run not headlong, as otherwise they would do, into all Kinds of Wickedness. Notwithstanding they would rather that there were no Law, no Punishment, no Hell, and finally, no God. If God had no Hell, or did not punish the Wicked, he should be loved and praised of all Men. But because he punisheth the Wicked, and all are wicked; therefore in as much as they are shut under the Law, they can do no otherwise, but mortally hate and blaspheme God.

Furthermore, the Law shutteth Men under Sin, not only civilly, but also spiritually; that is to say, the Law is also a spiritual Prison, and a very Hell. For when it revealeth Sin, threatneth Death, and the eternal Wrath of God, a Man cannot avoid it, nor find any Comfort, for it is not in the Power of Man to shake off these horrible Terrors, which the Law stirreth up in the Conscience, or any other Anguish or bitterness of Spirit. Hereof come these lamentable Complaints of the Saints, which are every where in the *Psalms*; *In the Grave who shall give thee Thanks?* *Psal. vi. 5.* For then is a Man shut up in Prison; of the which he cannot escape, nor seeth how he may be delivered out of these Bonds, that is to say, these horrible Terrors.

Thus the Law is a Prison both civilly and spiritually. For first it restraineth and shutteth up the Wicked that they run not headlong according to their own Lust, into all Kinds of Mischief. Again, it sheweth unto us spiritually our Sin, terrifieth and humbleth us, that when we are so terrified and humbled, we may learn to know our own Misery and Condemnation. And this is the true and proper Use of the Law, that it be not perpetual. For this shutting and holding under the Law, must endure no longer, but until Faith come; and when Faith cometh, then must this spiritual Prison have an End.

Here again we see, that, altho' the Law and the Gospel be separate asunder, yet as touching the inward Affections, they are very nearly joined the one with the other. This *Paul* sheweth when he saith; *We*

were kept under the Law, and shut up unto the Faith, which should be revealed unto us. Wherefore it is not enough that we are shut under the Law; for if nothing else should follow, we should be driven to Desperation and die in our Sins. But *Paul* addeth moreover, that we are shut up and kept under a School-master (which is the Law;) not for ever, but to bring us unto Christ, who is the End of the Law. Therefore this terrifying, this humbling, and this shutting up, must not always continue, but only until Faith be revealed; that is, it shall so long continue, as shall be for our Profit and our Salvation: So that when we are cast down and humbled by the Law, then Grace, Remission of Sin, Deliverance from the Law, Sin and Death may become sweet unto us; which are not obtained by Works, but are received by Faith alone.

Who useth  
the Law  
rightly.

the Beginning  
Law rightly.

*Cain* being  
shut up in  
the Prison  
of the Law,  
and abiding  
there, des-  
paired.

He which in Time of Tentation can join these two Things together so repugnant and contrary; that is to say, which when he is thoroughly terrified and cast down by the Law, doth know that the End of the Law, and of Grace or of Faith to be revealed, is now come, useth the Law rightly. All the Wicked are utterly ignorant of this Knowledge and this Cunning. *Cain* knew it not when he was shut up in the Prison of the Law; that is, he felt no Terror, altho' he had now killed his Brother; but dissembled the Matter craftily, and thought that God was ignorant thereof: *Am I my Brother's Keeper* (saith he.) But when he heard this Word: *What hast thou done? The Voice of thy Brother's Blood crieth unto me from the Ground.* Gen. iv. 9, 10. he began to feel this Prison indeed. What did he then? He remained still shut up in Prison. He joined not the Gospel with the Law, but said; *My Punishment is greater than I can bear*, Ver. 13. He only respected the Prison, not considering that the Sin was revealed unto him to this End, that he should fly unto God for Mercy and Pardon. Therefore he despaired and denied God. He believed not that he was shut up to this End, that Grace and Faith might be revealed unto him; but only that he should still remain in the Prison of the Law.

These Words, *to be kept under, and to be shut up*, are not vain and unprofitable, but most true, and of great Importance. This keeping under, and this Prison, signify the true and spiritual Terrors, whereby the Conscience is so shut up, that in the wide World it can find no Place where it may be in Safety. Yea as long as these Terrors endure, the Conscience feel-eth such Anguish and Sorrow, that it thinketh Heaven and Earth, yea if they were ten Times more wide and

large then they are, to be straiter and narrower then a Muse hole. Here is a Man utterly destitute of all Wisdom, Strength, Righteousness, Counsel and Succour. For the Conscience is a marvellous tender Thing, and therefore when it is so shut up under the Prison of the Law, it seeth no Way how to get out; and this Straitness seemeth daily so to increase, as tho' it would never have an End. For then doth it feel the Wrath of God,

God, which is infinite and inestimable, whose Hand it cannot escape. as *Psal. cxxxix. 7.* witnesseth; *Whither shall I fly from thy Presence? &c.*

Like as wherefore this worldly Prison or shutting up is a bodily Affliction, and he that is so shut up can have no Use of his Body: Even so the Trouble and Anguish of Mind is a spiritual Prison, and he that is shut up in this Prison, cannot enjoy the Quietness of Heart and Peace of Conscience. And yet it is not so for ever (as Reason judgeth when it feeleth this Prison;) but until Faith be revealed. The silly Conscience therefore must be raised up and comforted after this Sort: Brother, thou art indeed shut up; but persuade thyself that this is not done, to the End that thou shouldst remain in this Prison for ever. For it is written, *that we are shut up unto the Faith which shall be revealed.* Thou art then afflicted in this Prison, not to thy Destruction, but that thou mayest be refreshed by the blessed Seed. Thou art killed by the Law, that thro' Christ thou mayest be quickned again, and restored to Life. Despair not therefore as *Gain, Saul* and *Judas* did, who being thus shut up, looked no further but to their dark Prison, and there still remained: Therefore they despaired. But thou must take another Way in these Terrors of Conscience then they did; that is, thou must know that it is well done, and good for thee to be so shut up, confounded, and brought to nothing. Use therefore this shutting up rightly and as thou shouldst do; that is, to the End that when the Law hath done his Office, Faith may be revealed. For God doth not therefore afflict thee that thou shouldst still remain in this Affliction. He will not kill thee that thou shouldst abide in Death, *I have no Pleasure in the Death* (saith he by the Prophet) *of the Wicked, &c.* *Ezek. xxxiii. 11.* But he will afflict thee, that so thou mayest be humbled, and know that thou hast need of Mercy, and the Benefit of Christ.

This holding in Prison then under the Law, must not always endure, but must only continue to the coming or revealing of Faith; which this Sweet Verse of *Psal. cxlvii. 11.* doth teach; *The Lord taketh Pleasure in them that fear him;* that is to say, which are in Prison under the Law. But by and by after he addeth; *And in those that hope in his Mercy.* Therefore we must join these two Things together, which are indeed as contrary the one to the other as may be. For what can be more contrary then to hate and abhor the Wrath of God; and again to trust in his Goodness and Mercy? The one is Hell, the other is Heaven, and yet they must be nearly joined together in the Heart. By Speculation and naked Knowledge, a Man may easily join them together; but by Experience and inward Practice so to do, of all Things it is the hardest which I myself have often proved by mine own Experience. Of this Matter the *Papists* and *Sectaries* know nothing

What the Prison is civilly and spiritually.

How the poor Conscience is to be comforted, that is shut up under the Law.

The shutting up under the Law must be rightly used.

The afflicted and such as are in Prison under the Law, waiting for Mercy to be revealed are dear unto God.

at all. Therefore these Words of *Paul* are to them obscure and altogether unknown; and when the Law revealeth unto them their Sin, accuseth and terrifieth them, they can find no Counsel, no Rest, no Help or Succour, but fall to Desperation, as *Cain* and *Saul* did.

Seeing the Law therefore (as is said) is our Tormentor, and our Prison, certain it is that we cannot love it, but hate it. He therefore that saith, he loveth the Law, is a Liar, and knoweth not what he saith. A Thief and a Robber should shew himself to be stark mad, that would love the Prison, the Fetters and Chains. Seeing then the Law shutteth us up and holdeth us in Prison, it cannot be but we must needs be extreme Enemies to the Law. To conclude, so well we love the Law and the Righteousness thereof, as a Murderer loveth the dark Prison, the Strait Bond and Irons. How then should the Law justify us?

**Verse 23.** *And shut up unto the Faith which should afterwards be revealed.*

This *Paul* speaketh in respect of the Fulness of the Time wherein Christ came. But we must apply it, not only to that Time, but also to the inward Man. For that which is done as an History and according to the Time wherein Christ came, abolishing the Law, and bringing Liberty and eternal Life to Light, is always done spiritually in every Christian, in whom is found continually, sometime the Time of the Law, and sometime the Time of Grace. For the Christian Man hath a Body, in whose Members (as *Paul* saith in another Place) Sin dwelleth and warreth. Now, I understand Sin to be, not only the Deed or the Work, but also the Root and the Tree, together with the Fruits, as the Scripture useth to speak of Sin. Which is yet not only rooted in the baptized Flesh of every Christian, but also is at deadly War within it, and holdeth it Captive, if not to give Consent unto it, or to accomplish the Work, yet doth it force him mightily thereunto. For albeit a Christian Man do not fall into outward and gross Sins, as Murder, Adultery, Theft and such like; yet is he not free from Impatiency, murmuring, hating and blaspheming of God; which Sins to Reason and the carnal Man, are altogether unknown. These Sins constrain him, yea fore against his Will, to detest the Law; they compel him to fly from the Presence of God; they compel him to hate and blaspheme God. For as carnal Lust is strong in a young Man, in a Man of full Age the Desire and Love of Glory, and in an old Man Covetousness; even so in a holy and a faithful Man Impatiency, Murmuring, Hatred and Blasphemy against God do mightily prevail. Examples hereof, there are many in the *Psalms*, in *Job*, in *Jeremiah*, and throughout the whole

How the Scripture denieth Sin.      ly the Deed or the Work, but also the Root and the Tree, together with the Fruits, as the Scripture useth to speak of Sin. Which is yet not only rooted in the baptized Flesh of every Christian, but also is at deadly War within it, and holdeth it Captive, if not to give Consent unto it, or to accomplish the Work, yet doth it force him mightily thereunto. For albeit a Christian Man do not fall into outward and gross Sins, as Murder, Adultery, Theft and such like; yet is he not free from Impatiency, murmuring, hating and blaspheming of God; which Sins to Reason and the carnal Man, are altogether unknown. These Sins constrain him, yea fore against his Will, to detest the Law; they compel him to fly from the Presence of God; they compel him to hate and blaspheme God. For as carnal Lust is strong in a young Man, in a Man of full Age the Desire and Love of Glory, and in an old Man Covetousness; even so in a holy and a faithful Man Impatiency, Murmuring, Hatred and Blasphemy against God do mightily prevail. Examples hereof, there are many in the *Psalms*, in *Job*, in *Jeremiah*, and throughout the whole

The Temptation of the Godly.      unto. For albeit a Christian Man do not fall into outward and gross Sins, as Murder, Adultery, Theft and such like; yet is he not free from Impatiency, murmuring, hating and blaspheming of God; which Sins to Reason and the carnal Man, are altogether unknown. These Sins constrain him, yea fore against his Will, to detest the Law; they compel him to fly from the Presence of God; they compel him to hate and blaspheme God. For as carnal Lust is strong in a young Man, in a Man of full Age the Desire and Love of Glory, and in an old Man Covetousness; even so in a holy and a faithful Man Impatiency, Murmuring, Hatred and Blasphemy against God do mightily prevail. Examples hereof, there are many in the *Psalms*, in *Job*, in *Jeremiah*, and throughout the whole

The Temptation of every Age.      and a faithful Man Impatiency, Murmuring, Hatred and Blasphemy against God do mightily prevail. Examples hereof, there are many in the *Psalms*, in *Job*, in *Jeremiah*, and throughout the whole

Blasphemy against God do mightily prevail. Examples hereof, there are many in the *Psalms*, in *Job*, in *Jeremiah*, and throughout the whole  
Scrip-

Scripture. *Paul* therefore describing and setting forth this spiritual Warfare, useth very vehement Words and fit for the Purpose, as of fighting, rebelling, holding and leading Captive, &c.

Both these Times then (of the Law and the Gospel I mean) are in a Christian, as touching the Affections and inward Man. "The Time of the Law is when the Law exerciseth me, tormenteth me with Heaviness of Heart, oppresseth me, bringeth me to the Knowledge of Sin, and increaseth the same. Here the Law is in his true Use and which a Christian oftentimes feeleth as long as he liveth. So there was given unto *Paul* a Prick in the Flesh, that is, the Angel of Satan to buffet him, 2 Cor. xii. 7. He would gladly have felt every Moment the Joy of Conscience, the Laughter of the Heart, and the sweet Taste of eternal Life. Again, he would gladly have been delivered from all Trouble and Anguish of Spirit, and therefore he desired that this Temptation might be taken from him. Notwithstanding this was not done, but the Lord said unto him; *My Grace is sufficient for thee: For my Strength is made perfect in Weakness.* This Battle doth every Christian feel: To speak of myself, there are many Hours in the which I chide and contend with God, and impatiently resist him. The Wrath and Judgment of God displeaseth me: And again, my Impatience, my murmuring, and such like Sins do displease him. And this is the Time of the Law, under the which a Christian Man continually liveth as touching the Flesh. *For the Flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the Flesh.* Gal. v. 17. But in some more, and in some less.

The Time of Grace is, when the Heart is raised up again by the Promise of the free Mercy of God, and saith; *Why art thou cast down, O my Soul? And why dost thou trouble me?* Psal. xlii. 5. Dost thou see nothing, but the Law, Sin, Terror, Heaviness, Desperation, Death, Hell and the Devil? Is there not also Grace, Remission of Sins, Righteousness, Consolation, Joy, Peace, Life, Heaven, Christ and God? Trouble me no more, O my Soul. What is the Law, what is Sin, what are all Evils in Comparison of these Things? Trust in God, who hath not spared his own dear Son, but hath given him to the Death of the Cross for thy Sins. This is then to be shut up under the Law after the Flesh, not for ever, but till Christ be revealed. Therefore when thou art beaten down, tormented and afflicted by the Law, then say; Lady Law, thou art not alone, neither art thou all Things; but besides thee there are yet other Things much greater and better than thou art, namely, Grace, Faith and Blessing. This Faith, and this Blessing do not accuse me, terrify me, condemn me; but they comfort me, they bid me trust in the Lord, and promise unto

*Paul* describeth the spiritual Warfare of the Godly, with very vehement and apt Words.

perfect Work, So there was

This is the spiritual Laughter which *David* speaketh of, Psal. cxxvi. 2. saying, *Then shall our Mouth be filled with Laughter,* &c.

The true Use of the Law is to shut us up, till Christ be revealed.

This Grace, condemn me; but they comfort me, they bid me trust in the Lord, and promise unto

me Victory and Salvation in Christ. There is no Cause therefore why I should despair.

He that is skilful in this Art and this Cunning, may indeed be called a right Divine. The fantastical Spirits and their Disciples at this Day, which continually brag of the Spirit, do perswade themselves that they are very expert and cunning herein. But I and such as I am have scarcely learned the first Principles thereof. It is learned indeed, but

so long as the Flesh and Sin do endure, it can never be perfectly learned and as it should be. So then a Christian is divided into two Times. In that he is Flesh, he is under the Law; In that he is Spirit, he is under Grace. Concupiscence, Covetousness, Ambition and Pride do always cleave to the Flesh, also Ignorance, Contempt of

God, Impatience, murmuring and grudging against God because he hindreth and breaketh off our Counsels, our Devices and Enterprises, and because he speedily punisheth not such as are wicked, rebellious and contemptuous Persons, &c. Such Manner of Sins are rooted in the Flesh of the Faithful. Wherefore, if thou behold nothing but the Flesh, thou shalt abide always under the Time of the Law. But these Days must be shortned, or else no Flesh should be saved. The Law must have his Time appointed, wherein it must have his End. The Time of the Law therefore is not perpetual, but hath his End, which End is Jesus Christ. But the Time of Grace is eternal. For Christ being raised from the Dead, dieth no more, Rom. vi. 9. He is eternal; therefore the Time of Grace is also eternal.

Such notable Sentences in Paul, we may not lightly pass over, as the Papists and Sectaries are wont to do. For they contain Words of Life, which do wonderfully comfort and confirm afflicted Consciences;

and they which know and understand them well, can judge of Faith, they can discern a true Fear from a false Fear; they can judge of all inward Affections of the Heart, and discern all Spirits. The Fear of God is an holy and a precious Thing, but it must not always continue. Indeed it ought to be always in a Christian, because Sin is always in him; but it must not be alone; for then it is the Fear of Cain, Saul and Judas, that is to say, a servile and a desperate Fear. \* A Christian therefore must vanquish Fear by Faith in the Word of Grace. He must turn away his Eyes from the Time of the Law, and look unto Christ, and unto Faith which is to be revealed. Here beginneth Fear to be sweet unto us, and maketh us to delight in God. For if a Man do only behold the Law and Sin, setting Faith aside, he shall never be able to put away Fear, but shall at length fall to Desperation.

Thus doth Paul very well distinguish the Time of the Law and Grace. Let us also learn rightly to distinguish the Time of them both, not in

Words,

Words, but in the inward Affection, which is a very hard Matter. For albeit these two Things are separate far asunder, yet are they most nearly joined together in one Heart. Nothing is more nearly joined together then Fear and Trust, then the Law and the Gospel, then Sin and Grace. For they are so united together, that the one is swallowed up of the other. Wherefore there is no Conjunction like unto this.

At this Place, *Wherefore then serveth the Law?* Paul began to dispute of the Law; also of the Use and the Abuse thereof, taking Occasion of that which before he had affirmed, that the Faithful do obtain Righteousness by Grace only, and by the Promise, and not by the Law. Upon that Disputation rose this Question; *Wherefore then serveth the Law?* For Reason hearing that Righteousness or the Blessing is obtained by Grace and by the Promise, by and by inferieth; then the Law profiteth nothing. Wherefore the Doctrine of the Law must be diligently considered, that we may know what and how we ought to judge thereof, lest that either we reject the same altogether, as the fantastical Spirits do (which in the Year, a thousand five hundred twenty and five, stirring up the rustical People to Sedition, said, that the Liberty of the Gospel giveth Freedom to all Men from all Manner of Laws,) or else lest we should attribute the Force of Justification to the Law. For both Sorts do offend against the Law; the one on the Right-hand, which will be justified by the Law; and the other on the Left-hand, which will be clean delivered from the Law. We must therefore keep the High-Way, so that we neither reject the Law, nor attribute more unto it then we ought to do.

That which I have before so often repeated concerning both the Uses of the Law, namely, the civil and the spiritual Use, do sufficiently declare that the Law is not given for the Righteous; but (as Paul saith in another Place) for the unrighteous and rebellious. Now, of the unrighteous there are two Sorts, that is to say, they which are to be justified, and they which are not to be justified. They that are not to be justified must be bridled by the civil Use of the Law; for they must be bound with the Bonds of the Law, as savage and untamed Beasts are bound with Cords and Chains. This Use of the Law hath no End, and of this Paul here speaketh nothing. But they that are to be justified, are exercised with the spiritual Use of the Law for a Time; for it doth not always continue, as the civil Use of the Law doth; but it looketh to Faith which is to be revealed, and when Christ cometh, it shall have his End. Hereby we may plainly see that all the Sentences wherein Paul intreateth of the spiritual Use of the Law, must be understood of those which are to be justified, and not of those which are justified already.

Fear and Faith are separated far asunder, and yet are joined together in one Heart.

A Rehearsal of those Things whereof he had spoken before.

Touching this Sedition of the rustical People, and the Cause thereof, read *Steidan*.

There are two Sorts of the unrighteous, one to be justified, and another not to be justified.

ready. For they which are justified already, in as much as they abide in Christ, are far above all Law. The Law then must be laid upon those that are to be justified, that they may be shut up in the Prison thereof, until the Righteousness of Faith come; not that they attain this Righteousness thro' the Law (for that were not to use the Law rightly, but to abuse it;) but that when they are cast down and humbled by the Law, they should fly unto Christ, *Who is the End of the Law for Righteousness, to every one that believeth*, Rom. x. 4.

Now, the Abusers of the Law, are *first*, All the *Justifiers* Who are *A-* *aries* and Hypocrites which dream that Men are justified by the Law. For that Use of the Law doth not exercise and drive a Man to Faith which is to be revealed, but it maketh careless and arrogant Hypocrites, swelling and pre-

suming of the Righteousness of the Law, and hindereth the Righteousness of Faith. *Secondly*, They abuse the Law which will utterly exempt a Christian Man from the Law, as the brainick *Anabaptists* went about to do; which was the Occasion that they raised up that Sedition of the rustical People. Of this Sort there are very many also at this Day which profess the Gospel with us, who being delivered from the Tyranny of the Pope by the Doctrine of the Gospel, do dream that the Christian Liberty is a dissolute and a carnal Liberty to do whatsoever they list. These (as *Peter* saith) have the Liberty of the Spirit, as a Cloke of Maliciousness, thro' which the Name of God and the Gospel of Christ is slandered every where, 1 *Pet.* ii. 16. and therefore they shall once suffer worthy Punishment for this their Ungodliness. *Thirdly*, Such do also abuse the Law, who feeling the Terrors thereof, do not understand that such Terrors ought no longer to continue, but unto Christ. This Abuse in them is the Cause that they fall to Desperation; as in the Hypocrites it is the Cause of Arrogancy and Presumption.

Contrariwise, the true Use of the Law can never be esteemed and magnified as it is worthy, namely, that when the Conscience shut up under the Law, despaireth not, but being instructed by the Wisdom of the Holy Ghost, concludeth with itself after this Sort; I am indeed shut up as a Prisoner under the Law, but not for ever; yea this shutting up shall turn to my great Profit. How so? Because that I being thus shut up, shall be driven to sigh, and seek the Hand of an Helper, &c. After this Manner the Law is as an Inforcer, which by Compulsion bringeth the Hungry unto Christ, that he may satisfy them with his good Things. Wherefore the true Office of the Law is to shew unto us our Sins, to make us guilty, to humble us, to kill us, and to bring us down to Hell, and finally to take from us all Help, all Succour, all Comfort; but yet altogether to this End, that we may be justified, exalted, quickned to Life, carried up into Heaven, and obtain all good Things. Therefore it doth not only kill, but it killeth that we may live.

*Verse 24. Wherefore the Law was our School-master to bring us unto Christ,*

Here

Here again he joincth the Law and the Gospel together, (which are separate so far asunder) as touching the Affections and inward Man, when he saith; the Law is a School-master to Christ. This Similitude also of the School-master is worthy to be noted. Altho' a School-master be very profitable and necessary to instruct and to bring up Children, yet shew me one Child or Schollar which loveth his Master. What Love and Obedience the *Jews* shewed unto their *Moses*, it appeareth in that every Hour (as the History witnesseth) they would with all their Hearts have stoned him to Death, *Exod. xvii. 4.* It is not possible therefore that the Schollar should love his Master. For how can he love him which keepeth him in Prison, that is to say, which suffereth him not to do that which gladly he would? And if he do any Thing against his Commandment, by and by he is rebuked and chastised, yea, and is constrained moreover to kiss the Rod when he is beaten. Is not this (I pray you) a goodly Righteousness and Obedience of the Schollar, that he obeyeth his Master so severely threatening and so sharply correcting him, and kisseth the Rod? But doth he this with a Good-will? As soon as his Master hath turned his Back, he breaketh the Rod, or casteth it into the Fire. And if he had any Power over his Master, he would not suffer himself to be beaten of him, but rather he would beat him. And yet notwithstanding the School-master is very necessary for the Child, to instruct and to chastise him; otherwise the Child without his Discipline, Instruction and good Education, should be utterly lost.

The School-master therefore is appointed for the Child, to teach him, to bring him up, and to keep him, as it were in Prison. But to what End, or how long? Is it to the End that this strait and sharp Dealing of the School-master should always continue, or that the Child should remain in continual Bondage? Not so, but only for a Time, that this Obedience, this Prison and Correction might turn to the Profit of the Child, that when the Time cometh, he might be his Father's Heir. For it is not the Father's Will, that his Son should be always subject to the School-master, and always beaten with Rods; but that by his Instruction and Discipline he might be made able and meet to be his Father's Successor.

Even so the Law (saith Paul) is nothing else but a School-master: Not for ever, but until it have brought us to Christ; as in other Words he said also before; *The Law was added because of Transgressions, till the Seed should come.* Also, *the Scripture hath concluded all under Sin, &c.* Again, *we were kept under the Law, shut up unto the Faith which should afterwards be revealed.* Wherefore the Law is not only a School-master, but it is a School-master to bring us unto Christ. For what a School-master were he which would always torment and beat the Child, and teach him nothing at all? And yet such School-masters there were in Time past, when Schools were nothing else but a Prison and a very Hell, the School-masters cruel Tyrants and very Butchers. The Children were always beaten, they learned with continual Pain and Travail,

The Law is a  
School-ma-  
ster to Christ,  
  
  
  
  
  
  
  
  
  
What  
School-ma-  
sters there  
were in  
Times past.

vail, and yet few of them came to any Proof. The Law is not such a School-master. For it doth not only terrify and torment (as the foolish School-master beateth his Schollars and teacheth them nothing;) but with his Rods he driveth us unto Christ; like as a good School-master instructeth and exerciseth his Schollars in reading and writing, to the End they may come to the Knowledge of good Letters and other profitable Things, that afterwards they may have a Delight in doing that, which before when they were constrained thereunto, they did against their Wills.

By this goodly Similitude, *Paul* sheweth what is the true Use of the Law, namely, that it justifieth not Hypocrites, for they remain without Christ in their Presumption and Security; and contrariwise, that it leaveth not in Death and Damnation those that are of a contrite Heart

The true  
Use of the  
Law set out  
in the Alle-  
gory of the  
School-  
master.

(so that they use it as *Paul* teacheth) but driveth them unto Christ. But they which in these Terrors continue still in their Weakness, and do not apprehend Christ by Faith, do fall at length into Desperation. *Paul* therefore in this Allegory of the School-master, most lively expresseth the true Use of the Law. For like as the School-master reproveth his Schollars, grieveth them and maketh them heavy, and yet not to the End that this Bondage should always continue, but that it should cease when the

Children are well brought up and instructed accordingly, and that afterwards without any Constraint of the School-master, they should cheerfully enjoy their Liberty and their Fathers Goods; even so they which are vexed and oppressed with the Law, do know that these Terrors and Vexations shall not always continue, but that thereby they are prepared to come unto Christ which is to be revealed, and so to receive the Liberty of the Spirit, &c.

### Verse 24. *That we might be justified by Faith.*

The Law is not a School-master to bring us unto another Law-giver which requireth good Works, but unto Christ our Justifier and Saviour, that by Faith in him we might be justified, and not by Works. But when a Man feelth the Force and Strength of the Law, he doth not understand nor believe this. Therefore he saith; I have lived wickedly, for I have transgressed all the Commandments of God, and therefore I am guilty of eternal Death. If God would prolong my Life certain Years, or at least certain Months, I would amend my Life, and live holily hereafter. Here, of the true Use of the Law, he maketh an Abuse. Reason being overtaken in these Terrors and Straits, is bold to promise unto God the fulfilling of all the Works of the whole Law. And hereof came so many Sects and Swarms of *Monks* and religious Hypocrites, so many Ceremonies and so many Works, devised to deserve Grace and Remission of Sins. And they which devised these Things, thought that the Law was a School-master to lead them, not unto Christ, but unto a

new Law, or unto Christ as a Law-giver, and not as one that hath abolished the Law.

But the true Use of the Law is to teach me that I am brought to the Knowledge of my Sin and humbled, that so I may come unto Christ, and may be justified by Faith. But Faith is neither Law nor Work, but an assured Confidence which apprehendeth Christ, *who is the End of the Law*, Rom. x. 4. And how? Not that he hath abolished the old Law and given a new, or that he is a Judge which must be pacified by Works, as the *Papists* have taught; but he is the End of the Law to all those that believe; that is to say, every one that believeth in him is righteous, and the Law shall never accuse him. The Law then is good, holy and just, so that a Man use it as he should do. Now, they that abuse the Law, are *first* the Hypocrites which attribute unto the Law a Power to justify; and *secondly*, they which do despair, not knowing that the Law is a School-master to lead them unto Christ; that is to say, that the Law humbleth them not to their Destruction, but to their Salvation: For God woundeth that he may heal again; he killeth that he may quicken again.

Now, *Paul* (as before I have said) speaketh of those that are to be justified, and not of those which are justified already. Therefore when thou goest about to reason as concerning the Law, thou must take the Matter of the Law, or that whereupon the Law worketh, namely, the Sinner and the wicked Person, whom the Law justifieth not, but setteth Sin before his Eyes, casteth him down, and bringeth him to the Knowledge of himself; it sheweth unto him Hell, the Wrath and the Judgment of God. This is indeed the proper Office of the Law. Then followeth the Use of this Office; *to wit*, The proper Office of the Law, and the Use of the Office thereof. that the Sinner may know that the Law doth not reveal unto him his Sin and thus humbleth him, to the End he should despair, but that by this accusing and bruising, it may drive him unto Christ the Saviour and Comforter. When this is done, he is no longer under the School-master. And this Use is very necessary: For seeing the whole World is overwhelmed with Sin; it hath need of this Ministry of the Law, that Sin may be revealed; otherwise no Man should ever attain to Righteousness, as before we have largely declared. But what worketh the Law in them that are already justified by Christ? *Paul* answereth by these Words; which are as it were an Addition to that which goeth before.

Verse 25. *But after that Faith is come, we are no longer under a School-master.*

That is to say; we are free from the Law, from the Prison, and from our School-master; for when Faith is revealed, the Law terrifieth and tormenteth us no more. *Paul* here speaketh of Faith as it was preached and published unto the World by Christ in the Time before

appointed. For Christ taking upon him our Flesh, come once into the World; he abolished the Law with all his Effects, and delivered from eternal Death all those which receive his Benefits by Faith. If therefore ye look unto Christ and that which he hath done, there is now no Law. For he coming in the Time appointed, took away the Law. Now, since the Law is gone, we are not kept under the Tyranny thereof any more; but we live in Joy and Safety under Christ, who now sweetly reigneth in us by his Spirit. Now, where the Lord reigneth, there is Liberty. Wherefore, if we could perfectly apprehend Christ which hath abolished the Law by his Death, and hath reconciled us unto his Father, that School-master should have no Power over us at all. But the Law of the Members rebelling against the Law of the Mind, letteth us that we cannot perfectly lay hold upon Christ. The Law therefore is not in Christ, but in us, which have not yet put off this Flesh, to the which Sin continually cleaveth as long as we live. Wherefore, as touching ourselves, we are partly free from the Law, and partly under the Law. According to the Spirit, we serve with *Paul* the Law of God; but according to the Flesh, the Law of Sin, *Rom. vii. ult.*

Hereof it followeth, that as touching the Conscience we are fully delivered from the Law, and therefore that School-master must not rule in it, that is, he must not afflict it with his Terrors, Threatnings and Captivity. And albeit it go about so to do never so much, yet is not the Conscience moved therewith. For it hath Christ crucified before her Eyes, who hath removed all the Offices of the Law out of the Conscience; *blotting out the Hand-writing of Ordinances that was against us, &c. Coloss. ii. 14.* Therefore, even as a Virgin knoweth no Man; so the Conscience must not only be ignorant of the Law, but also it must be utterly dead unto the Law, and the Law likewise unto the Conscience. This is not done by any Works, or by the Righteousness of the Law, but by Faith which apprehendeth and layeth hold upon Christ. Notwithstanding Sin cleaveth still in the Flesh as touching the Effect thereof, which oftentimes accuseth and troubleth the Conscience. So long then as the Flesh doth remain, so long this School-master the Law doth also remain, which many Times terrifieth the Conscience, and maketh it heavy by revealing of Sin and threatening of Death. Yet is it raised up again by the daily coming of Christ; who as he came once into the World in the Time before appointed, to redeem us from the hard and sharp Servitude of our School-master; even so he cometh daily unto us spiritually, to the End that we may increase in Faith and in the Knowledge of him, that the Conscience may apprehend him more fully and perfectly from Day to Day, and that the Law of the Flesh and of Sin with the Terror of Death and all Evils that the Law bringeth with it, may daily be diminished in us more and more. As long then as we live in the Flesh, which is not without Sin, the Law oftentimes returneth and doth his Office, in one more and in another less, as their Faith is strong or weak, and yet not to their Destruction, but to their Salvation. For this is the Exercise of the Law in the Saints, namely, the continual Mortification of the Flesh, of Reason, and

our own Strength, and the daily renewing of our inward Man, as it said in 2 Cor. iv. 16.

We receive then the first Fruits of the Spirit; the Leaven is hid in the Mass of the Dough; but all the Dough is not yet leavened; no it is yet but only begun to be leavened. If I behold the Leaven, I see nothing else but pure Leaven. But if I behold the whole Mass, I see that it is not all pure Leaven: That is to say, If I behold Christ, I am altogether pure and holy, knowing nothing of all of the Law; for Christ is my Leaven. But if I behold mine own Flesh, I feel in myself Covetousness, Lust, Anger, Pride and Arrogancy; also the Fear of Death, Heaviness, Hatred, Murmuring and Impatiency against God. The more these Sins are in me, the more is Christ absent from me, or if he be present, he is felt but a little. Here have we need of a School-master to exercise and vex us strong As the Flesh, that by this Exercise Sins may be diminished, and a Way prepared unto Christ. For as Christ came once corporally at the Time appointed, abolished the whole Law, vanquished Sin, destroyed Death and Hell; even so he cometh spiritually without ceasing, and daily quenchieth and killeth these Sins in us.

A Similitude of the Leaven

The Faithful are holy, and yet Sinners.

The spiritual coming of Christ.

This I say, that thou mayest be able to answer, if any shall thus object; Christ came into the World, and at once took away all our Sins, and cleansed us by his Blood; What need we then to hear the Gospel, or to receive the Sacraments? True it is, that as much as thou beholdest Christ, the Law and Sin are quite abolished. But Christ is not yet come unto thee; or if he be come, yet notwithstanding there are Remnants of Sin in thee; thou art not yet thoroughly leavened. For where Concupiscence, Heaviness of Spirit, and Fear of Death is, there is yet also the Law and Sin. Christ is not yet thoroughly come; but when he cometh indeed, he driveth away Fear and Heaviness, and bringeth Peace and Quietness of Conscience. So far forth then as I do apprehend Christ by Faith, so much is the Law abolished unto me. But my Flesh, the World, and the Devil do hinder Faith in me, that it cannot be perfect. Right gladly I would that that little Light of Faith which is in my Heart, were spread throughout all my Body, and all the Members thereof; but it is not done; it is not by and by spread, but only beginneth to be spread. In the mean Season this is our Consolation, that we having the first Fruits of the Spirit, do now begin to be leavened. But we shall be thoroughly leavened when this Body of Sin is dissolved, and we shall rise new Creatures wholly, together with Christ.

How far forth the Law is abolished.

Christ is not

Albeit then that Christ be one and the same Yesterday, to Day, and shall be for ever, *Heb. xiii. 8.* and albeit that all the Faithful which were before Christ, had the Gospel and Faith; yet notwithstanding Christ came once in the Time before determined. Faith also came once when the Apostles preached and published the Gospel throughout the World.

More.

When Faith  
is come, the  
Law giveth  
Place.

Moreover, Christ cometh also spiritually every Day. Faith likewise cometh daily by the Word of the Gospel. Now, when Faith is come, the School-master is constrained to give Place with his heavy and grievous Office. Christ cometh also spiritually when we still more and more do know and understand those Things which by him are given unto us, and increase in Grace and in the Knowledge of him. 2 Pet. iii. 18.

*Verse 26. For ye are all the Children of God by Faith in Christ Jesus.*

Paul as a true and an excellent Teacher of Faith, hath always these Words in his Mouth, *By Faith, In Faith, Of Faith*, which is in Christ Jesus. He saith not; Ye are the Children of God, because ye are circumcised, because ye have heard the Law and have done the Works thereof (as the Jews do imagine, and the false Apostles teach;) but by Faith in Jesus Christ. The Law then maketh us not the Children of God, and much less Mens Traditions. It cannot beget us into a new Nature or a new Birth; but it setteth before us the old Birth whereby we were born to the Kingdom of the Devil, and so it prepareth us to a new Birth which is by Faith in Jesus Christ, and not by the Law, as Paul plainly witnesseth; *For ye are all the Sons of God by Faith, &c.* As if he said; Albeit ye be tormented, humbled and killed by the Law, yet hath not the Law made you righteous, or made you the Children of God. This is the Work of Faith alone: What Faith? Faith in Christ. Faith therefore in Christ maketh us the Children of God, and not the Law. The same Thing witnesseth also John, *As many as received him, to them gave he Power to become the Sons of God*, John i. 12. Rom. viii. 16, 17. What Tongue either of Men or Angels can sufficiently extol and magnify the great Mercy of God towards us, that we which are miserable Sinners and by Nature the Children of Wrath, should be called to this Grace and Glory, to be made the Children and Heirs of God, Fellow-heirs with the Son of God, and Lords over Heaven and Earth, and that by the only Means of our Faith which is in Christ Jesus?

*Verse 27. For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ, have put on Christ.*

To put on Christ, is taken two Manner of Ways; according to the Law, and according to the Gospel. According to the Law, as it is said in Rom. xiii. 14. *Put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ*; that is, follow the Example and Vertues of Christ: Do that which he did, and suffer that which he suffered. And in 1 Pet. ii. 21. *Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an Example, that we should follow his Steps.*

Now we see in Christ a wonderful Patience, an inestimable Mildness and Love,

ove, and a wonderful Modesty in all Things. This goodly Apparel  
e must put on, that is to say, follow these Vertues :

But the putting on of Christ according to the Gospel, consisteth not  
Imitation, but in a new Birth and a new Creation ; that is to say, in  
atting on Christ's Innocency, his Righteousness, his Wisdom, his  
ower, his saving Health, his Life and his Spirit. We are clothed with  
e Leather-coat of *Adam*, which is a mortal Garment, and a Garment of  
n ; that is to say, we are all subject unto Sin, all sold under Sin :  
here is in us horrible Blindness, Ignorance, Contempt and Hatred of  
od ; moreover, evil Concupiscence, Uncleaness, Covetousness, &c.  
his Garment, that is to say, this corrupt and sinful Nature, we receive  
om *Adam*, which *Paul* is wont to call the old Man. This old Man  
ust be put off with all his Works, *Ephes. iv. 18. Coloss. iii. 9.* that  
f the Children of *Adam*, we may be made the Children

f God. This is not done by changing of a Garment, or How the old  
y any Laws or Works, but by a new Birth, and by the Man must be  
enewing of the inward Man, which is done in Baptism, put off.  
s *Paul* saith ; *All ye that are baptized, have put on Christ.*

Also ; *According to his Mercy he saved us by the washing of Regenerati-  
a, and renewing of the Holy Ghost, Tit. iii. 5.* For besides that they  
hich are baptized, are regenerate and renewed by the Holy Ghost to a  
eavenly Righteousness and to eternal Life, there riseth in them also a  
ew Light and a new Flame ; there rise in them new and holy Affecti-  
ns, as the Fear of God, true Faith and assured Hope, &c. There begin-  
eth in them also a new Will. And this is to put on Christ truly and  
ccording to the Gospel.

Therefore the Righteousness of the Law or of our own Works, is not  
iven unto us in Baptism ; but Christ himself is our Gar-  
ment. Now Christ is no Law, no Law-giver, no Work, In Baptism  
ut a divine and an inestimable Gift, whom God hath we put on  
aven unto us, that he might be our Justifier, our Saviour Christ.  
nd our Redeemer. Wherefore to be apparelled with Christ  
ccording to the Gospel, is not to be apparelled with the Law or with  
Works, but with an incomparable Gift ; that is to say, with Remission  
f Sins, Righteousness, Peace, Consolation, Joy of Spirit, Salvation, Life,  
nd Christ himself.

This is diligently to be noted, because of the fond and The Ana-  
ntastical Spirits, which go about to deface the Majesty of baptists de-  
aptism, and speak wickedly of it. *Paul* contrariwise face the Ma-  
ommendeth and setteth it forth with honourable Titles, jesty of Bap-  
alling it, *the washing of Regeneration, and renewing of tism.*  
e Holy Ghost, *Tit. iii. 5.* And here also he saith, that  
ll they which are baptized, have put on Christ. As if he said : Ye are  
arried out of the Law into a new Birth, which is wrought in Baptism.  
Therefore ye are not now any longer under the Law. but ye are clothed  
ith a new Garment ; *to wit*, with the Righteousness of Christ. Where-  
e Baptism is a Thing of great Force and Efficacy. Now, when we  
re apparelled with Christ, as with the Robe of our Righteousness and

Salvation, then we must put on Christ also as the Apparel of Imitation and Example. These Things I have handled more largely in another Place, therefore I here briefly pass them over.

*Verse 28. There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female : For ye are all one in Christ Jesus.*

Here might be added moreover many more Names of Persons and Offices which are ordained of God, as these ; There is neither Magistrate nor Subject, neither Teacher nor Hearer, neither School-master nor Schollar, neither Master nor Servant, neither Mistress nor Maid, &c. for in Christ Jesus all States, yea even such as are ordained of God, are nothing. Indeed the male, the female, the bond, the free, the Jew, the Gentile, the Prince, the Subject, are the good Creatures of God ; but in Christ, that is, in the Matter of Salvation, they are nothing, with all their Wisdom, Righteousness, Religion and Power.

Wherefore, with these Words, *There is neither Jew, &c.* Paul mightily abolisheth the Law. For here, that is, when a Man is renewed by Baptism, and hath put on Christ, there is neither Jew nor Grecian, &c. The Apostle speaketh not here of the Jew according to his Nature and Substance ; but he calleth him a Jew which is the Disciple of Moses, is subject to the Law, is circumcised, and with all his Endeavour keepeth the Ceremonies commanded in the Law. Where Christ is put on (saith

he) there is neither Jew, nor Circumcision, nor Ceremony of the Law any more ; for Christ hath abolished all the Laws of Moses that ever were. Wherefore the Conscience believing in Christ must be so surely perswaded that the Law is abolished, \* with all his Terrors and Threatnings, that it should be utterly ignorant whether there were ever any Moses, any Law, or any Jew. For Christ and Moses can in no ways agree. Moses came with the Law, with many Works, and with many Ceremonies ;

but Christ came without any Law, without any exacting of Works, giving Grace and Righteousness, &c. For the Law was given by Moses, but Grace and Truth came by Jesus Christ, John i. 17.

Moreover, when he saith, *Nor Grecian*, he also rejecteth and condemneth the Wisdom and Righteousness of the Gentiles : For among the Gentiles there were many notable Men, as *Xenophon, Themistocles, Marcus Fabius, Attillius Regulus, Cicero, Pomponius Atticus*, and many others, which being endued with singular Vertues, governed Common-weals excellently, and did many worthy Acts for the Preservation thereof ; and yet all these were nothing before God, with their Wisdom, their Power, their notable Acts, their excellent Vertues, Laws, Religions and Ceremonies : For we must not think that the Gentiles did condemn all Honesty and Religion. Yea all Nations

The Wisdom and Righteousness of the Gentiles rejected.

before God, with their Wisdom, their Power, their notable Acts, their excellent Vertues, Laws, Religions and Ceremonies : For we must not think that the Gentiles did condemn all Honesty and Religion. Yea all Nations

Nations of all Ages dispersed throughout the World, had their Laws, Religions and Ceremonies, without the which it is not possible that Mankind should be governed. All Righteousness therefore concerning either the Government of Families, or Common-wealths, or divine Matters (as was the Righteousness of the Law) with all the Obedience, Execution and Holiness thereof, be it never so perfect is nothing worth before God: What then? The Garment of Christ which we put on in Baptism.

So, if the Servant do his Duty, obey his Master, serve in his Vocation never so diligently and faithfully, if he that is at Liberty be in Authority and govern the Common-wealth, or guide his own Family honestly and with Praise; if the Man do that pertaineib to the Man in marrying a Wife, in governing his Family, in obeying the Magistrate, in behaving himself decently towards all Men; if the Woman live chaste, obey her Husband, see well to her Household, bring up her Children piously (which are indeed excellent-Gifts and holy Works,) yet are all these nothing in Comparison of that Righteousness which is before God. To be brief, all the Laws, Ceremonies, Religions, Righteousness and Works in the whole World, yea of the *Jews* themselves, which were the first that had the Kingdom and Priesthood ordained and appointed of God, with their holy Laws, Religions, Ceremonies and Worshipings; all these (I say) take not away Sin, deliver not from Death, or purchase Life.

Therefore your false Apostles do subtilly seduce you (O ye *Galatians*) when they teach you that the Law is necessary to Salvation; and by this Means they spoil you of that excellent Glory of your new Birth and your Adoption, and call you back to your old Birth and to the most miserable Servitude of the Law, making you of the Free-children of God, Bond-children of the Law, whiles they will have a Difference of Persons according to the Law. Indeed there is a Difference of Persons in the Law, and in the World, and there it ought to be, but not before God, *Rom. iii. 23. For all have sinned, and come short of the Glory of God.* Let the *Jews* therefore, the *Gentiles*, and the whole World keep Silence in the Presence of God. God hath indeed many Ordinances, Laws, Degrees and Kinds of Life, but all these help nothing to deserve Grace, or to obtain eternal Life. So many as are justified therefore, are justified, not by the Observation of Man's Law or God's Law, but by Christ alone, who hath abolished all Laws. Him The Gospel alone doth the Gospel set forth unto us for a Pacifier of setteth forth God's Wrath by the shedding of his own Blood, and a Saviour Christ unto us: And without Faith in him, neither shall the *Jew* be saved by the Law, nor the *Monk* by his Order, nor the *Presbyterian* by his Wisdom, nor the Magistrate or Master by his upright Government, nor the Servant by his Obedience.

Verse 28. *For ye are all one in Christ Jesus.*

These are excellent Words. In the World and according to the flesh, there is a great Difference and Inequality of Persons, and the same

must be diligently observed. For if the Woman would be the Man, if the Son would be the Father, the Servant would be the Master, the Subject would be the Magistrate, there should be nothing else but a Confusion of all Estates and all Things. Contrariwise, in Christ there is no Law, no Difference of Persons, there is neither *Jew* nor *Grecian*, but all are one. For there is but one Body, one Spirit, one Hope of your Calling, there is but one Gospel, one Faith, one Baptism, one God and Father of all, one Christ and Lord of all, *Eph. iv. 4, 5, 6*. We have the same Christ, I, thou, and all the Faithful, which *Peter*, *Paul*, and all the Saints had. Here therefore the Conscience knoweth nothing of the Law, but hath Christ only before her Eyes. Therefore *Paul* is always wont to add this Clause, *In Christ Jesus*: Who, if he be taken out of our Sight, then cometh Anguish and Terror.

**The Opinion of the School-divines concerning Faith.**

The Popish School-divines do dream that Faith is a Quality cleaving in the Heart without Christ. This is a devilish Error. But Christ should be so set forth, that thou shouldst see nothing besides him, and shouldst think that nothing can be more near unto thee, or more present within thy Heart than he is. For he sitteth not idly in

Heaven, but is present with us, working and living in us, as he saith before in *Chap. ii. 20*. *I live, yet not I, but Christ liveth in me*: And here likewise, *Ye have put on Christ*. Faith therefore is a certain stedfast

**Why Paul maketh mention of Christ so often in his Epistles.**

beholding, which looketh upon nothing else but Christ the Conqueror of Sin and Death, and the Giver of Righteousness, Salvation, and eternal Life. This is the Cause that *Paul* nameth and setteth forth Jesus Christ so often in his Epistles, yea almost in every Verse. But he setteth him forth by the Word, for otherwise he cannot be comprehended then by the Word.

This was notably and lively represented by the brazen Serpent which is a Figure of Christ. *Moses* commanded the *Jews* which were stung of Serpents in the Desert, to do nothing else but stedfastly behold the brazen Serpent, and not to turn away their Eyes. They that did so were healed only by that stedfast and constant beholding of the Serpent, *Numb. xxi. 6, 7, 8*. But contrariwise, they died which obeyed not the Commandment of *Moses*, but looked upon their Wounds and not upon the Serpent. So if I would find Comfort when my Conscience is afflicted, or when I am at the Point of Death, I must do nothing but apprehend Christ by Faith, and say; I believe in Jesus Christ the Son of God, who suffered, was crucified, and died for me, &c. in whose Wounds and in whose Death I see my Sin, and in his Resurrection Victory over Sin, Death, and the Devil, also Righteousness and eternal Life. Besides him I see nothing, I hear nothing. This is the true Faith concerning Christ, and in Christ, whereby we are made Member of his Body, *Flesh of his Flesh, and Bone of his Bones*, *Eph. v. 30*. *In him therefore we live, and move, and have our Being*, *Acts xvii. 28*. Christ and our Faith must be thoroughly joined together: We must be in Heaven, and Christ must live and work in us. Now, he liveth and work-

worketh in us, not by Speculation and naked Knowledge, but indeed and by a true and substantial Presence.

Verse 29. *And if ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's Seed, and Heirs according to the Promise.*

That is to say, if ye believe and be baptized into Christ, if ye believe (I say) that he is that promised Seed of *Abraham* which brought the Blessing to all the *Gentiles*, then are ye the Children of *Abraham*, not by Nature, but by Adoption. For the Scripture attributeth unto him, not only the Children of the Flesh, but also of Adoption, and of the Promise, and foresheweth that they shall receive the Inheritance, and the other shall be cast out of the House. So *Paul* in few Words translateth the whole Glory of *Libanus*, that is to say, of the Nation of the *Jews* unto the Desert, that is, unto the *Gentiles*. And this Place comprehendeth a singular Consolation, to wit, that the *Gentiles* are the Children of *Abraham*, and consequently the People of God. But they are the Children of *Abraham*, not by carnal Generation, but by the Promise. The Kingdom of Heaven then, Life, and the eternal Inheritance belongeth to the *Gentiles*. And this the Scripture signified long before, when it saith; *I have made thee a Father of many Nations*, Gen. xvii. 5. Again, *In thy Seed shall all Nations of the Earth be blessed*, Gen. xxii. 18. Now therefore, because we which are *Gentiles* do believe, and by Faith do receive the Blessing promised to *Abraham* and exhibited by Christ; therefore the Scripture calleth us the Children and Heirs of *Abraham*, not after the Flesh, but after the Promise. So that Promise, *In thy Seed*, &c. belongeth also to all the *Gentiles*, and according to this Promise Christ is become ours.

Indeed the Promise was made only to the *Jews*, and not to us that are *Gentiles*, *Psal.* cxlvii. 19, 20. *He sheweth his Word unto Jacob*, &c. *He hath not dealt so with any Nation*, &c. Notwithstanding, that which was promised cometh unto us by Faith, by the which only we apprehend the Promise of God. Albeit then that the Promise be not made unto us, yet is it made as touching us and for us, for we are named in the Promise; *In thy Seed shall all Nations of the Earth be blessed*. For the Promise sheweth plainly that *Abraham* should be the Father, not only of the *Jewish* Nation, but of many Nations, and that he should be the Heir, not of one Kingdom, but of all the World, *Rom.* v. 13. So the Glory of the whole Kingdom of Christ is translated unto us. Wherefore all Laws are utterly abolished in the Heart and Conscience of a Christian; notwithstanding they remain without still in the Flesh. And hereof we have spoken largely before.

The *Gentiles* that believe, are the Seed of *Abraham*.

The *Gentiles* are named in the Promise.



## C H A P. IV.

*Verse 1. Now I say, that the Heir as long as he is a Child, differeth nothing from a Servant, tho' he be Lord of all;*

*Verse 2. But is under Tutors and Governors until the Time appointed of the Father.*

The Argument where-  
with *Paul*  
fortifieth his  
Matter.



Ye see with what vehement Affection *Paul* goeth about to call back the *Galatians*, and what strong Arguments he useth in debating the Matter, gathering Similitudes of Experience, of the Example of *Abraham*,

of the Testimonies of the Scripture, and of the Time, so that oftentimes he seemeth to renew the whole Matter again. For before, he had in a Manner finished the Disputation concerning Justification, concluding that a Man is justified before God by Faith only and alone; but because he calleth also to Remembrance this political Example of the little Heir, he bringeth the same also for the Confirmation of his Matter. Thus trying every Way, he lieth in wait with a certain holy Subtily to take the *Galatians* unawares. For the ignorant People are sooner perswaded with Similitudes and Examples, then with deep and subtil Disputations: They will rather behold an Image well painted, then a Book well written. *Paul* therefore now, after that he hath brought the Similitude of a Man's Testament, of the Prison, of the School-master, useth also this Similitude of an Heir (which is familiar and well known to all Men) to move and to perswade them.

Christ and  
the Apostles  
used Exam-  
ples and Si-  
militudes.

And surely it is a very profitable Thing to be furnished with Similitudes and Examples, which not only *Paul*, but also the Prophets, and Christ himself also did often use.

Ye see (saith he) that it is ordained by the civil Laws, that an Heir, albeit he be the Lord of all his Father's Goods, differeth not from a Servant. Indeed he hath an assured Hope of the Inheritance; but before he come to his Years, his Tutors hold him in Subjection, like as the School-master doth his Scholar.

iv. They commit not unto him the ordering of his own Goods, but constrain him to serve, so that he is kept and maintained with his own Goods like a Servant. Therefore as long as this Bondage endureth, that is, so long as he is under Tutors and Governors, he differeth nothing from a Servant. And this Subjection and Servitude is very profitable for him; for otherwise thro' Folly he would soon waste all his Goods. This Captivity endureth not always, but hath a certain Time limited and appointed by the Father, wherein it must end.

Verse 3. *Even so we, when we were Children, were in Bondage under the Elements of the World:*

In like Manner when we were little Children we were Heirs, having the Promise of the Inheritance to come, which should be given unto us by the Seed of Abraham, that is to say, by Christ, in whom all Nations should be blessed. But because the Fulness of Time was not yet come, Moses our Tutor, Governor and School-master came, holding us in Captivity with his Hands bound, so that we could bear no Rule, nor possess our Inheritance. In the mean Time notwithstanding, as an Heir is nourished and maintained in Hope of Liberty to come; even so Moses did nourish us with the Hope of the Promise to be revealed in the Time appointed; to wit, when Christ should come, who by his coming should put an End to the Time of the Law, and begin the Time of Grace.

In the Time of the Law we were under Moses as under a Tutor.

Now the Time of the Law endeth two Manner of Ways: First, as I said) by the coming of CHRIST in the Flesh at the Time appointed of his Father. But when the Fulness of Time was come, God sent forth his Son made of a Woman, made under the Law; To redeem them that were under the Law, &c. Gal. iv. 4, 5. He entred in once into the Holy Place, having obtained eternal Redemption for us, Heb. ix. 12. Moreover, the same Christ who came once in the Time appointed, cometh also unto us daily and hourly in Spirit. Indeed once with his own Blood he redeemed and sanctified all, Heb. x. 14. But because we are not yet perfectly pure (for the Remnants of Sin do yet cleave to our Flesh, which striveth against the Spirit, Gal. v. 17.) therefore he cometh unto us spiritually, and continually more and more accomplisheth the appointed Time of his Father, abrogating and abolishing the Law.

So he came also in Spirit to the Fathers of the Old Testament before he appeared in the Flesh. They had Christ in Spirit. They believed in Christ which should be revealed, as we believe in Christ which is now revealed, and were saved by him, as we are, according to that saying; *Jesus Christ is one, Yesterday, and to Day, and shall be the same forever.* Yesterday, before the Time of his coming in the Flesh. To Day, when he was revealed in the Time before appointed. Now and forever he is one and the same Christ; for even by him only and alone

all the Faithful which either have been, be, or shall be, are delivered from the Law, justified and saved.

*In like Manner we also* (saith he) *when we were Children, served under the Rudiments of the World*, that is to say, the Law had Dominion over us, oppressed us and kept us in a strait Bondage, as Servants and

**The politick Use of the Law.** Captives. For first, it restrained carnal and rebellious Persons that they should not run headlong into all Kinds of Vice. For the Law threatneth Punishment to Transgressors, which if they feared not, there is no Mischief which they would not commit; and over those whom the

**The spirituall Use of the Law.** Law so bridleth, it ruleth and reigneth. Again, it did accuse us, terrify us, kill us, and condemn us spiritually and before God; and this was the principal Dominion that the Law had over us. Therefore like as an Heir is

subject unto his Tutors, is beaten, and is compelled to obey their Laws, and diligently to execute their Commandments; even so Mens Consciences, before Christ comes, are oppressed with the sharp Servitude of the Law; that is to say, they are accused, terrified, and condemned of the Law. But this Dominion, or rather this Tyranny of the Law, is not continual, but must only endure until the Time of Grace.

Wherefore the Office of the Law is to reprove and to increase Sins, not to bring Righteousness; to kill, not to bring Life, *For the Law was our School-master to bring us unto Christ*, Gal. iii. 24. Like as therefore the Tutors do handle the Heir being yet a Child, straitly and hardly, rule him and command him as a Servant, and he again is constrained to be subject unto them; even so the Law accuseth us, humbleth us, and bringeth us into Bondage, that we may be the Servants of Sin, Death, and of the Wrath of God, which is indeed a most miserable Kind of Bondage. But as the Power of the Tutors, and the Subjection and Bondage of the little Heir is not continual, but only endureth unto the Time appointed of the Father, which being ended, he needeth not to be governed by his Tutors, nor remaineth under their Subjection any more, but with Liberty enjoyeth the Inheritance; even so the Law hath Dominion over us, and we are constrained to be Servants and Captives under his Government but not for ever. For this Clause which followeth must be added; *until the Time appointed of the Father*. For Christ which was promised, came and redeemed us which were oppressed with the Tyranny of the Law.

**To whom Christ cometh, and to whom he cometh not.** Contrariwise, the Coming of Christ profiteth not the careless Hypocrites, the wicked Contemners of God, nor the Desperate which think that nothing else remaineth but Terrors of the Law which they feel. His coming only profiteth those that are tormented and terrified with the

Law for a Time; that is to say, such as despair not in those great and inward Terrors which the Law stirreth up, but with a sure Trust come unto Christ the Throne of Grace, which hath redeemed them from the Curse of the Law, being made a Curse for them, and so obtain Mercy and find Grace, *Heb. iv. 16. Gal. iii. 13.*

There

There is a certain Vehemency therefore in this Word, *we did serve*. As if he would say; Our-Conscience was subject to the Law, which holdeth us as Bond-slaves and Captives, like as a Tyrant holdeth his Prisoners, whipped us, and with all his Power exercised his Tyranny upon us; that is to say, it brought upon us a Terror and an Heaviness of Spirit, it made us to tremble and ready to despair, threatening unto us everlasting Death and Damnation. This spiritual Bondage and Slavery of the Law, is most sharp and bitter, and yet (as I have said) it is not continual, but endureth so long as we are Children; that is, so long as Christ is absent. Whilst he is absent, we are Servants shut under the Law, destitute of Grace, Faith, and all the Gifts of the Holy Ghost.

*Verse 3. Under the Elements (or Rudiments) of the World:*

Some have thought that *Paul* speaketh here of those corporal Elements, the Fire, the Air, the Water and the Earth. But *Paul* hath his peculiar Manner of Speech, and he speaketh here even of the Law, of God, which he calleth the Elements or Rudiments of the World: And his Words seem to be very heretical. So is he wont in other Places also to diminish and to abase the Authority of the Law very much, when he calleth it the Letter that killeth, the Ministry of Death and Damnation, and the Power of Sin, 2 *Cor.* iii. 6, 7, 9. 1 *Cor.* xv. 56. And these most odious Names, which shew plainly the Power and Use of the Law, he chooseth of Purpose, to admonish us, that in the Terrors of Sin, Wrath and the Judgment of God, Wherefore we trust not to our own Righteousness, or to the Righteousness of the Law, seeing that the Law in his principal Use, can do nothing else but accuse our Consciences, increase Sin, threaten Death and eternal Damnation. Wherefore this diminishing and abasing of the Law must be applied to the Conflict of Conscience, and not to the civil Life, nor to secure and careless Minds.

He calleth therefore the Law, *the Elements of the World*, that is to say, the outward Laws and Traditions written in a certain Book. For altho' the Law do civilly bridle a Man from evil, and constrain him to do well, yet notwithstanding being kept after this Sort, it doth not deliver him from Sin, it justifieth him not, it prepareth not a Way for him to Heaven, but leaveth him in the World. I do not obtain Righteousness and everlasting Life because I kill not, I commit not Adultery, I do not steal, &c. These outward Vertues and honest Conversation be not the Kingdom of Christ, nor the heavenly Righteousness, but the Righteousness of the Flesh and of the World; which also the *Gentiles* had, and not only the Meritmongers, as in the Time of Christ the *Pharisees*, and in our Time the *Monks* and *Friers*, &c. This Righteousness some do observe to avoid the Punishment of the Law; some that they be praised of Men and esteemed righteous, constant and patient, and therefore it is rather to be called coloured Hypocrisy, then Righteousness.

Moreover, the Law when it is in his principal Use and Office, can do nothing but accuse, terrify, condemn and kill. But Where Sin, Death, and the Wrath of God is felt, there is no Righteousness as touching the Law; but as touching Christ, there is Righteousness and Life. Where such Terror, such feeling of Sin, of Death, of the Wrath and Judgment of God is, there is no Righteousness, no divine or heavenly Thing, but all these are mere Things of the World; which (because it is the Kingdom of the Devil) is nothing else but a certain Puddle of Sin, of Death, of Hell, and of all Evils, which the fearful, sorrowful and heavy hearted do feel, but the secure and careless Contemners do not feel them. Wherefore the Law even in his best and most perfect Use, doth nothing else but reveal and increase Sin, and strike into us the Terror of Death, and these are but worldly Things. We see then that the Law giveth no lively, no healthful, no divine or heavenly Thing, but only worldly Things. Wherefore *Paul* doth very fitly call the Law the Elements or Rudiments of the World.

And altho' *Paul* call the whole Law the Rudiments of the World (as may appear by that I have said before) yet principally he speaketh thus in Contempt of the ceremonial Laws; which altho' they profit never so much, yet (saith he) they consist only in outward Things, as Meat, Drink, Apparel, Places, Times, the Temple, the Feasts, Washings, the Sacrifices, &c. which be but mere worldly, and Things ordained of God only for the Use of this present Life, but not to justify or save before God. Therefore by this Clause, *The Elements of the World*, he rejecteth and condemneth the Righteousness of the Law, which consisteth in these outward Ceremonies, being notwithstanding ordained and commanded of God to be observed for a Time, and by a contemptible Name calleth it the Rudiments of the World. So the Emperors Laws be Rudiments of the World, for they intreat of worldly Matters, that is to say, of Things concerning this present Life, as of Goods, Possessions, Inheritances, Murders, Adulteries, Robberies, &c. whereof speaketh also the second Table of the Commandments, As for the *Pope's* Canon Laws, and Decretals, which forbid Marriage and Meats, those *Paul* in another Place calleth the Doctrines of Devils, *1 Tim. iv. 1.* which are also Rudiments of the World, but that they do most wickedly bind Mens Consciences to the Observation of outward Things, contrary to the Word of God and Faith.

Wherefore the Law of *Moses* giveth nothing but worldly Things, that is to say, it doth only shew civilly and spiritually the Evils that be in the World. Notwithstanding, if it be in his true Use, it driveth the Conscience by his Terrors to seek and thirst after the Promise of God, and to look unto Christ. But that thou mayest so do, thou hast need of the Aid and Assistance of the Holy Ghost, which may say in thy Heart: It is not the Will of God, that after the Law hath done his Office in thee, thou shouldst only be terrified and killed; but that when thou art brought by the Law

Law to the Knowledge of thy Misery and Damnation, thou shouldst not despair but believe in Christ, *who is the End of the Law for Righteousness to every one that believeth*, Rom. x. 4. Here is no worldly Thing done, but here all worldly Matters and all Laws cease, and heavenly Things begin now to appear. Therefore so long as we be under the Rudiments of the World; that is to say, under the Law, which giveth not only no Righteousness and Peace of Conscience, but revealeth and increaseth Sins, and ingendrieth Wrath, Rom. iii. 20. iv. 15. we be Servants, thral and subject to the Law, altho' we have the Promise of the Blessing to come. Indeed the Law saith; *Thou shalt love the Lord thy God*, Deut. vi. 5. but that I may be able so to do, or to apprehend Christ. this cannot the Law give.

I speak not this to the End that the Law should be despised, neither doth *Paul* so mean, but it ought to be had in great Estimation. But because *Paul* is here in the Matter of Justification, it was necessary that he should speak of the Law, as of a Thing very contemptible and odious. For Justification is a far other Manner of Thing then the Law is. We cannot speak basely and contemptuously enough of the Law when we are in this Matter. When the Conscience therefore is in the Conflict, then should it think upon nothing, know nothing, at all but Christ only and alone. Then should it remove the Law utterly out of her Sight, and embrace nothing but the Promise concerning Christ. To say this, it is an easy Matter; but in the Time of Tentation when the Conscience wrestleth in the Presence of God, to do it indeed, of all Things it is the hardest; so wit, that when the Law accuseth thee, terrifieth thee, revealeth unto thee thy Sin, threatneth the Wrath of God, and eternal Death, that then (I say) thou shouldst have such Strength of Faith in Christ, as if there had never been any Law or any Sin, but only Christ, mere Grace and Redemption; or that thou shouldst be able to say: O Law, I will not hear thee, for thou hast a stammering and a slow Tongue; moreover, the Fulness of Time is now come, and therefore I am free, and will not suffer thy Tyranny any longer. Here a Man may see how hard a Matter it is to separate the Law from Grace: Again, how divine and heavenly a Thing it is to cope here even against Hope, Rom. iv. 18. and how true this Proposition of *Paul* is, that we are justified by Faith alone.

Learn here therefore to speak of the Law as contemptuously as thou canst in the Matter of Justification, by the Example of the Apostle, which calleth the Law the Rudiments of the World, pernicious Traditions, the Strength of Sin, the Ministry of Death, &c. 1 Cor. xv. 56. For

thou suffer the Law to bear Rule in thy Conscience when thou standest before God, wrestling against Sin and Death, then is the Law indeed nothing else but a Sink of all Evils, Heresies and Blasphemies; it doth nothing but increase Sin, accuse and terrify the Conscience,

When we  
feel the Ter-  
rors of Con-  
science, the  
Law must be  
abased, and  
the Promise  
magnified.

He alludeth  
to the slow  
Tongue,  
and stam-  
mering  
Speech of  
*Moses*.

What  
Names *Paul*  
giveth to  
the Law.

threaten

threaten Death, and set forth God as an angry Judge, which rejecteth and condemneth Sinners. Here therefore if thou be wise, banish this flutting and stammering *Moses* far from thee, with his Law; and in any ways let not his Terrors and Threatnings move thee. Here let him utterly be suspected unto thee as an Heretick, as an excommunicate and condemned Person, worse then the Pope and the Devil himself, and therefore not to be heard or obeyed in any Case.

The Com-  
mendation  
of the Law.  
The Law is  
good, and the  
Law is evil.

But out of the Matter of Justification we ought with *Paul* to think reverently of the Law, to commend it highly, to call it holy, righteous, good, spiritual and divine, *Rom. vii. 12, 14*. Out of the Case of Conscience we should make a God of it, but in the Case of Conscience it is a very Devil: For in the first Temptation that can be, it is not able to raise up and comfort the Conscience, but it doth clean contrary; it terrifieth, it oppresseth it with Heaviness, and plucketh it from the Assurance of Righteousness and Life, and of all Goodness. Hereupon *Paul* a little after, calleth it *weak and beggarly Elements*, *Gal. iv. 9*. Wherefore let us not suffer the Law in any Case to bear Rule in our Conscience, especially seeing it cost Christ so great a Price to deliver the Conscience from the Tyranny of the Law: For he was made a Curse for us, that he might deliver us from the Curse of the Law. Let the Godly learn therefore that the Law and Christ are two contrary Things, whereof the one cannot abide the other. For when Christ is present, the Law may in no Case rule, but must depart out of the Conscience, and leave the Bed (which is so strait that it cannot hold two, as *Isaiah* saith, Chap. xxviii. 20.) and give Place only to Christ. Let him only reign in Righteousness, in Peace, in Joy and Life, that the Conscience may sleep, and repose itself joyfully in Christ, without any feeling of the Law, Sin and Death.

Why *Paul*  
calleth the  
Law the E-  
lements of  
the World.

*Paul* here of Purpose useth this figurative Speech, *Elements of the World*; whereby (as I said) he doth much abase and diminish the Glory and Authority of the Law, to stir up our Minds. For he that readeth *Paul* attentively, when he heareth that he calleth the Law the Ministry of Death, the Letter that killeth, &c. *2 Cor. iii. 6*. by and by he thinketh thus with himself; Why doth he give such odious, and (as it appeareth to Reason) blasphemous Terms to the Law, which is a divine Doctrine revealed from Heaven? To this *Paul* answereth, that the Law is both holy, just and good, and that it is also the Ministry of Sin and Death, but in divers Respects. Before Christ it is holy; after Christ it is Death. Therefore when Christ is come, we ought to know nothing at all of the Law, unless it be in this Respect, that it hath Power and Dominion over the Flesh, to bridle it and to keep it under. Here is a Conflict between the Law and the Flesh (to whom the Yoke of the Law is hard and grievous) as long as we live.

Only *Paul* among all the Apostles, calleth the Law the Rudiments of the World, *weak and beggarly Elements, the Strength of Sin, the Letter* that

that killeth, &c. 2 Cor. iii. 6. The other Apostles make not so of the Law. Whosoever then will be a right scholar in Christ's School, let him mark diligently this Manner of Speech used of the Apostle. Christ calleth him an elect Vessel, *Acts* ix. 15. and therefore gave unto him an exquisite Utterance, and a singular Kind of Speech above all the rest of the Apostles, that he as an elect Vessel might faithfully lay the Foundations of the Article of Justification, and clearly set forth the same.

*Paul's Manner of speaking must be marked.*

*Verses 4, 5. But when the Fulness of the Time was come, God sent forth his Son made of a Woman, made under the Law, To redeem them that were under the Law,*

That is to say, after that the Time of the Law was fulfilled, and that Christ was revealed, and had delivered us from the Law, and that the Promise was published among all Nations, &c.

Mark here diligently how *Paul* defineth it. Christ (saith he) is the Son of God and of a Woman, which for us Sinners was made under the Law, to redeem us that were under the Law. In these Words he comprehendeth both the Person of Christ and the Office of Christ. His Person consisteth of his divine and human Nature. This he sheweth plainly, when he saith; *God sent forth his Son made of a Woman.* Christ therefore is very God and very Man. His Office he setteth forth in these Words; *Made under the Law, to redeem them that were under the Law, &c.*

The Person and Office of Christ.

And it seemeth that *Paul* here, as it were in Reproach, calleth the Virgin *Mary* but only a Woman; which Thing was not well taken, even of some of the ancient Doctors, who would that he should rather have called her a Virgin, then a Woman. But *Paul* intreateth in this Epistle of the most high and principal Matter of all, to wit, of the Gospel, of Faith, of Christian Righteousness. Also, what the Person of Christ is, what is his Office, what he hath taken upon him and done for our Cause, and what Benefits he hath brought to us wretched Sinners. Wherefore the Excellency of so high and so wonderful a Matter, was the Cause that he had no Regard to her Virginity. It was enough for him to set forth and preach the inestimable Mercy of God, which would that his Son should be born of that Sex. Therefore he maketh no Mention of the Dignity of the Sex, but of the Sex only. And in that he nameth the Sex, he signifieth that Christ was made true and very Man of Woman-kind. As if he said; He was born, not of Man and Woman, but only of Woman-kind. Therefore when he nameth but only the Woman-kind, saying, *made of a Woman*, it is as if he should have said, *made of a Virgin.* *John* the Evangelist, when he thus setteth forth the Word, that it was in the

Why *Paul* calleth the Mother of Christ a Woman and not a Virgin.

*Beginning, and was made Flesh, John i. 1. speaketh not one Word of his Mother.*

Furthermore, this Place also witnesseth that Christ, when the Time of the Law was accomplished, did abolish the same, and so brought Liberty to those that were oppressed therewith, but made no

**The Error  
and Blasphemy  
of the  
Papists and  
Turks.**

new Law after or besides that old Law of *Moses*. Wherefore the *Monks* and Popish School-men do no less err and blaspheme Christ, in that they imagine that he hath given a new Law besides the Law of *Moses*, then do the *Turks*, which vaunt of their *Mahomet* as of a new Law-giver after Christ, and better then Christ. Christ then

came not to abolish the old Law, that he might make a new, but (as *Paul* here saith) he was sent of his Father into the World, to redeem those which were kept in Thralldom under the Law. These Words paint out Christ lively and truly; they do not attribute unto him the Office to make any new Law, but to redeem them which were under the Law. And Christ himself saith, *I judge no Man*, John viii. 15. And in another Place; *I came not to judge the World, but to save the World*, John xii. 47. That is to say, I came not to bring any Law,

**The Office  
of Christ.**

nor to judge Men according to the same, as *Moses* and other Law-givers, but I have a higher and a better Office. The Law killed you, and I again do judge, condemn and kill the Law, and so I deliver you from the Tyranny thereof.

**A false Opinion  
of Christ  
is not easily  
cast off.**

We that are old Men, which have been so nussed up in this pernicious Doctrine of the *Papists*, that it hath taken deep Root even in our Bones and Marrow, have conceived an Opinion quite contrary to that which *Paul* here teacheth. For altho' we confessed with our Mouth

that Christ redeemed us from the Tyranny of the Law, yet in very Deed in our Heart we thought him to be a Law-giver, a Tyrant, and a Judge more terrible then *Moses* himself. And this perverse Opinion we cannot yet at this Day in so great Light of the Truth, utterly reject; so strongly are those Things rooted in our Hearts which we learn in our Youth. But ye which are yet young, and are not infected with this pernicious Opinion, may learn Christ purely with less Difficulty then we that are old can remove out of our Minds these blasphemous Imaginations which we have conceived of him. Notwithstanding ye have not utterly escaped the Deceits of the Devil. For altho' you be not as yet infected with this cursed Opinion, that Christ is a Law-giver, yet have ye in you the Root wherof it springeth, that is, ye have the Flesh, Reason, and the Corruption of Nature, which can judge no otherwise of Christ, but that he is a Law-giver. Therefore ye must endeavour with all your Power to learn so to know and to apprehend Christ, as *Paul* hath set him forth in this Place. But if besides this natural Corruption, there come also corrupt and wicked Teachers (of whom the World is full) they will increase this Corruption of Nature, and so shall the Evil be doubled, that is to say, evil Instruction will increase and confirm the pernicious Error of blind Reason, which naturally judgeth Christ to be a

Law.

Law-giver, and printeth that Error mightily in our Minds, that without great Travail and Difficulty it can never be abolished.

Wherefore it is very profitable for us to have always before our Eyes this sweet and comfortable Sentence, and such like, which set out Christ truly and lively, that in our whole Life, in all Dangers, in the Confession of our Faith before Tyrants, and in the Hour of Death, we may boldly and with sure Confidence say; \* O Law, thou hast no Power over me, and therefore thou dost accuse and condemn me in vain. For I believe in Christ Jesus the Son of God whom the Father sent into the World to redeem us miserable Sinners oppressed with the Tyranny of the Law: He gave his Life and shed his Blood for me. Therefore feeling thy Terrors and Threatnings, O Law, I plunge my Conscience in the Wounds, Blood, Death, Repentance and Victory of my Saviour Christ. Besides him I will see nothing, I will hear nothing. This Faith is our Victory whereby we overcome the Terrors of the Law, Sin, Death and all Evils, and yet not without great conflicts. And here do the Children of God, which are daily exercised with grievous Temptations, wrestle and sweat indeed. For oftentimes it cometh into their Minds

that Christ will accuse them and plead against them, that he will require an Account of their former Life, and that he will condemn them: They cannot assure themselves that he is sent of his Father to redeem us from the Tyranny and Oppression of the Law: And whereof cometh this? They have not yet fully put off the Flesh, which rebelleth against the Spirit. Therefore the Terrors of the Law, the Fear of Death, and such like sorrowful and heavy Thoughts do oftentimes return, which hinder our Faith that it cannot apprehend the Benefit of Christ (who hath redeemed us from the Bondage of the Law) with such Assurance as it should do.

But how or by what Means hath Christ redeemed us? This was the Manner of our Redemption: *He was made under the Law.* Christ when he came, found us all Captives under Governors and Tutors, that is to say, shut up and holden in Prison under the Law. What doth he then? Altho' he be Lord of the Law, and therefore the Law hath no Authority or Power over him (for he is the Son of God) yet of his own Accord he maketh himself subject to the Law. Here the Law executeth upon him all the Jurisdiction which it had over us: It accuseth and tempteth us also, it maketh us subject to Sin, Death, the Wrath of God, and with his Sentence condemneth us. And this it doth by good Right, *for we are all Sinners, and were by Nature the Children of Wrath,* Eph. ii. 3. Contrariwise, *Christ did no Sin, neither was Guile found in his Mouth,* 1 Pet. ii. 22. therefore he was not subject to the Law. Yet notwithstanding the Law was no less cruel against this innocent, righteous and blessed Lamb, then it was against us cursed and damned Sinners, yea much more rigorous. For it accused him as a Blasphemer and a seditious Person,

The sweet and comfortable Places of the Scripture touching Christ, must be always before our Eyes.

\* The Comfort of afflicted Consciences against the Terrors of the Law.

The Conflicts of the Godly.

son, it made him guilty before God of the Sins of the whole World, *Matth. xxvi. 65. Luke xxiii. 5.* it so terrified and oppressed him with Heaviness and Anguish of Spirit that he swear Blood, *Luke xxii. 44.* And briefly, it condemned him to Death, yea even to the Death of the Cross.

**A marvelous Combate between the Law and Christ.** This was indeed a wonderful Combate, where the Law being a Creature, giveth such an Assault to his Creator, and against all Right and Equity, practiseth his whole Tyranny upon the Son of God which it exercised upon us the Children of Wrath. Now, therefore because the Law did so horribly and so cursedly Sin against his God,

it is accused and arraigned. There Christ saith; O Law, thou mighty Queen and cruel Regent of all Mankind, What have I done, that thou hast accused me, terrified me and condemned me, which am innocent? Here the Law, which had before condemned and killed all Men, when it hath nothing wherewith to defend or purge itself, is again so condemned and vanquished, that it loseth his whole Right, not only over Christ (whom it so cruelly handled and killed) but also over all them that believe in him. For to these Christ saith; Come unto me all ye that labour under the Yoke of the Law, *Matth. xi. 28.* I could have overcome the Law by my absolute Power, without mine own Smart; for I am Lord of the Law, and therefore it hath no Right over me. But I have made myself subject unto the Law, for your Cause which were under the Law, taking your Flesh upon me, that is to say, of mine inestimable Love I humbled and yielded myself to the same Prison, Tyranny and Bondage of the Law, under the which ye served as Captives and Bond-slaves, I suffered the Law to have Dominion over me which was his Lord, to terrify me, to make me Thral and Captive unto Sin, Death, and the Wrath of God, which it ought not to have done. Therefore I have vanquished the Law by double Right and Authority. *First*, As the Son of God and Lord of the Law. *Secondly*, In your Person, which is as much as if ye had overcome the Law yourselves, for my Victory is yours.

After this Manner *Paul* speaketh every where of this marvellous Combate between Christ and the Law. And to make the Matter more delectable and more apparent, he is wont to set forth the Law by a Figure, called *Προσώπων*, as a certain mighty Person which hath condemned and killed Christ, whom Christ again, overcoming Death, had conquered, condemned and killed, *Eph. ii. 16. Killing Enmity in himself.* Again, *Psal. lxxviii. 18. Thou hast ascended on high, thou hast led Captivity captive, &c.* He useth the same Figure also in his Epistles to the *Romans, Corinthians and Colossians.* *By Sin he condemned Sin, &c.* *Rom. viii. 3.* Christ therefore by this his Victory, banished the Law out of our Conscience, so that now it can no more confound us in the Sight of God, drive us to Desperation, or condemn us. Indeed it ceaseth not still to reveal our Sin, to accuse and to terrify us;

but

at the Conscience taking hold of this Word of the Apostle ; *Christ hath redeemed us from the Law*, is raised up by Faith, and conceiveth great Comfort. Moreover, it triumpheth over the Law with a certain holy Pride, saying ; I care not for thy Terrors and Threatnings ; for thou hast crucified the Son of God, and this hast thou done most unjustly ; therefore the Sin that thou hast committed against him, cannot be forgiven. Thou hast lost thy Right and Sovereignty, and now for ever thou art not only overcome, condemned and slain unto Christ, but also to me believing in him, unto whom he hath freely given this Victory. The Law is dead to us for ever, so that we abide in Christ ; *Thanks be to God, which giveth us the Victory, thro' our Lord Jesus Christ*, 1 Cor. v. 57.

These Things doth also confirm this Doctrine, that we are justified by Faith only. For when this Combate was fought betwixt Christ and the Law, none of our Works or Deserts came between, but only Christ was found, who putting upon him our person, made himself subject to the Law, and in perfect innocency suffered all Tyranny. Therefore the Law, as Thief and cursed Murderer, of the Son of God, loseth his Right, and deserveth to be condemned in such Sort, that wheresoever Christ is, or is once named, there it is compelled to avoid and flee away, no otherwise then the Devil (as the *Papists* imagine) flieth from the Cross ; wherefore if we believe, we are delivered from the Law thro' Christ, who hath triumphed over it by himself, Col. 15. Therefore this glorious Triumph purchased unto us by Christ, not gotten by any Works, but only by Faith ; therefore Faith only glorifieth.

These Words then, *Christ was made under the Law*, &c. as they are shy and import a certain Vehemency, so they are diligently to be weighed and considered. For they declare that the Son of God being made under the Law, did not only perform one or two Works of the Law ; that is to say, he was not only circumcised, or presented in the temple, or went up to *Jerusalem* with others at the Times appointed, but only lived civilly under the Law, but he suffered all the Tyranny of the Law. For the Law being in his principal Use and full Power, set upon Christ, and so horribly assailed him, that he felt such Anguish and terror, as no Man upon the Earth had ever felt the like. This his bloody Sweat doth sufficiently witness, his Comfort ministered by the Angel, that mighty Prayer which he made in the Garden ; and briefly, that lamentable Complaint upon the Cross ; *O my God, Why hast thou forsaken me ?* These Things he suffered, to redeem those which were under the Law, that is to say, in Heaviness of Spirit, in Anguish and Terror, and ready to despair, which were oppressed with the heavy Burden of their Sins, as indeed we are all oppressed. For as touching the Flesh, we sin daily against all the Commandments of God. But *Paul* giveth good Comfort, when he saith, *God sent his Son*, &c.

Christ came  
not to make  
a Law, but  
to take the  
Law clean  
away.

So Christ a divine and human Person, begotten of God without beginning, and born of the Virgin in the Time appointed, came not to make a Law, but to feel and suffer the Terrors of the Law with all Extremity, and to overcome the same, that so he might utterly abolish the Law. He was not made a Teacher of the Law, but an obedient

Disciple to the Law, that by this his Obedience he might redeem them which were under the Law. This is against the Doctrine of the *Papists*, who have made Christ a Law-giver; yea much more severe and rigorous then *Moses*. *Paul* teacheth here clean contrary, to wit, that God humbled his Son under the Law, that is to say, constrained him to bear the Judgment and Curse of the Law, Sin, Death, &c. For *Moses* the Minister of the Law, Sin, Wrath and Death, apprehended, bound, condemned and killed Christ; and all this he suffered. Therefore Christ standeth as a mere Patient, and not as an Agent, in respect of the Law. He is not then a Law-giver, or a Judge after the Law, but in that he made himself subject to the Law, bearing the Condemnation of the Law, he delivered us from the Curse thereof.

Now, whereas Christ in the Gospel giveth Commandments, and teacheth the Law, or rather expoundeth it, this pertaineth not to the Doctrine of Justification, but of good Works. Moreover, it is not the proper Office of Christ (for the which he came principally into the World) to teach the Law, but an accidental or by-Office; like as it was to heal the Weak, to raise up the Dead, &c. These are indeed excellent and divine Works; but yet not the very proper and principal Works of Christ. For the Prophets also taught the Law, and wrought Miracles. But Christ is God and Man, who fighting against the Law, suffered the uttermost Cruelty and Tyranny thereof: And in that he suffered the Tyranny of the Law, he vanquished it in himself: And afterwards, being raised up again from Death, he condemned and utterly abolished the Law which was our deadly Enemy, so that it cannot condemn and kill the Faithful any more. Wherefore the true and proper Office of Christ is to wrestle with the Law, with the Sin and the Death of the whole World, and so to wrestle that he must suffer and abide all these Things, and by suffering them in himself, conquer and abolish them, and by this Means deliver the Faithful from the Law and from all Evils. Therefore to teach the Law and to work Miracles, are particular Benefits of Christ, for the which he came not principally into the World. For the Prophets, and especially the Apostles did greater Miracles then Christ did; *John* xiv. 12.

Seeing then that Christ hath overcome the Law in his own Person, it followeth necessarily that he is naturally God. For there is none, whether he be Man or Angel which is above the Law, but only God. But Christ is above the Law, for he hath vanquished it; therefore he is the Son of God, and naturally God. If thou lay hold upon Christ in such Sort as *Paul* here painteth him out, thou canst not err nor be confounded. Moreover, thou shalt easily judge of all Kinds of Life, of the Religions and Ceremonies of the whole World. But if this true Picture of

Christ

Christ be defaced, or in any ways darkened, then followeth a Confusion of all Things. For the natural Man cannot judge of the Law of God. Here faileth the Cunning of the Philosophers, of the Canonicists, and of all Men. For the Law hath Power and Dominion over Man. Therefore the Law judgeth Man, and not Man the Law; only the Christian hath a true and a certain Judgment of the Law. And how? That it doth not justify. Wherefore then the Law made, if it do not justify? Righteousness becometh God which is received by Faith alone, is not the final cause why the righteous do obey the Law, but the Peace of the World, Thankfulness towards God, and good Example of Life, whereby others be provoked to believe the Gospel. The Pope hath so confounded and mingled the Ceremonial Law, the moral Law, and Faith together, that he hath at length preferred the ceremonial Law before the moral Law, and the moral Law before Faith.

The natural Man hath no certain Judgment as touching the Law.

*Verse 5. That we might receive the Adoption of Sons.*

Paul setteth forth and amplifieth very largely this Place of *Gen. xxii. 18.* In thy Seed shall all the Nations of the Earth be blessed. A little before he called this Blessing of the Seed of Abraham, Righteousness, Life, the Promise of the Spirit, Deliverance from the Law, the Testament, &c. Here he calleth it the Adoption and Inheritance of everlasting Life. All these, this Word Blessing doth comprehend. For when the Curse (which is Sin, Death, &c.) is abolished, then in the Stead thereof succeedeth the Blessing, that is, Righteousness, Life and all good Things.

But by what Merit have we received this Blessing, that is to say, this Adoption and Inheritance of everlasting Life? By none at all. For what can Men deserve that are shut under Sin, subject to the Curse of the Law, and worthy of everlasting Death? We have then received this Blessing freely, and being utterly unworthy thereof, but yet not without Merit. What Merit is that? Not ours, but the Merit of Jesus Christ the Son of God, who being made under the Law, not for himself but for us (as Paul said afore, *that he was made a Curse for us*) redeemed us which were under the Law. Wherefore we have received this Adoption by the only Redemption of Jesus Christ the Son of God, which is our rich and everlasting Merit, whether it be of Congruence or Worthiness going before Grace or coming after. And with this free Adoption we have also received the Holy Ghost, which God hath sent into our Hearts, crying, *Abba, Father*, as followeth.

He useth the Terms of the School-men.

*Verse 6. And because ye are Sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into your Hearts,*

The Holy Ghost is sent two Manner of Ways. In the primitive Church

Church he was sent in a manifest and visible Appearance. So he came upon Christ at *Jordan* in the Likeness of a Dove, *Matth. iii. 16.* and in the Likeness of Fire upon the Apostles and other Believers, *Acts ii. 3.* And this was the first sending of the Holy Ghost, which was necessary in the primitive Church, for it was expedient that it should be established by many Miracles, because of the Unbelievers, as *Paul* witnesseth, *1 Cor. xiv. 22. Wherefore Tongues (saith he) are for a Sign not to them that believe, but to them that believe not.* But after that the Church was gathered together and confirmed with those Miracles, it was not necessary that this visible sending of the Holy Ghost should continue any longer.

*Secondly,* The Holy Ghost is sent by the Word into the Hearts of the Believers, as here it is said, *God sent the Spirit of his Son, &c.* This sending is without any visible Appearance, *to wit,* when by the hearing of the external Word, we receive an inward Fervency and Light, whereby we are changed and become new Creatures; whereby also we receive a new Judgment, a new Feeling, and a new Moving. This Change and this new Judgment is no Work of Reason, or of the Power of Man, but is the Gift and Operation of the Holy Ghost, which cometh with the Word preached, which purifieth our Hearts by Faith, and bringeth forth in us spiritual Motions. Therefore there is a great Difference be-

The Godly  
are able certainly to  
judge of all  
Things.

the Word.

Signs of Re-  
generation  
in the Godly.

Christ our  
only Merit  
of Congru-  
ence and  
Worthiness  
both before  
Grace and  
after.

twixt us and those which with Force and Subtily persecute the Doctrine of the Gospel. For we by the Grace of God, can certainly judge by the Word, of the Will of God towards us; also of all Laws and Doctrines, of our own Life and of the Life of others. Contrariwise, the *Papists* and *Sectaries* cannot certainly judge of any Thing: For they corrupt, they persecute and blaspheme the Word. Now, without the Word a Man can give no certain Judgment of any Thing.

And altho' it appear not before the World, that we be renewed in Spirit and have the Holy Ghost, yet notwithstanding our Judgment, our Speech, and our Confession do declare sufficiently, that the Holy Ghost with his Gifts is in us. For before we could judge rightly of nothing: We spake not as we now do: We confessed not that all our Works were Sin, and damnable, that Christ was our only Merit both before Grace and after, as now we do in the true Knowledge and Light of the Gospel. Wherefore let this trouble us nothing at all, that the World (whose Works we testify to be evil) judgeth us to be most pernicious Hereicks and seditious Persons, Destroyers of Religion, and Troublers of the Common-peace, pos-

sessed of the Devil, speaking in and governing all our Actions. Against this perverse and wicked Judgment of the World, let this Testimony of our Conscience be sufficient, whereby we assuredly know that it is the Gift of God, that we do not only believe in Jesus Christ, but that we also openly preach and confess him before the World. As we believe

with

h our Heart, so do we speak with our Mouth, according to that Say-  
of *Psal. cxvi. 10. I believed, therefore have I spoken.*

Moreover we exercise ourselves in the Fear of God, and avoid Sin as  
ch as we may : If we sin, we sin not of Purpose, but of Ignorance,  
and we are sorry for it : We may slip, for the Devil lieth in wait for us  
h Day and Night. Also the Remnants of Sin cleave yet fast in our  
ah ; therefore as touching the Flesh we are Sinners, yea after that we  
e received the Holy Ghost. And there is no great Dis-

ference betwixt a Christian and a civil honest Man : For  
Works of a Christian in outward Shew, are but base  
simple. He doth his Duty according to his Vocation  
he guideth his Family, he tilleth the Ground, he  
teth Counsel, he aideth and succoureth his Neighbour.  
ese Works the carnal Man doth not much esteem, but  
maketh them to be common to all Men, and such as the  
athen may also do. For the World understandeth not  
Things which are of the Spirit of God, and therefore  
udgeth perversly of the Works of the Godly. But the  
astrous Superstition of Hypocrites and their Will-works  
y have in great Admiration : They count them holy  
orks, and spare no Charges in maintaining the same.

There is  
small Differ-  
ence in out-  
ward Shew  
between a  
Christian,  
and a Man  
that is but  
outwardly  
and civilly  
righteous.

Contrariwise,  
Works of the Faithful, which altho' in outward Appearance they  
n to be but vile and nothing worth, yet are they good Works indeed,  
accepted of God, (because they are done in Faith, with a cheerful  
art, and with Obedience and Thankfulness toward God) these Works,  
y, they do not only not acknowledge to be good Works, but also  
y despise and condemn them as most wicked and abominable. The  
orld therefore believeth nothing less then that we have the Holy  
ost. Notwithstanding in the Time of Tribulation or of the Cross,  
of the Confession of our Faith (which is the proper and principal  
ork of those that believe) when we must either forsake Wife, Chil-  
d, Goods and Life, or else deny Christ, then it appeareth that we  
e Confession of our Faith, that we confess Christ and his Word, by  
Power of the Holy Ghost.

We ought not therefore to doubt whether the Holy Ghost dwelleth  
as or not ; but to be assuredly perswaded that we are the Temple of  
the Holy Ghost, as *Paul* saith, *1 Cor. iii. 16.* For if any

feel in himself a Love towards the Word of God, Signs of the  
willingly heareth, talketh, writeth and thinketh of Presence of  
list, let that Man know that this is not the Work of the Holy  
s Will or Reason, but the Gift of the Holy Ghost : Ghost.

It is impossible that these Things should be done with-  
out the Holy Ghost. Contrariwise, where Hatred and Contempt of the  
ord is, there the Devil the God of this World reigneth, blinding  
s Hearts, and holding them Captive, that the Light of the glorious  
iel of Christ should not shine unto them, *2 Cor. iv. 4.* Which  
ig we see at this Day in the most Part of the common Peop e which  
no Love to the Word, but condemn it as tho' it pertained nothing

at all unto them. But whosoever do feel any Love or Desire to th Word, let them acknowledge with Thankfulness, that this Affection i poured into them by the Holy Ghost. For we bring not this Affectio and Desire with us, neither can we be taught by any Laws how we ma obtain it; but this Change is plainly and simply the Work of the Right hand of the most highest. Therefore when we willingly and gladl hear the Word preached concerning Christ the Son of God, who for u was made Man, and became subject to the Law, to deliver us from th Malediction of the Law, Hell, Death and Damnation; then let us a sure ourselves that God by and with this Preaching sendeth the Hol Ghost into our Hearts. Wherefore it is very expedient for the Godl to know, that they have the Holy Ghost.

This I say, to confute that pernicious Doctrine of the *Papists*, whic taught that no Man can certainly know (altho' his Life be never so up right and blameless) whether he be in the Favour of God or no. An this Sentence commonly received, was a special Principle and Article of Faith in the whole Papacy, whereby they utterly defaced the Doctrine of Faith, tormented Mens Consciences, banished Christ quite out of th Church, darkned and denied all the Benefits of the Holy Ghost, abolis hed the whole Worship of God, set up Idolatry, Contempt of God and Blasphemy against God in Mens Hearts.

*Augustine* saith very well and godly, that every Man seeth most ce tainly his own Faith, if he have Faith. This do they d  
The *Papists* ny. God forbid (say they) that I should assure mys  
damnable that I am under Grace, that I am holy, and that I ha  
Divinity. the Holy Ghost, yea altho' I live godly and do all goo  
Works. Ye which are young, and are not infected wi

this pernicious Opinion (whereupon the whole Kingdom of the Pope grounded) take heed and fly from it, as from a most horrible Plagu We that are old Men have been trained up in this Error even from o Youth, and have been so nussed therein, that it hath taken deep Ro in our Hearts. Therefore it is to us no less Labour to unlearn and f get the same, then to learn and lay hold upon true Faith. But v must be assured and out of Doubt that we are under Grace, that v please God for Christ's Sake, and that we have the Holy Ghost; For  
any Man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his, Rom. viii. 9.

Wherefore, whether thou be a Minister of God's Word, or a Mag strate in the Common-wealth, thou must assuredly thin  
How thou that thy Office pleaseth God; but this canst thou nev  
mayst assure do, unless thou have the Holy Ghost. But thou wilt sa  
thyself that I doubt not but that my Office pleaseth God, because  
not only thy is God's Ordinance; but I doubt of mine own Pers  
Office, but whether it please God or no. Here thou must resort  
also thy Per- the Word of God, which teacheth and assureth us, tha  
son pleaseth not only the Office of the Person, but also the Person  
God. self pleaseth God. For the Person is baptized, believe  
in Christ, is purged in his Blood from all his Sins, live  
in the Communion and Fellowship of his Church. Moreover, he do

not only love the pure Doctrine of the Word, but also he is glad and greatly rejoiceth when he seeth it advanced, and the Number of the faithful increased. Contrariwise, he detesteth the Pope and all *Sectaries* with their wicked Doctrine, according to that Saying of *Psal. cxix. 13. I hate vain Thoughts; but thy Law do I love.*

We ought therefore to be surely perswaded, that not only our Office, but also our Person pleaseth God: Yea, whatsoever it saith, doth, or thinketh particularly, the same pleaseth God, not for our own Sakes, but for Christ's Sake, who was made under the Law for us. Now, we are sure that Christ pleaseth God, that he is holy, &c. For as much as Christ pleaseth God, and we are in him, we also please God and are holy. And altho' Sin do still remain in our Flesh, and we also daily fall and offend, yet Grace is more abundant and stronger then Sin: The Mercy and Truth of the Lord reigneth over us for ever. Wherefore Sin cannot terrify us and make us doubtful of the Grace of God which is in us. For Christ that most mighty Giant hath quite abolished the Law, condemned Sin, vanquished Death and all Evils: So long as he sitteth at the Right-hand of God, making Intercession for us, we cannot doubt of the Grace and Favour of God towards us.

Moreover, God hath also sent the Spirit of his Son into our Hearts, as *Paul* here saith. But Christ is most certain in his Spirit, that he pleaseth God, &c. therefore we also having the same Spirit of Christ; must be assured that we are under Grace for his Sake which is most assured. This I have said concerning the inward Testimony, whereby a Christian Man's Heart ought to be fully perswaded that he

under Grace, and hath the Holy Ghost. Now, the	Outward
outward Signs (as before I have said) are gladly to hear	Tokens that
of Christ, to preach and teach Christ, to render Thanks	we are in the
unto him, to praise him, to confess him, yea, with the	Favour of
loss of Goods and Life. Moreover, to do our Duty ac-	God.
cording to our Vocation as we are able, to do it (I say)	

Faith, Joy, &c. Not to delight in Sin, nor to thrust ourselves into another Man's Vocation, but to attend upon our own, to help our needy brother, to comfort the heavy-hearted, &c. By these Signs as by certain Effects and Consequents, we are fully assured and confirmed, that we are in God's Favour. The Wicked also do imagine that they have the same Signs, but they have nothing less. Hereby we may plainly see that the Pope with his Doctrine, doth nothing else, but trouble and torment Mens Consciences, and at length driveth them to Desperation: for he not only teacheth, but also commandeth Men to doubt. Therefore as *Psal. v. 9. saith, There is no Faithfulness in their Mouth. And in another Place; Under his Tongue is Mischief and Vanity, Psal. x. 7.* Here we may see what great Infirmary is yet in the Faith of the God-

ly. For if we could be fully perswaded that we are under Grace, that our Sins are forgiven, that we have the Spirit of Christ, that we are the children of God; then doubtless we should be joyful, and thankful to God for this inestimable Gift. But because we feel contrary Motions, that is to say, Fear, Doubtfulness, Anguish and Heaviness of Heart, and

such like; therefore we cannot assure ourselves hereof: Yea our Conscience judgeth it a great Presumption and Pride to challenge this Glory. Wherefore, if we will understand this Thing rightly and as we should do, we must put it in Practice; for without Experience and Practice it can never be learned.

Wherefore, let every Man so practise with himself, that his Conscience may be fully assured that he is under Grace, and that his Person and his Works do please God. And if he feel in himself any wavering or doubting, let him exercise his Faith, and wrestle against this doubting, and let him labour to attain more Strength and Assurance of Faith, so that he may be able to say; I know that I am accepted, and that I have the Holy Ghost; not for mine own Worthiness, my Work, my Merit, but for Christ's Sake, who of his inestimable Love towards us, made himself Thral and Subject to the Law, and took away the Sins of the World; in him do I believe; if I be a Sinner and err, he is righteous and cannot err. Moreover, I gladly hear, read, sing and write of him; and I desire nothing more then that this Gospel may be known to the whole World, and that many may be converted unto him.

These Things do plainly witness that the Holy Ghost is present with us and in us. For such Things are not wrought in the Heart by Man's Strength, nor gotten by Man's Industry or Travail, but are obtained by Christ alone, who first maketh us righteous by the Knowledge of himself in his holy Gospel, and afterwards he createth a new Heart in us, bringeth forth new Motions, and giveth unto us that Assurance whereby we are perswaded that we please the Father for his Sake. Also he giveth us a true Judgment whereby we prove and try those Things which before we knew not, or else altogether despised. It becometh us therefore to wrestle against this doubting, that we may daily overcome it more and more, and attain to a full Perswasion and Certainty of God's Favour toward us, rooting out of our Hearts this cursed Opinion, that a Man ought to doubt of the Grace and Favour of God, which hath infected the whole World.

### Verse 6. *Crying, Abba, Father.*

*Paul might have said; God sent the Spirit of his Son into our Hearts, calling, Abba, Father. He saith not so, but crying, Abba, Father, that he might shew and set forth the Temptation of a Christian, which yet is but weak, and weakly believeth. In Rom. viii. 26. he calleth this crying, an unspeakable groaning. Likewise he saith; The Spirit also helpeth our Infirmities: For we know not what we should pray for as we ought; but the Spirit itself maketh Intercession for us with unspeakable Groanings, &c.*

And this is a singular Consolation when he saith, that the Spirit of Christ is sent into our Hearts, crying, *Abba, Father*: And again, that he helpeth our Infirmities, making Intercession for us with unspeakable Groanings. He that could assuredly believe this, should never be over-

me with any Affliction, were it never so great. But there are many Things that hinder this Faith in us. *First*, The *Hinderances of* our Heart is born in Sin. Moreover, this Evil is naturally grafted in us, that we doubt of the Good-will of Faith. God towards us, and cannot assure ourselves that we please God, &c. Besides all this, the Devil our Adversary rangeth about with terrible Roarings, 1 *Pet.* v. 8. and saith; Thou art a Sinner; therefore God is angry with thee, and will destroy thee for ever. Against these horrible and intollerable Roarings, we have nothing whereupon to hold and stay ourselves, but only the Word, which setteth Christ before us as a Conqueror over Sin and Death, and over all Evils. But to cleave fast to the Word in this Tentation and these Terrors of Conscience, wherein standeth all the Difficulty: For then Christ appeareth to no sense: We see him not, the Heart seeleth not his Presence or Succour in Temptation; but rather it seemeth that he is angry with us, and that he forsaketh us. Moreover, when a Man is tempted and afflicted, he feeleth the Strength of Sin and the Infirmary of the Flesh, he doubteth, he feeleth the fiery Darts of the Devil, the Terrors of Death, the Anger and Judgment of God. All these Things cry out horribly against us, so that we see nothing else but Desperation and eternal Death. But yet in the Midst of these Terrors of the Law, Thundrings of Sin, Assaults of Death, and Roarings of the Devil, the Holy Ghost (saith *Paul*) crieth in our Hearts, *Abba, Father*. And this Cry surmounteth those mighty and horrible Cries of the Law, Sin, Death, the Devil, &c. it pierceth the Clouds and the Heavens, and ascendeth up into the Ears of God.

*Paul* signifieth therefore by these Words, that there is yet Infirmary in the Godly: As he doth also in *Rom.* viii. 26. when he saith; *The Spirit helpeth our Infirmities*. Forasmuch therefore as the Sense and Feeling of the contrary is strong in us; that is to say, forasmuch as we feel more the Displeasure of God, then his Good-will and Favour towards us; therefore the Holy Ghost is sent into our Hearts, which doth not only sigh and make request for us, but mightily crieth, *Abba, Father*, and prayeth for us according to the Will of God with Tears and unspeakable Groanings. And how is this done?

When we are in Terrors and in the Conflict of Conscience, we take hold of Christ and believe that he is our Saviour; but then do the Law and Sin terrify and torment us most of all. Moreover, the Devil afflicteth us with all his Engines and fiery Darts, and goeth about with his Power to take away Christ and all Consolations from us. Here we feel ourselves almost gone, and at the Point of Desperation; for then we be like that bruised Reed and smoking Flax which *Isaiah* speaketh of, Chap. xlii. 3. Notwithstanding in the mean Season, the Holy Ghost helpeth our Infirmities, and maketh Intercession for us with unspeakable Groanings, and certifieth our Spirits that we are the Children of God, *Rom.* viii. 28. Thus is the Mind raised up in Terrors, it looketh unto his Saviour and high Bishop Jesus Christ, it overcometh the Infirmary

firmity of the Flesh, it conceiveth Comfort again, and saith; *Abba, Father.* This groaning which then we scanty feel, *Paul* calleth a crying and unspeakable groaning, which filleth both Heaven and Earth. Moreover he calleth it the crying and groaning of the Spirit, because the Holy Ghost stirreth up the same in our Hearts when we are weak and oppressed with Tentation and Terror.

Altho' then the Law, Sin and the Devil cry out against us never so much with great and terrible Roarings, which seem to fill Heaven and Earth, and far to exceed this groaning of our Heart, yet can they not hurt us. For the more fiercely they assail us, accuse and torment us with their Cryings, so much the more do we groan, and in groaning lay hold upon Christ, call upon him with Heart and Mouth, cleave unto him, and believe that he was made under the Law, that he might deliver us from the Curse of the Law, and destroy both Sin and Death, *Gal. iv. 4, 5.* And thus when we have taken hold upon Christ by Faith, we cry thro' him, *Abba, Father.* And this our Cry doth far surmount the Roaring of the Law, Sin, the Devil, &c.

But so far off is it, that we think this groaning which we make in these Terrors and this our Weakness, to be a Cry, that scarcely we perceive it to be a groaning. For our Faith which in Tentation thus groaneth unto Christ is very weak, if we consider our own Sense and Feeling, and therefore we hear not this Cry. We have but only the Word, which when we apprehend in this Conflict, we have a little breathing, and then we groan. Of this groaning some little Feeling we have, but the Cry we hear not. *But he (saith Paul) that searcheth the Hearts, knoweth what is the Mind of the Spirit, &c. Rom. viii. 27.* To this Searcher of the Hearts, this small and feeble groaning (as it seemeth unto us) is a loud and mighty Cry, and an unspeakable groaning; in Comparison whereof the great and horrible Roarings of the Law, of Sin, of Death, of the Devil, and of Hell, are nothing, neither can they be once heard. *Paul* therefore, not without Cause, calleth this groaning of a godly afflicted Heart, a Cry and a groaning of the Spirit which cannot be expressed. For it filleth Heaven, so that the Angels think they hear nothing else but this Cry.

How we are affected in the Terrors of Conscience. But in us there is a clean contrary Feeling. For it seemeth unto us that this our small groaning doth not so pierce the Clouds, that there is nothing else heard in Heaven of God and his Angels. Nay, we think, and especially during the Time of Tentation, that the Devil horribly roareth against us, that the Heavens thunder and the Earth trembleth, that all will fall upon us, that all Creatures threaten our Destruction, that Hell is open and ready to swallow us up. This Feeling is in our Heart, these horrible Voices and this fearful Shew we hear and we see. And this is it that *Paul* saith in *2 Cor. xii. 9.* *That the Strength of Christ is made perfect thro' our Weakness.* For then is Christ Almighty indeed, then doth he truly reign and triumph in us, when we are so weak that we can scarcely groan. *But Paul* saith, that

that this groaning is in the Ears of God, a most mighty Cry, which filleth both Heaven and Earth.

Christ also in *Luke* xviii. 6, 7, 8. in the Parable of the wicked Judge, calleth this groaning of a faithful Heart, a Cry, yea and such a Cry as ceaseth not Day and Night to cry unto God, where he saith; *Hear what the unjust Judge saith. And shall not God avenge his own Elect, which cry Day and Night unto him, tho' he bear long with them? I tell you, that he will avenge them speedily.* We at this Day in so great Persecution and Contradiction of the Pope, of Tyrants and Sectaries which fight against us both on the Right-hand and on the Left, can do nothing else but utter such Groanings. And these were our Guns and Attillery wherewith we have so many Years scattered the Counsels and Enterprises of our Adversaries; whereby also we have begun to overthrow the Kingdom of *Antichrist*. They also shall provoke Christ to hasten the Day of his glorious Coming, wherein he shall abolish all Rule, Authority and Power, and shall put all his Enemies under his Feet. So be it.

The Weapons of the Godly wherewith they overthrow the Kingdom of the Pope, &c.

In *Exod.* xiv. 15. the Lord speaketh unto *Moses* at the Red-sea, saying; *Wherefore criest thou unto me?* Yet *Moses* cried not, but trembled and almost despaired, for he was in great Trouble. It seemed that Infidelity reigned in him, and not Faith. For he saw the People of *Israel* so compassed and inclosed with the *Egyptians* Host and with the Sea, that there was no Way whereby they might escape. Here *Moses* durst not open his Mouth. How then did he cry? We must not judge therefore according to the Feeling of our own Heart, but according to the Word of God, which teacheth us that the Holy Ghost is given to those that are afflicted, terrified, and ready to despair, to raise them up and to comfort them, that they be not overcome in their Tentations and Afflictions, but may overcome them, and yet not without great Terrors and Troubles.

The Office of the Holy Ghost.

The *Papists* dreamed that holy Men had the Holy Ghost in such Sort that they never had nor felt any Tentation. They spake of the Holy Ghost only by Speculation and naked Knowledge. But *Paul* saith, *That the Strength of Christ is made perfect thro' our Weakness:* Also, *That the Spirit helpeth our Infirmities, and maketh Intercession for us with unspeakable Groanings.* Therefore we have then most need of the Help and Comfort of the Holy Ghost, yea and then is he most ready to help us, when we are most weak and nearest to Desperation. If any Man suffer Affliction with a constant and a joyful Heart, then hath the Holy Ghost done his Office in him. And indeed he exerciseth his Work, specially and properly in those which have suffered great Terrors and Afflictions, and have, as the *Psalms* saith, *approached nigh to the Gates of Hell.* As I said of *Moses*, which saw

In whom the Holy Ghost doth his Office, and at what Time,

The Tenta-  
tion of Mo-  
ses at the  
Red-sea.

saw present Death in the Waters, and on every Side whithersoever he turned his Face. He was therefore in extreme Anguish and Desperation, and (no doubt) he felt in his Heart a mighty Cry of the Devil against him, saying; All this People shall this Day perish, for they can escape no Way, and of this great Calamity thou only shalt be found to be the Author, because thou hast led them out of *Egypt*. Besides all this, the People cried out against him, saying; *Were there no Graves in Egypt? Thou hast brought us out that we should die here in the Wilderness. Had it not been better for us to have served the Egyptians, then here wretchedly to die in the Wilderness?* *Exod. xiv. 11, 12.* The Holy Ghost was not here in *Moses* by bare Speculation and Knowledge only, but truly and effectually, who made Intercession for him with an unspeakable groaning, so that he sighed unto the Lord, and said; O Lord, at thy Commandment have I led forth this People; help us therefore. This groaning and sighing unto God, the Scripture calleth a crying.

This Matter I have the more largely prosecuted, that I might plainly shew what the Office of the Holy Ghost is, and when he specially exerciseth the same. In Temptation therefore we must in no ways judge thereof according to our own Sense and Feeling, or by the crying of the Law, Sin and the Devil, &c. If we here follow our own Sense and believe those Cryings, we shall think ourselves to be destitute of all Help and Succour of the Holy Ghost, and utterly cast away from the Presence of God. Nay rather let us then rememaber what *Paul* saith, *The Spirit helpeth our Infirmities, &c.* Also, it crieth, *Abba, Father*, that is to say, it uttereth a certain feeble sighing and groaning of the Heart (as it seemeth unto us) which notwithstanding before God is a loud Cry and an unspeakable groaning. Wherefore in the midst of thy Temp-

The Groan-  
ings of the  
Faithful be-  
fore God,  
are great  
Cries.

tation and Infirmary, cleave only unto Christ and groan unto him; he giveth the Holy Ghost, which crieth, *Abba, Father*: And this feeble Groaning is a mighty Cry in the Ears of God, and so filleth Heaven and Earth, that God heareth nothing else: And moreover, it stoppeth the Cries of all other Things whatsoever.

Thou must mark also that *Paul* saith, that the Spirit maketh Intercession for us in our Temptation; not with many Words or long Prayer, but only with a groaning, which notwithstanding cannot be expressed; and that he crieth not aloud with Tears, saying; *Have Mercy upon me, O God, &c.* *Psal. li. 1.* but only uttereth a little Sound and a feeble groaning, as, *Ah Father*: This is but a little Word, and yet notwithstanding it comprehendeth all Things. The Mouth speaketh not, but the Affection of the Heart speaketh after this Manner: Altho' I be oppressed with Anguish and Terror on every Side, and seem to be forsaken and utterly cast away from thy Presence, yet am I thy Child, and thou art my Father for Christ's Sake; I am beloved because of the Beloved. Wherefore this little Word, *Father*, conceived effectually in the Heart, passeth all the Eloquence of *Demosthenes*, *Cicero*, and of the most eloquent *Rhetoricians* that ever were in the World.

This

This Matter is not expressed with Words, but with Groanings, which Groanings cannot be uttered with any Words or Eloquence, for no Tongue can express them.

I have used many Words to declare that a Christian must assure himself that he is in the Favour of God, and that he hath the crying of the Holy Ghost in his Heart. This have I done that we may learn to reject and utterly to abandon that devilish Opinion of the whole Kingdom of the Pope, which taught that a Man ought to be uncertain and to stand in Doubt of the Grace and Favour of God towards him. If this Opinion be received, then Christ profiteth nothing. For he that doubtieth of God's Favour towards him, must needs doubt also of the Promises of God, and so consequently of the Will of God, and of the Benefits of Christ; namely, that he was born, suffered, died, and rose again for us, &c. But there can be no greater Blasphemy against God, than to deny his Promises, to deny God himself, to deny Christ, &c. Wherefore it was not only an extreme Madness, but an horrible Impiety that the *Monks* did so earnestly entice the Youth both Men and Women to their Monasteries, and to their holy Orders (as they called them) as to a most certain State of Salvation; and yet when they had thus done, they bad them doubt of the Grace and Favour of God towards them.

If this Opinion be received, then Christ profiteth nothing. For he that doubtieth of God's Favour towards him, must needs doubt also of the Promises of God, and so consequently of the Will of God, and of the Benefits of Christ; namely, that he was born, suffered, died, and rose again for us, &c. But there can be no greater Blasphemy against God, than to deny his Promises, to deny God himself, to deny Christ, &c. Wherefore it was not only an extreme Madness, but an horrible Impiety that the *Monks* did so earnestly entice the Youth both Men and Women to their Monasteries, and to their holy Orders (as they called them) as to a most certain State of Salvation; and yet when they had thus done, they bad them doubt of the Grace and Favour of God towards them.

He speaketh not here of that doubting which sometime riseth of Infirmary in the Godly; but of wilful doubting which the *Papists* teach and maintain.

Moreover, the Pope called all the World to the Obedience of the holy Church of *Rome*, as to an holy State, in the which they might undoubtedly attain Salvation; and yet after he had brought them under the Obedience of his Laws, he commanded them to doubt of their Salvation. So the Kingdom of *Antichrist* braggeth and vaunteth at the first, of the Holiness of his Orders, his Rules and his Laws, and assuredly promiseth everlasting Life to such as observe and keep them. But afterwards when these miserable Men have long afflicted their bodies with watching, fasting and such like Exercises, according to the Traditions and Ordinances of Men, this is all that they gain thereby, that they are uncertain whether this Obedience please God or no. Thus Satan most horribly dallied in the Death and Destruction of Souls thro' the Pope, and therefore is the *Papacy* a Slaughter-house of Consciences, and the very Kingdom of the Devil.

Now, to establish and confirm this pernicious and cursed Error, they dedged the Saying of Solomon, Eccles. ix. 1. *The just and the wise Men are in the Hands of God; and yet no Man knoweth whether he be worthy of Love or of Hatred.* Some understand this of that Hatred which is to come, and some again of that which is present; but neither of them understand Solomon, who in that Place meaneth nothing else then that which they dream. Moreover, the whole Scripture teacheth us, especially and above all Things, that we should not doubt, but assure ourselves and undoubtedly

The chief Drift of the Scripture, is to make us

certain of the Mercy of God towards us.

doubtedly believe that God is merciful, loving and patient; that he is neither Dissembler nor Deceiver; but that he is faithful and true, and keepeth his Promise; yea and hath performed that he promised, in delivering his only begotten Son to Death for our Sins, that every one that believeth in him might not perish, but have everlasting Life, *John* iii. 16. Here we cannot doubt but that God is pleased with us, that he loveth us indeed, that the Hatred and Wrath of God is taken away, seeing he suffered his Son to die for us wretched Sinners. Altho' this Matter be set out and often repeated throughout the whole Gospel, yet it profited nothing at all. This one Saying of *Solomon* perversly understood, did more prevail (especially among the Votaries and Hypocrites of the Traiter Religion) then all the Promises and Consolations of the whole Scripture, yea then Christ himself. They abused the Scriptures therefore to their own Destruction, and were most justly punished for despising the Scriptures and rejecting the Gospel.

It is expedient for us to know these Things: *First*, Because the *Papists* vaunt of their Holiness, as if they had never committed any Evil. Therefore they must be convinced by their own Abominations, wherewith they have filled the whole World, as their own Books do witness, whereof there is yet an infinite Number. *Secondly*, That we may be fully certified that we have the pure Doctrine of the Gospel; of which Certainty the Pope cannot glory: In whose Kingdom tho' all Things else were sound and uncorrupt, yet this monstrous Doctrine of doubting of God's Grace and Favour, passeth all other Monsters. And altho' it be manifest, that the Enities of Christ's Gospel teach uncertain Things, because they command that Mens Consciences should remain in Doubt, yet notwithstanding they condemn and kill us as Hereticks, because we dissent from them, and teach those Things which are certain. And this they do with such devilish Rage and Cruelty, as if they were most assured of their Doctrine.

How we  
may know  
that we are  
in God's  
Favour and  
have the  
Holy Ghost.

Let us therefore give Thanks unto God, that we are delivered from this monstrous Doctrine of doubting, and can now assure ourselves that the Holy Ghost crieth and bringeth forth in our Hearts unspeakable Groanings. And this is our Anker-hold and our Foundation. This Gospel commandeth us to behold, not our own good Works, our own Perfection; but God the Promiser, and Christ the Mediator. Contrariwise, the Pope commandeth us to

look, not unto God the Promiser, nor unto Christ our high Bishop, but unto our Works and Merits. Here, on the one Side, Doubting and Desperation must needs follow; but on the other Side, Assurance of God's Favour and Joy of the Spirit. For we cleave unto God who cannot lie. For he saith; Behold, I deliver my Son to Death, that thro' his Blood, he may redeem thee from thy Sins and from eternal Death.

The Doc-  
trine which  
we profess  
is certain.

In this Case I cannot doubt, unless I will utterly deny God. And this is the Reason that our Doctrine is most sure and certain, because it carrieth us out of ourselves, that we should not lean to our own Strength, our own Conscience.

Conscience, our own Feeling, our own Person, and our own Works; but to that which is without us, that is to say, the Promise and Truth of God which cannot deceive us. This the Pope knoweth not, and therefore he wickedly imagineth that no Man knoweth, be he never so just or so wise, whether he be worthy of Love or of Hatred. But if he be just and wise, he knoweth assuredly that he is beloved of God, or else he is neither just nor wise.

Moreover, this Sentence of *Solomon* speaketh nothing at all of the Hatred or Favour of God towards Men, but it is a moral Sentence reproving the Ingratitude of Men. For such is the Perverseness and Ingratitude of the World, that the better a Man deserveth, the less Thanks he shall have; and oftentimes he that should be his most Friend, will be his most Enemy: Contrariwise, such as least deserve, shall be most esteemed. So *David* a holy Man, and a good King, was cast out of his Kingdom. The Prophets, Christ and his Apostles, were slain. To conclude, the Histories of all Nations witness, that many Men well deserving of their Country, were cast into Banishment by their own Citizens; and there lived in great Misery, and some also shamefully perished in Prison: Wherefore *Solomon* in this Place speaketh not of the Conscience having to do with God, nor of the Favour or Judgment, the Love or Hatred of God; but of the Judgment and Affection of Men among themselves. As tho' he would say; There are many just and wise Men, by whom God worketh much good, and giveth Peace and Quietness unto Men. But so far off are they from acknowledging the same, that oftentimes they requite them again most unkindly and uncourteously for their well Doings and Deservings. Therefore altho' a Man do all Things well and never so well, yet he knoweth not whether by this his Diligence and Faithfulness he deserve the Hatred or Favour of Men.

The true Meaning of the Sentence out of *Ecclesiastes* ix.

So we at this Day, when we thought we should have found Favour among our own Country-men, for that we preach unto them the Gospel of Peace, Life and eternal Salvation, instead of Favour we have found bitter and cruel Hatred. Indeed at the first many were greatly delighted with our Doctrine, and received it gladly. We thought they should have been our Friends and Brethren, and that with one Consent together with us, they would have planted this Doctrine to others. But now we find that they are false Brethren and our deadly Enemies, which sow and spread abroad false Doctrine, and that which we teach well and godly, they wickedly pervert and overthrow, stirring up Offences in the Churches. Whosoever therefore doth his Duty godly and faithfully, in what Kind of Life soever he be, and for his well-doing receiveth nothing again but the Unkindness and Hatred of Men, let him not vex and torment himself therefore, but let him say with Christ; *They hated me without a Cause.* Again; *For that they should have loved me, they slandered me, but I did pray,* Psal. cix; 3. 4. The

How we must overcome Unthankfulness.

The Pope therefore with this devilish Doctrine, whereby he commanded Men to doubt of the Favour of God towards them, took away God and all his Promises out of the Church, buried all the Benefits of Christ and abolished the whole Gospel. These Inconveniencies do necessarily follow, for Men do not lean to the Promises of God, but to their own Works and Merits. Therefore they cannot be assured of the Good-will of God towards them, but must needs doubt thereof, and so at length despair. No Man can understand what God's Will is, and what pleaseth him, but in his Word. This Word assureth us that God hath cast away all the Anger and Displeasure which he had conceived against us when he gave his only begotten Son for our Sins, &c. Wherefore let us utterly abandon this devilish doubting, wherewith the whole Papacy was poisoned, and let us be fully assured that God is merciful unto us, that we please him, that he hath a Care over us, that we have the Holy Ghost, which maketh Intercession for us with such crying and groaning as cannot be expressed.

Now, this is the true crying and groaning indeed, when a Man in Tentation calleth upon God; not as a Tyrant, not as an angry Judge, not as a Tormentor; but as a Father: Altho' this groaning be so soft and so secret, that it can scantily be perceived. For in serious Tentations, and in the Time of Trial where the Conscience wrestleth with the Judgment of God, it is wont to call God not a Father, but an unjust, an angry, a cruel Tyrant and Judge. And this crying which Satan stirreth up in the Heart, far passeth the Cry of the Spirit, and is strongly felt. For then it seemeth that God hath forsaken us, and will throw us down into Hell. So the Faithful complain oftentimes in the *Psalms*, *I am cut off from before thine Eyes*, *Psal. xxxi. 22.* Also, *I am like a broken Vessel*, &c. This is not indeed the groaning that crieth, *Abba, Father*; but the roaring of God's Wrath, which crieth strongly, *O cruel Judge, O cruel Tormentor, &c.* Here it is now Time that thou turn away thine Eyes from the Law, from Works, and from the Sense and Feeling of thine own Conscience, and lay hold by Faith on the Promise, that is to say, on the Word of Grace and Life, which raiseth up the Conscience again, so that now it beginneth to groan, and say; Altho' the Law accuse me, Sin and Death terrify me never so much, yet O my God, thou promisest Grace, Righteousness and everlasting Life thro' Jesus Christ: And so the Promise bringeth a sighing and groaning, which crieth, *Abba, Father.*

**Verse 7.** *Wherefore thou art no more a Servant, but a Son;*

This is the shutting up and the Conclusion of that which he said before. As if he should say; This being true that we have received the Spirit by the Gospel, whereby we cry, *Abba, Father*: Then is this Decree pronounced in Heaven, that there is now no Bondage any more,

ore, but mere Liberty and Adoption: And who By what  
 ngeth this Liberty? Verily this groaning: By what Means the  
 eans? The Father offereth unto me by his Pro- Adoption  
 ise, his Grace and his fatherly Favour: This remain- cometh un-  
 a then, that I should receive this Grace: And this is to us.  
 ne when I again with this groaning do cry, and with a  
 ildly Heart do assent unto this Name, *Father*. Here then the Father  
 d the Son meet, and the Marriage is made up without all Pomp and  
 lemny, that is to say, nothing at all cometh between, no Law nor  
 ork is here required. For what should a Man do in these Terrors and  
 rrible Darkeness of Tentations? Here is nothing else but the Father  
 omising, and calling me his Son by Christ, who was made under the  
 aw, &c. And I receiving and answering by this groaning, saying, *Fa-*  
*ther*. Here then is no exacting, nothing is required, but only that  
 ildly groaning that apprehendeth a sure Hope and Trust in Tribula-  
 on, and faith; Thou promistest, and callest me thy Child for Christ's  
 ke, and I again receive thy Promise, and call thee *Father*. This is  
 deed to be made Children simply and without any Works. But these  
 things without Experience and Practice cannot be understood.

*Paul* in this Place taketh this Word *Servant*, otherwise then he did  
 fore in the third Chapter, where he saith; *There is neither bond nor*  
*ee*, &c. Here he calleth him a Servant of the Law which is subject to  
 e Law, as he did a little before, *We are in Bondage un-*  
*der the Elements of the World*. Wherefore to be a Servant What *Paul*  
 cording to *Paul* in this Place, is to be guilty and cap- calleth a Ser-  
 ve under the Law, under the Wrath of God and Death; vant in this  
 behold God, not as a merciful Father, but as a Tor- Place.  
 entor, an Enemy, and a Tyrant. This is indeed to  
 kept in Bondage and babylonical Captivity, and to be cruelly tor-  
 ented therein. For the Law delivereth not from Sin and Death, but  
 wealeth and increaseth Sin, and ingendreth Wrath, *Rom. iii. 20.*  
 15. This Bondage (saith *Paul*) continueth no longer, it oppresseth  
 not, not maketh us heavy any more, &c. *Paul* saith; *Thou*  
*alt be no more a Servant*. But the Sentence is more general if we say;  
 ere shall be no Bondage in Christ any more, but mere Freedom and  
 adoption. For when Faith cometh, that Bondage ceaseth, as he said  
 fore in the third Chapter.

Now, if we by the Spirit of Christ crying in our Hearts, *Abba, Fa-*  
*ther*, be no more Servants, but Children, then it followeth that we are  
 only delivered from the Pope and all the Abominations of Mens  
 traditions, but also from all the Jurisdiction and Power of the Law  
 God. Wherefore we ought in no wise to suffer the Law to reign in  
 our Conscience, and much less the Pope with his vain Threatings and  
 errors. Indeed he roareth mightily as a Lion, *Apoc. 10.* and threat-  
 eth to all those that obey not his Laws, the Wrath and Indignation of  
 mighty God, and of his blessed Apostles, &c. But here *Paul* armeth  
 and comforteth us against these Roarings, when he saith; *Thou art no*  
*re a Servant, but a Son*. Take hold of this Consolation by Faith,

The Law  
hath no Pow-  
er over the  
Conscience,  
but over the  
Flesh.

and say ; O Law thy Tyranny can have no Place in the Throne where Christ my Lord sitteth ; there I cannot hear thee (much less do I hear thee O *Antichrist* ;) for I am free and a Son, who must not be subject to any Bondage or servile Law. Let not *Moses* therefore with his Laws, (much less the Pope) ascend up into the Bride-chamber, there to ly, that is to say, to reign in the Conscience, which Christ hath delivered from the Law, to the End that it should not be subject to any Bondage. Let the Servants abide with the As in the Valley : Let none but *Isaac* ascend up into the Mountain with his Father *Abraham*, Gen. xxii. 5. That is, let the Law have Dominion over the Body, and over the old Man ; let him be under the Law, and suffer the Burden to be laid upon him ; let him suffer himself to be exercised and vexed with the Law ; let the Law limit and prescribe unto him what he ought to do, what he ought to suffer, and how he ought to live and to govern himself among Men. But let it not defile the Bed in which Christ should rest and sleep alone, that is to say, let it not trouble the Conscience. For she alone ought to live with Christ her Spouse in the Kingdom of Liberty and Adoption.

If then (saith he) by the Spirit of Christ, ye cry, *Abba, Father*, then are ye indeed no longer Servants, but free Men and Sons. Therefore ye are without the Law, without Sin, without Death, that is to say, ye are saved, and ye are now quite delivered from all Evils. Wherefore the Adoption bringeth with it the eternal Kingdom, and all the heavenly Inheritance. Now, how inestimable the Glory of this Gift is, Man's Heart is not able to conceive, and much less to utter. In the mean Time we see this but darkly, and as it were afar off, 1 Cor. xiii. 12. We have this little groaning and feeble Faith which only resteth upon the hearing and the Sound of the Voice of Christ in giving the Promise. Therefore we must not measure this Thing by Reason or by our own Feeling, but by the Promise of God. Now because he is infinite, therefore his Promise is also infinite, altho' it seem to be never so much inclosed in these narrow Straits, these Anguishes I mean ; wherefore there is nothing that can now accuse, terrify, or bind the Conscience any more. For there is no more Servitude but Adoption, which not only bringeth unto us Liberty from the Law, Sin and Death, but also the Inheritance of everlasting Life, as followeth.

Verse 7. *And if a Son, then an Heir of God through Christ.*

For he that is a Son, must be also an Heir ; for by his Birth he is worthy to be an Heir. There is no Work nor Merit that bringeth to him the Inheritance, but his Birth only : And so in obtaining the Inheritance he is a mere Patient and not an Agent, that is to say, not to beget, not to labour, not to care ; but to be born is that which maketh him an Heir. So we obtain eternal Gifts, namely, the Forgiveness of Sins, Righteousness, the Glory of the Resurrection and everlasting Life, not as Agents, but as Patients, that is, not by doing, but by receiving.

nothing here cometh between, but Faith alone apprehendeth the Promise offered. Like as therefore a Son in the politick and household Government is made an Heir by his only Birth; so here Faith only maketh us Sons of God, born of the Word, which is the Womb of God, wherein we are conceived, carried, born and nourished up, &c. By this Birth then we are made new Creatures, formed by Faith in the Word; we are made Christians, Children and Heirs of God thro' Jesus Christ. Now, being Heirs we are delivered from Death, Sin and the Devil, and we have Righteousness and eternal Life.

But this far passeth all Man's Capacity, that he calleth us Heirs; not some rich and mighty Prince, not of the Emperor, not of the World; but of God the Almighty Creator of all Things. This our Inheritance (as Paul saith in another Place) is inestimable. And if a Man could comprehend the great Excellency of this Matter, that he is the Son and Heir of God, and with a constant Faith believe the same, this Man would esteem all the Power and Riches of all the Kingdoms of the World, but as filthy Dung in Comparison of his eternal Inheritance: he would abhor whatsoever is high and glorious in the World; yea, the greater the Pomp and Glory of the World is, the more would he hate it. To conclude, whatsoever the World most highly esteemeth and magnifieth, that should be in his Eyes most vile and abominable. For what is all the World, with all his Power, Riches and Glory in Comparison of God, whose Son and Heir he is? Furthermore, he would heartily desire with Paul to be loosed and to be with Christ, Phil. i. 23. And nothing could be more welcome unto him, then speedy Death, which he would embrace as a most joyful Peace, knowing that it should be the End of all his Miseries, and that thro' it he should attain to his Inheritance, &c. Yea, a Man that could perfectly believe this, should not long remain alive, but should be swallowed up incontinent with excessive Joy.

But the Law of the Members striving against the Law of the Mind, hindreth Faith in us, and suffereth it not to be perfect. Therefore we have need of the Help and Comfort of the Holy Ghost, which in our Troubles and Afflictions may make Intercession for us with unspeakable Groanings, as before I have said: Sin yet remaineth in the Flesh, which oftentimes oppresseth the Conscience, and so hindreth Faith, that we cannot with Joy perfectly behold and desire those eternal Riches which God hath given unto us thro' Christ. Paul himself feeling this Battle of the Flesh against the Spirit, crieth out; *O wretched Man that I am, who shall deliver me from the Body of this Death?* Rom. vii. 24. He accuseth his Body, which notwithstanding it behoved him to love, calling it by an odious Name, *his Death*. As if he would say; My Body doth more afflict me, and more grievously vex me then Death itself; for it hindreth in him also this Joy of Spirit. He had not always sweet and joyful Cogitations of the heavenly Inheritance to come, but he felt oftentimes also much Heaviness of Spirit, great Anguish and Melancholy.

Hereby we may plainly see how hard a Matter Faith is, which is not easily and quickly apprehended, as certain full and loathing Spirits dream, which swallow up at once all that is contained in the holy Scriptures. The great Infirmary which is in the Saints, and the striving of the Flesh against the Spirit, do sufficiently witness how feeble Faith is in them. For a perfect Faith bringeth by and by a perfect Contempt and loathing of this present Life: If we could fully assure ourselves, and constantly believe that God is our Father, and we his

Sons and Heirs, then should we utterly condemn this World with all the Glory, Righteousness, Wisdom and Power, with all the royal Sceptres and Crowns, and with all the Riches and Pleasures thereof: We should not be so careful for this Life; we should not be so addicted to the World and worldly Things, trusting unto them when we have them, lamenting and despairing when we lose them; but we should do all Things with great Love, Humility and Patience; but we do the contrary; for the Flesh is yet strong; but Faith is feeble, and the Spirit weak. Therefore Paul saith very well, that we have here in this Life, but only the first Fruits of the Spirit, and that in the World to come, we shall have the tenths also.

### Verse 7. *Through Christ.*

Paul hath Christ always in his Mouth, he cannot forget him: For he did well fore see that nothing should be less known in the World (yea among them which should profess themselves to be Christians) then Christ and his Gospel. Therefore he talketh of him and setteth him before our Eyes continually: And as often as he speaketh of Grace, Righteousness, the Promise, Adoption and Inheritance, he is always wont to add, *In Christ*, or *thro' Christ*, covertly impugning the Law. As if he would say; These Things come unto us, neither by the Law, nor by the Works thereof, much less by our own Strength, or by the Works of Mens Traditions; but only by Christ.

Verses 8, 9. *Howbeit, then when ye knew not God, ye did Service unto them which by Nature are no gods. But now after that ye have known God, or rather are known of God, How turn ye again to the weak and beggarly Elements, whereunto ye desire again to be in Bondage?*

This is the Conclusion of Paul's Disputation. From this Place unto the End of the Epistle he doth not much dispute, but only giveth Precepts as touching Manners. Notwithstanding he first reproveth the Galatians, being sore displeased that this divine and heavenly Doctrine should

could be so suddenly and easily removed out of their Hearts. As he would say; Ye have Teachers which will bring you back again into the Bondage of the Law. This did not I, What the at by my Doctrine I called you out of Darkness and out of the Ignorance of God, into a wonderful Light and Gospel bringeth. knowledge of him. I brought you out of Bondage and set you in the Freedom of the Sons of God, not by preaching unto you the Works of the Law, or the Merits of Men, but the Grace and Righteousness of God, and the giving of heavenly and eternal Blessings through Christ. Now, seeing this is true, Why do ye so soon forsake the Light and return to Darkness? Why do ye suffer yourselves so easily to be brought from Grace unto the Law, from Freedom to Bondage?

Here again we see (as before I have said) that to fall in Faith is an easy Matter, as the Example of the *Galatians* witnesseth. The Example of the *Anabaptists*, *Libertines*, and such other Hereticks witnesseth the same also at this Day. We for our Part do set forth the Doctrine of Faith with continual Travail, by preaching, by reading and by writing; we purely and plainly distinguish the Gospel from the Law, and yet do we little prevail. This cometh of The Devil who goeth about by all subtil Means to seduce laboureth to bring Men into Error, and to hold them in Error, he can abide nothing from Faith but the true Knowledge of Grace and Faith in Christ. Therefore to the End he may take Christ clean out of Sight, to the Law, he setteth before them other Shews, wherewith he so deceiveth them, that by little and little he leadeth them from Faith, and the Knowledge of Grace, to the Disputation of the Law: When he hath brought this about, then is Christ taken away. It is not without Cause therefore that *Paul* speaketh so much and so often of Christ, and that he speaketh about so purely to set forth the Doctrine of Faith, whereunto he attributeth Righteousness only and alone, and taketh it from the Law, declaring that the Law hath a clean contrary Effect, that is, to ingender Wrath, to increase Sin, &c. For he would gladly persuade us, that we should not suffer Christ to be plucked out of our Heart; that the house should not suffer her Husband to depart out of her Arms, but should always embrace him and cleave fast unto him, who being present, there is no Danger; yea, there is the faithful Groaning, fatherly Goodwill, Adoption and Inheritance.

But why saith *Paul* that the *Galatians* turned back again to weak and beggarly Rudiments or Ceremonies, that is to say, to the Law, where they never had the Law; for they were *Gentiles* (notwithstanding we wrote these Things to the *Jews* also, as afterwards we will declare) or why speaketh he not rather after this Manner? Once when ye knew not God, ye did Service unto them which by Nature were no gods: But now, seeing ye know God, Why turn ye back again, forsaking the true God, to worship Idols? Doth *Paul* take it to be all one Thing, to fall from the Promise to the Law, from Faith to Works, and to do Service unto gods which by Nature are no gods? I answer, Whosoever is fallen from the Article of Justification, is ignorant of God, and an Idolater.

Therefore it is all one Thing whether he afterwards turn again to the Law; or to the worshipping of Idols; it is all one whether he be called a *Monk*, a *Turk*, a *Jew*, or an *Anabaptist*. For when this Article is taken away, there remaineth nothing else but Error, Hypocrisy, Impiety and Idolatry, how much soever it seem in outward Appearance to be the very Truth, the true Service of God, and true Holiness, &c.

The Reason is, because God will or can be known no otherwise then by Christ, according to that Saying of *John i. 18.* *The only begotten Son, which is in the Bosom of the Father, he hath declared him.* He is the Seed promised unto *Abraham*, in whom God hath established all his Promises. Wherefore Christ is the only Mean, and as ye would say, the Glass by the which we see God, that is to say, we know his Will. For in Christ we see that God is not a cruel Exactor or a Judge, but a most favourable, loving and merciful Father, who to the End he might bless us, that is to say, deliver us from the Law, Sin, Death and all Evils, and might endue us with Grace, Righteousness and everlasting Life, spared not his own Son, but gave him for us all, &c. *Rom. viii. 32.* This is a true Knowledge of God, and a divine Perswasion, which deceiveth us not, but painteth out God unto us lively.

He that is fallen from this Knowledge, must needs conceive this Fantasy in his Heart; I will set up such a Service of God; I will enter into such an Order; I will choose this or that Work, and so will I serve God, and I doubt not but God will accept this, and reward me with everlasting Life for the same. For he is merciful and liberal, giving all good Things even to the unworthy and unthankful, much more will he give unto me Grace and everlasting Life for my great and manifold good Deeds and Merits. This is the highest Wisdom, Righteousness and Religion that Reason can judge of; which is common to all Nations, to the *Papists*, *Jews*, *Turks*, *Hereticks*, &c. They can go no higher then that *Pharisee* did, of whom Mention is made in the Gospel, *Luke xvii. 11, 12.* They have no Knowledge of the Christian Righteousness, or of the Righteousness of Faith. For the natural Man receiveth not the Things of the Spirit of God, *1 Cor. ii. 14.* Also, There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God, &c. *Rom. iii. 11.* Therefore there is no Difference at all between a *Papist*, a *Jew*, a *Turk*, and an *Heretick*. Indeed there is a Difference of the Persons, the Places, Rites, Religions, Works and Worshippings; notwithstanding there is all one and the same Reason, the same Heart, Opinion and Cogitation in them all. For the *Turk* thinketh the self-same Thing that the *Charter-house Monk* doth; namely, if I do this or that Work, God will be merciful unto me; if I do it not, he will be angry. There is no Mean between Man's Working, and the Knowledge of Christ. If this Knowledge be darkned or defaced, it is all one whether thou be a *Monk*, a *Turk*, a *Jew*, &c.

Wherefore it is an extreme Madnes that the *Papists* and *Turks* do so strive among themselves about the Religion and Service of God, contending that both of them have the true Religion and true Worship of God. And the *Monks* themselves agree not together. For one of them will

will be accounted more holy then another, for certein foolish outward Ceremonies, and yet in their Hearts the Opinion of them all is so like, that one Egg is not more like to another. For this is the Imagination of them all : If I do this Work, God will have Mercy upon me ; if I do not, he will be angry. And therefore every Man that revolteth from the Knowledge of Christ must needs fall into Idolatry, and conceive such an Imagination of God as is not agreeable to his Nature ; as the *Charter-house Monk* for the observing of his Rule, the *Turk* for the keeping of his *Alcoran*, hath this Affiance, that he pleaseth God, and shall receive a Reward of him for his Labour.

Such a God as after this Sort forgiveth Sins and justifieth Sinners, can no where be found, and therefore this is but a vain Imagination, a Dream and an Idol of the Heart. For God hath not promised that he will save and justify Men for the Religions, Observations, Ceremonies, and Ordinances devised by Men ; yea God abhorreth nothing more (as the whole Scripture witnesseth) then such Will-works, such Services, Rites and Ceremonies ; for the which also he overthroweth whole Kingdoms and Empires ; therefore, as many as trust to their own Strength and Righteousness, do serve a god, but such a god as they themselves have devised, and not the true God indeed. For the true God speaketh thus : No Righteousness, Wisdom, nor Religion pleaseth me, but that only whereby the Father is glorified thro' the Son. Whosoever apprehendeth this Son, and me, and my Promise in him by Faith, to him I am a God, to him I am a Father, him do I accept, justify and save. All other abide under Wrath, because they worship that Thing which by Nature is no god.

All Merit-mongers honour a god which by Nature is no god.

Doctrine concerning the true God.

Whosoever forsaketh this Doctrine, must needs fall into the Ignorance of God ; he understandeth not what the true Christian Righteousness, Wisdom and Service of God is ; he is an Idolater abiding under the Law, Sin, Death, and the Power of the Devil, and all Things that he doth, are accursed and condemned. Therefore the *Anabaptist* imagining with himself that he pleaseth God if he be rebaptized, if he forsake his House, Wife and Children, if he mortify his Flesh and suffer much Adversity, and at length Death itself, yet there is not one Drop of the Knowledge of Christ in him, but secluding Christ, he dreameth altogether of his own Works, of the forsaking of his Goods, of his Affliction and Mortification, and now differeth nothing from the *Turk*, *Jew* or *Papist* in Spirit or in Heart, but only in the outward Appearance, Works and Ceremonies which he hath chosen to himself. The same Confidence in Works have all the *Monks* and other religious Orders ; notwithstanding their Apparel and other outward Things there is a Difference.

To what Evils they be subject, which destroy the Doctrine of Faith.

There are at this Day very many like unto these, which notwithstanding would be counted among the true Professors and Teachers of the Gospel and as touching the Words, they teach that Men are deli-

vered from their Sins by the Death of Christ. But because they teach Faith in such Sort, that they attribute more to Charity then to Faith, they highly dishonour Christ and wickedly pervert his Word. For they dream that God regardeth and accepteth us for our Charity's Sake, whereby we being reconciled to God, do love God and our Neighbour. If this be true, then have we no need of Christ at all. Such Men serve not the true God, but an Idol of their own Heart, which they themselves have devised. For the true God doth not regard or accept us for our Charity, Vertues, or Newness of Life, but for Christ's Sake, &c.

But they make this Objection: Yet notwithstanding the Scripture commandeth that we should love God with all our Heart, &c. It is true. But it followeth not, that because God commandeth us, therefore we do it. If we did love God with all our Heart, &c. Then, no doubt, we should be justified, and live thro' this Obedience, as it is written; *He that shall do these Things shall live in them*, Levit. xviii. 5. Rom. x. 3. But the Gospel saith; Thou dost not these Things; therefore thou shalt not live in them. For this Sentence, *Thou shalt love the Lord thy God*, &c. requireth a perfect Obedience, a perfect Fear, Trust and Love towards God. These Things Men neither do nor can perform in this corrupt Nature. Therefore this Law, *Thou shalt love the Lord thy God*, &c. justifieth not, but accuseth and condemneth all Men, according to the Saying, *The Law worketh Wrath*, &c. Rom. iv. 15. Contrariwise, *Christ is the End of the Law for Righteousness to every one that believeth*, Rom. x. 4. Of this we have spoken largely before.

In like Manner the Jew keeping the Law with this Opinion, that he by this Obedience will please God, serveth not the true God, but is an Idolater, worshipping a Dream and an Idol of his own Heart, which is no where to be found. For the God of his Fathers, whom he saith he worshippeth, promised to Abraham a Seed, thro' the which all Nations should be blessed. Therefore God is known and the Blessing is given, not by the Law, but by the Gospel of Christ. Altho' Paul speak these Words, *Then when ye knew not God, ye did Service*, &c. properly and principally to the Galatians, which were Gentiles; yet notwithstanding by the same Words he also toucheth the Jews, who tho' they had rejected their Idols outwardly, yet in their Hearts they worshipped them more then did the Gentiles, as he said, Rom. ii. 22. *Thou abhorrest Idols, and committest Sacrilege*. The Gentiles were not the People of God, they had not his Word, and therefore their Idolatry was gross. But the idolatrous Jews cloaked their Idolatry with the Name and Word of God (as all Justiciaries which seek Righteousness by Works, are wont to do) and so with this outward Shew of Holiness they deceived many. Therefore Idolatry the more holy and spiritual it is, the more hurtful it is.

But how may these two contrary Sayings which the Apostle here setteth down, be reconciled together? *Ye knew not God; and ye worshipped God*. I answer: All Men naturally have this general Knowledge, that there is a God, according to that Saying, Rom. i. 19. *Forasmuch as that which may be known of God, was manifest in them*. For God was made manifest unto them, in that the invisible Things of him did appear by the

the Creation of the World. Moreover, the Ceremonies and Religions, which were and always remained among all Nations, sufficiently witness, that all Men have had a certain general Knowledge of God. But whether they had it by Nature or by the Traditions of their Fore-fathers, I will not here dispute.

But here some will object again; If all Men knew God, Wherefore then doth *Paul* say, that the *Galatians* knew not God before the Preaching of the Gospel? I answer: There is a double Knowledge of God, general and particular. All Men have the general Knowledge, namely, that there is a God, that he created Heaven and Earth, that he is just, that he punisheth the Wicked. But what God thinketh of us, what his Will is towards us, what he will give or what he will do, to the End we may be delivered from Sin and Death, and be saved (which is the true Knowledge of God indeed) this they know not. As it may be that I know some Man by Sight, whom yet indeed I know not thoroughly, because I understand not what Affection he beareth towards me. So Men know naturally that there is a God, but what his Will is, or what is not his Will, they do not know. For it is written; *There is none that understandeth God*, Rom. iii. 11. And in another Place; *No Man hath seen God*, John i. 18. that is to say, no Man hath known what is the Will of God. Now, what doth it avail thee if thou know that there is a God, and yet art ignorant what is his Will towards thee? Here some think one Thing, and some another. The *Jews* imagine this to be the Will of God, if they worship him according to the Rule of *Moses's* Laws, the *Turk* if he observe his *Alcoran*, the *Monk* if he keeps his Order, and perform his Vows. But all these are deceived and become vain in their own Cogitations, as *Paul* saith, Rom. i. 21. Not knowing what pleaseth or displeaseth God; therefore instead of the true and natural God, they worship the Dreams and Imaginations of their own Heart.

This is it that *Paul* meaneth when he saith, *When ye knew not God*; that is, when ye knew not the Will of God, ye served those which by Nature were no gods, that is to say, ye served the Dreams and Imaginations of your own Heart, whereby ye imagined without the Word, that God was to be worshipped with this or that Work, with this or that Rite or Ceremony. For upon this Proposition, which all Men do naturally hold, namely, that there is a God, hath sprung all Idolatry, which without the Knowledge of the Divinity could never have come into the World. But because Men had this natural Knowledge of God, they conceived vain and wicked Imaginations of God without and against the Word, which they esteemed and maintained as the very Truth itself, and so dreamed that God is such a one, as by Nature he is not. So the *Monk* imagineth him to be such a God as forgiveth Sins, giveth Grace and everlasting Life for the keeping of his Rule. This God is no where to be found; therefore

A general and particular Knowledge of God.

The diverse Opinions of Men concerning the Will of God.

Whence Idolatry came.

The Opinion of the Monk as touching God's Will.

fore he serveth not the true God, but that which by Nature is no god to wit, the Imagination and Idol of his own Heart; that is to say, his own false and vain Opinion of God, which he dreameth to be an undoubted Truth. Now, Reason itself will enforce us to confesse, that Man's Opinion is no God. Therefore whosoever will worship God without his Word, serveth not the true God (as *Paul* saith) but that which by Nature is no god.

Therefore whether ye call Rudiments here the Law of *Moses*, or else the Traditions of the *Gentiles*, (albeit he speaketh here properly and principally of the Rudiments of *Moses*) there is no great Difference. For he that falleth from Grace to the Law, falleth with no less Danger then he that falleth from Grace to Idolatry. For without Christ there is nothing else but mere Idolatry, an Idol and false Imagination of God, whether it be called *Moses's* Law or the *Pope's* Ordinance, or the *Turks* Alcoran, &c. Therefore he saith with a certain Admiration;

*Verse 9. But now after that ye have known God,*

As tho' he would say: This is a marvellous Thing, that ye knowing God by the Preaching of Faith, do so suddenly revolt from the true Knowledge of his Will, (wherein I thought ye were so surely established, that I feared nothing less then that ye should be so easily dverthrown) and do now again by the Instigation of the false Apostles, return to the weak and beggarly Ceremonies, which ye would serve again afresh. Ye heard before by my Preaching, that this is the Will of God, to bless all Nations; not by Circumcision or by the Observation of the Law, but by Christ promised to *Abraham*. They that believe in him shall be blessed with faithful *Abraham*, Gal. iii. 9. they are the Sons and Heirs of God, Gal. iv. 7. Thus (I say) have ye known God.

*Verse 9. Or rather are known of God, &c.*

He correcteth the Sentence going before: *But now after that ye have known God*, or rather turneth it after this Manner; *or rather are known of God*: For he feared lest they had lost God utterly. As if he would say; Alas, are ye come to this Point, that now ye know not God, but return again, from Grace to the Law? Yet notwithstanding God knoweth you. And indeed our Knowledge is rather passive then active; that is to say, it consisteth in this, that we are rather known of God, then that we know him. All our Doing, that is, all our Endeavour to know and to apprehend concerning God, God, is to suffer God to work in us. He giveth the Word; which when we have received by Faith given from above, we are new born and made the Sons of God. This is then the Sense and Meaning; *or rather are known of God*, that is, ye are visited with the Word, ye are endued with Faith and the Holy Ghost whereby ye are renewed, &c. Wherefore even by these Words, *or rather are known of God*, he taketh away all Righteousness from the Law, and

and denieth that we attain the Knowledge of God thro' the Worthiness of our own Works. *For no Man knoweth the Father but the Son, and he to whom the Son will reveal him.* Luke x. 22. Also, *By his Knowledge shall my righteous Servant justify many: For he shall bear their Iniquities,* Isa. liii. 11. Wherefore our Knowledge concerning God, consisteth in suffering, and not in doing.

He much marvelleth therefore, that seeing they knew God truly by the Gospel, they returned so suddenly to weak and beggarly Rudiments, by the Persuasion of the false Apostles. As I myself also should greatly marvel if our Church (which by the Grace of God is godly reformed in pure Doctrine and Faith) should be seduced and perverted by some fond and frantick Head, thro' the Preaching of one or two Sermons, that they should not acknowledge me for their Pastor any more. Which Thing notwithstanding shall one Day come to pass, if whilst we live, yet when we are dead and gone: For many shall then rise up, which will be Masters and Teachers; who under a Colour of true Religion shall teach false and perverse Doctrine, and shall quickly overthrow all that we in so long Time and with so great Travel have builded. We are not better then the Apostles, who whiles they yet lived, saw (not without their great Grief and Sorrow) the Subversion of those Churches which they themselves have planted thro' our Ministry. Therefore it is no great marvel if we be constrained to behold the like evil at this Day in those Churches, where Sectaries do reign, who hereafter when we are dead, shall possess those Churches which we have won and planted by our Ministry, and with their Poison infect and subvert the same. And yet notwithstanding Christ shall remain and reign to the End of the World, and that marvellously, as he did under the Papacy.

Paul seemeth to speak very spitefully of the Law when he calleth it Rudiments (as he did also before in the Beginning of this Chapter) and not only Rudiments, but weak and beggarly Rudiments and Ceremonies. Is it not Blasphemy to give such odious Names to the Law of God? The Law being in his true Use, ought to serve the Promises and to stand with the Promises and Grace. But if it fight against them, it is no more the holy Law of God, but a false and a devilish Doctrine, and doth nothing else but drive Men to Desperation; and therefore must be rejected.

Wherefore when he calleth the Law weak and beggarly Rudiments, he speaketh of the Law in respect of proud and presumptuous Hypocrites which would be justified by it, and not of the Law being spiritually understood, which ingendreth Wrath, Rom. iv. 15. For the Law, (as I have often said) being in his own proper Use, accuseth and condemneth a

Man; and in this Respect it is not only a strong and a rich Rudiment, but also most mighty and most rich, yea rather an invincible Power and Riches; and if here the Conscience be compared with the Law, then is it most weak

Rudiments or Elements, are called the Principles and first Beginnings of any Thing, and so the Law is but as an *A, B, C.* in respect of the Gospel.

When the Law is weak and beggarly, and when it is strong and mighty.

weak and beggarly. For it is so tender a Thing, that for a small Sin it is so troubled and terrified, that it utterly despaireth, unless it be raised up again. Wherefore the Law in his proper Use hath more Strength and Riches, then Heaven and Earth is able to contain; insomuch that one Letter or one Title of the Law is able to kill all Mankind, as the History of the Law given by *Moses*, *Exod. xix. 20.* doth witness. This is the true and divine Use of the Law, of which *Paul* speaketh not in this Place.

*Paul* therefore intreateth here of Hypocrites, which are fallen from Grace, or which have not yet attained to Grace. These, abusing the Law, seek to be justified by it. They exercise and tyre themselves Day and Night in the Works thereof; as *Paul* witnesseth of the *Jews*, *Rom. x. 2. 3.* For I bear them Record, (saith he) that they have a Zeal of God, but not according to Knowledge. For they being ignorant of God's Righteousness, &c. Such do hope so to be strengthened and enriched by the Law, that they may be able to set their Power and Riches which they have gotten by the Righteousness thereof, against the Wrath and Judgment of God, and so to appease God, and to be saved thereby. In this Respect then we may well say that the Law is a weak and a beggarly Rudiment; that is to say, which can give neither Help nor Counsel.

And whoso listeth to amplify this Matter, may further say, that the Law is a weak and a beggarly Rudiment, because it maketh Men more weak and beggarly; again, because that of itself it hath no Power, or Riches whereby it is able to give or to bring Righteousness; and moreover, that it is not only weak and beggarly, but even Weakness and Beggary itself. How then shall it enrich or strengthen those, which were before both weak and beggarly? Therefore to seek to be justified by the Law, is as much as if a Man being weak and feeble already, would seek some other greater evil whereby he might overcome his Weakness and Poverty, which notwithstanding would bring unto him utter Destruction. As if he which hath the Falling-sickness, would seek to join unto it the Pestilence for a Remedy; or if a Leaper should come to a Leaper, or a Beggar to a Beggar, the one to help and enrich the other.

The more Men seek to be justified by the Law, the more they are drowned in Sin.

*Paul* therefore sheweth, that they which seek to be justified by the Law, have this Commodity thereby, that daily they become more and more weak and beggarly. For they be weak and beggarly of themselves; that is to say, they are by Nature the Children of Wrath, subject to Death and everlasting Damnation, and yet they lay hold upon that which is nothing else but mere Weakness and Beggary, seeking to be strengthened and enriched thereby.

Therefore every one that falleth from the Promise to the Law, from Faith to Works, doth nothing else but lay upon himself such a Burden, being weak and feeble already, as he is not able to bear, *Acts xv.* and in bearing thereof is made ten Times more weak, so that at length he is driven to despair, unless Christ come and deliver him.

This.

This Thing the Gospel also witnesseth, speaking of the Woman which was grieved twelve Years with a bloody Issue, and suffered many Things of many Physicians, upon whom she had spent all her substance, and yet could not be cured, but the longer she was under their Hands, the worse she was, *Luke viii. 43.* As many therefore as do the Works of the Law to the End they may be justified thereby, are not only not made righteous, but twice more unrighteous then they were before, that is (as I have said) more weak and beggarly, and more unapt to do any good Work. This have I proved to be true both in myself and in many others. I have known many *Monks* in the Papacy, which with great Zeal have done many great Works for the attaining of Righteousness and Salvation, and yet were they more impatient, more weak, more miserable, more faithless, more fearful, and more ready to despair then any other. The civil Magistrates who were ever occupied in great and weighty Affairs, were not so impatient, so fearful, so faint-hearted, so superstitious and so faithless as these Justiciaries and Meritmongers were.

Whosoever then seeketh Righteousness by the Law, What can he imagine else, but that God being angry, must needs be pacified with Works? Now, when he hath once conceived this Fantasy, he beginneth to work. But he can never find so many good Works as are able to quiet his Conscience, but still he desireth more. Yea he findeth Sins in those Works that he hath done already. Therefore his Conscience can never be certified, but must needs be always in doubt, and thus think with itself: Thou hast not sacrificed as thou shouldst do; thou hast not prayed aright; this thou hast left undone; this or that Sin thou hast committed. Here the Heart trembleth and feeleth itself oppressed with innumerable Sins which still increase without End, so that he swarveth from Righteousness more and more until at length he fall to Desperation. Hereof it cometh that many being at the Point of Death, have uttered these desperate Words: O Wretch that I am; I have not kept mine Order: Whither shall I fly from the Wrath of Christ, that angry Judge? Would to God I had been a Swine-herd, or the vilest Wretch in the whole World.

Thus the *Monk* in the End of his Life is more weak, more beggarly, more faithless and fearful then he was at the Beginning when he first entred into his Order. The Reason is, because he would strengthen himself thro' Weakness, and enrich himself thro' Poverty. The Law, or Mens Traditions, or the Rule of his Order, should have healed him when he was sick, and enriched him when he was poor; but he is become more feeble and more poor then the Publicans and Harlots, *Luke xviii. 13.* The Publicans and Harlots have not an Heap of good Works to trust unto as the *Monks* have; but altho' they feel their Sins never so much, yet they can say with the Publican; *O Lord be merciful to me a Sinner.* But contrariwise the *Monk* which hath spent all his Time in weak and beggarly Elements, is confirmed in this Opinion; If thou keep thy Rule thou shalt be saved, &c. With this false Perswasion he is so deluded and  
A lively Description of all the religious Hypocrites in the Kingdom of Antichrist.

and bewitched, that he cannot apprehend Grace, no nor once remember Grace. Thus notwithstanding all the Works which either he doth or hath done, be they never so many and great, he thinketh that he hath never done enough, but hath still an Eye to more Works, and so

The Fable is this, that a Dog swimming over the Water with a Piece of Flesh in his Mouth, let the Flesh go and snatched at the Shadow which appeared in the Water. by heaping up of Works he goeth about to appease the Wrath of God and to justify himself, until he be driven to utter Desperation. Wherefore, whosoever falleth from Faith and followeth the Law, is like to *Esop's Dog*, which forgoeth the Flesh, and snatcheth at the Shadow. Wherefore it is impossible that such as seek Righteousness and Salvation by the Law (whereunto Men are naturally inclined) should ever find Quietness and Peace of Conscience; yea they do nothing else but heap Laws upon Laws, whereby they torment both themselves and others, and afflict Mens Consciences so miserably, that thro' extreme Anguish of Heart many die before the Time. For one Law always bringeth forth ten more, and so they increase without Number and without End.

Now, who would have thought that the *Galatians* which had learned so sound and so pure Doctrine of such an excellent Apostle and Teacher, could be so suddenly led away from the same, and utterly perverted by the false Apostles? It is not without Cause that I repeat this so often, that to fall away from the Truth of the Gospel is an easy Matter. The Reason is, because Men do not sufficiently consider, no not the very Faithful, what an excellent and a precious Treasure the true Knowledge of Christ is. Therefore they do not labour so diligently and so carefully as they should do, to obtain and to retain the same. Moreover, the greater Part of those that hear the Word, are exercised with no Cross or Affliction; they wrestle not against Sin,

They that are not tried with Afflictions and Tentations, never feel the Power of the Word. Death and the Devil, but live in Security without any Conflict. Such Men because they are not proved and tried with Tentations, and therefore are not armed with the Word of God against the Subtilties of the Devil, never feel the Use and Power of the Word. Indeed whiles they are among faithful Ministers and Preachers, they can follow their Words and say as they, perswading themselves that they perfectly understand the Matter of Justification. But when they are gone, and Wolves in Sheeps Cloathing are come in their Place, it happeneth

unto them as it did to the *Galatians*; that is to say, they are suddenly seduced and easily turned back to weak and beggarly Rudiments.

*Paul* hath here his peculiar Manner of Speech, which the other Apostles did not use. For there was none of them besides *Paul*, that gave such Names to the Law, to wit, that it is a weak and beggarly Rudiment, that is to say, utterly unprofitable to Righteousness. And surely I durst not have given such Terms unto the Law, but should have thought it great Blasphemy against God, if *Paul* had not so done before. But of this I have intreated more largely before, where I shewed where

The Law is weak and beggarly, and when it is most strong and rich, &c. Now if the Law of God be weak and unprofitable to Justification, much more are the Laws and Decrees of the Pope, weak and unprofitable to Justification. Therefore we give Sentence against the Ordinances, Laws and Decrees of the Pope, with such Boldness and Assurance, as *Paul* did against the Law of God, that they are not only weak and beggarly Rudiments, and utterly unprofitable to Righteousness, but also execrable, accused, devilish and damnable; for they blaspheme Grace, they overthrow the Gospel, abolish Faith, take away Christ, &c.

For as much then as the Pope requireth that we should keep his Laws necessary to Salvation, he is very *Antichrist* and the Vicar of Satan; and as many as cleave unto him, and confirm his Abominations and blasphemies, or keep them to this End, that thereby they may merit the Forgiveness of their Sins, are the Servants of *Antichrist* and of the Devil. Now, such hath the Doctrine of the Papistical Church been of long Time, that these Laws ought to be kept as necessary to Salvation. Thus the Pope sitteth in the Temple of God, vaunting himself as God; he setteth himself against God, and exalteth himself above all that is called God or worshipped, &c. 2 *Thess.* ii. 4. And Mens Consciences more feared and revered the Laws and Ordinances of the Pope, then the Word of God and his Ordinances. By this Means he was made the Lord of Heaven, of Earth, and of Hell, and bear a triple Crown upon his Head. The Cardinals also and Bishops his Creatures, were made Kings and Princes of the World; and therefore if he did not burden Mens Consciences with his Laws, he could not long maintain his terrible Power, his Dignity and his Riches; but his whole Kingdom would quickly fall.

This Place which *Paul* here handleth, is weighty and of great Importance, and therefore the more diligently to be marked; to wit, that they which fall from Grace to the Law, do utterly loose the Knowledge of the Truth, they see not their own Sins, they neither know God nor the Devil, nor themselves, and moreover they understand not the Force and Use of the Law, altho' they brag never so much that they keep and observe the same. For without the Knowledge of Grace, that is to say, without the Gospel of Christ, it is impossible for a Man to give this Definition of the Law; that it is a weak and a beggarly Rudiment, and unprofitable to Righteousness. But he rather judgeth quite contrary of the Law; to wit, that it is not only necessary to Salvation, but also that it strengtheneth such as are weak, and enricheth such as are poor and beggarly; that is to say, that such as obey and observe the same, shall be able to merit Righteousness and everlasting Salvation. If this Opinion remain, the Promise of God is denied, Christ is taken away, Lying, Impiety and Idolatry is established. Now, the Pope with all his Bishops, his School and whole Synagogue, taught that his Laws are necessary to Salvation. Therefore he was a Teacher of weak and beggarly Elements, whereby he made

What Judgement they give of the Law which know not Christ.

The Thundrings of *Luther* against the Pope and his Laws.

the Church of Christ throughout the whole World, most weak and beggarly; that is to say, he burdened and miserably tormented the Church with his wicked Laws, defacing Christ and burying his Gospel.

**Verse 9. Whereunto ye desire again to be in Bondage?**

This he addeth, to declare that he speaketh of proud and presumptuous Hypocrites, which seek to be justified by the Law, as I have shewed before. For otherwise he calleth the Law, holy and good. As *1 Tim. i. 8. We know that the Law is good, if a Man use it lawfully*, that is to say, civilly to bridle evil Doers, and spiritually to increase Transgressions, *Gal. iii. 19.* But whosoever observeth the Law to obtain Righteousness before God, maketh the Law which is good, damnable and hurtful unto himself. He reproveth the *Galatians* therefore, because they would be in Bondage to the Law again, which doth not take away Sin, but increaseth Sin. For whilst a Sinner, being weak and poor of himself, seeketh to be justified by the Law, he findeth nothing in it but Weakness and Poverty itself. And here two sick and feeble Beggars meet together, of whom the one is not able to help and heal the other, but rather molesteth and troubleth the other.

We as being strong in Christ, will gladly serve the Law; not the weak and beggarly, but the mighty and rich Law, that is to say, so far forth as it hath Power and Dominion over the Body: For then we serve the Law but only in our Body and outward Members, and not in our Conscience. But the Pope requireth that we should obey his Laws with this Opinion, that if we do this or that, we are righteous; if we do it not, we are damned. Here the Law is more then a weak and beggarly Element. For whilst this Bondage of the Conscience continueth under the Law, there can be nothing but mere Weakness and Poverty. Wherefore all the Weight of the Matter lieth in this Word, *To serve*. The Meaning therefore of *Paul* is this, that he would not have the Conscience to serve under the Law as a Captive, but to be free and have Dominion over the Law: For the Conscience is dead to the Law thro' Christ, and the Law again unto the Conscience. Whereof we have more largely intreated afore in the second Chapter.

**Verse 10. Ye observe Days, and Months, and Times, and Years.**

The Doctrine of the false Apostles. The holy Days of the Jews.

By these Words he plainly declareth what the false Apostles taught, namely, the Observation of Days, Months, Times and Years. The *Jews* were commanded to keep holy the Sabbath-day, the new Moons, the first and the seventh Month, the three appointed Times or Feasts, namely, the Paschal or Passover, the Feast of Weeks, of the Tabernacles, and the Year of Jubilee. These Ceremonies the *Galatians* were also constrained by the false Apostles

possibles to keep as necessary to Righteousness. Therefore he saith, that they, loosing the Grace and Liberty which they had in Christ, were turned back to the serving of weak and beggarly Elements. For they were perswaded by the false Apostles, that these Laws must needs be kept, and by keeping of them they should obtain Righteousness; but if they kept them not, they should be damned. Contrariwise, Paul can in no ways suffer that Mens Consciences should be bound to the Law of Moses, but always delivered them from the Law. Behold I Paul (saith he a little after in Chap. v. 2.) say unto you, that if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing. And Col. ii. 16. Let no Man therefore judge you in Meat or in Drink, or in respect of an holy Day, or of the new Moon, or of the Sabbath-days, &c. So saith our Saviour Christ; The Kingdom of God cometh not with Observation of the Law, Luke xvii. 20. Much less then are Mens Consciences to be burdened and snared with human Traditions.

**Verse 11.** *I am afraid of you, lest I have bestowed upon you Labour in vain.*

Here Paul sheweth himself to be greatly troubled thro' the Fall of the Galatians: Whom he would more bitterly reprove, but that he feareth lest if he should deal with them more sharply, he should not only not make them better, but more offend them, and so utterly alienate their Minds from him. Therefore in writing, he changeth and mitigateth his Words, and as tho' all the Harm redounded unto himself, he saith; *I am afraid of you, lest I have bestowed upon you Labour in vain*: That is to say, 'it grieveth me that I have preached the Gospel with so great Diligence and Faithfulness amongst you, and see no Fruit to come thereof. Notwithstanding altho' he shew a very loving and a fatherly Affection towards them, yet withal he chideth them somewhat sharply, but yet covertly. For when he saith, that he had laboured in vain, that is to say, that he had preached the Gospel among them without any Fruit, he sheweth covertly, that either they were obstinate Unbelievers, or else were fallen from the Doctrine of Faith. Now, both these, as well Unbelievers as Back-sliders from the Doctrine of Faith, are Sinners, wicked, unrighteous, and damned. Such therefore do obey the Law in vain, they observe Days, Months and Years in vain. And in these Words, *I am afraid of you, lest I have bestowed upon you Labour in vain*, is contained a certain secret Excommunication. For the Apostle meaneth hereby, that the Galatians were secluded and separate from Christ, unless they speedily returned to sound and sincere Doctrine again; yet he pronounced no open Sentence against them. For he perceived that he could do no good with over sharp dealing; wherefore he changeth his stile, and speaketh them very fair, saying;

The fatherly Affection of Paul towards the Galatians.

**Verse 12.** *Be as I am; for I am as ye are:*

Hitherto *Paul* hath been occupied wholly in teaching; and being moved with this great Enormity and wicked revolting of the *Galatians* he was vehemently incensed against them, and chide them bitterly, calling them Fools, bewitched, not believing the Truth, Crucifiers of Christ, &c. Now, the greater Part of his Epistle being finished, he beginneth to perceive that he had handled them too sharply. Therefore being careful lest he should do more hurt than good thro' his Severity, he sheweth that this his sharp chiding proceeded of a fatherly Affection, and a true Apostolical Heart; and so he qualifieth the Matter with sweet and gentle Words, to the End that if he had offended any (as no doubt there were many offended) by these sweet and loving Words he might win them again.

And here by his own Example he admonisheth all Pastors and Ministers, that they ought to bear a fatherly and motherly Affection; not towards ravening Wolves, but towards the poor Sheep, miserably seduced, and going astray, patiently bearing with their Faults and Infirmities instructing and restoring them with the Spirit of Meekness, *Gal. vi. 1*. For they cannot be brought into the right Way again by any other Means; and by over sharp reproving and rebuking they are provoked to Anger, or else to Desperation, but not to Repentance. And here it to be noted by the Way, that such is the Nature and Fruit of true and sound Doctrine, that when it is well taught and well understood, it joineth Mens Hearts together with a singular Concord: But when Men reject godly and sincere Doctrine, and embrace Errors, this Unity and Concord is soon broken. Therefore as soon as thou seest thy Brethren seduced by vain and fantastical Spirits, to fall from the Article of Justification, thou shalt perceive that by and by they will pursue the Faithful with bitter Hatred, whom before they most tenderly loved.

This we find to be true at this Day in our false Brethren, and other *Sectaries*, who at the Beginning of the Reformation of the Gospel, were glad to hear us, and read our Books with great Zeal and Affection. They acknowledged the Grace of the Holy Ghost in us, and revered us for the same, as the Ministers of God: Some of them also lived familiarly with us for a Time, and behaved themselves very modestly and soberly. But when they were departed from us and perverted by the wicked Doctrine of the *Sectaries*, they shewed themselves more bitter Enemies to our Doctrine and our Name, then any other. I do much and often marvel whereupon they should conceive such a deadly Hatred against us, whom they before so dearly and tenderly loved; for we offended them not in any Thing, nor gave them any Occasion to hate us. Yea, they are constrained to confess that we desire nothing more then that the Glory of God may be advanced, the Benefit of Christ truly known, and the

Truth of the Gospel purely taught, which God hath now again in these latter Days revealed by us unto this unthankful World; which Thing should rather provoke them to love us then to hate us. I marvel therefore not without Cause, whereof this Change cometh. Verily there is no other Cause, but that they have gotten unto themselves new Masters, and hearkned to new Teachers, whose Poison hath so infected them, that now of very Friends they are become our mortal Enemies. And I see the Condition of the Apostles, and of all other faithful Ministers to be such, that their Disciples and Hearers being once infected with the Errors of the false Apostles and Hereticks, have and do set themselves against them, and become their Enemies. There were very few amongst the *Galatians* which continued in the sound Doctrine of the Apostle; all the rest being seduced by the false Apostles, did not acknowledge *Paul* for their Pastor and Teacher any more; yea, there was nothing more odious unto them then the Name and Doctrine of *Paul*. And I fear me, that this Epistle brought very few of them back again from their Error.

If the like Case should happen unto us; that is to say, if in our Absence our Church should be seduced by fantastical Heads, and we should write hither, not one or two, but many Epistles, we should prevail little or nothing at all. Our Men (a few only excepted of the stronger Sort) would use themselves no otherwise towards us, then they do at this Day which are seduced by the *Sectaries*, who would sooner worship the Pope, then they would obey our Admonitions, or approve our Doctrine. No Man shall persuade them that they reject Christ, and return again to weak and beggarly Elements, and to those which by Nature are no gods. They can abide nothing less, then to hear that their Teachers by whom they are seduced, are Overthrowers of the Gospel of Christ, and Troublers of Mens Consciences. The *Lutherans* (say they) are not only wise, they alone do not preach Christ, they alone have not the Holy Ghost, the Gift of Prophecy, and the true Understanding of the Scriptures. Our Teachers are in nothing inferior unto them; yea, in many Things they excel them, because they follow the Spirit, and teach spiritual Things. Contrariwise, they never yet tasted what true Divinity meant, but stick in the letter, and therefore they teach nothing but the Catechism, Faith and Charity, &c. Wherefore (as I am wont to say) like as to fall in Faith is an easy Matter; so it is most perilous, so wit, even from the high Heaven into the deep Pit of Hell. It is not such as properly followeth the Nature of Man, as Murder, Adultery, and such like; but devilish, and the proper Work of the Devil. For they which so fall, cannot be easily recovered, but most commonly they continue perverse and obstinate in their Error. Therefore the latter End of those Men is worse then the Beginning, as our Saviour Christ witnesseth, when he saith; The unclean Spirit being cast out of his House, when he returneth, he entreth in again not alone, but taketh unto him seven Spirits worse then himself, and there dwelleth, &c. *Matth. xii. 43. 45.*

The *Ana-*  
*baptists* brag  
altogether of  
the Spirit of  
Illuminati-  
ons and Re-  
velations.

*Paul* therefore perceiving thro' the Revelation of the Holy Ghost, that it was to be feared lest the Minds of the *Galatians*, whom of a godly Zeal he had called foolish and bewitched, &c. by this sharp chiding should rather be stirred up against him, then amended, especially since he now knew that the false Apostles were among them, who would expound this sharp chiding, which proceeded from a fatherly Affection, unto the worst, crying out : Now *Paul* which some of you so greatly praise, sheweth what he is, and with what Spirit he is led ; who when he was with you, would seem to be unto you a Father, but his Letters shew in his Absence that he is a Tyrant, &c.) Therefore he is so troubled thro' a godly Care and fatherly Affection, that he cannot well tell how and what to write to them. For it is a dangerous Thing for a Man to defend his Cause against those which are absent, and have now begun to hate him, and are perswaded by others that his Cause is not good. Therefore being in great Perplexity, he saith a little after ; I am troubled and at my Wits End for your Cause, that is, I know not what to do, or how to deal with you.

Verse 12. *Be as I am ; for I am as ye are :*

These Words are to be understood, not of Doctrine, but of Affections. Therefore the Meaning is not ; *Be ye as I am*, that is to say, think of Doctrine as I do ; but bear such an Affection towards me, as I do towards you. As tho' he would say ; Perhaps I have too sharply chidden you, but pardon this my Sharpness, and judge not my Heart by my Words, but my Words by the Affection of my Heart : My Words seem rough, and my Chastisement sharp, but my Heart is loving and fatherly. Therefore (O my *Galatians*) take this my chiding with such a Mind as I bear towards you : For the Matter requireth that I should shew myself so sharp and severe towards you.

Even so may we also say of ourselves. Our Correction is severe, and our Manner of writing sharp and vehement ; but certainly there is no Bitterness in our Heart, no Envy, no Desire of Revenge against our Adversaries ; but there is in us a godly Carefulness and Sorrow of Spirit. We do not so hate the Pope and other erroneous Spirits, that we wish any Evil unto them, or desire their Destruction ; but rather we desire that they may return again to the right Way, and be saved together with us. The School-master chastiseth his Schollar, not to hurt him but to reform him. The Rod is sharp, but Correction is necessary for the Child, and the Heart of him that correcteth, loving and friendly. So the Father chastiseth his Son, not to destroy him, but to reform and amend him : Stripes are sharp and grievous to the Child, but the Father's Heart is loving and kind : And unless he loved his Child, he would not chastise him, but cast him off, despair of his Welfare, and suffer him to perish. This Correction therefore which he giveth to his Child, is a Token of fatherly Affection, and is profitable for the Child. Even so, O my *Galatians*, think ye likewise of my dealing towards you : then will ye not judge my chiding to be sharp and bitter, but profitable

for you. *Chastisement for the present seemeth not to be joyous, but grievous: Nevertheless, afterward, it yieldeth the peaceable Fruit of Righteousness, unto them which are exercised thereby,* Heb. xii. 11. Let the same Affection therefore be in you towards me, which I bear towards you. I bear a loving Heart, towards you; the same I desire again of you.

Thus he speaketh them fair, and with this fair Speech he still continueth, that he might pacify their Minds which were stirred up against him by his sharp chiding. Notwithstanding he revoketh not his severe Words. Indeed he confesseth that they were sharp and bitter; but Necessity (saith he) compelled me to reprehend you somewhat sharply and severely; but that which I did, proceeded of a sincere and loving Heart towards you. The Physician giveth a bitter Potion to his Patient, not to hurt him, but to cure him. If then the Bitterness of the Medicine, which is given to the sick Body, is not to be imputed to the Physician, but to the Medicine and the Malady: Judge ye also in like Manner of my severe and sharp Reprehension.

**Verse 12.** *Brethren, I beseech you:—Ye have not injured me at all.*

Is this to beseech the *Galatians*, when he calleth them bewitched, disobedient to the Truth, and Crucifiers of Christ? It seemeth rather to be a great Rebuke. But contrariwise, *The Stripes of a Friend are better than the Kisses of an Enemy.* *Paul* saith, that it is no Rebuke, but an earnest beseeching, and indeed so it is. And it is as much as if he said; I confess that I have chidden you somewhat bitterly, but take it in good Part, and then shall ye find this my chiding, to be no chiding, but a praying and a beseeching. If a Father likewise do sharply correct his Son, it is as much as he said; My Son, I pray thee be a good Child, &c. It seemeth indeed to be a Correction, but if ye respect the Father's Heart, it is a gentle and an earnest beseeching.

**Verse 12.** *Ye have not injured me at all.*

As if he said; Why should I be angry with you, or of a malicious Mind speak evil of you, seeing ye have nothing offended me? Why then sayest thou that we are perverted, that we have forsaken thy Doctrine, that we are foolish, bewitched, &c. These Things do witness that we have offended thee. He answereth, Ye have not offended me but yourselves, and therefore I am thus troubled, not for mine own Cause, but for the Love I bear unto you. Think not therefore that my chiding did proceed of Malice or any evil Affection. For I take God to Witness; ye have done me no wrong, but contrariwise ye have bestowed great Benefits upon me.

Thus speaking them fair, he prepareth their Minds to suffer his fatherly Chastisement with a childlike Affection. And this is to temper Wormwood or a bitter Potion with Honey and Sugar, to make it sweet again. So Parents speak their Children fair when they have well beaten them, giving them Apples, Pears and other like Things, whereby their Children know that their Parents love them and seek to do them good, how sharp soever their Correction doth appear.

*Verses 13, 14. Ye know how through Infirmary of the Flesh, I preached the Gospel unto you at the first. And my Temptation which was in my Flesh, ye despised not, nor rejected; but received me as an Angel of God, even as Christ Jesus.*

He praiseth the *Galatians* because they were not offended with his Infirmary.

Now he declareth what Pleasure he had received of the *Galatians*. The first Benefit (saith he) which I esteem as the greatest of all, was this. When I began first to preach the Gospel amongst you, and that thro' Infirmary of the Flesh and great Tentations, my Cross did nothing at all offend you; but ye shewed yourselves so loving, so kind and so friendly towards me, that not only ye were not offended with this my Infirmary of the Flesh, with my Tentations and Afflictions wherewith I was almost overwhelmed; but also ye loved me dearly; and received me as an Angel of God, yea rather as Christ Jesus himself. This is indeed a great Commendation of the *Galatians*, that they received the Gospel of a Man so contemptible and afflicted on every Side as *Paul* was. For where he preached the Gospel amongst them, both the *Jews* and *Gentiles* murmured and raged against him. For all the mighty, wise, religious and learned Men, hated, persecuted and blasphemed *Paul*. With all this the *Galatians* were no whit offended, but turning their Eyes from the beholding of this Infirmary, these Tentations and Dangers, they did not only hear that poor, despised, wretched and afflicted *Paul*, and acknowledged themselves to be his Disciples, but also they received and heard him as an Angel of God, yea as Christ Jesus himself. This is a worthy Commendation and a singular Vertue of the *Galatians*; and indeed it is such a Commendation as he giveth to none of all those to whom he wrote, besides the *Galatians*.

What the Infirmary of the Flesh is after *Jerome's* Opinion. *Luther's* Judgment

*Jerome* and certain other of the ancient Fathers, expound this Infirmary of the Flesh in *Paul*, to be some Disease of the Body or some Tentation of Lust. These Men lived when the Church was outwardly in a peaceable and prosperous Estate without any Cross or Persecution. For then the Bishops began to increase in Riches, Estimation and Glory in the World. And many also exercised

touching the Fathers which lived in the temporal Succession of the Church.

exercised Tyranny over the People which were committed to their Charge, as the Ecclesiastical History witnesseth. Few did their Duty, and they that would seem to do it, forsaking the Doctrine of the Gospel, set forth their own Decrees to the People, now when the Pastors and Bishops are not exercised in the Word of God, but neglect the pure and sincere Preaching thereof, they must needs fall into Secularity: For they are not exercised with Tentations, with the Cross and Persecutions, which are wont always undoubtedly to follow the pure Preaching of the Word. Therefore it was impossible that they should understand *Paul*. But we by the Grace of God, have found and sincere Doctrine, which also we preach and teach freely, and therefore are compelled to suffer the bitter Hatred, Afflictions and Persecutions of the Devil and the World. And if we were not exercised outwardly by Tyrants and Sectaries with Force and Subtilty, and inwardly with Terrors and the fiery Darts of the Devil, *Paul* should be as obscure and unknown unto us, as he was in Times past to the whole World, and yet as to the *Papists*, the *Anabaptists* and other our Adversaries. Therefore the Gift of Knowledge and Interpretation of the Scriptures, and our Study, together with our inward and outward Tentations, open unto us the Meaning of *Paul*, and the Sense of all the holy Scriptures.

The Cross  
is always  
joined with  
the Doctrine  
of Faith.

The Profit  
that cometh  
of Tentations.

The Infir-  
mity of the  
Flesh in  
*Paul*.

*Paul* therefore calleth the Infirmary of the Flesh, no Disease of the Body or Tentation of Lust, but his suffering and Affliction which he sustained in his Body; which he setteth against the Vertue and Power of the Spirit. But lest we should seem to wrest and pervert *Paul's* Words, let us hear himself speaking in 2 *Cor.* xii. 9. *Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my Infirmities, that the Power of Christ may rest upon me.* Ver. 10. *Therefore I take Pleasure in Infirmities, in Reproaches, in Necessities, in Persecutions, in Distresses for Christ's Sake; for when I am weak, then am I strong.* And in the 11th Chap. Ver. 23. *In Labours more abundant, in Stripes above Measure, in Prisons more frequent, in Deaths oft.* Ver. 24. *Of the Jews five Times received I forty Stripes save one.* Ver. 25. *Thrice was I beaten with Rods, once was I stoned, thrice I suffered Shipwrack, &c.* These Afflictions which he suffered in his Body, he calleth the Infirmary of the Flesh, and not any corporal Disease. As tho' he would say: When I preached the Gospel amongst you, I was oppressed with sundry Tentations and Afflictions. I was always in Danger both of the *Jews* and of the *Gentiles*, and also of false Brethren. I suffered Hunger, and wanted all Things. I was as the very Filth and Offscouring of the World. He maketh mention of that Infirmary in many Places, as in 1 *Cor.* iv. 2 *Cor.* iv. 6, 11, 12. and in many other.

We see then that *Paul* calleth Afflictions the Infirmities of the Flesh which he suffered in the Flesh, like as the other Apostles, the Prophets and all godly Men did; notwithstanding he was mighty in Spirit. For the Power of Christ was in him, which always reigned and triumphed

thro' him. Which Thing he testifieth in 2 Cor. xii. 10. in these Words; *For when I am weak, then am I strong.* Also; *Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my Infirmities, that the Power of Christ may rest upon me.* And in the 2d Chap. Ver. 14. *Thanks be unto God, which always causeth us to triumph in Christ.* As tho' he would say; Indeed the Devil, the Jews and the Gentiles rage cruelly against us; notwithstanding we continue constant and invincible against all their Assaults, and will they kill they, our Doctrine prevaieth and triumpheth. This was the Strength and Power of the Spirit in Paul, against the which he setteth here the Infirmary and Bondage of the Flesh.

Now, this Infirmary of the Flesh in the Godly doth wonderfully offend Reason. Therefore Paul so highly commendeth the Galatians, because they were not offended with this great Infirmary, and with this vile and contemptible Form of the Cross which they saw in him; but received him as an Angel, yea as Christ Jesus. And Christ himself also armeth the Faithful against this base and contemptible Form of the Cross in which he appeared, when he saith; *Blessed is he who-so-ever shall not be offended in me,* Matth. xi. 6. And surely it is a great Matter that they which believe in him do acknowledge him to be Lord of all, and Saviour of the World, Psal. xii. 7. whom notwithstanding they bear to have been the most miserable of all others, the least of Men, yea a very Scorn of Men, and a Contempt of the World; briefly, despised and hated of all Men, and condemned to the Death of the Cross, and even of his own People, and especially of those that were esteemed the best, the wisest, the holiest of all others. This is a great Matter (I say) not to be moved with these great Offences, and to be able, not only to condemn them, but also to esteem this poor Christ so spitefully scorned, spit upon, whipped and crucified, more then the Riches of all the richest, the Strength of all the strongest, the Wisdom of all the wisest, the Holiness of all the holiest Men, with all the Crowns and Sceptres of all the Kings and Princes of the whole World. They therefore are worthily called blessed of Christ, which are not offended in him.

Now, Paul had not only outward Tentations (whereof I have spoken already) but also inward and spiritual Tentations, as Christ had in the Garden; such as that was whereof he complaineth in 2 Cor. xii. 7. *That he felt a Thorn or Sting in the Flesh, and the Messenger of Satan which buffeted him.* This I say by the Way, because the Papists expound this to be a Motion of fleshly Lust; but it was a spiritual Tentation. And herein is no Repugnance in that he addeth this Word *Flesh*, saying; *A Thorn was given me in the Flesh.* Yea he calleth it of Purpose a Thorn in the Flesh. For the Galatians and others which were conversant with Paul, had seen him oftentimes in great Heaviness, Anguish, and Terror: Wherefore the Apostles had not only bodily, but also spiritual Tentations, which also he confesseth in 2 Cor. vii. 5. with these Words; *Fightings without, and Fears within.* And Luke saith in the last of the Acts, that Paul when he had long striven in the Tempests of the Sea, even unto the Heaviness of the Spirit, was again refresh-

refreshed, and waxed bold when he saw the Brethren that came from Rome to meet him at the Market of *Appius* and three Taverns. Also, in *Phil. ii. 27.* he confesseth, that God had Mercy upon him, in that he restored *Epaphroditus* so weak and near to Death, unto Health again, lest he should have Sorrow upon Sorrow. Therefore besides outward Tentations, the Apostles also suffered great Anguish, Heaviness and Terrors.

But why saith *Paul*, that he was not despised of the *Galatians*? It seemeth that they despised him, when they fell away from his Gospel. *Paul* expoundeth himself. When I first preached the Gospel (saith he) ye did not as other People have done, who being greatly offended thro' this my Infirmary and Tentation of the Flesh, have despised and rejected me. For Man's Reason is soon offended with this vile and contemptible Form of the Cross, and judgeth those to be stark mad, which being so afflicted, will go about to comfort, to help and to succour others: Also, those that boast of their great Riches, that is to say, of Righteousness, Strength, Victory over Sin, Death and all Evils, of Joy, Salvation and everlasting Life, and yet notwithstanding are needy, weak, heavy hearted and despised, evil intreated and slain, as very noisome Poisons both of Common-weals and Religion, and they which kill them, think they do high Service unto God, *John xvi. 2.* Therefore, when they promise unto others eternal Treasures, and they themselves perish so wretchedly before the World, they are laughed to Scorn and compelled to hear; *Physician heal thyself*, *Luke iv. 23.* And hereof come these Complaints which are every where in the *Psalms*; *I am a Worm, and no Man*, &c. *Psal. xxii. 6.* Again; *Be not far from me, for Trouble is near; for there is none to help*, *Ver. 11.*

This is therefore a great Commendation of the *Galatians*, that they were not offended with this Infirmary and Tentation of *Paul*, but received him as an Angel of God, yea as Christ Jesus. It is indeed a great Vertue and worthy of great Praise to hear the Apostle. But it is a greater, and a true Christian Vertue, to give ear unto one so miserable, weak and contemptible as *Paul* was among the *Galatians* (as here he witnesseth of himself) and to receive him as an Angel from Heaven, and to give him such Honour as if he had been Christ Jesus himself, and not to be offended with his Afflictions, being so great and so many. Wherefore, by these Words he highly commendeth the Vertue of the *Galatians*, which he saith, he will keep in perpetual Remembrance, and so greatly esteemeth the same, that he desireth it may be known unto all Men. Notwithstanding in setting forth so highly their Benefits and Praises, he sheweth covertly how entirely they loved him before the coming of the false Apostles, and therewithal he moveth them to continue as they began, and to embrace him with no less Love and Reverence then they did before. And hereby it may also appear, that the false Apostles had greater Authority among the *Galatians* then *Paul* himself had. For the *Galatians* being moved with their Authority, preferred them far above *Paul*, whom before they so dearly loved and received as an Angel of God, &c.

**Verse 15.** *Where is then the Blessedness you spake of?*

As if he would say : How happy were ye counted ? How much were ye then praised, and commended ? The like Manner of Speech we have in the Song of the Virgin Mary ; *All Generations shall call me blessed*, Luke i. 48. And these Words ; *Where is then the Blessedness you spake of ?* Contain in them a certain Vehemency. As if he would say : Ye were not only blessed, but in all Things most blessed and highly commended. Thus he goeth about to qualify and mitigate his bitter Potion, that is to say, his sharp chiding, fearing lest the *Galatians* should be offended there-with ; especially, seeing he knew that the false Apostles

*Hereticks*  
wrest Things  
that are spo-  
ken well, to  
an evil  
Meaning.

would slander him, and most spitefully interpret his Words. For this is the Quality and Nature of these Vipers, that they will slander and maliciously pervert those Words which proceed from a simple and sincere Heart, and wrest them clean contrary to the true Sense and Meaning thereof. They are marvellous cunning Workmen in this Matter, far passing all the Wit and

Eloquence of all the Rhetoricians in the World. For they are led with a wicked Spirit, which so bewitcheth them, that they being inflamed with a devilish Rage against the Faithful, can no otherwise do, but maliciously interpret and wickedly pervert their Words and Writings. Therefore they are like unto the Spider, that sucketh Venom out of sweet and pleasant Flowers ; which proceedeth not of the Flowers, but of their own venomous Nature, which turneth that into Poison, that of itself is good and wholesome. *Paul* therefore by these mild and sweet Words goeth about to prevent the false Apostles, to the End they should have no Occasion to slander and pervert his Words after this Manner : *Paul* handleth you very ungently, he calleth you foolish, bewitched, and disobedient to the Truth, which is a sure Token that he seeketh not your Salvation, but accounteth you as damned and rejected from Christ.

**Verse 15.** *For I bear you Record, that if it had been possible, ye would have plucked out your own Eyes, and have given them to me.*

He praiseth the *Galatians* above Measure. Ye did not only intreat me (saith he) most courteously and with all Reverence, receiving me as an Angel of God, &c. but also if Necessity had required, ye would have plucked out your own Eyes, and have given them to me ; yea, you would have bestowed your Lives for me. And indeed the *Galatians* bestowed their Lives for him : For in that they received and maintained *Paul* (whom the World accounted most execrable and accursed) they turned upon their own Heads, as Receivers and Maintainers of *Paul*, the cruel Hatred and Indignation of all the *Jews* and *Gentiles*.

So that at this Day the Name of *Luther* is most odious to the World; He that praiseth me, sinneth worse then any Idolater, Blasphemer, Perjuror, Whoremonger, Adulterer, Murderer or Thief. It must needs be therefore that the *Galatians* were well established in the Doctrine and Faith of Christ, seeing that they with so great Danger of their Lives, received and maintained *Paul* which was hated throughout all the World. For else they would never have sustained that cruel Hatred of the whole World.

Verse 16. *Am I therefore become your Enemy, because I tell you the Truth?*

Here he sheweth the Reason, why he speaketh the *Galatians* so fair. For he suspecteth that they take him for their Enemy, because he had reprov'd them so sharply. I pray you (saith he) set apart these Rebukes, and separate them from Doctrine, and ye shall find that my Purpose was not to rebuke you, but to teach you the Truth. Indeed I confess that my Epistle is sharp and severe; but by this Severity I go about to call you back again to the Truth of the Gospel, from the which ye are fallen, and to keep you in the same; therefore apply this Sharpness and this bitter Potion, not to your Persons, but to your Disease: And judge me not to be your Enemy in rebuking you so sharply, but rather think that I am your Father. For unless I loved you dearly as my Children, and knew also that I am beloved of you, I would not have reprov'd you so sharply.

What *Paul* sought by his sharp chiding.

It is the Part of a Friend, freely to admonish his Friend if he do amiss, and when he is so admonished, if he be wise he is not angry with the other which hath so friendly admonished him and told him the Truth, but giveth him Thanks. It is commonly seen in the World that Truth bringeth Hatred, and that he is accounted an Enemy which speaketh the Truth. But amongst Friends it is not so; much less amongst Christians. Seeing therefore I have reprehended you of mere Love, to the End ye might abide in the Truth, ye ought not to be offended with me nor loose the Truth, or think me your Enemy, because of my friendly and fatherly Reprehension. All these Things are spoken of *Paul*, to confirm that which he said before; *Be ye as I am: ye have not injured me, &c.*

Verse 17. *They zealously affect you, but not well, &c.*

He reproveth here the Flattery of the false Apostles. For Satan is wont by his Ministers, thro' wonderful Subtily and crafty Sights to beguile the Simple: As *Paul* saith, *Rom. xvi. 18. By good Words and fair Speeches they deceive the Hearts of the Simple.* For first of all, they make great Protections that they seek nothing else but the Advancement

The Nature and Subtily of the false Apostles.

vancement of God's Glory; and moreover that they are moved by the Spirit (because the miserable People are neglected, or else because the Truth is not purely taught of others) to teach the infallible Truth, that by this Means the Elect may be delivered from Error, and may come to the true Light and Knowledge of the Truth. Moreover, they promise undoubted Salvation to those that receive their Doctrine. If vigilant and faithful Pastors do not withstand these ravening Wolves, they will do great Harm to the Church under this Pretence of Godliness, and under this Sheeps Clothing. For the *Galatians* might say; Why dost thou inveigh so bitterly against our Teachers for that they be jealous over us? For that which they do, they do of Zeal and mere Love; this ought not to offend thee, &c. Indeed (saith he) they are jealous over you, but their Jealousy is not good.

Here note that Zeal or Jealousy, properly signifieth an angry Love, or, as you would say, a godly Envy. *Elijah* saith; *I have been very jealous for the Lord God of Hosts*, 1 Kings xix. 14. After this Manner the Husband is jealous towards his Wife, the Father towards the Son, the Brother towards his Brother, that is to say, they love him entirely; yet so that they hate their Vices, and go about to amend them. Such a Zeal the false Apostles pretended to bear towards the *Galatians*. *Paul* indeed confesseth that they were very zealous towards the *Galatians*, but their Zeal (saith he) was not good. Now, by this Colour and subtil Pretence the Simple are deceived, when these Seducers do make them to believe that they bear a great Zeal and Affection toward them, and that they are very careful for them: *Paul* therefore warneth us here to put a Difference betwixt a good Zeal and an evil Zeal. Indeed a good Zeal is to be commended, but not an evil Zeal. I am as zealous over you (saith *Paul*) as they. Now judge ye which of our Zeals is better, mine or theirs; which is good and godly, which is evil and carnal. Therefore let not their Zeal so easily seduce you.

Verse 17. *Yea, they would exclude you, that you might affect them.*

The Zeal of the false Apostles. As if he said: True it is, that they are very zealous towards you, but by this Means they seek that ye again should be zealous towards them, and reject me. If their Zeal were sincere and godly, then surely they would be content that I also should be beloved of you as well as they. But they hate our Doctrine, and therefore their Desire is, that it may be utterly abolished, and their own preached amongst you. Now, to the End they might bring this to pass, they go about by this Jealousy to pluck your Hearts from me, and to make me odious unto you, that when ye have conceived an Hatred against me and my Doctrine, and turned your Affection and Zeal towards them, ye should love them only, and receive no other Doctrine but theirs. Thus he bringeth the false Apostles into Suspicion among the *Galatians*, shewing that by this goodly Pretence they

they go about to deceive them. So our Saviour Christ also warneth us saying, *Beware of false Prophets, which come to you in Sheeps Clothing,* Matth. vii. 15.

*Paul* suffered the same Tentation which we suffer at this Day. He was marvellously troubled with this Enormity, that after the Preaching of his Doctrine, which was divine and holy, he saw so many Sects, Com-motions, Dissipations of Common-weals, Changes of Kingdoms and o-ther like Things to ensue which were the Cause of infinite Evils and Of-fences. He was accused by the *Jews* to be a pernicious Fellow, a Mover of Sedition in his whole Nation, and to be an Author of the Sect of *Nazarites*, Acts xxiv. 5. As if they had said; This is a seditious and a blasphemous Fellow; for he preacheth such Things whereby he not on-ly overthroweth the *Jewish* Common-wealth, excellently well ordered and established by the Laws of God; but also abolished even the Ten Commandments, the Religion and Service of God, and our Priesthood, and published throughout the World, the Gospel (as he calleth it) where-of are sprung infinite Evils, Seditions, Offences and Sects. He was com-pelled to hear of the *Gentiles* also which cried out against him in *Philip-pi*, that he was a Troubler of the City, Acts xvi. 20: and preached Ordinances which were not lawful for them to receive, &c.

Such Troubles of Common-weals and other Calamities, as Famine, Wars, Dissentions and Sects, the *Jews* and *Gentiles* imputed to the Doc-trine of *Paul* and of the other Apostles; and therefore they persecuted them as Common Plagues, and Enemies of the publick Peace and Re-ligion. The Apostles notwithstanding all this did not cease to do their Office, but most constantly preached and confessed Christ. For they knew that they should rather obey God then Men, Acts v. 29. and that it was better that the whole World should be troubled and in an Up-roar, then that Christ should not be preached, or that one Soul should be neglected and perish.

In the mean Time it was (no doubt) a heavy Cross to the Apostles to see these Offences; for they were not made of Iron. It was a wonderful Grief unto them, that that People for whose Sakes *Paul* wished to be separate from Christ, Rom. ix. 3. should perish, with all their Or-naments. They saw that great Tumults and Changes of Kingdoms should follow their Doctrine. And (which was more bitter unto them then Death itself, but espe-cially to *Paul*) they saw that amongst themselves there sprang up many Sects. It was heavy News to *Paul*, when he heard that the *Corinthians* denied the Resurrection of the Dead; when he heard that the Church-es which were planted by his Ministry, were troubled; that the Gospel was overthrown by the false Apostles, and that all *Asia* was revolted from his Doctrine, and certain great Personages besides.

But he knew that his Doctrine was not the Cause of these Offences and Sects, and therefore he was not dis-couraged, he forsook not his Vocation, but went forward, knowing that the Gospel which he preached, was the

The Apo-  
stles were the  
Beholders of  
great Evils  
not without  
their great  
Grief.

The Conso-  
lation of  
*Paul*.

Power of God to Salvation to all that believe, *Rom. i. 16.* howsoever it seemed to the *Jews* and *Gentiles* to be a foolish and offensive Doctrine. He knew that they are blessed which are not offended by this Word of the Cross, whether they be Teachers or Hearers, as Christ himself saith; *Blessed is he which is not offended in me.* Contrariwise he knew that they were condemned, which judged this Doctrine to be foolish and heretical. Therefore he saith, as Christ said of the *Jews* and *Gentiles* which were offended with this Doctrine; *Let them alone; they be blind Leaders of the Blind, Matth. xv. 14.*

All the  
Troubles  
which art at  
this Day, the  
World lay-  
eth unto Lu-  
ther's Charge

We also are constrained at this Day to bear the same spoken of us, which was said of *Paul* and the other Apostles; *to wit*, that the Doctrine of the Gospel which we profess, is the Cause of many and great Enormities, as of Seditions, Wars, Sects and innumerable Offences. Yea, they impute unto us all the Troubles which are at this Day. Surely we teach no Heresies or wicked Doctrine, but we preach the glad Tidings concerning Christ, that he is our High Priest and our Redeemer. Moreover, our Adversaries are constrained (if they will confess the Truth) to grant us this, that we have given no Occasion thro' our Doctrine, of Seditions, Wars or Tumults; but always have taught that Honour and Reverence must be given to the Magistrate, because God hath so commanded. Neither are we the Authors of Offences; but in that the Wicked are offended, the Fault is in themselves and not in us. God hath commanded us to preach the Doctrine of the Gospel without any respect of Offence. But because this Doctrine condemneth the wicked Doctrine and Idolatry of our Adversaries, they being provoked thereby, raise Offences of themselves, which the School-men called Offences taken, which they said, ought not to be avoided, nor can be avoided.

Christ taught the Gospel, having no Regard to the Offence of the *Jews*. *Let them alone; (saith he) they be blind Leaders of the Blind; Matth. xv. 14.* The more the Priests forbade the Apostles to preach in the Name of Christ, the more the Apostles gave witness, that the same Jesus whom they had crucified, is both Lord and Christ, *Acts iv. 21, 26.* and whosoever should call upon him, should be saved, and that

there is none other Name given unto Men under Heaven, whereby they must be saved, &c. *Acts iv. 12.* Even so we preach Christ at this Day, not regarding the Clamours of the wicked *Papists* and all our Adversaries, which cry out that our Doctrine is seditious and full of Blasphemy, that it troubleth Common-weals, overthroweth Religion, and teacheth Heresies, and briefly that it is the Cause of all Evils. When Christ and his Apostles preached, the same was said likewise of them. Not long after, the *Romans* came, and according to their own Prophecy, destroyed both the Place and the Nation. Wherefore let the Enemies of the Gospel at this Day take heed that they be not overwhelmed with these Evils, which they prophecy unto themselves.

These they make grievous and hainous Offences, that *Monks* and *Priests* do marry Wives, that we eat Flesh upon the *Fridays*, and such like. But this is no Offence to them at all, that by their wicked Doctrine they seduce and daily destroy innumerable Souls, that by their evil Example they offend the Weak, that they blaspheme and condemn the glorious Gospel of the mighty God, and that they persecute and kill those that love the Sincerity of Doctrine, and the Word of Life; this (I say) is to them no Offence but an Obedience, a Service, and an acceptable Sacrifice unto God. Let us suffer them therefore, *For they be blind Leaders of the Blind*, Matth. xv. 4. *He that hurteth, let him hurt still, and he that is filthy, let him be more filthy*, Apoc. 22. But we, because we believe, will speak and set forth the wonderful Works of the Lord so long as we have Breath, and will endure the Persecutions of our Adversaries until that Time that Christ our High Bishop and King shall come from Heaven, who we hope will come shortly as a just Judge to take Vengeance of all those that obey not his Gospel. So be it.

The *Papists* justify their own horrible Sins, and condemn our good Deeds.

With these Offences which the Wicked alledge, the Godly are nothing moved. For they know that the Devil hateth nothing more then the pure Doctrine of the Gospel, and therefore he goeth about to deface it with innumerable Offences, that by this Means he might root it out of Mens Hearts for ever. Before, when nothing else was taught in the Church but Mens Traditions, the Devil did not so rage. For whilst the strong Man kept the House, all that he possessed was in Peace: But now when a stronger cometh which vanquisheth and bindeth that strong one and spoileth his House, then he beginneth to rage indeed, Luke xi. 1, 22. And this is an infallible Token, that the Doctrine which we profess is of God. For else (as it is said in *Job* xl. 21.) that *Behemoth would lie under the shady Trees, in the Covert of the Reed and Fens*. But now, that he rangeth about like a roaring Lion, 1 *Pet.* v. 8. and stirreth up such hurly burlies, it is a manifest Token that he seeleth the power of our Preaching.

When *Paul* saith; *They zealously affect you, but not well*, he sheweth us the Way who are the Authors of Sects, to wit, those jealous Spirits which in all Time overthrow the true Doctrine, and trouble the publick Peace. For these Things stirred up with a perverse Zeal, imagine that they have a certain singular Holiness, Modesty, Patience and Doctrine above others, and therefore they think that they are able to provide for the Salvation of all Men, that they can teach more profound and profitable Things, ordain better Service and Ceremonies then all other Teachers besides; whom they despise as nothing in Comparison of themselves, and abase their Authority, and corrupt those Things which they have purely taught. The false Apostles had such a wicked and perverse Zeal, stirring up Sects, not only in *Galatia*, but also in all the Places wheresoever *Paul* and the other Apostles had preached; after the which Sects followed innumerable Offences and marvellous Troubles. *For the Devil (as Christ saith) is a Liar and a Murderer*, John viii.

44. and therefore he is wont not only to trouble Mens Consciences by false Doctrine, but also to stir up Tumults, Seditions, Wars and all Mischief.

There are very many at this Day which are possessed with this Kind of Jealousy, which pretend great Religion, Modesty, Doctrine and Patience, and yet in very Deed they are ravening Wolves, who with their Hypocrisy seek nothing else but to discredit us, that the People might esteem, love and reverence them only, and receive no other Doctrine but theirs. Now, because these Men have a great Opinion of themselves, and despise others, it cannot be, but that there must needs follow horrible Dissentions, Sects, Divisions and Seditions. But what should we do? We cannot remedy this Matter, as *Paul* could not do in his Time. Notwithstanding he gained some, which obeyed his Admonitions. So I hope also that I have called some back from the Errors of the *Sectaries*.

*Verse 18. But it is good to be zealously affected always in a good Thing, and not only when I am present with you.*

As if he should say; I commend you for this, that ye loved me so entirely when I preached the Gospel amongst you in the Infirmary of the Flesh. Ye ought to bear the same Affection towards me now when I am absent, even as if I had never departed from you. For altho' I be absent in Body, yet have ye my Doctrine, which ye ought to retain and maintain, seeing ye received the Holy Ghost thro' it, thinking with yourselves that *Paul* is always present with you as long as ye have the Doctrine. I do not therefore reprehend your Zeal, but I praise it, and so far forth I praise it, as it is the Zeal of God or of the Spirit, and not of the Flesh. Now, the Zeal of the Spirit is always good; for it is an earnest Affection and Motion of the Heart to a good Thing, and so is not the Zeal of the Flesh. He commendeth therefore the Zeal of the *Galatians*, that thereby he may pacify their Minds, and that they may patiently suffer his Correction. As if he would say: Take my Correction

in good Part; for it proceedeth of no Displeasure, but of a sorrowful Heart and careful for your Salvation. This is a lively Example to teach all Ministers how to be careful for their Sheep, and to essay every Way, that by chiding, fair speaking, or intruating, they may keep them in sound Doctrine, and turn them from subtil Seducers and false Teachers.

*Verse 19. My little Children, of whom I travel in Birth again, until Christ be formed in you:*

All his Words are weighty and fitly framed to the Purpose, that they may

may move the Hearts of the *Galatians*, and win their Favour again. And these are sweet and loving Words, when he calleth them his Children. When he saith; *Of whom I travel in Birth*, it is an Allegory. For the Apostles are in the Stead of Parents; as School-masters also are in their Place and Calling. For as Parents beget the bodily Form, so they beget the Form of the Mind. Now, the Form of a Christian Mind is Faith, or the Confidence of the Heart which layeth hold upon Christ, and cleaveth to him alone and to nothing else. The Heart being furnished with this Confidence or Assurance, to wit, that for Christ's Sake we are righteous, hath the true Form of Christ. Now, this Form is given by the Ministry of the Word, as it is said, 1 Cor. iv. 15. *I have begotten you thro' the Gospel*, that is to say, in Spirit, that ye might know Christ and believe in him. Also, 1 Cor. iii. 3. *Ye are the Epistle of Christ, ministered by us, written not with Ink, but with the Spirit of the living God*. For the Word cometh from the Mouth of the Apostle, or of the Minister, and entreth into the Heart of him that heareth it. There the Holy Ghost is present, and imprinteth the Word in the Heart, so that it consenteth unto it. Thus every godly Teacher is a Father, which gendreth and formeth the true Shape of a Christian Heart, and that by the Ministry of the Word.

Moreover, by these Words, *Of whom I travel in Birth*, he toucheth the false Apostles. As tho' he would say; I did beget you rightly thro' the Gospel; but these Corrupters have formed a new Shape in your Heart, not of Christ, but of *Moses*; so that now your Affiance is not founded any more upon Christ, but upon the Works of the Law. This is not the true Form of Christ, but it is another Form, and altogether devilish. And he saith not, of whom I travel in Birth until my Form be fashioned in you, but until Christ be formed in you: That is to say, I travel that ye may receive again the Form and Similitude of Christ, and not of *Paul*. In which Words he again reproveth the false Apostles; for they had abolished the Form of Christ in the Hearts of the Believers, and had devised another Form, that is to say, their own; he saith, *Gal. vi. 13. They would have you circumcised, that they may glory in your Flesh*.

Of this Form of Christ he speaketh also in *Col. iii. 10. Put ye on the new Man which is renewed in Knowledge after the Image of him that created him*. Paul therefore goeth about to repair the Form of Christ in the *Galatians* that was disfigured and corrupted by the false Apostles; which is, that they should think, and will as God doth, whose Thought and Will is, that we should obtain Remission of our Sins, and everlasting Life by Jesus Christ his only Son, whom he sent into the world, to the End he might be the Propitiation of our Sins, and that we should know that thro' this his Son he is appeased and become our Father. They that believe this are like unto God, that is to say, all their Thoughts are of God, as the Affection of their Heart is; they have the same Form in their Mind which is in God or in Christ.

This is to be renewed in the Spirit of our Mind, and to *put on the new Man, which after God is created in Righteousness and true Holiness*, as Paul saith, *Eph. iv. 24.*

He saith then, that he travelleth again of the *Galatians* in Birth, and yet so notwithstanding, that the Form of the Children should not be the Form of the Apostle; so that the Children should not resemble the Form of Paul, or of *Cephas*, &c. but of another Father, that is to say, of Christ. I will fashion him (saith he) in you, that the same Mind may be in you, which was in Christ himself, *Phil. ii. 5.* To be brief; *I travel of you*; that is to say, I labour carefully to call you back to your former Faith, the which ye have lost, (being deceived by the Craft and Subtily of the false Apostles) and are returned to the Law and Works. Therefore I must now again carefully travel to bring you back, from the Law to the Faith of Christ. This he calleth to travel in Birth, &c.

*Verse 20. I desire to be present with you now, and to change my Voice, &c.*

These are the true Cares of an Apostle. It is a common Saying, that a Letter is a dead Messenger; for it can give no more then it hath. And no Epistle or Letter is written so exactly, wherein there is not somewhat lacking. For the Circumstances are divers, there is a Diversity of Times, Places, Persons, Manners and Affections; all which no Epistle can expresse. Therefore it moveth the Reader diversly, making him now sad, now merry, as he himself is disposed. But if any Thing be spoken sharply or out of Time, the lively Voice of a Man may expound, mitigate, or correct the same. Therefore the Apostle wisheth that he were with them, to the End he might temper and change his Voice, as he should see it needful by the Qualities of their Affections. As if he should see any of them very much troubled, he might so temper his Words, that they should not be oppressed thereby with more Heaviness. Contrariwise, if he should see others high-minded, he might sharply reprehend them, lest they should be too secure and careless, and so at length become Contemners of God.

Wherefore he could not devise how he being absent, should deal with them by Letters. As if he should say; If my Epistle be too sharp, I fear I shall more offend then amend some of you. Again, if it be too gentle, it will not profit those which are perverse and obstinate; for dead Letters and Words give no more then they have. Contrariwise, the lively Voice of a Man, compared to an Epistle, is a Queen: For it can add and diminish; it can change itself into all Manner of Affections, Times, Places and Persons. To be brief, I would gladly convert you by Letters, that is to say, call you back from the Law to the Faith of Jesus Christ; but I fear that I shall not so do by my dead Letters. But if I were with you, I could change my Voice, I could reprove them.

them bitterly that are obstinate, and comfort the Weak with sweet and loving Words, as Occasion should require.

*Verse 20. For I stand in doubt of you.*

That is to say; I am so troubled in my Spirit, that I know not how by Letters to behave myself towards you. Here is a lively Description of the true Affection of an Apostle: He omitteth nothing; he chideth the *Galatians*; he intreateth them; he speaketh them fair; he highly commendeth their Faith, labouring by all Means to bring them back again to the Truth of the Gospel, and to deliver them out of the Snares of the false Apostles. These are vehement Words, proceeding from an Heart stirred up and enflamed with a hot burning Zeal, and therefore ought diligently to be considered.

*Verse 21. Tell me, ye that desire to be under the Law, Do ye not hear the Law?*

Here would *Paul* have closed up his Epistle, for he desired not to write any more, but rather to be present with the *Galatians*, and to speak unto them himself. But he being in great Perplexity and very careful for this Matter, taketh by the Way this Allegory, which then came into his Mind. For the People are greatly delighted with Allegories and Similitudes, and therefore Christ himself oftentimes useth them. For they are as it were certain Pictures which set forth Things as if they were painted before the Eyes of the simple, and therefore they move and perswade very much, especially the simple and ignorant. *First*, Therefore he stirreth up the *Galatians* with Words and Writings. *Secondly*, He painteth out the Matter itself before their Eyes with this goodly Allegory.

The Use of  
Allegories  
and Simili-  
tudes.

Now, *Paul* was a marvellous cunning Workman in handling of Allegories; for he is wont to apply them to the Doctrine of Faith, to Grace, and to Christ, and not to the Law and the Works thereof, as *Origen* and *Hierome* do, who are worthily reprehended for that they turned the plain Sentences of the Scripture where Allegories have no Place, into unfit and foolish Allegories. Therefore to use Allegories, it is oftentimes a very dangerous Thing. For unless a Man have the perfect Knowledge of Christian Doctrine, he cannot use Allegories rightly and as he should do.

How *Paul*  
handieth Al-  
legories.

**OBJECT.** But why doth *Paul* call the Book of *Genesis*, out of the which he alledgeth the History of *Ishmael* and *Isaac*, the Law, seeing that Book containeth nothing at all concerning the Law; and specially that Place which he alledgeth, speaketh not of any Law; but only containeth a plain History of *Abraham's* two Children? **ANSW.** *Paul* is wont to call the first Book of *Moses* the Law, after the Manner of the *Jews*, which altho' it contain no Law besides the Law of Circumcision,

but principally teacheth Faith, and witnesseth that the Patriarchs pleased God because of their Faith; yet the *Jews* notwithstanding, because of the Law of Circumcision therein contained, called the Book of *Genesis*, with the rest of the Books of *Moses*, the Law. So did *Paul* himself also being a *Jew*. And Christ under the Name of the Law, comprehendeth not only the Books of *Moses*, but also the *Psalms*, *John* xv. 25. But this cometh to pass, that the Word might be fulfilled that is written in their Law, *They hated me without a Cause*, *Psal.* xxxv. 19.

**Verses 22, 23.** For it is written, that *Abraham* had two Sons; the one by a Bond-maid, the other by a Free-woman. But he who was of the Bond-woman, was born after the Flesh: But he of the Free-woman was by Promise.

As if he said; Ye forsake Grace, Faith and Christ, and turn back again to the Law, ye will be under the Law, and become wise thro' it. Therefore I will talk with you of the Law. I pray you consider the Law diligently. Ye shall find that *Abraham* had two Sons, *Ishmael* by *Agar*, and *Isaac* by *Sarah*. They were both the true Sons of *Abraham*. *Ishmael* was as well the true Son of *Abraham* as *Isaac* was, for both came of one Father, of one Flesh, and of one Seed. What was then the Difference? This maketh not the Difference (saith *Paul*)

*Ishmael* was a Son after the Flesh, and *Isaac* after the Promise.

that the Mother of the one was free, and the other bond, (albeit it pertaineth to the Allegory;) but that *Ishmael* which was born of the Bond-woman, was born after the Flesh, that is to say, without the Promise and the Word of God. But *Isaac* was not only born of the Free-woman, but also according to the Promise. OBJECT. What then? Yet was *Isaac* notwithstanding as well born of the Seed of *Abraham* as *Ishmael* was. ANSW. I grant that

they were both the Children of one Father, and yet notwithstanding there is a Difference. For altho' *Isaac* was born of the Flesh, yet the Promise went before. None observed this Difference but only *Paul*, which he gathered out of the Text of *Genesis* after this Manner.

Whereas *Agar* conceived and brought forth *Ishmael*, there was no Word of God that foreshewed that this should come to pass; but by the Permission of *Sarah*, *Abraham* went in to his Servant *Agar*, whom *Sarah*, being barren, had given to Wife unto *Abraham*, as

*Sarah* had heard the Promise of God as concerning the Seed, but she waiteth

it is said in the Book of *Genesis*. For *Sarah* had heard that *Abraham* by the Promise of God, should have Seed of his Body, and she hoped that she should be the Mother of this Seed. But when she had waited now for the Promise many Years with great Anguish of Spirit, and saw that the Matter was so long deferred, she was out of Hope.

not for God's appointed Time.

This

This holy Woman therefore giveth Place for the Honour of her Husband, and resigneth her Right to another, that is to say, to her Maid. Notwithstanding she suffereth not her Husband to marry another Wife out of his House, but she giveth unto him in Marriage her Servant, to the End she might be builded by her : For so saith the History, *Gen. xvi. 1, 2. Now Sarai Abraham's Wife bare him no Children : And she had in Hand-maid an Egyptian, whose Name was Hagar. And Sarai said unto Abraham, Behold now, the Lord hath restrained me from bearing : I pray thee go in unto my Maid ; it may be that I may obtain Children by her.* This was a great Humility of *Sarai*, who so abased herself, and took in good Part this Tentation and Trial of her Faith. For thus she thought, God is no Liar ; that which he hath promised to my Husband he will surely perform. But peradventure God will not that I shall be the Mother of that Seed. It shall not grieve me that *Agar* should have this Honour, unto whom let my Lord enter, for I may peradventure be builded by her.

*Ishmael* therefore is born without the Word at the only Request of *Sarah*. For there is no Word of God which commanded *Abraham* thus to do, or promised unto him a son, but all this is done at adventure. Which also the Words of *Sarah* do declare ; *It may be (said she) that I shall be builded by her.* Seeing therefore there was no Word of God spoken to *Abraham* before, as there was when *Sarah* should bring forth *Isaac*, but only the Word of *Sarah* ; it is evident enough that *Ishmael* was the Son of *Abraham* after the Flesh only without the Word of God ; therefore he was born at adventure, and unlooked for as another Child is. This *Paul* observed and diligently considered.

In the 9th Chapter to the *Romans*, he prosecuteth the same Argument which here he repeateth and setteth forth in an Allegory, and concludeth strongly, that all the Sons of *Abraham* are not the Sons of God, *Abraham* (saith he) hath two Sorts of Children. Some are born of his Flesh and Blood, but the Word and Promise of God goeth before, as *Isaac*. Other are born without the Promise as *Ishmael*.

Therefore not the Children of the Flesh (saith he) but the Children of the Promise, are the Children of God, &c. And by this Argument he mightily stoppeth the Mouths of the proud *Jews*, which gloried that they were the Seed and Children of *Abraham* ; As also Christ saith in *Matth. iii. 9*, and in the 8th of *John*, as if he said ; It followeth not, I am the carnal Seed of *Abraham*, therefore I am the Child of God. *Esau* is the natural Son, therefore the Heir. Nay rather (saith he) they that will be the Children of *Abraham*, besides their carnal Birth, must be also the Sons of the Promise, and must believe. And they are the true Children of *Abraham*, and consequently of God, who have the Promise and believe.

*Ishmael* was the Son of *Abraham* according to the Flesh.

\*That is said to be done at adventure or by Chance, whereof Man knoweth not the Cause ; altho' unto God it be fore-known and appointed.

Who be the true Sons of *Abraham*.

But *Ishmael*, because he was not promised of God to *Abraham*, is a Son after the Flesh only, and not after the Promise, and therefore he was born at adventure, as other Children be. For no Mother knoweth whether she shall have a Child or no, or if she perceive herself to be with Child, yet she cannot tell whether it shall be a Son or a Daughter. But *Isaac* was expressly named, *Gen. xvii. 19. Sarah thy Wife* (saith the Angel to *Abraham*) *shall bear thee a Son indeed, and thou shalt call his Name Isaac*. Here the Son and the Mother are expressly named. Thus, for this Humility of *Sarai*, because she gave up her Right and suffered the Contempt of *Hagar*, *Gen. xvi. 3*. God requited her with this Honour, that she should be the Mother of the promised Son, &c.

### Verse 24. Which Things are an Allegory ;

An Allegory is that where-  
by one  
Thing is  
spoken, and  
another  
Thing  
meant.

Allegories do not strongly perswade in Divinity, but as certain Pictures they beautify and set out the Matter. For if *Paul* had not proved the Righteousness of Faith against the Righteousness of Works by strong and pithy Arguments, he should have little prevailed by this Allegory. But because he had fortified his Cause before with invincible Arguments taken of Experience, of the Example of *Abraham*, the Testimonies of the Scriptures and Similitudes ; now in the End of his Disputation he addeth an Allegory, to give a Beauty to all the rest. For it is a seemly Thing sometimes to add an Allegory when the Foundation is well laid, and the Matter thoroughly proved. For as Painting is an Ornament to set forth and garnish an House already builded ; so is an Allegory the Light of a Matter which is already otherwise proved and confirmed.

Verses 24, 25. *For these are the two Covenants ; the one from the Mount Sinai, which gendreth to Bondage, which is Agar. For this Agar is Mount Sinai in Arabia,*

*Abraham* is a Figure of God, which hath two Sons, that is to say, two Sorts of People are represented by *Ishmael* and *Isaac*. These two are born unto him by *Agar* and *Sarah*, the which signifieth the two Testaments, the Old and the New. The Old is of Mount Sinai, begetting unto Bondage, which is *Agar*. For the *Arabians* in their Language call *Agar* the same Mountain which the *Jews* call *Sinai* (which seemeth to have that Name of Brambles and Thorns) which also *Ptolomeus* and the Greek Commentaries do witness. After the same Manner divers Names are given to many Mountains, according to the Diversity of Nations. So the Mount which *Moses* calleth *Hermon* of the *Sidonians* is called *Sirion*, and of the *Amorites* *Senir*.

Now, this serveth very well to the Purpose, that Mount *Sinai* in the *Arabians* Language signifieth as much as an Hand-maid ; and I think the

Likeness

Likeness of this Name gave *Paul* Light and Occasion to seek out this Allegory. Likewise then as *Agar* the Bond-maid brought forth to *Abraham* a Son, and yet not an Heir but a Servant ; so *Sinai* the allegorical *Agar*, brought forth to God a Son, that is to say, a carnal People. Again, as *Ishmael* was the true Son of *Abraham*, so the People of *Israel* had the true God to be their Father, which gave them his Law, his Oracles, Religion and true Service, and the Temple ; as it is said in *Psal.* cxlvii. 19. *He sheweth his Word unto Jacob, his Statutes and his Judgments unto Israel.* Notwithstanding this only was the Difference ; *Ishmael* was born of a Bond-maid after the Flesh, that is to say, without the Promise, and could not therefore be the Heir. So the mystical *Agar*, that is to say, Mount *Sinai*, where the Law was given and the Old Testament ordained, brought forth to God the People great *Abraham's* People, but without the Promise, that is to say, a carnal and a servile People, and not the Heir of God. For the Promises as touching Christ the Giver of all Blessings, and as touching the Deliverance from the Curse of the Law, from Sin and Death, also as touching the free Remission of Sins, of Righteousness and everlasting Life, are not added to the Law, but the Law saith ; *He that shall do these Things shall live in them,* *Levit.* xviii. 5. *Rom.* x. 5.

Therefore the Promises of the Law are conditional, promising Life, not freely, but to such as fulfil the Law, and therefore they leave Mens Consciences in doubt ; for no Man fulfilleth the Law. But the Promises of the New Testament have no such Condition joined unto them, nor require any Thing of us, nor depend upon any Condition of our Worthiness, but bring and give unto us freely Forgiveness of Sins, Grace, Righteousness and Life everlasting for Christ's Sake, as I have said more largely in another Place.

Therefore the Law or the Old Testament containeth only conditional Promises ; for it hath always such Conditions as these are, joined to ; *If ye hearken to my Voice ; if ye keep my Statutes ; if ye walk in my Ways, ye shall be my People, &c.* The Jews not considering this, laid hold of these conditional Promises as if they had been absolute and without all Condition ; which they supposed that God could never revoke, but must needs keep them. Hereupon, when they heard the Prophets preslew the Destruction of the City of *Jerusalem*, of the Temple, of the Kingdom and Priesthood, (which could well discern betwixt the corporal Promises of the Law, and the spiritual Promises concerning Christ and his Kingdom ; ) they persecuted and killed them as *Heretics* and *Blasphemers* of God : For they saw not this Condition that was annexed ; *If you keep my Commandments, it shall go well with you, &c.*

Therefore *Agar* the Bond-maid bringeth forth but a Bond-servant. *Ishmael* then is not the Heir, altho' he be the natural Son of *Abraham*, but remaineth a Bond-servant. What is here lacking ? The Promise and the Blessing of the Word. So then the Law given in Mount *Sinai*, which the *Arabians* call *Agar*, begetteth none but Servants. For the

Promise made as concerning Christ, was not annexed to the Law. Wherefore, (O ye *Galatians*) if ye, forsaking the Promise and Faith, fall back to the Law and Works, ye shall always continue Servants; that is, ye shall never be delivered from Sin and Death, but ye shall always abide under the Curse of the Law. For *Agar* gendreth not the Seed of the Promise and Heirs, that is to say, the Law justifieth not, it bringeth not the Adoption and Inheritance, but rather it hindreth the Inheritance, and worketh Wrath.

Verse 25. *And answereth to Jerusalem which now is, and is in Bondage with her Children.*

This is a wonderful Allegory. As *Paul* a little before made *Agar* of *Sinai*, so now of *Jerusalem* he would gladly make *Sarah*; but he da-  
reth not, neither can he so do; but is compelled to join *Jerusalem* with Mount *Sinai*. For he saith; the same belongeth to *Agar*, seeing Mount *Agar* reacheth even to *Jerusalem*. And it is true that there be continual Mountains, reaching from *Arabia-petrea*, unto *Kadesh-barnea*, of *Jurie*. He saith then that this *Jerusalem* which now is, that is to

The earthly  
*Jerusalem*  
pertaineth  
to *Agar*.

say, this earthly and temporal *Jerusalem* is not *Sarah*, but pertaineth to *Agar*, for there *Agar* reigneth. For in it is the Law begetting unto Bondage; in it is the Worship and Ceremonies, the Temple, the Kingdom, the Priesthood; and whatsoever was ordained in *Sinai*, by the Mo-  
ther which is the Law, the same is done in *Jerusalem*.

Therefore I join her with *Sinai*, and I comprehend both in one Word, to wit, *Sinai* or *Agar*.

I durst not have been so bold to handle this Allegory after this Man-  
ner, but would rather have called *Jerusalem Sarah* or the New Testa-  
ment, especially seeing the Preaching of the Gospel began in it, the Holy Ghost was there given, and the People of the New Testament were there born; and I would have thought that I had found out a very fit Alle-  
gory. Wherefore it is not for every Man to use Allegories at his Pleasure; for a goodly outward Shew may soon deceive a Man and cause him to err. Who would not think it a very fit Thing to call *Sinai Agar*, and *Jerusalem Sarah*? Indeed *Paul* maketh *Jerusalem Sarah*, but not this corporal *Jerusalem*, which he simply joineth unto *Agar*; but that spiri-  
tual and heavenly *Jerusalem* in which the Law reigneth not, nor the car-  
nal People, as in that *Jerusalem* which is in Bondage with her Children, but wherein the Promise reigneth, wherein is also a spiritual and a free  
People.

And to the End that the Law should be quite abolished, and that whole Kingdom which was established in *Agar*, the earthly *Jerusalem* was horribly destroyed, with all her Ornaments, the Temple, the Ce-  
remonies, &c. Now, altho' the New Testament began in it, and so was spread throughout the whole World, yet notwithstanding it appertaineth to *Agar*; that is to say, it is the City of the Law, of the Ceremonies  
and

and of the Priesthood instituted by *Moses*. Briefly, it is gendred of *Agar* the Bond-woman, and therefore is in Bondage with her Children, that is to say, it walketh in the Works of the Law, and never attaineth to the Liberty of the Spirit; but abideth continually under the Law, Sin, an evil Conscience, the Wrath and Judgment of God, and under the Guilt of Death and Hell. Indeed it hath the Liberty of the Flesh, it hath a corporal Kingdom; it hath Magistrates, Riches and Possessions, and such like Things; but we speak of the Liberty of the Spirit, whereby we are dead to the Law, to Sin and Death, and we leave and reign in Grace, Forgiveness of Sins, Righteousness and everlasting Life. This cannot the earthly *Jerusalem* perform, and therefore it abideth with *Agar*.

Verse 26. *But Jerusalem which is above, is free, which is the Mother of us all.*

That earthly *Jerusalem* (saith he) which is beneath, having the Policy and Ordinances of the Law, is *Agar*, and is in Bondage with her Children; that is to say, she is not delivered from the Law, Sin and Death. But *Jerusalem* which is above, that is to say, the spiritual *Jerusalem*, is *Sarah* (albeit *Paul* addeth not the proper Name of *Sarah*, but giveth her another Name, calling her the Free-woman) that is to say, that true Lady and Free-woman, which is the Mother of us all, gendring us unto Liberty, and not unto Bondage as *Agar* doth. Now, this heavenly *Jerusalem*, which is above, is the Church, that is to say, the Faithful dispersed throughout the whole World, which have one and the same Gospel, one and the same Faith in Christ, the same Holy Ghost, and the same Sacraments.

Therefore understand not this Word [*Above*] of the triumphant Church (as the School-men call it) in Heaven; but of the militant Church in Earth. For the Godly are said to have their Conversation in Heaven, *Phil. iii. 20. Our Conversation is in Heaven*, not locally; but in that a Christian believeth, in that he layeth hold of those inestimable, those heavenly and eternal Gifts, he is in Heaven, *Ephes. i. 3. Who hath blessed us with all spiritual Blessings in heavenly Places in Christ*.

We must therefore distinguish the heavenly and spiritual Blessing, from the earthly. For the earthly Blessing is to have a good civil Government both in common Weals and Families; to have Children, Peace, Riches, Fruits of the Earth, and other corporal Commodities. But the heavenly Blessing is to be delivered from the Law, Sin and Death, to be justified and quickned to Life; to have Peace with God; to have a faithful Heart, a joyful Conscience, and a spiritual Consolation; to have the Knowledge of Jesus Christ; to have the Gift of Prophecy and the Revelation of the Scriptures; to have the Gifts of the Holy Ghost, and to rejoice in God. These are the heavenly Blessings which Christ giveth to his Church.

The earthly  
and heaven-  
ly Blessings,  
what they  
are.

Where-

Wherefore *Jerusalem* which is above, that is to say, the heavenly *Jerusalem*, is the Church which is now in the World, and not the City of the Life to come, or the Church triumphant; as the idle and unlearned *Monks* and School-doctors dreamed, which taught that the Scripture hath four Senses; the literal Sense, the figurative Sense, the allegorical Sense, and the moral Sense; and according to these Senses they have foolishly interpreted almost all the Words of the Scriptures: As this Word *Jerusalem* literally signified that City which was so named; figuratively a pure Conscience; allegorically the Church militant; morally the celestial City or the Church triumphant. With these trifling and foolish Fables they rent the Scriptures into so many and divers Senses, that silly poor Consciences could receive no certain Doctrine of any Thing. But *Paul* saith here, that the old and earthly *Jerusalem* belongeth unto *Agar*, and that it is in Bondage with her Children, and is utterly abolished. But the new and heavenly *Jerusalem*, which is a Queen and a free Woman, is appointed of God in Earth and not in Heaven, to be the Mother of us all, of whom we have been gendred, and yet daily are gendred. Therefore it is necessary that this our Mother should be in Earth among Men, as also her Generation is. Notwithstanding she gendreth by the Holy Ghost, by the Ministry of the Word and Sacraments, and not in the Flesh.

By the heavenly *Jerusalem*, he meaneth the spiritual *Jerusalem*, which he setteth against the earthly *Jerusalem*. The spiritual *Jerusalem* dispersed throughout the whole World.

This I say to the End that in this Matter we should not be carried away with our Cogitations into Heaven, but that we should know that *Paul* setteth the *Jerusalem* which is above, against the earthly *Jerusalem*, not locally, but spiritually. For there is a Distinction between those Things which are spiritual, and those which are corporal or earthly. The spiritual Things are above, the earthly are beneath: So *Jerusalem* which is above, is distinguished from the carnal and temporal *Jerusalem* which is beneath, not locally (as I have said) but spiritually. For this spiritual *Jerusalem* which took her Beginning in the corporal *Jerusalem*, hath not any certain Place as hath the other in *Judea*; but it is dispersed throughout the whole World, and may be in *Babylon*, in *Turky*, in *Tartary*, in *Scythia*, in *Judea*, in *Italy*, in *Germany*, in the Isles of the Sea, in the Mountains and Valleys, and in all Places of the World where Men dwell which have the Gospel, and believe in Jesus Christ.

Wherefore *Sarah* or *Jerusalem* our free Mother, is the Church itself, the Spouse of Christ, of whom we all are gendred. This Mother gendreth free Children without ceasing to the End of the World, as long as she exerciseth the Ministry of the Word, that is to say, as long as she preacheth and publieth the Gospel; for this is truly to gender.

Now,

Now, she teacheth the Gospel after this Manner ; *to wit,* The Church  
 that we are delivered from the Curse of the Law, from begetteth  
 Sin, Death, and all other Evils by Jesus Christ, and not Children by  
 by the Law, neither by Works. Therefore *Jerusalem* teaching  
 which is above, that is to say, the Church, is not subject  
 to the Law and Works, but she is free, and a Mother without the Law,  
 Sin and Death. Now such a Mother as she is, such Children she  
 gendreth.

This Allegory teacheth very aptly that the Church *Isaac* is Heir  
 should do nothing else but teach and preach the Gospel thro' the Pro-  
 mife, *Gen.*  
 Children. So, we are all Fathers and Children one to another ; for we are begotten one of another. I being be-  
 gotten by other thro' the Gospel, do now beget other, which shall also  
 beget other hereafter, and so this begetting shall endure to the End of  
 the World. Now, I speak of the Generation, not of *Agar* the Bond-  
 maid, which gendreth her Bond-servants by the Law ; but of *Sarah*  
 the Free-woman, who gendreth Heirs without the Law, and without  
 Man's Works or Endeavours. For in that *Isaac* is Heir and not *Is-  
 mael* (albeit notwithstanding that both of them were the natural Sons of  
*Abraham*) *Isaac* had the Inheritance by the Word of Promise, namely,  
*Sarah thy Wife shall bear thee a Son, and thou shalt call his Name Isaac.*  
 This did *Sarah* well understand, and therefore she saith ; *Cast out the*  
*Bond-woman and her Son :* And *Paul* also alledgeth these Words after-  
 wards. Wherefore as *Isaac* hath the Inheritance of his Father only by  
 the Promise and by his Birth, without the Law and without Works :  
 Even so we are born thro' the Gospel of that Free-woman *Sarah*, that  
 is to say, the Church, true Heirs of the Promise. She instructeth us,  
 nourisheth us, and carrieth us in her Womb, in her Lap, and in her  
 Arms ; she formeth and fashioneth us to the Image of Christ, until we  
 grow up to a perfect Man, &c. *Eph.* iv. 13. So all Things are done by the  
 Ministry of the Word. Wherefore the Office of the Free-woman is to  
 gender Children to God her Husband, without ceasing and without End ;  
 that is to say, such Children as know that they are justified by Faith,  
 and not by the Law.

Verse 27. *For it is written, Rejoice, thou barren that  
 bearest not ; break forth and cry, thou that  
 travailest not For the desolate hath many* *Isa.* liv. 1.  
*more Children than she which hath an  
 Husband.*

*Paul* alledgeth this Place out of *Isaiah* the Prophet, *Chap.* liv. 1.  
 which is altogether allegorical. It is written (saith he) that the Mother  
 of many Children, and she which hath an Husband, must be sick and  
 die ; and contrariwise, that the barren and she which hath no Children,  
 must

must have Abundance of Children. After the same Manner *Hannah* singeth in her Song, out of the which *Isaiah* the Prophet took his Prophecy, 1 Sam. ii. 4. *The Bows of the mighty Men are broken, and they that stumbled, are girt with Strength.*

The Song  
of *Hannah*.

Ver. 5. *They that were full, have hired out themselves for Bread, and they that were hungry ceased: So that the barren hath born seven, and she that hath many Children, is waxed feeble.* A-marvellous Matter (saith he) She that was fruitful shall be made barren, and she that was barren fruitful. Moreover, such as before were strong, full, rich, glorious, righteous, and blessed, shall become feeble, hungry, poor, ignominious, Sinners, subject to Death and Damnation: And contrariwise the feeble and hungry, &c. shall be strong and satisfied, &c.

The Apostle sheweth by this Allegory of the Prophet *Isaiah*, the Difference which is between *Agar* and *Sarah*, that is to say, between the Synagogue and the Church, or between the Law and the Gospel. The Law being the Husband of the fruitful Woman, that is to say, of the

Synagogue, begetteth very many Children. For Men of all Ages, not only Idiots, but also the wisest and best (that is to say, all Mankind, except the Children of the Free-woman) do neither see nor know any other Righteousness then the Righteousness of the Law; much less do they know any which is more excellent: Wherefore they think themselves righteous if they follow the Law and outwardly perform the Works thereof.

These, altho' they be fruitful, have many Disciples, and shine in the Righteousness and glorious Works of the Law, yet notwithstanding are not free, but Bond-servants: For they are the Children of *Agar*, which gendreth to Bondage. Now, if they be Servants, they cannot be Partakers of the Inheritance, but shall be cast out of the House; for Servants remain not in the House for ever, *John* viii. 35. Yea, they are already cast out of the Kingdom of Grace and Liberty; *For he that believeth not, is condemned already*, *John* iii. 18. They remain therefore under the Malediction of the Law, under Sin and Death, under the Power of the Devil, and under the Wrath and Judgment of God.

Now, if the moral Law itself or the Ten Commandments of God, can do nothing else but gender Servants, that is to say, cannot justify, but only terrify, accuse, condemn, and drive Mens Consciences to Desperation; How then (I pray you) shall the Laws of Men, or the Laws of the Pope justify, which are the Doctrines of Devils? They therefore that teach and set forth either the Traditions of Men, or the Law of God as necessary to obtain Righteousness before God, do nothing else but gender Bond-servants. Notwithstanding such Teachers are counted the best Men, they obtain the Favour of the World, and are most fruitful Mothers, for they have an infinite Number of Disciples: For Man's Reason understandeth not what Faith and true Godliness is, and therefore it neglecteth and despiseth it, and is naturally addicted to Superstition and Hypocrisy, that is to say, to the Righteousness of Works. Now, because this Righteousness shineth and flourisheth every where; there-

Therefore it is a mighty Emptress of the whole World. They therefore which teach the Righteousness of Works by the Law, beget many Children which outwardly seem to be free, and have a glorious Shew of excellent Vertues, but in Conscience they are Servants and Bond-slaves of Sin; therefore they are to be cast out of the House and condemned.

Contrariwise, *Sarah* the Free woman, that is to say, the true Church seemeth to be barren. For the Gospel which is the Word of the Cross and Affliction, which the Church preacheth, shineth not so brightly as the Doctrine of the Law and Works, and therefore she hath not so many Disciples to cleave unto her. Moreover, she beareth this Title, that she forbiddeth good Works, maketh Men secure, idle and negligent, riseth up Heresies and Seditions, and is the Cause of all Mischief; and therefore she seemeth to bring no Success or Prosperity, but all Things seem to be full of Barrenness, Desolation, and Desperation. Therefore the Wicked are certainly perswaded that the Church with her Doctrine cannot long endure. The *Jews* assured themselves, that the Church which was planted by the Apostles, should shortly be overthrown; the which by an odious Name they called a Sect. For thus they speak to *Paul* in *Acts* xxviii. 22. *As concerning this Sect, we know that every where it is spoken against.* In like Manner, How often (I pray you) have our Adversaries been deceived, which some whiles appointed one time, and somewhiles another, when we should be certainly destroyed? Christ and his Apostles were oppressed; but after their Death the Doctrine of the Gospel was further spread abroad then it was during their life. In like Manner our Adversaries may oppress us at this Day, but the Word of God shall abide for ever. How much soever then the Church seemeth to be barren and forsaken, weak and despised, and outwardly to suffer Persecution; and moreover be compelled to hear this reproach, that her Doctrine is heretical and seditious, notwithstanding she alone is fruitful before God; she begetteth by the Ministry of the Word an infinite Number of Children, Heirs of Righteousness and everlasting Life; and tho' outwardly they suffer Persecution, yet in Spirit they are most free; who not only are Judges over all Doctrines and Works, but also are most victorious Conquerors against the Gates of Hell.

The Prophet therefore confesseth, that the Church is in Heaviness; for else he would not exhort her to rejoice. He granteth that she is barren before the World; for else he would not call her barren and forsaken having no Children; but before God, saith he, she is fruitful, and therefore he biddeth her to rejoice. As tho' he would say; Thou art indeed forsaken and barren, and hast not the Law for thy Husband, and therefore thou hast no Children. But rejoice; for altho' thou hast not the Law for thy Husband, but art forsaken as a Virgin that is ready to marry (for he will not call her a Widow) which should have an Husband, if she were not forsaken of him, or if he were not slain, thou (I say) which art solitary and forsaken of thy Husband the Law, and not subject to the Marriage of the Law, shalt be a Mother of innumerable Children. Wherefore the People or the Church of the New Testament

is altogether without the Law as touching the Conscience, and therefore she seemeth to be forsaken in the Sight of the World. But altho' she seem to be never so barren without the Law and without Works, yet notwithstanding she is most fruitful before God, and bringeth forth an infinite Number of Children, not in Bondage but in Freedom. By what Means? Not by the Law, but by the Word and Spirit of Christ which is given by the Gospel, thro' the which she conceiveth, bringeth forth, and nourisheth her Children.

*Paul* therefore plainly sheweth by this Allegory the Difference between the Law and the Gospel. First, When he calleth *Agar* the Old Testament, and *Sarah* the New. Again, When he calleth the one a Bond-maid, the other a Free-woman. Moreover, when he saith that the married and fruitful is become barren, and cast out of the House with her Children. Contrariwise, when the barren and forsaken is become fruitful, and bringeth forth an infinite Number of Children, and those also Inheritors. By these Differences are resembled the two Sorts of People, of Faith and of the Law I mean. The People of Faith have not the Law for their Husband, they serve not in Bondage, they are not born of that Mother *Jerusalem* which now is; but they have the Promise, they are free, and are born of free *Sarah*.

He separateth therefore the spiritual People of the New Testament from the other People of the Law, when he saith, that the spiritual People are not the Children of *Agar* the Bond-maid, but of *Sarah* the Free-woman, which knoweth nothing of the Law. And by this Means he placeth the People of Faith, far above and without the Law. Now, if they be above and without the Law, then are they justified by the spiritual Birth only, which is nothing else but Faith, and not by the Law, or by the Works thereof. Now, as the People of Grace, neither have nor can have the Law; so the People of the Law neither have nor can have Grace; for it is impossible that the Law and Grace should stand together. Therefore we must be justified by Faith, and lose the Righteousness of the Law; or else be justified by the Law, and lose the Righteousness of Faith. But this is a foul and a lamentable Loss to lose Grace, and to return to the Law. Contrariwise, it is an happy and blessed Loss to lose the Law, and lay hold of Grace.

We therefore (following the Example and Diligence of *Paul*) do endeavour as much as is possible to set forth plainly the Difference between the Law and the Gospel; which is very easy as touching the Words. For who seeth not that *Agar* is not *Sarah*, and that *Sarah* is not *Agar*? Also, that *Ishmael* is not *Isaac*, and that he hath not that which *Isaac* hath; a Man may easily discern these Things. But in great Terrors and in the Agony of Death, when the Conscience wrestleth with the Judgment of God, it is the hardest Thing of all others to say with a sure and stedfast Hope; I am not the Son of *Agar*, but of *Sarah*, that is to say, the Law belongeth nothing unto me: For *Sarah* is my Mother, who bringeth forth free Children and Heirs, and not Servants.

*Paul* then by this Testimony of *Isaiah* hath proved that *Sarah*, that is to say, the Church, is the true Mother which bringeth forth free Children.

ren and Heirs. Contrariwise, that *Agar*, that is to say, the Synagogue endureth many Children indeed, but they are Servants and must be cast out. Moreover, because this Place speaketh also of the abolishing of the Law and of Christian Liberty, it ought to be diligently considered. For as it is the most principal and special Article of Christian Doctrine, to know that we are justified and saved by Christ, so is it also very necessary to know and understand well the Doctrine concerning the Abolishment of the Law. For it helpeth very much to confirm our Doctrine as touching Faith, and to attain sound and certain Consolation of Conscience, when we are assured that the Law is abolished, and specially in great Terrors and serious Conflicts.

I have often said before, and now I say again (for it cannot be too often repeated) that a Christian laying hold of the Benefit of Christ thro' Faith, hath no Law, but all the Law is to him abolished with all his Terrors and Torments. This Place of *Isaiah* teacheth the same Thing, and therefore it is very notable and full of Comfort, stirring up the barren and forsaken to rejoice, which was counted worthy to be mocked or stoned according to the Law. For such as were barren, were accursed according to the Law. But the Holy Ghost turneth this Sentence, and pronounceth the barren worthy of Praise and Blessing; and contrariwise, the fruitful and such as bring forth Children, accursed, when he saith; *Sing, O barren, thou that didst not bear; break forth into Singing, and cry aloud, thou that didst not travail with Child: For more are the Children of the desolate, than the Children of the married Wife*, Isa. liv. 1. Howsoever then *Sarah*, that is to say, the Church seemeth to be forsaken and barren before the World, not having the Righteousness and Works of the Law; yet notwithstanding she is a most fruitful Mother, having an infinite Number of Children before God, as the Prophet witnesseth. Contrariwise, altho' *Agar* seem never so fruitful and to bring forth never so many Children, yet notwithstanding she hath no Issue remaining; for the Children of the Bond-woman are cast out of the House together with their Mother, and receive not the Inheritance with the Children of the Free-woman, as *Paul* saith afterwards.

Because therefore we are the Children of the Free-woman, the Law our old Husband is abolished, *Rom. vii.* Who as long as he had Dominion over us, it was impossible for us to bring forth Children free of a Spirit, or knowing Grace; but we remained with the other in Bondage. True it is, that as long as the Law reigneth, Men are not idle, but they labour sore, they bear the burden and the Heat of the Day, *Matth. xx. 12.* they bring forth and gender many Children; but as well the fathers as the Children are Bastards, and do not belong to the Free-mother. Therefore they are at the length cast out of the House and Inheritance with *Ishmael*; they die and are damned. It is impossible therefore that Men should attain to the Inheritance, that is to say, that they should be justified and saved by the Law, altho' they travail never so much, and be never so fruitful therein. Accursed therefore be that Doctrine, Life and Religion, which endeavoureth to get Right-

The People  
of the Law  
laborious  
and painful.

Righteousness before God by the Law or the Works thereof. But let us prosecute our Purpose as touching the Abolishment of the Law.

The School-doctors speaking of the Abolishment of the Law, say, that the judicial and the ceremonial Laws are pernicious and deadly since the coming of Christ, and therefore they are abolished; but not the moral Law. These blind Doctors knew not what they said. But if thou wilt speak of the Abolishment of the Law, talk of it as it is in his own proper Use and Office, and as it is spiritually taken; and comprehend withal the whole Law, making no Distinction at all between the judicial, ceremonial and moral Law. For when *Paul* saith, that we are delivered from the Curse of the Law by Christ, he speaketh of the whole Law, and principally of the moral Law, which only accuseth, curseth and condemneth the Conscience, which the other two do not. Wherefore we say that the moral Law or the Law of the Ten Commandments hath no Power to accuse and terrify the Conscience, in which Jesus Christ reigneth by his Grace; for he hath abolished the Power thereof.

The godly Man feeleth the Terrors of the Law, but by Faith in Christ he is raised up and comforted again.

Not that the Conscience doth not at all feel the Terrors of the Law. (For indeed it feeleth them) but that they cannot condemn it, nor bring it to Desperation. For *there is now no Condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus*, Rom. viii. 1. Also, *If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed*, John viii. 36. Howsoever then a Christian Man be terrified thro' the Law shewing unto him his Sin, notwithstanding he despaireth not. For he believeth in Jesus Christ, and being baptized in him and cleansed by his Blood, he hath

Remission of all his Sins. Now, when our Sin is pardoned thro' Christ, who is the Lord of the Law, (and yet so pardoned that he gave himself for it) the Law being a Servant hath no more Power to accuse and condemn us for Sin, seeing it is forgiven us, and we are now made free, soasmuch as the Son hath delivered us from Bondage. Wherefore the Law is wholly abolished to them that believe in Christ.

But thou wilt say; I do nothing. True it is that thou canst do nothing, whereby thou mayest be delivered from the Tyranny of the Law. But hear this joyful Tidings which the Holy Ghost bringeth unto thee out of the Words of the Prophet; *Rejoice thou that art barren, &c.* As if he would say; Why art thou so heavy, why dost thou so mourn, since there is no Cause why thou shouldst so do? But I am barren and forsaken. Well, altho' thou be never so barren and forsaken, nor having the Righteousness of the Law, notwithstanding Christ is thy Righteousness; he was made a Curse for thee to deliver thee from the Curse of the Law. If thou believe in him, the Law is dead unto thee. And look how much Christ is greater then the Law, so much hast thou a more excellent Righteousness then the Righteousness of the Law. Moreover, thou art fruitful and not barren; for thou hast many more Children then she which hath an Husband.

There

There is also another Abolishment of the Law which is outward; *wit*, that the politick Laws of *Moses* do nothing belong unto us. Wherefore we ought not to call them back again, nor superstitiously bind ourselves unto them; as some went about to do in Times past, being ignorant of this Liberty. Now, altho' the Gospel make us not subject to the judicial Laws of *Moses*, yet notwithstanding it doth not exempt from the Obedience of all politick Laws, but maketh us subject in this temporal Life, to the Laws of that Government wherein we live, that is to say, it commandeth every one to obey his Magistrate and Laws, *not only for Wrath, but also for Conscience Sake*, Rom. xiii. 5. 1 Pet. ii. And the Emperor, or any other Prince should not offend, if he used some of the judicial Laws of *Moses*; yea he might use them freely and without offence. Therefore the Popish School-men are deceived, which dream that the judicial Laws of *Moses* are pernicious and deadly since the coming of Christ.

Likewise we are not bound to the Ceremonies of *Moses*; much less to the Ceremonies of the Pope. But because this bodily Life cannot be together without Ceremonies (for there must needs be some Introduction,) therefore the Gospel suffereth Ordinances to be made in the Church as touching Days, Times, Places, &c. that the People may know upon what Day, in what Hour, and in what Place to assemble together to hear the Word of God. It permitteth also that Lessons and Readings should be appointed, as in the Schools, especially for the Instruction of children and such as are ignorant. These Things it permitteth, to the End that all may be done comely and orderly in the Church, 1 Cor. xiv. not that they which keep such Ordinances thereby merit Remission of Sins. Moreover they may be changed or omitted without Sin, that it be done without Offence of the weak.

Now *Paul* speaketh here especially of the Abolishment of the moral Law; which is diligently to be considered. For he speaketh against the Righteousness of the Law, that he might establish the Righteousness of Faith, concluding thus: If only Grace or Faith in Christ justify, then

the whole Law abolished without any Exception. And this he confirmeth by the Testimony of *Isaiah*, whereby he exhorteth the barren and forsaken to rejoice; for it seemeth that she hath no Child, nor hope to have any, that is to say, she hath no Disciples, no Favour nor maintenance of the World, because she preacheth the Word of the Cross of Christ crucified, against all the Wisdom of the Flesh. But thou that art barren (saith the Prophet) let not this any whit trouble thee; rather lift up thy Voice and rejoice, for she that is forsaken hath more Children than she that hath an Husband; that is to say, she that is unmarried and hath a great Number of Children shall be made weak, and she that is forsaken shall have many Children.

He calleth the Church barren, because her Children are not begotten by the Law, by Works, by any Industry or Endeavour of Man;

Two Things  
to be taken  
heed of in  
the keeping  
or com-  
manding of  
Ceremonies;  
the Offence  
of the weak,  
and the per-  
nicious Op-  
inion of  
Merit.

but by the Word of Faith in the Spirit of God. Here is nothing else but Birth; no Working at all. Contrariwise, they that are fruitful, labour and exercise themselves with great Travel in bearing and bringing forth. Here is altogether Working, and no Birth. But because they endeavour to get the Right of Children and Heirs by the Righteousness of the Law or by their own Righteousness, they are Servants and never receive the Inheritance, no tho' they tire themselves to Death with continual Travel. For they go about to obtain that by their own Works against the Will of God, which God of his mere Grace will give to all Believers for Christ's Sake. The Faithful work well also, but they are not thereby made Sons and Heirs (for this their Birth bringeth unto them) but this they do to the End that they being now made Children and Heirs might glorify God by their good Works, and help their Neighbours.

That is their  
Regenerati-  
on in Christ  
by Faith and  
the Holy  
Ghost.

selves to Death with continual Travel. For they go about to obtain that by their own Works against the Will of God, which God of his mere Grace will give to all Believers for Christ's Sake. The Faithful work well also, but they are not thereby made Sons and Heirs (for this their Birth bringeth unto them) but this they do to the End that they being now made Children and Heirs might glorify God by their good Works, and help their Neighbours.

*Verse 28. Now we, Brethren, as Isaac was, are the Children of Promise.*

That is to say, we are not Children of the Flesh, as *Ishmael*, or as all the fleshly *Israel*, which gloried that they were the Seed of *Abraham* and the People of God. But Christ answered them, *If ye were the Sons of Abraham, ye would not seek to kill me which speak the Truth unto you*, John viii. 39, 40. Also, *Ver. 42. If God were your Father, then would ye love me and receive my Word*. As if he would say: Brethren born and brought up together in one House, know one anothers Voice: *But ye be of your Father the Devil, &c.* We are not such Children (saith he) as they are which remain Servants, and at length shall be cast out of the House; but we are Children of the Promise as *Isaac* was; that is to say, of Grace and of Faith, born only of the Promise. Concerning this I have spoken sufficiently before in the 3d Chapter, intreating upon this Place; *In thy Seed shall all Nations of the Earth be blessed*. Therefore we are pronounced righteous; not by the Law, by Works, or our own Righteousness, but by the mere Mercy and Grace of God. *Paul* repeateth very often, and diligently setteth forth the Promise which is received by Faith alone; for he knew that it was very necessary so to do.

Hitherto as touching the Allegory out of *Genesis*; to which *Paul* annexeth the Place of *Isaiah* as an Interpretation. Now he applieth the History of *Ishmael* and *Isaac* for our Example and Consolation.

*Verse 29. But as then he that was born after the Flesh, persecuted him that was born after the Spirit; even so it is now.*

This Place containeth a singular Consolation. Whosoever are born  
and

and live in Christ, and rejoice in this Birth and Inheritance of God, have *Ishmael* for their Enemy and their Persecutor. This we learn at this Day by Experience: For we see that all the World is full of Tumults, Persecutions, Sects and Offences. Wherefore, if we did not arm ourselves with this Consolation of *Paul*, and such like, and well understand this Article of Justification, we should never be able to withstand the Violence and subtil Sights of Satan. For who should not be troubled with these cruel Persecutions of our Adversaries, and with these Sects and infinite Offences which a Sort of busy and fantastical Spirits stir up at this Day? Verily it is no small Grief unto us, when we are constrained to hear that all Things were in Peace and Tranquility before the Gospel came abroad; but since the preaching and publishing thereof, all Things are unquiet, and the whole World is in an Uproar, so that every one armeth himself against another. When a Man that is not indued with the Spirit of God heareth this, by and by he is offended, and judgeth that the Disobedience of Subjects against their Magistrates, that Seditions; Wars, Plagues and Famine, that the overthrowing of Commonwealths, Kingdoms and Countries, that Sects, Offences, and such other infinite Evils do proceed altogether of the Doctrine of the Gospel.

Against this great Offence we must comfort and arm ourselves with this sweet Consolation, that the Faithful must bear this Name and this Title in the World, that they are seditious and Schismaticks, and the Authors of innumerable Evils. And hereof it cometh, that our Adversaries think they have a just Cause against us, yea that they do God good Service, when they hate, persecute and kill us, *John xvi. 2.* It cannot be then but that *Ishmael* must persecute *Isaac*; but *Isaac* again persecuteth not *Ishmael*. Whoso will not suffer the Persecution of *Ishmael*, let him not profess himself to be Christian.

But let our Adversaries (which so mightily amplify these Evils at this Day) tell us what good Things ensued the Preaching of the Gospel of Christ and his Apostles. Did not the Destruction of the Kingdom of the *Jews* follow? Was not the *Roman* Empire overthrown? Was not the whole World in an Uproar? And yet the Gospel was not the cause hereof, which Christ and his Apostles preached for the Profit and salvation of Men, and not for their Destruction. But these Things followed thro' the Iniquity of the People, the Nations, the Kings and Princes, who being possessed of the Devil would not hearken to the Word of Grace, Life, and eternal Salvation; but detested and condemned it as a Doctrine most pernicious and hurtful to Religion and Commonwealths. And that this should so come to pass, the Holy Ghost foretold by *David*, when he saith, *Why do the Heathen rage, and the People imagine a vain Thing? &c. Psal. ii. 1.*

*Ishmael* always persecuteth *Isaac*.

The Judgment of the World concerning the Gospel.

What the Faithful must be content to be called in this World.

*Ishmael* must

Such Tumults and Hurly-burlies we hear and see at this Day, The Adversaries lay the Fault on our Doctrine. But the Doctrine of Grace and Peace stirreth not up these Troubles; but the People, Nations, Kings and Princes of the Earth (as the *Psalmist* saith) rage, murmur, conspire and take Counsel, not against us (as they think) nor against our Doctrine, which they blaspheme as false and seditious; but against the Lord and his Anointed. Therefore all their Counsels and Practices are and shall be disappointed and brought to naught, *He that sitteth in the Heavens shall laugh: The Lord shall have them in Derision*, *Psalm* ii. 4. Let them cry out therefore as long as they list, that we raise up these Tumults and Seditions; notwithstanding this *Psalm* comforteth us, and saith, that they themselves are the Authors of these Troubles. They cannot believe this, and much less can they believe that it is they which murmur, rise up, and take Counsel against the Lord and his Anointed; nay rather they think that they maintain the Lord's Cause, that they defend his Glory, and do him acceptable Service in persecuting us, *John* xvi. 2. But the Adversaries. *Psalm* lieth not, and that shall the End declare. Here we do nothing, but we only suffer, as our Conscience beareth us witness in the Holy Ghost. Moreover, the Doctrine for the which they raise up such Tumults and Offences is not ours, but it is the Doctrine of Christ. This Doctrine we cannot deny, nor forsake the Defence thereof, seeing Christ saith; *Whosoever shall be ashamed of me, and of my Words, in this adulterous and sinful Nation; of him shall the Son of Man be ashamed, when he shall come in his own Glory, and in his Fathers, and of his holy Angels*, *Luke* ix. 26.

He therefore that will preach Christ truly, and confess him to be our Righteousness, must be content to hear that he is a pernicious Fellow, and that he troubleth all Things. They which have troubled the World (said the *Jews* of Paul and Silas, *Acts* xvii. 6, 7.) are also come unto us, and have done contrary to the Decrees of *Cæsar*. And in *Acts* xxiv. 5. *We have found this Man a pestilent Fellow, and a Mover of Sedition among all the Jews throughout the World, and a Ring-leader of the Sect of the Nazarens, &c.* In like Manner also the *Gentiles* complain in *Acts* xvi. 20. *These Men being Jews do exceedingly trouble our City.* So at this Day they accuse Luther to be a Troubler of the Papacy and of the Roman Empire. If I would keep silence, then all Things should be in Peace which the strong Man possesseth, *Luke* xi. 21, 22. and the Pope would not persecute me any more. But by this Means the Gospel of Jesus Christ should be blemished and defaced. If I speak, the Pope is troubled, and cruelly rageth. Either we must lose the Pope, an earthly and mortal Man, or else the immortal God, Christ Jesus, Life and eternal Salvation. Let the Pope perish then, and let God be exalted, let Christ reign and triumph for ever.

Christ himself when he fore-saw in Spirit the great Troubles which should follow his Preaching, comforted himself after this Manner; *I*

*am come* (saith he) *to send Fire on the Earth, and what will I, if it be already kindled?* Luke xii. 49. In like Manner we see at this Day that great Troubles follow the Preaching of the Gospel thro' the Persecution and Blasphemy of our Adversaries, and the Ingratitude of the World. This Matter so grieveth us, that oftentimes after the Flesh, and after the Judgment of Reason, we think it had been better that the Doctrine of the Gospel had not been published, then that after the Preaching thereof the publick Peace should be so troubled. But according to the Spirit we say boldly with Christ; *I came to send Fire upon the Earth, and what will I, but that it should now be kindled?* Now, after that this Fire is kindled, there follow forthwith great Commotions. For it is not a King or an Emperor that is thus provoked; but the God of this World, which is a most mighty Spirit, and the Lord of the whole World. This weak Word, preaching Christ crucified, setteth upon this mighty and terrible Adversary. \* *Behemoth* feeling the divine Power of this Word, stirreth up all his Members, shaketh his Tail, and maketh the Depth of the Sea to boil like a Pot, *Job* xli. 31. Hereof come all these Tumults, all these furious and cruel Rages of the World.

How Christ comforteth himself against the Evils that should follow his Preaching.

\* He meaneth the Devil.

Wherefore let it not trouble us that our Adversaries are offended and cry out, that there cometh no Good by the Preaching of the Gospel. They are Infidels, they are blind and obstinate, and therefore it is impossible that they should see any Fruit of the Gospel. But contrariwise, we which believe, do see the inestimable Profits and Fruits thereof; altho' outwardly for a Time we be oppressed with infinite Evils, despised, spoiled, accused, condemned as the Outcasts and filthy Dung of the whole World, and put to Death, and inwardly afflicted with the Feeling of our Sin, and vexed with Devils. For we live in Christ, in whom, and by whom we are made Kings and Lords over Sin, Death, the Flesh, the World, Hell, and all Evils. In whom, and by whom also we tread under our Feet the Dragon and Basilisk, which is the King of Sin and Death. How is this done? In Faith. For the Blessedness which we hope for, is not yet revealed, which in the mean Time we wait for in Patience, and yet notwithstanding do now assuredly possess the same by Faith.

We ought therefore diligently to learn the Article of Justification; for that only is able to support us against these infinite Slanders and Offences, and to comfort us in all our Tentations and Persecutions. For we see that it cannot otherwise be, but that the World will be offended with the pure Doctrine of the Gospel, and continually cry out that no Good cometh of it; *For the natural Man receiveth not the Things of the Spirit of God, for they are Foolishness unto him,* 1 Cor. ii. 14. He only beholdeth the outward Evils, Troubles, Rebellions, Murders, Sects, and such other like Things. With these Sights he is offended and blinded, and finally falleth into the Contempt and Blaspheming of God and his Word.

On the contrary Part, we ought to stay and comfort ourselves in this, that our Adversaries do not accuse and condemn us for any manifest Wickedness which we have committed, as Adultery, Murder, Theft and such like, but for our Doctrine. And what do we teach? That Christ the Son of God, by the Death of the Cross hath redeemed us from our Sins, and from everlasting Death. Therefore they do not impugn our Life, but our Doctrine; yea the Doctrine of Christ, and not ours. Therefore if there be any Offence, it is Christ's Offence, and not ours; and so the Fault wherefore they persecute us, Christ hath committed, and not we. Now, whether they will condemn Christ, and pluck him out of Heaven as an Heretick and seditious Person for this Fault, that he is our only Justifier and Saviour, let them look to that. As for us, we commending this his own Cause unto himself, are quiet Beholders whether of them shall have the Victory, Christ or they. Indeed after the Flesh it grieveth us that these *Ishmaelites* hate and persecute us so furiously; notwithstanding according to the Spirit we glory in these Afflictions, both because we know that we suffer them not for our Sins, but for Christ's Cause, whose Benefit and whose Glory we set forth, and also because *Paul* giveth us Warning aforehand, that *Ishmael* must mock *Isaac* and persecute him.

The *Jews* expound this Place, which *Paul* alledgeth out of *Gen. xxi. 9.* of *Ishmael* mocking and persecuting *Isaac* after this Manner, that *Ishmael* constrained *Isaac* to commit Idolatry. If he did so, yet I believe not that it was any such gross Idolatry as the *Jews* dream of; to wit, that *Ishmael* made Images of Clay after the Manner of the *Gentiles*, which he compelled *Isaac* to worship: For this *Abraham* What Man- would in no wise have suffered. But I think that *Ishmael* nel of Man- was in outward Shew a holy Man, as *Cain* was, who *Ishmael* was. also persecuted his Brother, and at length killed him; not for any corporal Thing, but because he saw that God esteemed him above the other. In like Manner *Ishmael* was outwardly a Lover of Religion; he sacrificed, and exercised himself in well-doing. Therefore he mocked his Brother *Isaac*, and would be esteemed a better Man then he for two Reasons. First, For his Religion and Service of God. Secondly, For his civil Government and Inheritance. And these two Things he seemed justly to challenge to himself. For he thought that the Kingdom and Priesthood pertained to him by the Right of God's Law as the first born; and therefore he persecuted *Isaac* spiritually because of Religion, and corporally because of his Inheritance.

This Persecution always remaineth in the Church, especially when the Doctrine of the Gospel flourisheth; to wit, that the Children of the Flesh mock the Children of the Promise, and persecute them. The *Papists* persecute us at this Day, and for none other Cause, but for that we teach that Righteousness cometh by the Promise. For it vexeth the *Papists* that we will not worship their Idols, that is to say, that we set not forth their Righteousness, their Works and Worshippings devised and ordained by Men, as available to obtain Grace and Forgiveness of Sins. And for this Cause they go about to cast us out of the House, that

at is to say, they vaunt that they are the Church, the Children and people of God, and that the Inheritance belongeth unto them, &c. Contrariwise, they excommunicate and banish us as Hereticks and seditious Persons, and if they can, they kill us also; and in so doing, they think they do God good Service. So as much as in them lieth, they cast us out of this Life, and the Life to come. The *Anabaptists* and such other do hate us deadly, because we impugn and detest their Errors and Heresies which they spread abroad, and daily renew in the Church, and for this Cause they judge us to be far worse than the *Epists*, and therefore they have conceived a more cruel Hatred against us, then against the *Papists*.

As soon therefore as the Word of God is brought to light, the Devil is angry, and useth all his Force and subtil Slight to persecute it, and utterly to abolish it. Therefore he can no otherwise do, but raise up infinite Sects, horrible Offences, cruel Persecutions, and abominable Murders: For he is the Father of Lying and of Murder. He spreadeth his Lies throughout the World by false Teachers, and he killeth Men by Tyrants. By these Means he possesseth both the spiritual and the corporal Kingdom; the spiritual Kingdom by the lying false Teachers (stirring up also without ceasing every Man, particularly by his fiery Darts, to Heresies and wicked Opinions;) the corporal Kingdom by the Sword of Tyrants. Thus this Father of Lying and Murder, stirreth up Persecution on every Side, both spiritual and corporal, against the Children of the Free woman. The spiritual Persecution which we are at this Day constrained to suffer of Hereticks, is to us most grievous and intollerable, because of the infinite Offences and scandals wherewith the Devil goeth about to deface our Doctrine. For we are enforced to hear, that the Errors and Heresies of the *Anabaptists* and other Hereticks, and all other Enormities do proceed from our Doctrine. The corporal Persecution, by which Tyrants lie in wait for our goods and Lives, is more intollerable; for they persecute us not for our sins, but for the Testimony of the Word of God. Let us learn therefore, even by the Title which Christ giveth to the Devil, *to wit*, that he is the Father of Lying and Murder, *John viii. 44.* that when the Gospel flourisheth, and Christ reigneth, then Sects of Perdition must needs spring up, and Murderers persecuting the Gospel, must rage everywhere. And *Paul* saith; *That there must be also Heresies*, *1 Cor. xi. 19.* He that is ignorant of this is soon offended, and falling away from the true God, and true Faith, he returneth to his old God, and old false Faith.

*Paul* therefore in this Place armeth the Godly before Hand, that they should not be offended with those Persecutions, Sects and Offences, saying; *But as then he that was born after the Flesh, &c.* As if he would say; If we be the Children of the Promise, and born after the Spirit, we must surely look to be persecuted of our Brother which is born after the Flesh; that is to say, not only our Enemies which are manifestly wicked, shall persecute us, but also such as at the first were our dear

The Devil  
persecuteth  
the Church  
by Violence  
and Subtilty.

Friends, with whom we were familiarly conversant in one House, which received from us the true Doctrine of the Gospel, shall become our deadly Enemies, and persecute us extreamly. For they are Brethren after the Flesh, and must persecute their Brethren which are born after the Spirit. So Christ in *Psal. xli. 9.* complaineth of *Judas*; *Mine own familiar Friend in whom I trusted, which did eat of my Bread, hath lifted up his Heel against me.* But this is our Consolation, that we have not given any Occasion to our *Ismaelites* to persecute us. The *Papists* persecute us, because we teach the pure and sincere Doctrine of the Gospel; which if we would forsake, they would persecute us no more. Moreover, if we would approve the pernicious Heresies of the *Sectaries*, they would praise us. But because we detest and abhor the Impiety both of the one and the other, therefore do they so spitefully hate, and so cruelly persecute us.

But not only *Paul* (as I have said) armeth us against such Persecutions and Offences, but Christ himself also most sweetly comforteth us in *John xv. 19.* saying, *If ye were of the World, the World would love his own; but because ye are not of the World, but I have chosen you out of the World, therefore the World hateth you.* As if he would say; I am the Cause of all these Persecutions which ye endure; and if ye be killed, it is I for whose Sake ye are killed. For if ye did not preach my Word and confess me, the World would not persecute you. But it goeth well with you; For the Servant is not greater then his Lord, *Matth. x. 24.* *If they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you for my Names Sake.* *John xv. 20, 21.*

By these Words Christ layeth all the Fault upon himself, and delivereth us from all Fear. As if he would say; Ye are not the Cause why the World hateth and persecuteth you, but my Name which ye preach and confess, is the Cause thereof. But be of good Comfort, I have overcome the World. This Comfort upholdeth us, so that we doubt nothing but that Christ is strong enough, not only to bear, but also to vanquish all the Cruelty of Tyrants, and the subtil Slights of Hereticks, and this he hath declared in shewing forth his Power against the *Jews* and *Romans*, whose Tyranny and Persecutions he suffered for a Time. He also suffered the subtil and crafty Practices of Hereticks, but in Time and Place he overthrew them all, and remained King and Conqueror. Let the *Papists* then rage as much as they will; Let the *Sectaries* slander and corrupt the Gospel of Christ as much as they can; notwithstanding Christ shall reign eternally, and his Word shall stand for ever, when all his Enemies shall be brought to nought. Moreover, this is a singular Consolation that the Persecution of *Ismael* against *Isaac* shall not always continue, but shall endure for a little while, and when that is ended, the Sentence shall be pronounced as followeth.

Verse

Verse 30. *Nevertheless, what saith the Scripture? Cast out the Bond-woman and her Son: For the Son of the Bond-woman shall not be Heir with the Son of the Free-woman.*

Gen. xxi.  
10.

This Word of *Sarah* was very grievous to *Abraham*; and no doubt, when he heard this Sentence, his fatherly Bowels were moved with Compassion towards his Son *Ishmael*; for he was born of his Flesh. And his the Scripture plainly witnesseth, Gen. xxi. 11. when it saith; *And the Thing was very grievous in Abraham's Sight, because of his Son. But God confirmed the Sentence which Sarah pronounced, saying to Abraham; Let it not be grievous in thy Sight, because of the Lad, and because of the Bond-woman: In all that Sarah hath said unto thee, hearken unto her Voice, for in Isaac shall thy Seed be called, Ver. 12.*

The *Israelites* hear in this Place the Sentence pronounced against them, which overthroweth the *Jews*, *Grecians*, *Romans*, and all others which persecute the Church of Christ. The self-same Sentence also shall overthrow the *Papists*, and as many as trust in their own Works, which at this Day boast themselves, to be the People of God and the Church; which also trust that they shall surely receive the Inheritance, and judge us which rest upon the Promise of God, not only to be barren and forsaken, but also Hereticks cast out of the Church, and that it is impossible that we should be Sons and Heirs. But God overthroweth their Judgment, and pronounceth this Sentence against them, that because they are the Children of the Bond-woman, and persecute the Children of the Free-woman, therefore they shall be cast out of the House, and shall have no Inheritance with the Children of Promise, to whom only the Inheritance belongeth, because they are the Children of the Free-woman. This Sentence is ratified, and can never be revoked; wherefore it shall assuredly come to pass, that our *Ishmaelites* shall not only lose the ecclesiastical and politiek Government which now they have, but also everlasting Life. For the Scripture hath foretold, that the Children of the Bond-woman shall be cast out of the House, that is to say, out of the Kingdom of Grace; for they cannot be Heirs together with the Children of the Free-woman.

The Sentence pronounced against the *Ishmaelites* is effectual, &c.

Now, here it is to be noted, that the Holy Ghost calleth the People of the Law and Works, as it were in Contempt, the Child of the Bond-woman. As if he said; Why do ye vaunt of the Righteousness of the Law and Works, and why do ye glory that ye are the People and Children of God for the same? If ye know not of whom ye are born, I will tell you; you are Bond-servants of a Bond-woman. And what Servants? The Bond-servants of the Law, and consequently of Sin, of Death, and of everlasting Damnation. Now, a Servant is no Inheritor, but is cast out of the House. Wherefore the Pope with all his Kingdom, and all other *Justi-*

caries

*ciaries* (what outward Appearance of Holiness soever they have) which hope to obtain Grace and Salvation by the Law, are Servants of that Bond-woman, and have no Inheritance with the Children of the Free-woman. I speak now, not to the *Popes, Cardinals, Bishops and Monks* that were manifestly wicked, who have made their Bellies their god, and have committed such horrible Sins as I will not willingly name; but of the best of them, such I mean as lived holily, and went about thro' great Labour and Travel by keeping of their Monkish Order, to pacify the Wrath of God, and to merit Remission of their Sins, and everlasting Life. These hear their Sentence here pronounced, that the Sons of the Bond-woman must be cast out of the House with their Mother the Bond-woman.

Such Sentences diligently considered, make us certain of our Doctrine, and confirm us in the Righteousness of Faith, against the Doctrine and Righteousness of Works which the World embraceth and magnifieth, condemning and despising the other. And this troubleth and offendeth weak Consciences; which albeit they plainly see the Impiety, the execrable Wickedness, and horrible Abominations of the *Papists*, yet notwithstanding, they are not easily perswaded, that all the Multitude which beareth the Name and Title of the Church do err, and that there are but few of them which have a sound and right Opinion of the Doctrine of Faith. And if the Papacy had the same Holiness and Austerity of Life which it had in the Time of the ancient Fathers, *Hierome, Ambrose, Augustine*, and others, when the Clergy had not yet so evil a Name for their Simony, Excess, Abundance of Riches, dissolute living, Voluptuousness, Whoredom, Sodomity, and such other infinite Abominations, but lived after the Rules and Decrees of the Fathers religiously, and holily in outward Shew, and unmarried, What could we do now against the Papacy?

The single Life which the Clergy kept very straightly in the Time of the Fathers, was a goodly Thing, and made of Men very Angels in the Sight of the World, and therefore *Paul* in the 2<sup>d</sup> Chapter to the *Colossians*, calleth it the Religion of Angels. And the *Papists* sing thus of their Virgins: He led an angelical Life whilst he lived in the Flesh, and yet lived contrary to the Flesh. Moreover, the Life which they call the contemplative Life (whereunto the Clergy Men were then very much given, utterly neglecting all civil and household Government) had a goodly Shew of Holiness. Wherefore, if that outward Shew and Appearance of the old Papacy remained at this Day, we should peradventure do but little against it by our Doctrine of Faith, seeing we do now so little prevail when (that old Shew of outward Holiness and severe Discipline being utterly abolished) there is nothing to be seen but a very Sink and Puddle of all Vices and Abominations.

But admit the Case that the old Discipline and Religion of the Papacy were yet remaining; notwithstanding we ought by the Example of *Paul* (who vehemently pursued the false Apostles, which outwardly appeared

ured to be very godly and holy Men) to fight against the Merit-  
 engers of the Papistical Kingdom, and to say ; Altho' ye live a single  
 ye, tiring and consuming your Bodies with continual Travel, and  
 inking in the Humility and Religion of Angels : Yet are ye Servants of  
 Law, of Sin and of the Devil, and must be cast out of the House ;  
 ye seek Righteousness and Salvation by your Works, and not by  
 Christ.

Wherefore we ought not so much to consider the wicked Life of the  
*Papists*, as their abominable Doctrine and Hypocrisy, against the which  
 specially fight. Let us suppose then that the Religion and Disci-  
 pline of the old Papacy doth yet still flourish, and that it is now obser-  
 ved with as much Severity and Straitness as ever it was ;  
 it must we say notwithstanding : If ye have nothing  
 of this Holiness and Chastity of Life to set against the  
 Wrath and Judgment of God, ye are in very deed the  
 sons of the Bond woman which must be cast out of the  
 Kingdom of Heaven and be damned.

No Holiness  
 of Life can  
 be set against  
 God's Judg-  
 ment.

And now they themselves do not defend their wicked  
 Life, nay rather, they which are the best and the soundest of them all do  
 attest it ; but they fight for the Maintenance and Defence of the Doc-  
 trine of Devils, for Hypocrisy, and for the Righteousness of Works.  
 Here they alledge the Authority of Counsels, and the Examples of holy  
 Fathers, whom they affirm to have been the Authors of their holy Orders  
 and Statutes. Therefore we fight not against the manifest Wickedness  
 and Abominations of the Papacy, but against the greatest Holiness, and  
 holiest Saints thereof, which think they lead an angelical  
 Life, whilst they dream that they keep not only the  
 Commandments of God, but also the Counsels of Christ,  
 and do Works of Supererogation, and such as they are  
 not bound to do. This we say is to labour in vain, ex-  
 cept they lay hold of that only and alone, which Christ  
 hath made only necessary, and choose the good Part with *Ma-*  
*ry*, which shall not be taken from them.

The *Papists*  
 divide the  
 Gospel into  
 Precepts and  
 Counsels.

The Pre-  
 cepts they  
 are bound  
 to keep say  
 they, but not  
 the Counsels,  
 and therefore  
 if they keep  
 them, it is a  
 Work of Su-  
 pererogati-  
 on, that is,  
 more than  
 needeth.

This did *Bernard*, a Man so godly, so holy, and so  
 chaste, that he is to be commended and preferred above  
 them all. He being once grievously sick, and having no  
 Hope of Life, put not his Trust in his single Life wherein  
 he had lived most chastly, nor in his good Works and Deeds  
 of Charity, whereof he had done many ; but removed them  
 far out of his Sight, and receiving the Benefit of Christ  
 by Faith, he said ; \* I have lived wickedly : But thou  
 Lord Jesus Christ by double Right dost possess the King-  
 dom of Heaven ; *First*, Because thou art the Son of God :  
*Secondly*, Because thou hast purchased it by thy Death and  
 Passion. The *first*, thou keepest for thyself by thy Birth-  
 right. The *second*, thou givest to me, not by the Right  
 of my Works, but by the Right of Grace. He set not  
 against the Wrath of God his Monkry nor his angelical

\* *Bernard's*  
 Confession.

Life,

Life, but he took hold of that one Thing which was necessary, and was saved. I think that *Jerome, Gregory*, and many other of the *Fathers* were saved after the same Sort. And it is not to be doubted, but that also in the Old Testament, many Kings of *Israel* and other Idolaters were saved in like Manner, who at the Hour of Death casting away their vain Trust which they had in Idols, took hold of the Promise of God, which was made unto the Seed of *Abraham*, that is to say, Christ in whom all Nations should be blessed. And if there be any of the *Papists* which shall be saved, they must simply lean not to their own good Deeds and Deserts, but to the Mercy of God offered unto us in Christ and say with *Paul*; *Not having mine own Righteousness which is of the Law, but that which is through the Faith of Christ*, Phil. iii. 9.

**Verse 31.** *So then, Brethren, we are not Children of the Bond-woman, but of the free.*

*Paul* here concludeth his Allegory of the barren Church, and of the fruitful People of the Law. We are not (saith he) the Children of the Bond-woman; that is to say, we are not under the Law which begetteth unto Bondage, that is, which terrifieth, accuseth, and bringeth to Desperation; but we are delivered from it by Christ; therefore it cannot terrify nor condemn us. Of this we have spoken enough before. Moreover, altho' the Sons of the Bond-woman do persecute us never so much for a Time, yet this is our Comfort, that they shall be compelled to live the Inheritance unto us, which belongeth unto us, that are the Sons of the Free-woman, and shall at length be cast into utter Darkness, *Matth. xxv. 41*.

*Paul* therefore by these Words [Bond woman and Free-woman] took Occasion (as we have heard) to reject the Righteousness of the Law, and to confirm the Doctrine of Justification. And of Purpose he taketh hold of this Word (Free-woman) vehemently urging and amplifying the same, especially in the Beginning of the Chapter following. Whereupon he taketh Occasion to reason of Christian Liberty, the Knowledge whereof is very necessary: For the Pope hath in a Manner quite overthrown it, and made the Church subject to Man's Traditions and Ceremonies, and to a most miserable and filthy Bondage. That Liberty which is purchased by Christ, is unto us at this Day a most strong Fort and Munition whereby we defend ourselves against the Tyranny of the Pope. Wherefore we must diligently consider this Doctrine of Christian Liberty, as well to confirm the Doctrine of Justification, as also to raise up and comfort weak Consciences, against so many Troubles and Offences, which our Adversaries do impute unto the Gospel. Now, Christian Liberty is a very spiritual Thing, which the carnal Man doth not understand. Yea they which have the first Fruits of the Spirit, and can talk well thereof, do very hardly retain it in their Heart, *Rom. viii. 26*. It seemeth to Reason that it is a Matter of small Importance. Therefore if the Holy Ghost do not magnify it that it may be esteemed accordingly, it is contemned.



## C H A P. V.



*P* *AUL* now drawing towards the End of his Epistle, disputeth very vehemently in Defence of the Doctrine of Faith and Christian Liberty, against the false Apostles, the Enemies and Destroyers of the same; against whom he casteth out very thundering Words, to beat them down and utterly to vanquish them. And therewithal he exhorteth the *Galatians* to fly their pernicious Doctrine as dangerous Poison. In his Exhortation he interming-  
 eth Threatnings, and Promises, trying every Way that  
 may keep them in that Liberty which Christ hath  
 purchased for them, saying;

*Paul* trieth  
 every Way  
 to keep the  
*Galatians*  
 in the Lib-  
 erty of the  
 Gospel.

*verse 1. Stand fast therefore in the Liberty  
 wherewith Christ hath made us free,*

That is to say; Be ye stedfast. So *Peter* saith; *Be sober, be vigi-  
 ant; because your Adversary the Devil, as a roaring Lion, walketh a-  
 bout, seeking whom he may devour. Whom resist, being stedfast in the Faith,*  
*Pet. v. 8, 9.* Be ye not careless (saith he) but stedfast  
 and constant. Ly not down and sleep, but stand up. As  
 he would say; It standeth you in Hand to be watchful  
 and constant, that ye may keep and hold fast that Liber-  
 ty wherein Christ hath made you free. They that are  
 careless and negligent cannot keep this Liberty. For Sa-  
 tan most deadly hateth the Light of the Gospel, that is  
 to say, the Doctrine of Grace, Liberty, Consolation and  
 Life. Therefore when he seeth that it beginneth once to appear, forth-  
 with he fighteth against it with all Might and Main, stirring up Storms  
 and Tempests to hinder the Course thereof, and utterly to overthrow it.  
 Therefore *Paul* warneth the Faithful not to sleep, not to be negligent;  
 but constantly and valiantly to resist Satan, that he spoil them not of  
 that Liberty which Christ hath purchased for them.

The Godly  
 must stand  
 fast, that  
 they lose not  
 their Liberty  
 in Christ.

Every

Every Word hath here a certain Vehemency : *Stand*, (saith he) *As if he should say* ; Here have ye need of great Diligence and Vigilancy *In that Liberty* : In what Liberty ? Not in that wherewith the Emperor hath made us free, but in that wherewith Christ hath

**The Freedom of the Papists.** made us free. The Emperor hath given, or rather was compelled to give to the Bishop of *Rome*, a free City and other Lands ; also Immunities, Privileges and Prerogatives, &c. This is also a Liberty, but it is a civil

**Liberty**, whereby the Pope with all his Clergy is exempt from all publick Charges. Moreover, there is a fleshly, or rather

**The Anabaptists and Libertines with other Sectaries** a devilish Liberty, whereby the Devil chiefly reigneth throughout the whole World. For they that enjoy this Liberty, obey neither God nor Laws, but do what they list. This Liberty the People seek and embrace at this Day ; and so do the *Sectaries*, which will be at Liberty in their Opinions and in all their Doings, to the End they may teach and do whatsoever they dream to be good and sound, without Reprehension. These stand in that Liberty wherein the Devil hath made them free. But we

speak not here of this Liberty ; albeit the whole World seeketh no other Liberty. Neither do we speak of the civil Liberty, but of a far other Manner of Liberty, which the Devil hateth and resisteth with all his Power.

This is that Liberty whereby Christ hath made us free ; not from an earthly Bondage, or from the *Babylonical Captivity*, or from the Tyranny of the *Turks*, but from God's everlasting Wrath. And where is this done ? In the Conscience. There resteth our Liberty, and goeth no farther. For Christ hath made us free, not civilly, nor carnally, but divinely ; that is to say, we are made free in such Sort, that our Conscience is now free and quiet, not fearing the Wrath of God to come. This is that true and inestimable Liberty, to the Excellency and Majesty whereof if we compare the other, they are but as one Drop of Water in respect of the whole Sea. For who is able to express what a Thing it is when a Man is assured in his Heart, that God neither is nor will be angry with him, but will be for ever a merciful and loving Father unto him for Christ's Sake ? This is indeed a marvellous and an incomprehensible Liberty, to have the most high and sovereign Majesty so favourable unto us, that he doth not only defend, maintain and succour us in this Life, but also as touching our Bodies will so deliver us, that our Bodies which are sown in Corruption, in Dishonour and Infirmary, shall rise again in Incorruption, in Glory and Power, 1 *Cor.* xv. 42, 43, 44. Wherefore this is an inestimable Liberty, that we are made free from the Wrath of God for ever, and is greater then Heaven and Earth, and all other Creatures.

Of this Liberty there followeth another, whereby thro' Christ we are made free from the Law, Sin, Death, the Power of the Devil, Hell, &c. For as the Wrath of God cannot terrify us, for that Christ hath delivered us from the same ; so the Law, Sin and Death, cannot accuse and

and condemn us. And altho' the Law accuse us, and Sin terrify us, yet they cannot drive us to Desperation. For Faith, which overcometh the World, by and by faith: These Things belong not unto me: For Christ hath made me free, and delivered me from them all. Likewise Death which is the most mighty and most dreadful Thing in all the World, utterly vanquished in the Conscience by this Liberty of the Spirit. Wherefore the Majesty of this Christian Liberty is highly to be esteemed, and diligently considered. It is an easy Matter for a Man to speak these Words [Freedom from the Wrath of God, Sin and Death,] but at the Time of Tentation, Experience and Practice to apply them to himself, and to feel the Excellency of this Liberty, and the Fruit thereof, it is a harder Matter then can be expressed.

Therefore our Conscience must be instructed and prepared before Hand, that when we feel the Accusation of the Law, the Terrors of Sin, the Horror of Death, and the Wrath of God, we may remove these heavy Sights, and fearful Fantasies out of our Minds, and set in the place thereof the Freedom purchased by Christ, the Forgiveness of Sins, Righteousness, Life, and the everlasting Mercy of God. And albeit the Feeling of the contrary be very strong, yet let us assure ourselves that it shall not long endure; according to that Saying of the Prophet; *In a little Wrath I hid my Face from thee, for a Moment: But with everlasting Kindness will I have Mercy on thee,* Isa. liv. 8. But this is very hard to do. Wherefore that Liberty which Christ hath purchased for us, is not so soon believed as is named. If it could be apprehended with a sure and a steadfast Faith, then no Rage or Terror of the World, of the Law, Sin, Death, or the Devil, could be so great, but by and by it should be swallowed up as a little Drop of Water is swallowed of the main Sea. And certainly this Christian Liberty swalloweth up at once and taketh quite away the whole heap of Evils, the Law, Sin, Death, God's Wrath, and briefly, the repent himself with his Head and whole Power, and in the Stead thereof it placeth Righteousness, Peace, and everlasting Life, &c. But blessed is he that understandeth and believeth, *Luke xi. 28.*

Let us learn therefore to magnify this our Liberty, Christian Liberty, purchased by Jesus Christ the Son of God, by whom all things were created both in Heaven and Earth. Which Liberty he hath purchased with no other Price then with his own Blood, to deliver us, not from any bodily or temporal Servitude, but from a spiritual and everlasting Bondage under mighty and invincible Tyrants, *twit*, the Law, Sin Death and the Devil, and so to reconcile us unto God his Father. Now, since these Enemies are overcome, and we reconciled unto God by the Death of his Son, it is certain that we are righteous before God, and that whatsoever we do, pleaseth him. And altho' there be certain Remnants of Sin yet still in us, they are not laid upon our Charge but pardoned for Christ's Sake.

Paul useth Words of great Force and Vehemency. *Stand fast (saith he) in the Liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free.* This Liberty then

A Remedy  
against the  
Anguish and  
Terrors of  
the Conscience.

then is not given unto us by the Law, or for our Righteousness, but freely for Christ's Sake: Which Thing *Paul* here witnesseth, and plainly declareth throughout his whole Epistle. Christ also saith, *John* viii. 36. *If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed.* He only is set betwixt us and the Evils which trouble and afflict us; he hath overcome them and taken them away, so that they can no more oppress us, nor condemn us. In the Stead of Sin and Death he giveth unto us Righteousness and everlasting Life; and by this Means he changeth the Bondage and Terrors of the Law, into the Liberty of Conscience and Consolation of the Gospel, which saith; *Be of good Cheer, my Son, thy Sins are forgiven thee,* Matth. ix. 2. Whosoever then believeth in Christ the Son of God, he hath this Liberty.

Reason cannot perceive the Excellency of this Matter; which when a Man considereth in Spirit, he shall see that it is inestimable. For who is able to conceive in his Mind how great and unspeakable a Gift it is to have the Forgiveness of Sins, Righteousness and everlasting Life, in the Stead of the Law, Sin, Death and the Wrath of God, and to have God himself favourable and merciful for ever? The *Pharisees* and the Hypocrites that seek the Righteousness of the Law, or their own Righteousness, do glory that they likewise have Remission of Sins, Righteousness, Life and the Grace of God. For they vaunt that they also have this Liberty, and they promise the same unto others; but in very deed they are the Servants of Corruption, and in the Time of Tentation all their vain Confidence vanisheth away even in a Moment. For they trust unto the Works and Satisfaction of Men, and not to the Word of God, nor unto Christ. Wherefore it is impossible for the *Justiciaries* which seek to win Heaven, Life and Salvation by Works and Merits, to know what the Liberty and Deliverance from Sin is.

Contrariwise, our Liberty hath for her Foundation Christ himself, who is our everlasting High Bishop, sitting at the Right-hand of God, and making Intercession for us. Wherefore the Forgiveness of Sins, Righteousness, Life and Liberty which we have thro' him, is sure, certain and perpetual, so that we believe the same. Wherefore if we cleave unto Christ with a stedfast Faith, and stand fast in that Liberty wherein he hath made us free, we shall obtain those inestimable Gifts; but if we be careless and negligent, we shall lose them. It is not without Cause that *Paul* biddeth us watch and stand fast; for he knew that the Devil seeketh nothing more, then to spoil us of this Liberty which cost Christ so great a Price, and to intangle us again by his Ministers in the Yoke of Bondage, as followeth.

Verse 1. *And be not intangled again with the Yoke of Bondage.*

*Paul* hath spoken most effectually and profoundly as concerning Grace and Christian Liberty, and with high and haughty Words hath exhorted

the *Galatians* to continue in the same; for it is easily lost. Therefore he biddeth them stand fast, lest that thro' Negligence or Security, they fall back again from Grace and Faith, to the Law and Works. Now, because Reason judgeth that there can be no Danger in preferring the Righteousness of the Law before the Righteousness of Faith; therefore with a certain Indignation he enveigheth against the Law, and with great Contempt he calleth it a Yoke, yea, a Yoke of Bondage. So *Peter* calleth it also, *Acts* xv. 10. *Why tempt ye God, to put a Yoke upon the neck of the Disciples, which neither our Fathers, nor we were able to bear?* And thus he turneth all Things to the contrary. For the false Apostles did abase the Promise, and magnified the Law and the Works thereof in this wise; If ye will be made free (say they) from Sin and Death, and obtain Righteousness and Life, fulfil the Law, be circumcised, observe Days, Months, Times and Years, offer Sacrifices, and do such other like Things; then shall this Obedience of the Law justify and save you. But *Paul* saith the contrary. They (saith he) that teach the Law after this Sort, do not set Mens Consciences at Liberty, but snare and intangle them with a Yoke, yea, and that with a Yoke of Bondage. He speaketh therefore of the Law very basely and contemptuously, and calleth it a hard Bondage, and a servile Yoke. And this he doth not without great Cause. For this pernicious Opinion of the Law, that justifieth and maketh Men righteous before God, is deeply rooted in Man's Reason, and all Mankind is so wrapped in it, that it can hardly be got out. And *Paul* seemeth here to compare those that seek Righteousness by the Law, unto Oxen that be tied to the Yoke, to the End he might take from it the Glory of justifying and of Righteousness. For like as Oxen do draw in the Yoke with great Toil, receive nothing thereby but Forrage and Pasture, and when they be able to draw the Yoke no more, are appointed to the Slaughter: Even so they that seek Righteousness by the Law, are Captives and oppressed with the Yoke of Bondage, that is to say, with the Law; and when they have tyred themselves a long Time in the Works of the Law with great and grievous Toil, at the End this is their Reward, that they are miserable and perpetual servants. And whereof? Even of Sin, Death, God's Wrath, and of the Devil. Wherefore there is no greater or harder Bondage, then the Bondage of the Law. It is not without Cause then, that *Paul* calleth the Yoke of Bondage. For as we have often said before, the Law doth not reveal, increase and aggravate Sin, accuse, terrify, condemn and under Wrath, and finally it driveth poor Consciences into Desperation, which is the most miserable and most grievous Bondage that can be, *Rom.* iii. 4, 5.

He useth therefore very vehement Words. For he would gladly persuade them that they should not suffer this intollerable Burden to be laid upon their Shoulders by the false Apostles, or be intangled again with the Yoke of Bondage. As if he should say; We stand not here on a Matter of small Importance, but either of everlasting Liberty, or everlasting Bondage. For like as Freedom from God's Wrath and Evils is not temporal or carnal, but everlasting; Even so the Bon-

dage of Sin, Death, the Devil, and Damnation (wherewithal they be oppressed which will be made righteous and saved by the Law) is not corporal and such as continueth for a Time, but everlasting. For such Workers of the Law as go about to perform and accomplish all Things precisely and exactly (for of such *Paul* speaketh) can never find Quietness and Peace of Conscience in this Life. They always doubt of the Good-will of God towards them; they are always in Fear of Death, the Wrath and Judgment of God, and after this Life they shall be punished for their Unbelief with everlasting Damnation.

Therefore the Doers of the Law, and such as stand altogether upon the Righteousness and Works thereof, are rightly called the Devil's Martyrs. They take more Pains and punish themselves more in purchasing Hell (according to the Proverb) then the Martyrs of Christ do in obtaining Heaven. For they are tormented *two* Manner of Ways. *First*, They miserably afflict themselves whilst they live here, by doing of many hard and great Works, and all in vain; and afterwards when they die, they reap for a Recompence, everlasting Damnation. Thus are they most miserable Martyrs, both in this Life, and in the Life to come, and their Bondage is everlasting. Contrariwise, the Godly have Troubles in this World, but in Christ they have Peace, because they believe that he hath overcome the World, *John* xvi. 33. Wherefore we must stand fast in that Freedom which Christ hath purchased for us by his Death, and we must take good heed that we be not intangled again with the Yoke of Bondage: As it happeneth at this Day to the fantastical Spirits, who falling away from Faith, and from this Freedom, have procured unto themselves here a temporal Bondage, and in the World to come shall be oppressed with an everlasting Bondage. As for the *Papists*, the most Part of them are become at this Day plain Epicures. Therefore whilst they may, they use the Liberty of the Flesh, singing this careless Song; *Ede, bibe, lude, post Mortem nulla voluptas*: That is, *Eat, drink, and make good Cheer, for after this Life there is no Pleasure*. But they are the very Bond-slaves of the Devil, by whom they are holden Captives at his Will and Pleasure; therefore they shall feel this everlasting Bondage in Hell. Hitherto *Paul's* Exhortation hath been vehement and earnest, but that which followeth doth far pass it.

**Verse 2.** *Behold, I Paul say unto you, that if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing.*

*Paul* here wonderfully stirred up with Zeal and Fervency of Spirit thundreth against the Law and Circumcision; and these thundring Words proceeding of great Zeal, the Holy Ghost wresteth from him when he saith; *Behold, I Paul, &c.* I (I say) who know that I have not received the Gospel by Man, but by the Revelation of Jesus Christ, and have

have Commission and Authority from above, to publish and preach the same unto you, do tell you, that if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing at all. This is a very hard Sentence; whereby *Paul* declareth, that to be circumcised, is as much as to make Christ utterly unprofitable; not in respect of himself, but of the *Galatians*, who being deceived by the Subtilties of the false Apostles, believed that besides Faith in Christ, it was needful for the Faithful to be circumcised, without the which they could not obtain Salvation.

This Place is as it were a Touch-stone, whereby we may most certainly and freely judge of all Doctrines, Works, Religions and Ceremonies of all Men. Whosoever teach that there is any Thing necessary to Salvation (whether they be *Papists, Turks, Jews or Sectaries*) besides Faith in Christ, or shall devise any Work or Religion, or observe any Rule, Tradition or Ceremony whatsoever, with this Opinion that by such Things they shall obtain Forgiveness of Sins, Righteousness and everlasting Life; they hear in this Place the Sentence of the Holy Ghost pronounced against them by the Apostle, that Christ profiteth them nothing. Seeing *Paul* durst give this Sentence against the Law and Circumcision, which were ordained of God himself, What durst he not do against the Chaff and the Dross of Mens Traditions?

The Judgment of the Godlytouching all Doctrines, Religions, and Ceremonies.

Wherefore this Place is a terrible Thunder-bolt against all the Kingdom of the Pope. For all the Priests, *Monks* and *Heremites* that live in their Cloisters (I speak of the best of them) reposed all their Trust and Confidence in their own Works, Righteousness, Vows and Merits, and not in Christ, whom they most wickedly and blasphemously imagined to be an angry Judge, an Accuser and Condemner; and therefore here they hear their Judgment, that Christ profiteth them nothing. For if they can put away Sins, and deserve Forgiveness of Sins, and everlasting Life thro' their own Righteousness and Straitness of Life; then, To what Purpose was Christ born? What Profit have they by his Death and Blood-shedding, by his Resurrection, Victory over Sin, Death and the Devil, seeing they are able to overcome these Monsters by their own Strength? And what Tongue can express, or what Heart can conceive how horrible a Thing it is to make Christ unprofitable? Therefore the Apostle casteth out these Words with great Displeasure and Indignation; *If ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing*; that is to say, no Profit should redound unto you of all his Benefits; but he hath bestowed them all upon you in vain.

Hereby it appeareth sufficiently, that nothing under the Sun is more hurtful then the Doctrine of Mens Traditions and Works; for they utterly abolish and overthrow at once the Truth of the Gospel, Faith, the true Worshipping of God, and Christ himself in whom the Father hath ordained all Things, *Col. ii. 3.--9. In Christ are hid all the Treasures of Wisdom and Knowledge. In him dwelleth all the Fulness of the Godhead bodily.* Wherefore all they that are either Authors or Maintainers of the Doctrine of Works, are Oppressors of the Gospel, make the Death

and Victory of Christ unprofitable, blemish and deface his Sacraments, and utterly take away the true Use thereof, and briefly, they are Blaphemers, Enemies and Deniers of God, and of all his Promises and Benefits. Who so is not moved with these Words of *Paul* (which calleth the Law a Yoke of Bondage, and saith, that they which affirm the keeping of Circumcision to be necessary to Salvation, make Christ unprofitable) and cannot be driven from the Law and Circumcision, nor yet from the Confidence which he hath in his own Righteousness and Works, nor be stirred up to seek that Liberty which is in Christ, his Heart is harder then Stone and Iron.

This is therefore a most certain and clear Sentence, that Christ is unprofitable, that is to say, he is born, crucified and risen again in vain to him that is circumcised, that is, which putteth his Trust in Circumcision. For (as I have said before) *Paul* speaketh not here of the Work of Circumcision (which hurteth not him that hath no Assurance or Opinion of Righteousness in it) but of the Use of the Work, that is to say, of the Confidence and Righteousness that is annexed to the Work: For we must understand *Paul* according to the Matter whereof he intreateth, or according to the Argument which he hath in Hand; which is, that Men be not justified by the Law, by Works, by Circumcision or such like. He saith not, that Works of themselves are nothing, but the Confidence and Righteousness of Works are nothing; for that maketh Christ unprofitable. Therefore who so receiveth Circumcision, with this Opinion that it is necessary to Justification, to him Christ availeth nothing.

Let us bear this well in Mind in our private Tentations when the Devil accuseth and terrifieth our Conscience to drive it to Desperation. For he is the Father of Lying, and the Enemy of Christian Liberty; therefore he tormenteth us every Moment with false Fears, that when our Conscience hath lost this Christian Liberty, it should feel the Remorse of Sin and Condemnation, and always remain in Anguish and Terror. When that great Dragon (I say) that old Serpent the Devil (who deceiveth the whole World, and accuseth our Brethren in the Presence of God Day and Night, *Rev. xii. 10.*) cometh and layeth unto thy Charge,

that thou hast not only done no good, but hast also transgressed the Law of God, say unto him; Thou troublest me with the Remembrance of my Sins past; Thou puttest me also in Mind that I have done no good. But this is nothing to me; for if either I trusted in mine own good Deeds, or distrusted because I have done none, Christ should both Ways profit me nothing at all. Therefore whether thou lay my Sins before me, or my good Works,

I pass not; but removing both far out of Sight, I only rest in that Liberty wherein Christ hath made me free. I know him to be profitable unto me; therefore I will not make him unprofitable; which I should do, if either I should presume to purchase myself Favour and everlasting

ing Life by my good Deeds, or should despair of my Salvation, because of my Sins.

Wherefore let us learn with all Diligence to separate Christ far from all Works, as well good as evil; from all Laws both of God and Man, and from all troubled Consciences; for with all these Christ hath nothing to do. He hath to do (I grant) with afflicted Consciences; howbeit not to afflict them more, but to raise them up, and in their Affliction to comfort them. Therefore if Christ appear in the Likeness of an angry Judge, or of a Law-giver that requireth a strait Account of our Life past; then let us assure ourselves that it is not Christ, but a raging Fiend. For the Scripture painteth A true  
out Christ to be our Reconciliation, our Advocate and our Picture of  
Comforter. Such an one he is and ever shall be, he cannot be unlike himself. Christ.

Therefore whensoever the Devil transforming himself into the Likeness of Christ, disputeth with us after this Manner: This thou oughtest being admonished by my Word to have done, and hast not done it; and this thou oughtest not to have done, and hast done it; know thou therefore that I will take Vengeance on thee, &c. let this nothing at all move us, but by and by let us thus think with ourselves; Christ speaketh not to poor afflicted and despairing Consciences after this Manner; He addeth not Affliction to the Afflicted, Isa. xlii. 3. He breaketh not the bruised Reed, neither quencheth he the smoking Flax, Matth. xii. 20. Indeed to the hard-hearted he speaketh sharply; but such as are terrified and afflicted, he most lovingly and comfortably allureth unto him, saying; Come unto me, all ye that labour, and are heavy laden, and I will give you Rest, Matth. xi. 28. For I am not come to call the Righteous, but Sinners to Repentance, Matth. ix. 13. Be of good Cheer, my Son, thy Sins be forgiven thee, Matth. ix. 2. Be of good Cheer, I have overcome the World, John xvi. 33. The Son of Man is come to seek and to save that which was lost, Luke xix. 10. We must take good heed therefore lest that we being deceived by the wonderful Sights and infinite Subtilties of Satan, do receive an Accuser and Condemner, in the Stead of a Comforter and Saviour; and so under the Visour of a false Christ, that is to say, of the Devil, we loose the true Christ, and make him unprofitable unto us. Thus much have we said as touching private and particular Temptations, and how we should use ourselves therein.

Verse 3. For I testify again to every Man that is circumcised, that he is a Debtor to do the whole Law.

The first Inconveniency is indeed very great, where Paul saith, that Christ profiteth them nothing which are circumcised; and this that followeth is nothing less, where he saith, that they which are circumcised, are bound to keep the whole Law. He speaketh these Words with such Earnestness and Vehemency of Spirit, that he confirmeth them with an Oath; I testify, that is to say, I swear by the living God. But these

Words may be expounded *two* Ways, negatively and affirmatively. Negatively, After this Manner; I testify unto every Man which is circumcised, that he is bound to keep the whole Law, that is to say, that he performeth no Piece of the Law; yea, that in the very Work of Circumcision he is not circumcised, and even in the fulfilling of the Law he fulfilleth it not, but transgresseth it. And this seemeth to me to be the simple and true Meaning of *Paul* in this Place, Afterwards in *Chap. vi. 13.* he expoundeth himself, saying; *They themselves who are circumcised, keep not the Law.* So he saith also before in *Chap. iii. 10.* *Whoever are of the Works of the Law, are under the Curse.* As if he said; Altho' ye be circumcised, yet are ye not righteous and free from the Law; but by this Deed ye are rather Debtors and Bond-servants of the Law; and the more ye go about to satisfy the Law, and to be set free from it, the more ye intangle and snare yourselves in the Yoke thereof, so that it hath more Power to accuse and condemn you. This is to go backward like the Crab, and to wash away Filth with Filth.

And this which I say, by Occasion of *Paul's* Words, I have learned both in myself and others. I have seen many which have painfully travelled, and upon mere Conscience have done as much as was possible for them to do, in fasting, in Prayer, in wearing of Hair, in punishing and tormenting their Bodies with sundry Exercises (whereby at length they must needs have utterly consumed them, yea altho' they had been made of Iron) and all to this End that they might obtain Quietness and Peace of Conscience; notwithstanding the more they travelled, the more they were stricken down with Fear, and specially when the Hour of Death approached they were so fearful, that I have seen many Murderers, and other Malefactors condemned to Death, dying more courageously then they did, which notwithstanding had lived very holily.

Therefore it is most true, that they which do the Law, do it not. For the more they go about to fulfil the Law, the more they transgress it. Even so we say and judge of Mens Traditions. The more a Man striveth to pacify his Conscience thereby, the more he troubleth and tormenteth it. When I was a *Monk*, I endeavoured as much as was possible, to live after the strait Rule of mine Order, I was wont to shrieve myself with great Devotion, and to reckon up all my Sins (yet being always very contrite before) and I returned to Confession very often, and thoroughly performed the Penance that was enjoined unto me: Yet for all this my Conscience could never be fully certified, but was always in doubt, and said; This or that thou hast not done rightly, thou wast not contrite and sorrowful enough, this Sin thou didst omit in thy Confession, &c. Therefore the more I went about to help my weak, wavering and afflicted Conscience by Mens Traditions, the more weak and doubtful, and the more afflicted I was. And thus the more I observed Mens Traditions, the more I transgressed them, and in seeking after Righteousness by mine Order, I could never attain unto it; for it is impossible (as *Paul* saith) that the Conscience should be pacified by the Works of the

Law, and much more by Mens Traditions, without the Promise and glad Tidings concerning Christ.

Wherefore they that seek to be justified and quickned by the Law; are much further off from Righteousness and Life, then the Publicans, Sinners and Harlots. For they cannot trust their own Works, seeing they be such, that they cannot hope to obtain Grace and Forgiveness of Sins thereby. For if Righteousness and Works done according to the Law do not justify, How can Sins justify which are committed contrary to the Law? Therefore in this Point they are in far better Case then the *Justiciaries*; for they have no Affiance in their own Works, which greatly hindreth true Faith in Christ, if it do not utterly take it away. Contrariwise, the *Justiciaries* which abstain outwardly from Sins, and live holily and without blame in the Sight of the World, cannot be without the Opinion of their own Righteousness, with which the true Faith in Christ cannot stand; and for this Cause they be more miserable then the Publicans and Harlots, who offer not their good Works to God in his Displeasure, that for the same he may recompence them with everlasting Life (as the *Justiciaries* do,) for they have none to offer; but desire that their Sins may be pardoned for Christ's Sake, &c.

Confidence  
in Works ut-  
terly taketh  
away Faith,  
or at least hin-  
dreth it in us.

The other Exposition is affirmative; he that is circumcised, is also bound to keep the whole Law. For he that receiveth *Moses* in one Point, must of Necessity receive him in all. And it helpeth nothing to say, that Circumcision is necessary, and not the rest of *Moses's* Laws. For by the same Reason that thou art bound to keep Circumcision, thou art also bound to keep the whole Law. Now, to be bound to keep the whole Law is nothing else but to shew in Effect, that Christ is not yet come. If this be true, then are we bound to keep all the *Jewish* Ceremonies and Laws touching Meats, Places and Times; and Christ must be looked for as yet to come, that he may abolish the *Jewish* Kingdom and Priesthood, and set up a new Kingdom throughout the whole World. But the whole Scripture witnesseth, and the Sequel thereof plainly declareth that Christ is already come, that by his Death he hath redeemed Mankind, that he hath abolished the Law, and that he hath fulfilled all Things which all the Prophets have foretold of him. Therefore the Law being clean abolished and quite taken away, he hath given unto us Grace and Truth. It is not then the Law, nor the Works thereof, but it is Faith in Jesus Christ that maketh a Man righteous.

Some would bind us at this Day to certain of *Moses's* Laws that like them best, as the false Apostles would have done at that Time. But this is in no wise to be suffered. For if we give *Moses* leave to rule over us in any Thing, we are bound to obey him in all Things. Wherefore we will not be burdened with any Law of *Moses*. We grant that he is to be read amongst us, and to be heard as a Prophet and a Witness-bearer of Christ: And moreover, that out of him, we may take their Conscience.

Christians  
are free from  
the Policy of  
*Moses*, as  
good  
touching

good Examples of good Laws and holy Life. But we will not suffer him in any wise to have Dominion over our Conscience. In this Case let him be dead and buried, and let no Man know where his Grave is, *Deut. xxxiv. 6.*

The former Exposition, that is to say, the Negative seemeth to me to be more apt and more spiritual; notwithstanding both are good, and both do condemn the Righteousness of the Law. The *first* is, That we are so far from obtaining Righteousness by the Law, that the more we go about to accomplish the Law, the more we transgress the Law. The *second* is, That he which will perform any Piece of the Law, is bound to keep the whole Law. And to conclude, that Christ profiteth them nothing at all which will be justified by the Law.

Hereby it appeareth that *Paul* meaneth nothing else, but that the Law is a plain Denial of Christ. Now, it is a wonderful Thing that *Paul* dare affirm, that the Law of *Moses* which was given by God to the People of *Israel*, is a Denial of Christ. Why then did God give it? Before the Coming of Christ, and before his Manifestation in the Flesh, the Law was necessary. For the Law is our School-master to bring us unto Christ. But now that Christ is revealed, in that we believe in him, we are no longer under the School-master. Hereof we have spoken largely enough before the End of the 3<sup>d</sup> Chapter. Whoso teacheth then that the Law is necessary to Righteousness, teacheth a plain Denial of Christ and of all his Benefits, he maketh God a Liar, yea he maketh the Law also a Liar: For the Law itself beareth witness of Christ, and of the Promises made as concerning Christ, and hath foretold that he should be a King of Grace, and not of the Law.

*Verse 4. Christ is become of no Effect unto you, whosoever of you are justified by the Law; ye are fallen from Grace.*

Here *Paul* expoundeth himself, and sheweth that he speaketh not simply of the Law nor of the Work of Circumcision, but of the Confidence and Opinion that Men have to be justified thereby. As if he would say; I do not utterly condemn the Law or Circumcision, (for it is lawful for me to drink, to eat and to keep Company with the *Jews* according to the Law; It is lawful for me to circumcise *Timothy*) but to seek to be justified by the Law, as if Christ were not yet come, or being now present, he alone were not able to justify, this is it which I condemn; for this is to be separated from Christ. Therefore (saith he) ye are abolished; that is, ye are utterly void of Christ, Christ is not in you, he worketh not in you any more; Ye are not Partakers of the Knowledge, the Spirit, the Fellowship, the Favour, the Liberty, the Life, or the Doings of Christ, but ye are utterly separate from him, so that he hath no more to do with you, nor ye with him.

These Words of *Paul* are diligently to be noted; that to seek Righteousness by the Law, is nothing else but to be separated from Christ, and

and to make him utterly unprofitable. What can be spoken more mightily against the Law? What can be set against this Thunder-bolt? Wherefore it is impossible that Christ and the Law should dwell together in one Heart; for either the Law or Christ must give Place. But if thou think that Christ and the Law can dwell together, then thou art sure that Christ dwelleth not in thy Heart, but the Devil in the Likeness of Christ, accusing and terrifying thee, and traitly exacting of thee the Law, and the Works thereof. For the true Christ (as I said before) neither calleth thee to a Reckoning for thy Sins, nor biddeth thee to trust to thine own Works. And the true Knowledge of Christ or Faith disputeth not whether thou hast done good Works to Righteousness, or evil Works to Condemnation; but simply concludeth after this Sort: If thou have done good Works, thou art not therefore justified, or if thou have done evil Works, thou art not therefore condemned. I neither take from good Works their Praise, nor commend evil Works. But in the Matter of Justification, I say, we must look how we may hold Christ, lest if we seek to be justified by the Law we make him unprofitable unto us. For it is Christ alone that justifieth me both against my evil Deeds, and without my good Deeds. If I have this Perswasion of Christ, I lay hold of the true Christ. But if I think that he exacteth the Law and Works of me to Salvation, then he becometh unprofitable unto me, and I am utterly separated from him.

These are dreadful Sentences and Threatnings against the Righteousness of the Law and Man's own Righteousness. Moreover, they are also most certain Principles which confirm the Article of Justification. This is then the final Conclusion: Either thou must forgo Christ, or the Righteousness of the Law. If thou retain Christ, thou art righteous before God; but if thou stick to the Law, Christ availeth thee nothing: Thou art bound to keep the whole Law, and thou hast now Sentence already pronounced against thee, *Cursed be he that confirmeth not all the Words of this Law to do them*, Deut. xxvii. 26. As we have said of the Law, so we say also of Mens Traditions. Either the Pope with his religious Rout must reject all those Things wherein hitherto he hath put his Trust, or else Christ shall be unprofitable to them. And hereby we may plainly see how pernicious and pestilent the Popish Doctrine hath been. For it hath led Men clean away from Christ, and made him altogether unprofitable. God complaineth in the 23<sup>d</sup> of *Jeremiah*, that the Prophets prophesied Lies and the Dreams of their own Heart, to the End that his People should forget his Name. Therefore like as the false Prophets leaving the right Interpretation of the Law, and the true Doctrine concerning the Seed of *Abraham*, in whom all Nations of the Earth should be blessed, preached their own Dreams, to the End that the People should forget their God; even so the *Papists* having darkned and defaced the Doctrine of Christ, so that they made it of none Effect, taught and set forth nothing else but the Doctrine of Works; whereby they drew the whole World away from Christ. Whoso earnestly considereth this Matter, cannot but fear and tremble.

Verse 4. *Ye are fallen from Grace.*

That is to say: Ye are no longer in the Kingdom of Grace. For like as he that is in a Ship, on which Side soever he falleth into the Sea, is drowned; even so he which is fallen from Grace must needs perish. He therefore that will be justified by the Law is fallen into the Sea, and hath cast himself into Danger of eternal Death: Now, if they fall from Grace which will be justified by the moral Law; Whither shall they fall (I pray you) which will be justified by their own Traditions and Vows? Even to the Bottom of Hell. No forsooth; they fly up into Heaven; for so they themselves have taught us. Whosoever live (say they) according to the Rule of *S. Francis, Dominick, Benedict* or such other, the Peace and Mercy of God is upon them. Again, All they that observe and keep Chastity, Obedience, &c. shall have everlasting Life. But let these Toys go to the Devil from whence they came, and hearken what *Paul* teacheth thee here; and what *Christ* teacheth, saying; *He that believeth on the Son, hath everlasting Life: And he that believeth not the Son, shall not see Life: But the Wrath of God abideth on him,* John iii. 36. Again, *He that believeth not is condemned already,* Ver. 18.

The Pope's Kingdom is grounded upon Mens Traditions.

Now like as all the Doctrine of the *Papists* (to note this by the Way) concerning Mens Traditions, Works, Vows, and Merits, was most common in the World; so was it thought to be the best and most certain of all others; whereby the Devil hath both set up and established his Kingdom most mightily. Therefore when we at this Day do impugn and vanquish this Doctrine by the Power of God's Word, as Chaff is driven away by the Wind, it is no marvel that Satan rageth so cruelly against us, raiseth up Slanders and Offences every where, and setteth the whole World in our Tops. Then, will some Man say: It had been better to have held our Peace, for then had none of these Evils been raised up. But we ought more to esteem the Favour of God, whose Glory we set forth, then to care for the Tyranny of the World which persecuteth us. For what is the Pope and the whole World in Comparison of God? Indeed we are weak, and bare an heavenly Treasure in brittle and earthly Vessels, *2 Cor. iv. 7.* but altho' the Vessels be never so brittle, yet is the Treasure inestimable.

These Words, *Ye are fallen from Grace*, must not be coldly or slenderly considered; for they are weighty and of great Importance. He that falleth from Grace, utterly loseth the Attonement, the Forgiveness of Sins, the Righteousness, Liberty and Life that *Jesus Christ* hath merited for us by his Death and Resurrection; and in Stead thereof he purchaseth to himself the Wrath and Judgment of God, Sin, Death, the Bondage of the Devil and everlasting Damnation. And this Place strongly confirmeth and fortifieth our Doctrine concerning Faith or the Article of Justification, and marvellously comforteth us against the cruel Rage of the *Papists*, that persecute and condemn us as Hereticks, because we teach

uch this Article. Indeed this Place ought to fear the Enemies of Faith and Grace, that is to say, all that seek Righteousness by Works, and persecuting and blaspheming the Word of Grace, Life and everlasting Salvation. But they be so hard-hearted and obstinate, that seeing they see not, and hearing they hear not, and when they read this dreadful Sentence of the Apostle pronounced against them, they understand it not. Let us leave them therefore unto themselves: *For they are blind Leaders of the Blind*, Matth. xv. 14.

*Verse 5. For we through the Spirit wait for the Hope of Righteousness by Faith.*

Paul here knitteth up the Matter with a notable Conclusion, saying: We will be justified by the Law, by Circumcision and by Works; but we seek not to be justified by this Means, lest Christ should be made utterly unprofitable unto us, and we become Debtors to perform the whole Law, and so finally fall away from Grace; but we wait in Spirit thro' Faith for the Hope of Righteousness. Every Word is here diligently to be noted, for they are pithy and full of Power. He doth not only say, as he is wont: We are justified by Faith, or in Spirit by Faith, but moreover he addeth; *We wait for the Hope of Righteousness*, including Hope also, that he may comprehend the whole Matter of Faith.

Hope, after the Manner of the Scriptures, is taken two Ways, namely, for the Thing that is hoped for, and for the Affection of him that hopeth. For the Thing that is hoped for, it is taken in the 1st Chapter to the *Colossians*; *For the Hope's Sake which is laid up for you in Heaven*; that is to say, the Thing which ye hope for. For the Affection of him that hopeth, it is taken in the 8th Chapter to the *Romans*, *For we are saved by Hope*. So Hope in this Place also may be taken two Ways, and so it yieldeth a double Sense: The *first* is: We wait in Spirit thro' Faith for the Hope of Righteousness; that is to say, the Righteousness hoped for, which shall be certainly revealed in such Time as it pleaseth the Lord to give it. The *second*: We wait in Spirit by Faith for Righteousness with Hope and Desire; that is to say, we are righteous; howbeit our Righteousness is not yet revealed, but hangeth yet in Hope. For as long as we live here, Sin remaineth in our Flesh; there is also a Law in our Flesh and Members, rebelling against the Law of our Mind, and leading us Captives unto the Service of Sin, *Rom. vii. 23*. Now when these Affections of the Flesh do rage and reign, and we on the other Side do thro' the Spirit wrestle against the same, then there is a Place for Hope. Indeed we have begun to be justified thro' Faith; whereby also we have received the first Fruits of the Spirit, and the Mortification of the Flesh is also begun in us; but we be not yet perfectly righteous. It remaineth then that we be perfectly justified, and this is it which we hope for. So our Righteousness is not yet in actual Possession, but lieth under Hope.

This is a sweet and a sound Consolation, whereby afflicted and troubled Consciences feeling their Sin and terrified with every fiery Dart of the Devil, may be marvellously comforted. For the Feeling of Sin, the Wrath of God, Death, Hell and all other Terrors, are wonderful strong in the Conflict of Conscience; as I myself being taught by Experience do know. Then Counsel must be given to the poor Afflicted in this wise: Brother thou desirest to have a sensible Feeling of thy Justification; that is, thou wouldst have such a Feeling of God's Favour, as thou hast of thine own Sin; but that will not be. But thy

Righteousness ought to surmount all Feeling of Sin; The Righteousness of that is to say, thy Righteousness or Justification whereupon thou holdest, standeth not upon thine own Feeling, but upon thy hoping that it shall be revealed when the Faithful standeth not it pleaseth the Lord. Wherefore thou must not judge in Feeling. according to the Feeling of Sin which troubleth and terrifieth thee, but according to the Promise and Doctrine of

Faith, whereby Christ is promised unto thee who is thy perfect and everlasting Righteousness. Thus the Hope of the Afflicted consisteth in the inward Affection, is stirred up by Faith in the Midst of all Terrors and Feeling of Sin, to hope that he is righteous. Moreover, if Hope be here taken for the Thing which is hoped for, it is thus to be understood, that that which a Man now seeth not, he hopeth in Time shall be made perfect and clearly revealed.

Either Sense may well stand; but the first touching the inward Desire and Affection of hoping, bringeth more plentiful Consolation. For my Righteousness is not yet perfect, it cannot yet be felt; yet I do not despair: For Faith sheweth unto me Christ in whom I trust, and when I have laid hold of him by Faith, I wrestle against the fiery Darts of the Devil, and I take a good Heart thro' Hope against the Feeling of Sin, assuring myself that I have a perfect Righteousness prepared for me in Heaven. So both these Sayings are true, that I am made righteous already by that Righteousness which is begun in me; and also I am raised up in the same Hope against Sin, and wait for the full Consummation of perfect Righteousness in Heaven. These Things are not rightly understood, but when they be put in Practice.

The Difference between Faith and Hope. Here ariseth a Question, what Difference there is between Faith and Hope. The *Sophisters* and School-Men have laboured very much in this Matter, but they could never shew any certainly. Yea, to us which travel in the holy Scriptures with much Diligence, and also with more Fulness and Power of Spirit, (be it spoken without any Brag) it is hard to find any Difference. For there is so great Affinity between Faith and Hope, that the one cannot be separate from the other. Notwithstanding there is a Difference between them, which is gathered of their several Offices, Diversity of Working, and of their Ends.

First, They differ in respect of their Subject, that is, of the Ground wherein they rest: For Faith resteth in the Understanding, and Hope resteth in the Will; but in very deed they cannot be separated, the one have

giving Respect to the other, as the two Cherubims of the Mercy-seat, which could not be divided, *Exod. xxv. 20.*

*Secondly*, They differ in respect of their Office, that is, of their Working. Faith telleth what is to be done, it teacheth, prescribeth, and directeth, and it is a Knowledge. Hope is an Exhortation which stirreth up the mind that it may be strong, bold, and couragious; that it may suffer and endure Adversity, and in the Midst thereof wait for better Things.

*Thirdly*, They differ as touching their Object, that is, the special Matter whereunto they look. For Faith hath for her Object the Truth, teaching us to cleave surely thereto, and looketh upon the Word and promise of the Thing that is promised. Hope hath for her Object the goodness of God, and looketh upon the Thing which is promised in the Word, that is, upon such Matters as Faith teacheth us to be hoped

*Fourthly*, They differ in Order: For Faith is the Beginning of Life before all Tribulation, *Heb. xi. 1.* But Hope cometh afterwards, proceeding of Tribulation, *Rom. v. 3.*

*Fifthly*, They differ by the Diversity of Working: For Faith is a Teacher and a Judge, fighting against Errors and Heresies, judging Spirits and doctrines: But Hope is as it were the General or Captain of the Field, fighting against Tribulation, the Cross, Impatiency, Heaviness of Spirit, Weakness Desperation and Blasphemy, and it waiteth for good things even in the Midst of all Evils.

Therefore, when I am instructed by Faith in the Word of God, and I hold of Christ, believing in him with the whole Heart, then am I righteous by this Knowledge. When I am so justified by Faith or by this Knowledge, by and by cometh the Devil the Father of Lies, and boureth to extinguish my Faith by Wiles and Subtilties; that is to say, by Lies, Errors and Heresies. Moreover, because he is a Murderer, he goeth about also to oppress it by Violence. Here Hope wrestling, holdeth on the Thing revealed by Faith, and overcometh the Devil that warreth against Faith; and after this Victory followeth Peace and Joy in the Holy Ghost; So that in very deed Faith and Hope can scarcely be discerned the one from the other, and yet is there a certain Difference between them. And that it may be the better perceived, I will set out the Matter by a Similitude.

In civil Government, Prudence and Fortitude do differ, and yet these two Vertues are so joined together, that they cannot easily be severed. Now, Fortitude is a Constancy of Mind, which is not discouraged in Adversity, but endureth valiantly, and waiteth for better Things. But if Fortitude be not guided by Prudence, it is but Temerity and Rashness. On the other Side, if Fortitude be not joined with Prudence, that Prudence is but in vain and unprofitable. Therefore like as in Policy, Prudence is but vain without Fortitude; even so in Divinity, Faith without Hope is nothing: For Hope endureth Adversity, and is constant therein, and in the End overcometh all Evils.

The Difference between Faith and Hope in Divinity, is the same

And that is between Fortitude and Prudence in Policy.

And on the other Side, likeas Fortitude without Prudence is Rashness, even so Hope without Faith is a Presumption in Spirit, and a tempting of God ; for it hath no Knowledge of Christ and of the Truth which Faith teacheth, and therefore it is but a blind Rashness and Arrogancy. Wherefore a godly Man afore all Things, must have a right Understanding instructed by Faith, according to the which the Mind may be guided in Affliction, that it may hope for those good Things which Faith hath revealed and taught.

To be short, Faith is conceived by teaching ; for thereby the Mind is instructed what the Truth is. Hope is conceived by Exhortation ; for by Exhortation Hope is stirred up in Afflictions, which confirmeth him that is already justified by Faith, that he be not overcome by Adversities, but that he may be able more strongly to resist them. Notwithstanding, if the Spark of Faith should not give Light to the Will, it could not be perswaded to lay hold upon Hope. We have Faith then, whereby we are taught, we understand and know the heavenly Wisdom, apprehend Christ, and continue in his Grace. But as soon as we lay hold upon Christ by Faith, and confess him, forthwith our Enemies, the World, the Flesh and the Devil rise up against us, hating and persecuting us most cruelly both in Body and Spirit. Wherefore we thus believing and justified by Faith in Spirit, do wait for the Hope of our Righteousness ; And we wait thro' Patience ; for we see and feel the flat contrary. For the World with his Prince the Devil, assaileth us mightily both within and without. Moreover, Sin yet still remaineth in us, which driveth us into Heaviness. Notwithstanding we give not over for all this, but raise up our Minds strongly thro' Faith, which lightneth, teacheth and guideth the same. And thus we abide firm and constant, and overcome all Adversities thro' him which hath loved us, until our Righteousness which we believe and wait for, be revealed. By Faith therefore we began, by Hope we continue, and by Revelation we shall obtain the whole. In the mean Time whilst we live here, because we believe, we teach the Word and publish the Knowledge of Christ unto others. Thus doing we suffer Persecution (according to this Text ; *I believed, therefore have I spoken ; I was greatly afflicted,* Psal. cxvi. 10.) with Patience, being strengthened and encouraged thro' Hope ; whereunto the Scripture exhorteth us with most sweet and comfortable Promises taught and revealed unto us by Faith. And thus doth Hope spring up and increase in us, *That we through Patience and Comfort of the Scriptures might have Hope,* Rom. xv. 4.

Paul therefore, not without Cause joineth Patience in Tribulations, and Hope together, in the 5th and 8th to the *Romans*, and in other Places also, for by them Hope is stirred up. But Faith (as also I have shewed before) goeth before Hope ; for it is the Beginning of Life, and beginneth before all Tribulation ; for it learneth Christ and apprehendeth him without the Cross. Notwithstanding the Knowledge of Christ cannot be long without the Cross, without Troubles and Conflicts. In this Case the Mind must be stirred up to a Fortitude of Spirit (For Hope is nothing else but a spiritual Fortitude, as Faith is nothing else but a spi-

ritual

ual Pudence) which consisteth in suffering, according to this Saying ; *that through Patience, &c.* These three Things then dwell together in the Faithful ; Faith which teacheth the Truth, and defendeth from Errors ; Hope which endureth and overcome all Adversities, as well bodily as ghostly ; And Charity which worketh all good Things, as it sheweth in the Text. And so is a Man entire and perfect in this Life, well within as without, until the Righteousness be revealed which he meriteth for ; and this shall be a perfect and an everlasting Righteousness. Moreover, this Place containeth both a singular Doctrine and Consolation. As touching the Doctrine, it sheweth that we are made righteous, not by the Works, Sacrifices or Ceremonies of *Moses's* Law, much less by the Works and Traditions of Men, but by Christ alone. Whatever is in us besides him, is of the Flesh and not of the Spirit. Whatever then the World counteth to be good and holy without Christ, is nothing else but Sin, Error, and Flesh. Wherefore Circumcision and the Observation of the Law ; also the Works, Religions and Vows of the *Monks* and of all such as trust in their own Righteousness, are altogether carnal. But we (saith *Paul*) are far above all these Things in the Spirit and inward Man : For we possess Christ by Faith, and in the midst of our Afflictions thro' Hope we wait for that Righteousness which we possess already by Faith.

The Comfort is this, that in serious Conflicts and Terrors, wherein the Feeling of Sin, Heaviness of Spirit, Desperation and such like, is very strong (for they enter deeply into the Heart, and mightily assail it) thou must not follow thine own Feeling. For if thou do, thou wilt perish ; I feel the horrible Terrors of the Law and the Tyranny of Sin, not only rebelling against me, but also subduing and leading me Captive, and I feel no Comfort or Righteousness at all. Therefore I am a Sinner and not righteous. If I be a Sinner, then am I guilty of everlasting Death. But against this Feeling thou must wrestle, and say ; Altho' I feel myself utterly overwhelmed and swallowed up with Sin, and my Heart telleth me that God is offended and angry with me, yet in very deed it is not true, but that mine own Sense and Feeling so judgeth. The Word of God (which in these Terrors I ought to follow, and not mine own Sense) teacheth a far other Thing ; namely, *that God is nigh unto them that are of a broken Heart, and saveth such as be of a contrite Spirit*, Psal. xxxiv. 18. Also, *He despiseth not an humble and a contrite Heart*, Psal. li. 17. Moreover, *Paul* sheweth here, that they which are justified in Spirit by Faith, do not yet feel the Hope of Righteousness, but wait still for it.

Wherefore when the Law accuseth and Sin terrifieth thee, and thou seekest nothing but the Wrath and Judgment of God, despair not for all that, but take unto thee the Armour of God, the Shield of Faith, the Helmet of Hope, and the Sword of the Spirit, and try how good and how valiant a Warriour thou art. Lay hold of Christ by Faith, who is the Lord of the Law and Sin, and of all Things else which accompany them. Believing in him they are justified ; which Thing Reason and

A sweet  
Consolation  
in Anguish  
and Trouble  
of Conscience.

and the Feeling of thine own Heart when thou art tempted, do not tell thee, but the Word of God. Moreover, in the Midst of these Conflicts and Terrors which often return and exercise thee, wait thou patiently thro' Hope for Righteousness, which thou hast now by Faith, altho' it be yet but begun and imperfect, until it be revealed and made perfect in the Kingdom of Heaven.

**Our Righteousness** But thou wilt say; I feel not myself to have any Righteousness, or at the least, I feel it but very little. Thou must not feel, but believe that thou hast Righteousness. And except thou believe that thou art righteous, thou dost great Injury unto Christ, who hath cleansed thee by the washing of Water thro' the Word, *Eph. v. 26.* who also died upon the Cross, *1 Cor. xv. 3.* condemned Sin

and killed Death, that thro' him thou mightst obtain Righteousness and everlasting Life. These Things thou canst not deny, (except thou wilt openly shew thyself to be wicked and blasphemous against God, and utterly to despise God, all his Promises, Jesus Christ with all his Benefits) and so consequently thou canst not deny but that thou art righteous.

Let us learn therefore in great and horrible Terrors, when our Conscience feeleth nothing but Sin, and judgeth that God is angry with us, and that Christ hath turned his Face from us, not to follow the Sense and Feeling of our own Heart, but to stick to the Word of God, which saith that God is not angry, but looketh to the Afflicted and to such as are troubled in Spirit, and tremble at his Word, *Isa. lxvi. 2.* and that Christ turneth not himself away from such as labour and are heavy laden, but refresheth and comforteth them, *Matth. xi. 28.* This Place therefore teacheth plainly, that the Law and Works bring unto us no Righteousness or Comfort at all; but this doth the Holy Ghost only in the Faith of Christ, who raiseth up Hope in Terrors and Tribulations, which endureth and overcometh all Adversities. Very few there be that know how weak and feeble Faith and Hope are under the Cross, and in the Conflict. For it seemeth they are but as smoking Flax, *Isa. xlii. 3.* which is ready by and by to be put out with a vehement Wind. But the Faithful, who believe in the Midst of these Assaults and Terrors, hoping against Hope; that is to say, fighting thro' Faith in the Promise as touching Christ, against the Feeling of Sin and of the Wrath of God; do afterwards find by Experience, that this Spark of Faith being very little (as it appeareth to natural Reason; for Reason can scarcely feel it) is as a mighty Fire, and swalloweth up all our Sins and all our Errors.

**The Treasure of the Faithful.**

There is nothing more dear or precious in all the World to the true Children of God, then this Doctrine. For they that understand this Doctrine, do know that whereof all the World is ignorant; namely, that Sin, Death and all other Miseries, Afflictions and Calamities, as well corporal as spiritual, do turn to the Benefit and Profit of the Elect. Moreover, they know that God is then most near unto them, when he seemeth to be farthest off, and that he is then a most merciful and loving Saviour,

when

when he seemeth to be most angry, to afflict and to destroy. Also they know that they have an everlasting Righteousness, which they wait for thro' Hope, as a certain and sure Possession laid up for them in Heaven, even when they feel the horrible Terrors of Sin and Death : Moreover, that they are then lords of all Things, when they are most destitute of Things, according to that Saying, *Having nothing, and yet possessing Things*, 2 Cor. vi. 10. This (saith the Scripture) is to conceive comfort thro' Hope. But this Cunning is not learned without great and often Temptations.

*Verse 6. For in Jesus Christ neither Circumcision availeth any Thing, nor Uncircumcision, but Faith which worketh by Love.*

That is to say, Faith which is not feigned nor hypocritical, but true and lively. This is that Faith which exerciseth and requireth good Works thro' Love. It is as much to say as ; He that will be a true Christian indeed, or one of Christ's Kingdom, must be a true Believer. Now, he believeth not truly if Works of Charity follow not his Faith. So on both Hands, as well on the Right-hand as on the Left, he shutteth Hypocrites out of Christ's Kingdom. On the Left-hand he shutteth out the *Jews*, and all such as will work their own Salvation, saying ; *In Christ neither Circumcision*, that is to say, no Works, no Service, no Worshipping, no kind of Life in the World, but Faith without any Trust in Works or Merits availeth before God. On the Right-hand he shutteth out all slothful and idle Persons, which say ; If Faith justify without Works, then let us work nothing, but let us only believe and do what we list. Not so, ye Enemies of Grace : *Paul* saith otherwise. And altho' it be true that only Faith justifieth, yet he speaketh here of Faith in another Respect, that is to say, that after it hath justified, it is not idle, but occupied and exercised in working thro' Love. *Paul* therefore in this Place setteth forth the whole Life of a Christian Man, namely, that inwardly it consisteth in Faith towards God, and outwardly in Charity and good Works towards our Neighbour. So that a Man is a perfect Christian inwardly thro' Faith before God, who hath no Need of our Works, and outwardly before Men, whom our Faith profiteth nothing, but our Charity or our Works. Therefore when we have heard or understood of this Form of Christian Life ; *to wit*, that it is Faith and Charity (as I have said) it is not yet declared what Faith or what Charity is ; for this is another Question. For touching Faith, or the inward Nature, Force, and Use of Faith, he hath spoken before, where he shewed that it is our Righteousness, or rather our Justification before God. Here he joineth it with Charity and Works, that is to say, he speaketh of the external Office thereof, which

which is to stir us up to do good Works, and to bring forth in us the Fruits of Charity to the Profit of our Neighbour.

**Verse 7.** *Ye did run well, Who did hinder you, that ye should not obey the Truth?*

These are plain Words, *Paul* affirmeth that he teacheth them the Truth, and the self-same Thing that he taught them before, and that they ran well so long as they obeyed the Truth, that is, they believed and lived rightly; but now they do not so, since they were misled by the false Apostles. Moreover, he useth here a new Kind of Speech, in calling the Christian Life a Course or a Race. For among the *Hebrews*, to run or to walk, signifieth as much as to live or to be conversant. The Teachers do run when they teach purely, and the Hearers or Learners do run when they receive the Word with Joy, and when the Fruits of the Spirit do follow. Which Thing was done as long as *Paul* was present, as he witnessed before in the 3<sup>d</sup> and 4<sup>th</sup> Chapters. And here he saith; *Ye did run well*; that is to say, all Things went forward well and happily among you, ye lived very well, ye went on the right Way to everlasting Life, which the Word of God promised you, &c.

These Words; *Ye did run well*, contain in them a singular Comfort. This Tentation oftentimes exerciseth the Godly, that their Life seemeth unto them to be rather a certain slow creeping, then a running. But if they abide in sound Doctrine, and walk in the Spirit, let this nothing trouble them, tho' their Doings seem to go slowly forward, or rather creep, God judgeth far otherwise. For that which seemeth unto us to be very slow and scarcely to creep, runneth swiftly in God's Sight. Again, that which is to us nothing else but Sorrow, Mourning and Death, is before God Joy, Mirth and true Happiness. Therefore Christ saith, *Blessed are ye that mourn; for ye shall be comforted*, Matth. v. 4. *Ye shall laugh*, &c. Luke vi. 21. All Things shall turn to the best to them which believe in the Son of God, be it Sorrow, or be it Death itself. Therefore they be true Runners indeed, and whatsoever they do, it runneth well and goeth happily forward by the Furtherance of God's Spirit, which cannot skill of slow Proceedings.

**Verse 7.** *Who did hinder you, that ye should not obey the Truth?*

They are hindered in this Course which fall away from Faith and Grace to the Law and Works; as it happeneth to the *Galatians*, being misled and seduced by the false Apostles, whom covertly he reprehendeth with these Words; *Who did hinder you, that ye should not obey the Truth?* Gal. iii. 7. In like Manner, he said before in the 3<sup>d</sup> Chapter, *Who hath bewitched you, that you should not obey the Truth?* And here *Paul* sheweth

y the Way, that Men are so strongly bewitched with false Doctrine, that they embrace Lies and Heresies in the Stead of the Truth and spiritual Doctrine. And on the other Side, they say and swear that the sound Doctrine which before they loved, is erroneous; and that their Error is sound Doctrine, maintaining and defending the same with all their Power. Even so the false Apostles brought the *Galatians* (which were well at the beginning) into this Opinion, to believe that they erred and went very slowly forward when *Paul* was their Teacher. But afterwards they being seduced by the false Apostles, and falling clean away from the Truth, were so strongly bewitched with their false Perswasions, that they thought themselves to be in an happy State, and that they ran very well. The same happeneth at this Day to such as are seduced by the Sectaries and fantastical Spirits. Therefore I am wont to say, that falling in Doctrine cometh not of Man, but of the Devil, and is most perilous; to wit, even from the high Heavens to the Bottom of Hell. For they that continue in Error, are so far off from acknowledging their Error, that they maintain the same to be high Righteousness. Wherefore it is impossible for them to obtain Pardon.

Verse 8. *This Perswasion cometh not of him that calleth you.*

This is a great Consolation and a singular Doctrine, whereby *Paul* sheweth how the false Perswasions of such as are deceived by wicked Teachers, may be rooted out of their Hearts. The Author of the false Apostles were jolly Fellows, and in outward Appearance far passing *Paul* both in Learning and Godliness. The *Galatians* being deceived with this goodly Shew, supposed that when they heard them, they heard Christ himself, and therefore they judged their Perswasion to be of Christ. Contrariwise, *Paul* sheweth that this Perswasion and Doctrine was not of Christ, who had called them in Grace, but of the Devil; and by this means he won many of them from this false Perswasion. Likewise we at this Day revoke many from Error that were seduced, when we shew that their Opinions are fantastical, wicked and full of Blasphemies. Again, this Consolation pertaineth to all those that are afflicted, which thro' Temptation conceive a false Opinion of Christ. For the Devil is a marvellous Perswader, and knoweth how to amplify the least Sin, to a very Trifle, in such Sort that he which is tempted shall think it to be a most hainous and horrible Crime, and worthy of eternal Damnation. Here the troubled Conscience must be comforted and raised up in such Sort as *Paul* raised up the *Galatians*; to wit, that this Cogitation or Perswasion cometh not of Christ, forasmuch as it fighteth against the Word of the Gospel; which painteth out Christ, not as an Accuser, a cruel Exactor, &c. but as a meek humble-hearted, and a merciful Saviour and Comforter.

But if Satan (who is a cunning Workman, and will leave no Way un-  
C c 2  
essayd)

effayed) overthrow this, and lay against thee the Word and Example of Christ in this wise : True it is, that Christ is meek, gentle and merciful; but to those which are holy and righteous : Contrariwise, to the Sinners he threatneth Wrath and Destruction, *Luke xiii. 27.* Also he pronounceth that the Unbelievers are damned already, *John iii. 18.* Moreover, Christ wrought many good Works ; he suffered also many Evils, and commandeth us to follow his Example. But thy Life is neither according to Christ's Word, nor his Example : For thou art a Sinner, and there is no Faith in thee : Yea, thou hast done no Good at all, and therefore those Sentences which set forth Christ as a severe Judge, do belong to thee, and not those comfortable Sentences which shew him to be a loving and a merciful Saviour, &c. Here let him that is tempted, comfort himself after this Manner.

**Christ is set out in the Scripture as an Example, and as a Gift.**

The Scripture setteth out Christ unto us two Manner of Ways. *First*, as a Gift ; If I take hold of him in this Sort, I can want nothing ; *For in Christ are hid all the Treasures of Wisdom and Knowledge*, Col. ii. 3. He, with all that is in him, is made unto me of God, Wisdom, Righteousness, Sanctification, and Redemption, *1 Cor. i. 30.*

Therefore altho' I have committed both many and grievous Sins ; yet notwithstanding if I believe in him, they shall all be swallowed up by his Righteousness. *Secondly*, The Scripture setteth him forth as an Example to be followed. Notwithstanding I will not suffer this Christ ( I mean as he is an Example ) to be set before me, but only in the Time of Joy and Gladness when I am out of Tentation (where I can scarcely follow the thousand Part of his Example) that I may have him as a Mirrour to behold and view how much is yet wanting in me, that I become not secure and careless. But in the Time of Tribulation I will not hear nor admit Christ, but as a Gift, who dying for my Sins, hath bestowed upon me his Righteousness, and hath done and accomplished that for me, which was wanting in my Life ; *For he is the End of the Law for Righteousness to every one that believeth*, Rom. x. 4.

It is good to know these Things, not only to the End that every one of us may have a sure and a certain Remedy in the Time of Tentation whereby we may eschew that Venom of Desperation, wherewith Satan thinketh to poison us ; but also to the End we may be able to resist the furious Sectaries and Schismatics of our Time. For the *Anabaptists* count nothing more glorious in their whole Doctrine, then that they feverely urge the Example of Christ and the Cross ; especially seeing the Sentences are manifest wherein Christ commendeth the Cross to his Disciples. We must learn therefore how we may withstand this Satan transforming himself into the Likeness of an Angel : Which we shall do if we make a Difference between Christ set forth unto us sometimes as a Gift, and sometimes as an Example. The Preaching of him both Ways hath his convenient Time, which if it be not observed, the Preaching of Salvation may be turned into Poison. Christ therefore must be set forth unto those which are already cast down and bruised thro' the heavy Weight and Burden of their Sins, as a Saviour and a Gift, and not

an Example of a Law-giver. But to those that are secure and obstinate, he must be set forth as an Example. Also the hard Sentences of the Scripture, and the horrible Examples of the Wrath of God must be layed before them; as of the drowning of the whole World, of the Destruction of *Sodom* and *Gomorrhah*, and such other like, that they may repent. Let every Christian therefore when he is terrified and afflicted, learn to cast away the false Perswasions which he hath conceived of Christ, and let him say; O cursed Satan, Why dost thou now dispute with me of Doing and Working, seeing I am terrified and afflicted for my Sins already? Nay rather, seeing I now labour and am heavy loaden, *Matth. xi. 28.* I will not hearken to thee which art an Accuser and a Destroyer, but to Christ the Saviour of Mankind, which saith, that he came into the World to save Sinners, to comfort such as are in Terror, Anguish and Desperation, and to preach Deliverance to the Captives, &c. This is the true Christ, and there is none other but he. I can seek Examples of holy Life of *Abraham*, *Isaiah*, *John Baptist*, *Paul* and other Saints; but they cannot forgive my Sins, they cannot deliver me from the Power of the Devil and from Death, they cannot save me and give me everlasting Life. For these Things belong to Christ alone, whom God the Father hath sealed; therefore I will not hear thee nor acknowledge thee for my Teacher, O Satan, but Christ, of whom the Father hath said; *This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased: Hear ye him, Matth. xvii. 5.* Let us learn in this wise to comfort ourselves thro' Faith in Tentation, and in the Perswasion of false Doctrine; else the Devil will either seduce us by his Ministers, or kill us with his fiery Darts.

Verse 9. *A little Leaven leaveneth the whole Lump.*

This whole Epistle sufficiently witnesseth how *Paul* was grieved with the Fall of the *Galatians*, and how often he beat into their Heads (sometimes chiding, and sometimes intreating them) the exceeding great and horrible Enormities that should ensue upon this their Fall, unless they repented. This fatherly and Apostolical Care and Admonition of *Paul* moved some of them nothing at all: For many of them acknowledged *Paul* no more for their Teacher, but preferred the false Apostles far above him; of whom they thought themselves to have received the true Doctrine, and not of *Paul*. Moreover, the false Apostles (no doubt) slandered *Paul* among the *Galatians*, saying that he was an obstinate and contentious Fellow, which for a light Matter would break the Unity of the Churches, and for no other Cause, but that he alone would be counted and be magnified of them. Thro' this false Accusation they made *Paul* very odious unto many.

Some other which had not yet utterly forsaken his Doctrine, thought that there was no Danger in dissenting a little from him in the Doctrine of Justification and Faith. Wherefore when they heard that *Paul* made it so dangerous a Matter of that which seemed unto them to be but light and small Importance, they marvelled, and thus they thought with

themselves: Be it so that we have swarved something from the Doctrine of *Paul*, and that there hath been some Fault in us: yet that being but a small Matter, he ought to wink thereat, or at least not so vehemently to amplify it, lest by the Occasion thereof the Concord of the Churches should be broken. Whereunto he answereth with this Sentence: *A little Leaven leaveneth [or maketh sour] the whole Lump of Dough.* And this is a Caveat or Admonition which *Paul* standeth much upon. And we also ought greatly to esteem the same at this Day. For our Adversaries in like Manner object against us, that we are contentious, obstinate, and intractable in defending our Doctrine, and even in Matters of no great Importance. But these are the crafty Fetches of the Devil, whereby he goeth about utterly to overthrow our Doctrine. To this we answer therefore with *Paul*, that *a little Leaven maketh sour the whole Lump.*

In Philosophy, a small Fault in the Beginning, is a great and foul Fault in the End. So in Divinity, one little Error overthroweth the whole Doctrine. Wherefore we must separate Life and Doctrine far asunder. The Doctrine is not ours, but God's, whose Ministers only we are called; therefore we may not change or diminish one Title thereof: The Life is ours; therefore as touching that, we are ready to do, to suffer, to forgive, &c. Whatsoever our Adversaries shall require of us, so that Faith and Doctrine may remain sound and uncorrupt; of the which we say always with *Paul*; *A little Leaven leaveneth, &c.*

A small Mote in the Eye hurteth the Eye. And our Saviour Christ saith; *The Light of the Body is the Eye: Therefore when thine Eye is single, thy whole Body also is full of Light: But when thine Eye is evil, thy Body also is full of Darkness,* Luke xi. 34. Again: *If thy whole Body therefore be full of Light, having no Part dark, the whole shall be full of Light,* Ver. 36. By this Allegory Christ signifieth that the Eye, that is to say, the Doctrine ought to be most simple, clear and sincere, having in it no Darkness, no Cloud, &c. And *James* the Apostle saith; *He that offendeth in one Point, is guilty of all,* Chap. ii. 10. This Place therefore maketh very much for us against these Cavaliers, which say, that we break Charity, to the great Hurt and Damage of the Churches. But we protest that we desire nothing more then to be at Unity with all Men; so that they leave unto us the Doctrine of Faith entire and uncorrupt; to the which all Things ought to give Place, be it Charity, an Apostle, or an Angel from Heaven.

Let us suffer them therefore to extol Charity and Concord as much as they list; but on the other Side, let us magnify the Majesty of the Word and Faith. Charity may be neglected in Time and Place without any Danger; but so cannot the Word and Faith be. Charity suffereth all Things, giveth Place to all Men, 1 Cor. xiii. 4. Contrari-

wise, Faith suffereth nothing, giveth Place to no Man.

Charity may be deceived, Charity in giving Place, in Believing, in Giving and Forgiving; is oftentimes deceived, and yet notwithstanding being so deceived, it suffereth no Loss which is to be called true Loss indeed, that is to say, it loseth not Christ.

Therefore

Therefore it is not offended, but continueth still constant in Well-doing, yea even towards the Unthankful and Unworthy. Contrariwise, in the Matter of Faith and Salvation, when Men teach Lies and Errors under the Colour of the Truth, and seduce many, here hath Charity no Place: For here we lose not any Benefit bestowed upon the Unthankful, but we lose the Word, Faith, Christ and everlasting Life. Let it not move us therefore that they urge so much the keeping of Charity and Concord: For whoso loveth not God and his Word, it is no Matter what or how much he loveth.

When we must exercise Charity, and when not,

Paul therefore, by this Sentence admonisheth, as well Teachers as Hearers, to take heed that they esteem not the Doctrine of Faith as a light Matter, wherewith they may dally at their Pleasure. It is as a bright Sun-Beam coming down from Heaven, which lightneth, directeth and guideth us. Now, like as the World with all his Wisdom and Power, is not able to stop or turn away the Beams of the Sun coming down from Heaven to the Earth; even so can there nothing be added to the Doctrine of Faith, or taken from it; for that is an utter defacing and overthrowing of the whole.

### Verse 10. *I have Confidence in you through the Lord,*

As if he would say: I have taught, admonished and reprov'd you enough, so that ye would hearken unto me. Notwithstanding I hope well of you in the Lord. Here riseth a Question, Whether Paul doth well when he saith, he hath a good Hope or Trust of the *Galatians*, seeing the holy Scripture forbiddeih any Trust to be put in Men. Both Faith and Charity have their Trust and Belief, but after divers Sorts, by reason of the Diversity of their Objects. Faith trusteth in God, and therefore it cannot be deceived; Charity believeth Man, and therefore it is often deceived. Now, this Faith that springeth of Charity is so necessary to this present Life, that without it Life cannot continue in the World. For if one Man should not believe and trust another, What Life should we live upon Earth? The true Christians do sooner believe and give Credit thro' Charity, then the Children of this World do. For Faith towards Men is a Fruit of the Spirit or of Christian Faith in the Godly. Hereupon Paul had a Trust in the *Galatians*, yea, tho' they were fallen from his Doctrine; but yet in the Lord. As if I should say: I have a Trust in you so far forth as the Lord is in you, and ye in him; that is to say, so far forth as ye abide in the Truth. From which if you fall away, seduced by the Ministers of Satan, I will not trust unto you any more. Thus it is lawful for the Godly to trust and believe Men.

### Verse 10. *That you will be none otherwise minded:*

To wit, concerning Doctrine and Faith, then I have taught you, and ye have learned of me: That is to say, I have good Hope of you: that

that ye will not receive any other Doctrine which shall be contrary to mine.

**Verse 10.** *But he that troubleth you, shall bear his Judgment, whosoever he be.*

**Wicked Teachers are Troublers of Mens Consciences.** By this Sentence, *Paul* as it were a Judge sitting upon the Judgment-seat, condemneth the false Apostles, calling them by a very odious Name, Troublers of the *Galatians*; whom they esteemed to be very godly Men, and far better Teachers then *Paul*. And withal he goeth about to terrify the *Galatians* with this horrible Sentence; whereby he so boldly condemneth the false Apostles, to the End that they should fly their false Doctrine as a most dangerous Plague. As if he should say: What mean ye to give ear to those pestilent Fellows, which teach you not, but only trouble you? The Doctrine that they deliver unto you, is nothing else but a Trouble unto your Consciences. Wherefore how great soever they be, they shall bear their Condemnation.

**The Authority of the false Apostles.** Now a Man may understand by these Words; *Whosoever he be*, that the false Apostles in outward Appearance were very good and holy Men. And peradventure there were amongst them some notable Disciple of the Apostles, of great Name and Authority. For it is not without Cause that he useth such vehement and pithy Words. He speaketh after the same Manner also in the 1st Chapter, saying; *But though we, or an Angel from Heaven, preach any other Gospel unto you then that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed.* And it is not to be doubted, but that many were offended with this Vehemency of the Apostle, thinking thus with themselves. Wherefore doth *Paul* break Charity? Why is he so obstinate in so small a Matter? Why doth he so rashly pronounce Sentence of eternal Damnation against those that are Ministers as well as he? He passeth nothing of all this; but proceedeth on still, and boldly curseth and condemneth all those that pervert the Doctrine of Faith, be they never so highly esteemed, seem they never so holy and learned.

**The Difference betwixt Doctrine and Life.** Wherefore (as I give often Warning) we must diligently discern between Doctrine and Life. Doctrine is Heaven, Life is the Earth. In Life is Sin, Error, Uncleanliness and Misery, mingled with Vinegar, as the Proverb saith. There let Charity wink, forbear, be beguiled; believe, hope, and suffer all Things; there let Forgiveness of Sins prevail as much as may be, so that Sin and Error be not defended and maintained. But in Doctrine like as there is no Error, so hath it no need of Pardon. Wherefore there is no Comparison between Doctrine and Life. One little Point of Doctrine is of more value then Heaven and Earth; and therefore we cannot abide to have the least Spot thereof

thereof to be corrupted. But we can very well wink at the Offences and Errors of Life. For we also do daily err in Life and Conversation, yea all the Saints err; and this do they earnestly confess in the Lord's Prayer, and in the Articles of our Faith. But our Doctrine, blessed be God, is pure; we have all the Articles of our Faith grounded upon the holy Scripture. Those the Devil would gladly corrupt and overthrow. Therefore he assaileth us so craftily with this goodly Argument, that we ought not to break Charity and the Unity of the Churches.

**Verse 11.** *And I, Brethren, if I yet preach Circumcision, Why do I yet suffer Persecution? Then is the Offence of the Cross ceased.*

*Paul* labouring by all Means possible to call the *Galatians* back again, reasoneth now by his own Example. I have procured to myself (saith he) the Hatred and Persecution of the Priests and Elders, and of my whole Nation, because I take away Righteousness from Circumcision. *Acts* xiii. 50. which if I would attribute unto it, the *Jews* would not only cease to persecute me, but also would love and highly commend me. But now, because I preach the Gospel of Christ and the Righteousness of Faith, abolishing the Law and Circumcision, therefore I suffer Persecution. Contrariwise, the false Apostles, to avoid the Cross and this deadly Hatred of the *Jewish* Nation, do preach Circumcision; and by this Means they obtain and retain the Favour of the *Jews*, as he saith in the 6th Chapter following; *They compel you to be circumcised, &c.* Moreover, they would gladly bring to pass, that there shall be no Dissention, but Peace and Concord between the *Gentiles* and the *Jews*; but that is impossible to be done without the Loss of the Doctrine of Faith, which is the Doctrine of the Cross, and full of Offences, Wherefore when he saith; *If I yet preach Circumcision, Why do I yet suffer Persecution? Then is the Offence of the Cross ceased.* He meaneth that it were a great Absurdity and Inconvenience, if the Offence of the Cross should cease. After the same Manner he speaketh, *1 Cor.* i. 17. *Christ sent me to preach the Gospel, not with Wisdom of Words, lest the Cross of Christ should be made of none Effect.* As if he said, I would not that the Offence and Cross of Christ should be abolished.

The false Apostles Enemies of the Cross of Christ.

Here may some Man say: The Christians then are mad Men, to cast themselves into Danger of their own Accord: For what do they else by Preaching and Confessing the Truth, but procure unto themselves the Hatred and Enmity of the whole World, and raise Offences? This (saith *Paul*) doth nothing at all offend or trouble me, but maketh me more bold, and causeth me to hope well of the happy Success and Increase of the Church, which flourisheth and groweth under the Cross: The Church is in best Case and most flourisheth under the Cross.

Cross : For it becometh that Christ the Head and Spouse of the Church should reign in the Midst of all his Enemies, *Psal. cx.* On the contrary Part, when the Cross is abolished, and the Rage of Tyrants and Hereticks ceaseth on the one Side, and Offences on the other Side, and all Things are in Peace, the Devil keeping the Entry of the Houle, this is a sure Token that the pure Doctrine of God's Word is taken away.

*Bernard* considering this Thing, saith that the Church is then in best State, when Satan assaileth it on every Side, as well by subtil Sights as by Violence; and contrariwise, that it is then in worse Case when it is most at ease. And he alledged very well and to the Purpose that Sentence of *Hezekiah* in his Song, *Behold, for Peace I had great Bitterness*, *Isa. xxxviii. 17.* applying it to the Church, living in Ease and Quietness. Wherefore *Paul* taketh it for a most certain Sign that it is not the Gospel, if it be preached in Peace. Contrariwise, the World taketh

it for a most certain Sign, that the Gospel is heretical and seditious Doctrine, because it seeth great Uproars, Tumults, Offences and Sects, and such like to follow the Preaching thereof. \* Thus God sometimes sheweth himself in the Similitude of the Devil, and the Devil likewise sheweth himself in the Likeness of God; And God will be known under the Similitude of the Devil, and will have the Devil known under the Likeness of God.

The Cross immediately followeth the Doctrine of the Word, according to that Saying, *Psal. cxvi. 10. I believed, therefore have I spoken: I was greatly afflicted.* Now, the Cross of the Christians is Persecution, with Reproach and Ignominy, and without any Compassion, and therefore it is very offensive. First, They suffer as the vilest People in the World, and so did the Prophet *Isaiah* foreshew even of Christ himself, *Chap. liii. He was reputed amongst the Wicked.* Moreover, Murderers and Thieves have their Punishments qualified, and Men have Compassion on them. Here is no Offence or Slander joined with the Punishment. Contrariwise, like as the World judgeth the Christians to be of all other Men the most pestilent and pernicious, so doth it think that no Torments are sufficient to punish them for their hainous Offences. Neither is it moved with any Compassion towards them, but putteth them to the most opprobrious and shameful Kinds of

Death that can be. And it thinketh that it gaineth hereby a double Commodity: For first, it imagineth that it doth high Service unto God in killing of them, *John xvi. 2, 3.* Secondly, that the common Peace and Tranquility is restored and stablished by taking away such noisome Plagues. Therefore the Death and Cross of the Faithful is full of

Offences. But let not this reproachful Dealing (saith *Paul*) and the Continuance of Christ's Cross and Offence thereof move you; but rather let it confirm you. For as long as the Cross endureth, it shall go well with the Gospel.

In like Manner Christ also comforteth his Disciples in *Matth. v. 11, 12.* *Blessed are ye (saith he) when Men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all Manner of Evil against you falsely for my Sake. Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: For great is your Reward in Heaven: For so persecuted they the Prophets which were before you.* The Church cannot suffer this rejoicing to be wrested from her. Wherefore I would not wish to be at Concord with the Pope, the Bishops, the Princes, and the Sectaries, unless they would consent unto our Doctrine. For such Concord were a certain Token that we had lost the true Doctrine. To be short, as long as the Church teacheth the Gospel, it must suffer Persecution. For the Gospel setteth forth the Mercy and Glory of God; it discovereth the Malice and Sights of the Devil, painteth him out in his right Colours, and plucketh from him the counterfeit Visour of God's Majesty, whereby he deceiveth the whole World; that is to say, it sheweth that all Worshippings, religious Orders invented by Men, and Traditions concerning single Life, Meats and such other Things, whereby Men think to deserve Forgiveness of Sins, and everlasting Life, are wicked Things and devilish Doctrines. There is nothing then that more stirreth up the Devil, then the Preaching of the Gospel. For that plucketh from him the dissembled Visour of God, and bewrayeth him to be as he is indeed, that is to say, the Devil, and not God. Wherefore it cannot be but that as long as the Gospel flourisheth, the Cross and the Offence thereof must needs follow it, or else truly the Devil is not rightly touched, but slenderly tickled. But if he be rightly hit indeed, he resteth not, but beginneth horribly to rage, and to raise up Troubles every where.

If Christians then will hold the Word of Life, let them not be afraid or offended when they see that the Devil is broken loose and rageth every where, that all the World is in an Uproar, that Tyrants exercise their Cruelty, and Heresies spring up; but let them assure themselves that these are Signs, not of Terror, but of Joy, as Christ himself expoundeth them, saying; *Rejoice, and be exceeding glad, &c. Matth. v. 12.* God forbid therefore that the Offence of the Cross should be taken away. Which Thing should come to pass, if we should preach that which the Prince of this World and his Members would gladly hear, that is to say, the Righteousness of Works. Then should we have a gentle Devil, a favourable World, a gracious Pope, and merciful Princes. But because we set forth for the Benefits and Glory of Christ, they persecute and spoil us both of our Goods and Lives.

*Verse 12. I would they were even cut off which trouble you.*

Is this the Part of an Apostle, not only to denounce the false Apostles to be Troublers of the Church, to condemn them and to deliver them to Satan, but also to wish that they might be utterly rooted out and perish? And what is this else but plain Cursing? *Paul* (as I suppose) aludeth

Judeth here to Circumcision. As if he would say; They compel you to cut off the Fore-skin of your Flesh; but I would that they themselves might be utterly cut off by the Root.

Here riseth a Question; Whether it be lawful for Christians to curse? Why not? Howbeit not always, nor for every Cause; but when the Matter is come to this Point, that God's Word must be evil spoken of, and his Doctrine blasphemed, and so consequently God himself, then must we turn this Sentence, and say; Blessed be God and his Word, and whatsoever is without God and his Word, accursed be it; yea tho' it be an Apostle or an Angel from Heaven. So he said before in *Gal. i. 8.* *Tho' we, or an Angel from Heaven, preach any other Gospel unto you, then that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed.*

Hereby it may appear how great a Matter Paul made of a little Leaven, which for the same durst curse the false Apostles, who in outward Appearance were Men of great Authority and Holiness. Let not us therefore make little Account of the Leaven of Doctrine: For altho' it be never so little, yet if it be neglected, it will be the Cause that by little and little the Truth and our Salvation shall be lost, and God himself be denied. For when the Word is corrupted, and God denied and blasphemed (which must needs follow if the Word be corrupted) there remaineth no Hope of Salvation. But for our Parts, if we be cursed, failed upon and slain, there is yet one that can raise us up again, and deliver us from the Curse, Death and Hell.

Wherefore let us learn to advance and extol the Majesty and Authority of God's Word. For it is no small Trifle (as brainick Heads surmise at this Day;) but every Title thereof is greater than Heaven and Earth. Wherefore in this Respect we have no Regard of Christian Charity or Concord, but we sit as it were on the Judgment-seat, that is to say, we curse and condemn all Men, which in the least Point do deface or corrupt the Majesty of God's Word; *For a little Leaven maketh sour the whole Lump.* But if they leave us God's Word entire and sound, we are not only ready to keep Charity and Peace with them; but also we offer ourselves to be their Servants, and to do for them whatsoever we are able: If not, let them perish and be cast down into Hell; and not only they, but even the whole World also, so that God and his pure Word do remain. For as long as he remaineth, Life, Salvation, and the Faithful shall also remain.

Paul therefore doth well in cursing those Troublers of the *Galatians*, and in pronouncing Sentence against them, *to wit*, that they are accursed with all that they teach and do, and in wishing that they might be cut off, especially that they might be rooted out of the Church of God, that is, that God should not govern nor prosper their Doctrine, nor their Doings. And this cursing proceedeth from the Holy Ghost. As Peter

also in *Acts viii. 20.* curseth Simon the Sorcerer; *Thy Money perish with thee.* And the holy Scripture oftentimes useth cursing against such Troublers of Mens Consciences, and chiefly in the *Psalms*, as *Psal. lv. 15.* *Let Death seize upon them, and let them go down quick into Hell.*

As Korah,  
Dathan and  
Abiram.

*Hell. Also, The Wicked shall be turned into Hell, and all the Nations that forget God, Psal. ix. 17.*

Hitherto *Paul* hath fortified the Place of Justification with strong and mighty Arguments. Moreover, to the End he might omit nothing, here and there he hath intermingled Chidings, Praising, Exhortations, Threatnings and such like. In the End he addeth also his own Example, namely, that he suffereth Persecution for this Doctrine, thereby admonishing all the Faithful, not to be offended nor dismayed when they shall see such Upstarts, Sects and Offences raised up in the Time of the Gospel, but rather to rejoice and be glad. For the more the World rageth against the Gospel, the more the Gospel prospereth and goeth happily forwards.

This Consolation ought at this Day to encourage us; for it is certain that the World hateth and persecuteth us for none other Cause, but for that we profess the Truth of the Gospel. It doth not accuse us for Theft, Murder, Whoredom and such like; but it detesteth and abhorreth us because we teach Christ faithfully and purely, and give not over the Defence of the Truth. Therefore we may be out of all doubt, that this our Doctrine is holy and of God, because the World hateth it so bitterly: For otherwise there is no Doctrine so wicked, so foolish and pernicious, which the World doth not gladly admit, embrace and defend: And moreover, it reverently entertaineth, cherisheth and flattereth the Professors thereof, and doth all that may be done for them. Only the true Doctrine of the Gospel, Life and Salvation, and the Ministers thereof, it utterly abhorreth and worketh all the Spite that may be devised against them. It is an evident Token therefore, that the World is so cruelly bent against us for no other Thing, but because it hateth the Word. Wherefore when our Adversaries charge us, that there riseth nothing of this Doctrine but Wars, Seditions, Offences, Sects, and other such infinite Enormities: Let us answer, *Blessed be the Day wherein we may see these Things.* But the whole World is in an Upstart. And well done: For if the World were not so troubled; if the Devil did not rage and stir up such Broils, we should not have the pure Doctrine of the Gospel, which cannot be preached, but these Broils and Turmoils must needs follow. Therefore that which ye count to be a great Evil, we take to be a special Happiness.

What the  
World condemneth  
in godly  
Teachers.

### *The Doctrine of good Works.*

Now follow Exhortations and Precepts of Life and good Works. For it is the Custom of the Apostles, after they have taught Faith and instructed Mens Consciences, to add Precepts of good Works, whereby they exhort the Faithful to exercise the Duties of Charity one towards another. And Reason itself after a Sort teacheth and understandeth this Part of Doctrine; but as touching the Doctrine of Faith, it knoweth nothing at all. To the End therefore that it might appear that Christian Doctrine doth not destroy good Works, or fight against civil Ordinances.

the Apostle also exhorreth us to exercise ourselves in good Works, and in an honest outward Conversation, and to keep Charity and Concord one with another. The World cannot therefore justly accuse the Christians that they destroy good Works; that they are Troublers of the publick Peace, civil Honesty, &c. for they teach good Works and all other Vertues better then all the Philosophers and Magistrates of the World, because they adjoin Faith in their Doings.

*Verse 13. For, Brethren, ye have been called unto Liberty; only use not Liberty for an Occasion to the Flesh, but by Love serve one another.*

As if he would say, Ye have now obtained Liberty thro' Christ; that is to say, ye be far above all Laws as touching Conscience and before God; ye be blessed and saved, Christ is your Life, Col. iii. 4. Therefore altho' the Law, Sin and Death trouble and terrify you, yet can they not hurt you nor drive you to despair. And this is your excellent and inestimable Liberty. Now standeth it you in Hand to take good heed, that ye use not that Liberty as an Occasion to the Flesh.

The Liberty  
of the Faith-  
ful.

This Evil is common and the most pernicious of all others, that Satan stirrath up in the Doctrine of Faith, namely, that in very many he turneth this Liberty, wherewith Christ hath made us free, into the Liberty of the Flesh. Of this the Apostle Jude also complaineth in his Epistle. *There are certain wicked Men crept in unawares, (saith he) turning the Grace of our God into Lasciviousness,* Jude 4. For the Flesh is utterly ignorant of the Doctrine of Grace, that is to say, it knoweth not that we are made righteous, not by Works, but by Faith only, and that the Law hath no Authority over us. Therefore when it heareth the Doctrine of Faith, it abuseth and turneth it into Lasciviousness, and by and by thus it gathereth: If we be without the Law, let us then live as we list, let us do no good, let us give nothing to the needy, and let us not suffer any Evil, for there is no Law to constrain us or bind us so to do.

Wherefore there is Danger on either Side; albeit the one is more tolerable then the other. If Grace or Faith be not preached, no Man can be saved; for it is Faith alone that justifieth and saveth. On the other Side, if Faith be preached (as of Necessity it must be) the more Part of Men understand the Doctrine of Faith carnally, and draw the Liberty of the Spirit into the Liberty of the Flesh. This may we see in all Kinds of Life, as well of the high as the low. All boast themselves to be Professors of the Gospel, and all brag of Christian Liberty, and yet serving their own Lusts, they give themselves to Covetousness, Pleasures, Pride, Envy and such other Vices. No Man doth his Duty faithfully, no Man charitably serveth the Necessity of his Brother. The Grief hereof maketh me sometimes so impatient, that many Times I wish such Swine which tread precious Pearls under their Feet, were yet

will remaining under the Tyranny of the Pope; for it is impossible that his People of *Gomorrhah* should be governed by the Gospel of Peace.

Moreover, even we which teach the Word, do not show our Duty with so great Zeal and Diligence in the Light of the Gospel, as we did afore in the Darknes of Ignorance. For the more certain we be of the Freedom purchased unto us by Christ, so much the more cold and negligent we be in handling the Word, in Prayer, in Well-doing, and in suffering Adversities. And if Satan did not vex us inwardly with spiritual Tentations, and outwardly with the Persecutions of our Adversaries, and moreover, with the Contempt and Ingratitude of our own Fellows, we should become utterly careless, negligent and untoward to all good Works; and so in Time we should lose the Knowledge and Faith of Christ, forsake the Ministry of the Word, and seek an easier Kind of Life for the Flesh. Which Thing many of our Men begin to do, for that they travelling in the Ministry of the Word, cannot only not live of their Labour, but also are most miserably intreated even of those whom they delivered from the servile Bondage of the Pope by the Preaching of the Gospel. These Men forsaking poor and offensive Christ, inangle themselves with the Affairs of this present Life, serving their own Bellies and not Christ; but with what Fruit, that shall they find by Experience in Time to come.

The Profit  
of Tempta-  
tions.

For as much then as we know that the Devil lieth in wait most of all for us that hate the World (for the rest he holdeth in Captivity and Slavery at his Pleasure) and laboureth with Might and Main to take from us the Liberty of the Spirit, or at least wise, to turn the same into the Liberty of the Flesh, we teach and exhort our Brethren with singular Care and Diligence by the Example of *Paul*, that they think not this Liberty of the Spirit purchased by the Death of Christ, to be given unto them, that they should make it an Occasion of carnal Liberty, or (as *Peter* saith) should use the same as a Cloke for their Wickedness, *1 Pet. ii. 16.* but that they should serve one another thro' Love.

To the End therefore that Christians should not abuse this Liberty (as I have said) the Apostle layeth a Yoke and Bondage upon their Flesh by the Law of mutual Love. Wherefore let the Godly remember that in Conscience before God, they be free from the Curse of the Law, from Sin and from Death, for Christ's Sake; but as touching the Body they are Servants and must serve one another thro' Charity, according to this Commandment of *Paul*. Let every Man therefore endeavour to do his Duty diligently in his Calling, and to help his Neighbour to the uttermost of his Power. This is it which *Paul* here requireth of us; *Serve ye one another thro' Love.* Which Words do not set the Christians at Liberty, but shut them under Bondage as touching the Flesh.

The Godly  
are free ac-  
cording to  
the Spirit,  
but Bond-  
servants ac-  
cording to  
the Flesh.

Moreover, this Doctrine concerning mutual Love which we must maintain and exercise one towards another, cannot be beaten into the

Heads of carnal Men, nor sink into their Hearts. The Christians do gladly receive and obey this Doctrine: Others as soon as Liberty is preached; by and by do thus infer; If I be free, then may I do what I list: This Thing is mine own; Why then should I not sell it for as much as I may get? Moreover, seeing we obtain not Salvation by our good Works, Why should we give any Thing to the Poor? Thus do they most carelessly shake off the Yoke of Love and good Works, and turn the Liberty of the Spirit into Wantonness and fleshly Liberty. But we tell such careless Contemners (altho' they believe us not, but laugh us to scorn) that if they use their Bodies and their Goods after their own Lust, (as indeed they do, for they neither help the Poor, nor lend to the Needy, but beguile their Brethren in bargaining, snatching and scraping unto themselves by Hook or by Crook whatsoever they can get) we tell them (I say) that they be not free, brag they never so much of their Liberty, but have lost Christ and Christian Liberty, are become Bond-slaves of the Devil, and are seven Times worse under the Name of Christian Liberty, then they were before under the Tyranny of the Pope. For the Devil which was driven out of them, hath taken unto him seven other Fiends worse then himself, and is returned into them again; therefore the End of these Men is worse then the Beginning.

As touching us, we have a Commandment of God to preach the Gospel, which offereth to all Men Liberty from the Law, Sin, Death and God's Wrath, freely for Christ's Sake, if they believe.

Christian Liberty must be taught, tho' Men abuse it.

It is not in our Power to conceal or revoke this Liberty now published by the Gospel: For Christ hath given it unto us freely and purchased it by his Death. Neither can we constrain those Swine which run Head-long into all Licentiousness and Dissoluteness of the Flesh, to help other Men with their Bodies or Goods; therefore we do what we can, that is to say, we diligently admonish them that they ought so to do. If we nothing prevail by these Admonitions, we commit the Matter to God, and he will recompence those Scorners with just Punishment in his good Time. In the mean while this is our Comfort, that as touching the Godly our Labour is not lost, of whom many (no doubt) by our Ministry are delivered out of the Bondage of the Devil, and translated into the Liberty of the Spirit. These (which notwithstanding are but few) which acknowledge the Glory of this Liberty of the Spirit, and on the other Side are ready thro' Charity to serve other Men, and know themselves to be Debtors to their Brethren touching the Flesh, do more rejoice us then the innumerable Multitude of those that abuse this Liberty, are able to discourage us.

Paul useth here very apt and plain Words, when he saith; *Brethren, ye have been called into Liberty.* And because no Man should dream that he speaketh of the Liberty of the Flesh, he expoundeth himself what Manner of Liberty he meaneth, saying; *Only use not Liberty for an Occasion to the Flesh, but by Love serve one another.* Wherefore let every Christian know, that as touching the Conscience, Christ hath made him Lord over the Law, Sin and Death, so that they have no Power over him.

Contrariwise, let him know that this outward Bondage is laid upon his Body, that he should serve his Neighbour thro' Love. They that understand Christian Liberty otherwise, enjoy the Commodities of the Gospel to their own Destruction, and are worse Idolaters under the Name of Christ, then they were before under the Pope. Now *Paul* goeth about to declare out of the Ten Commandments, what it is to serve one another thro' Love.

Verse 14. *For all the Law is fulfilled in one Word, even in this ; Thou shalt love thy Neighbour as thyself.*

*Paul*, after that he hath once layed the Foundation of Christian Doctrine, is wont to build Gold, Silver and precious Stones upon it. Now, there is no other Foundation, as he himself saith, 1 Cor. iii. 11. then Jesus Christ, or the Righteousness of Christ. Upon this Foundation he buildeth now good Works, yea good Works in deed ; all which he comprehendeth in one Precept ; *Thou shalt love thy Neighbour as thyself.* Levit. xix. 18. As if he should say ; When I say that ye must serve one another thro' Love, I mean the same Thing that the Law saith in another Place ; *Thou shalt love thy Neighbour as thyself.* And this is truly to interpret the Scripture and God's Commandments.

Now, in giving Precepts of Love, he covertly toucheth by the Way the false Teachers ; against whom he setteth himself mightily, that he may defend and stablish his Doctrine of good Works against them. As he said, O ye *Galatians*, I have hitherto taught you the true and spiritual Life, and now also I will teach you what be good Works indeed. And this will I do, to the End ye may know, that the vain and foolish Works of Ceremonies which the false Apostles do only

urge, are far inferior to the Works of Charity. For such is the Foolishness and Madnes of all wicked Teachers and fantastical Spirits, that not only they leave the true Foundation and pure Doctrine ; but also continuing always in their Superstitions, they never attain to good Works. Therefore (as *Paul* saith, 1 Cor. iii. 12, 13.) they build nothing but Wood, Hay and Stubble upon the Foundation. So the false Apostles which were the most earnest Defenders of Works, did not teach or require the

Meritmongers and Hypocrites understand not the Doctrine of Faith and of good Works.

Works of Charity, as that Christians should love one another, that they should be ready to help their Neighbours in all Necessities, not only with their Goods, but also with their Body, that is to say, with Tongue, Hand, Heart, and with their whole Strength ; but only they required that Circumcision should be kept, that Days, Months, Years and Times should be observed, Gal. iv. 10. and other good Works they could teach none. For after they have destroyed the Foundation which is Christ, and darkned the Doctrine of Faith, it was impossible that there should remain any true Use, Exercise or Opinion of good Works. Take away the Tree, and the Fruit must needs perish.

The Apostle therefore diligently exhorteth the Christians to exercise themselves in good Works, after that they have heard and received the pure Doctrine of Faith. For the Remnants of Sin do yet still remain even in those that be justified; which, as they are contrary to Faith and hinder it; so do they hinder us from doing good Works. Moreover, Man's Reason and the Flesh, which in the Saints themselves resisteth the Spirit, and in the Wicked doth mightily reign, is naturally delighted with *Pharisaical* Superstitions; that is to say, it taketh more Pleasure in measuring God by her own Imagination then by his Word, and doth the Works that she herself hath chosen, with far greater Zeal then those which God hath commanded. Wherefore it is necessary that the godly Preachers should as diligently teach and urge the Doctrine of good Works, as the Doctrine of Faith; for Satan is a deadly Enemy to both. Notwithstanding Faith must be first planted; for without Faith it is impossible to understand what a good Work is, or what pleaseth God.

No Man  
loveth his  
Neighbour  
as himself.

Let no Man think therefore that he thoroughly knoweth this Commandment; *Thou shalt love thy Neighbour as thyself*. Indeed it is very short and easy as touching the Words; but shew me the Teachers and Hearers, that in teaching, learning, and living, do exercise and accom-

plish it rightly. Therefore these Words; *Serve ye one another through Love*: And these also; *Thou shalt love thy Neighbour as thyself*, are full of Spirit, and none of the Faithful do sufficiently consider, urge and exercise the same. And (which is wonderful) the Faithful have this Temptation, that if they omit never so light a Matter which they ought to do, by and by their Conscience is wounded; but they are not so troubled if they neglect the Duties of Charity (as daily they do) or bear

Natural Cor-  
ruption and  
Superstition  
remaining in  
the Faithful.

not a sincere and brotherly Love and Affection towards their Neighbour. For they do not so much regard the Commandment of Charity, as their own Superstitions, from the which they be not altogether free during this Life.

*Paul* therefore reprehendeth the *Galatians* in these Words; *For all the Law is fulfilled in one Word*. As if he had said; Ye are drowned in your Superstitions and Ceremonies concerning Places and Times, which profit neither yourselves nor others; and in the mean while ye neglect Charity which ye ought only to have kept. What Madness is this. So saith *Jerome*: We wear and consume our Bodies with Watching, Fasting and Labour; but we neglect Charity, which is the only Lady and Mistress of Works. And this may be well seen in the *Monks*, who straitly observe the Traditions concerning their Ceremonies, Fasting, Watching, Apparel, and such like. In this Case if they omit any Thing, be it never so little, they sin deadly. But when they do not only neglect Charity, but also hate one another to the Death; they sin not, nor offend God at all.

Therefore by this Commandment *Paul* not only teacheth good Works, but also condemneth fantastical and superstitious Works. He not only buildeth

buildeth Gold, Silver and precious Stones upon the Foundation, but also throweth down the Wood, and burneth up the Hay and Stubble. God witnessed by Examples in the Old Testament how much he did always esteem of Charity; whereunto he would have the very Law itself, and the Ceremonies thereof to give Place. At such Time, as David and they that were with him were hungry and had not what to eat, they did eat the holy Shew-bread, which by the Law the Lay-People might not eat, but only the Priests, 1 Sam. xxi. 6. Christ's Disciples brake the Sabbath in plucking the Ears of Corn, Matth. xii. 1. yea and Christ himself brake the Sabbath (as said the Jews) in healing the Sick on the Sabbath-day, Ver. 10. All these Things shew that Charity or Love ought to be preferred before all Laws and Ceremonies, and that God requireth nothing so much at our Hands, as Love towards our Neighbour. The same Thing Christ also witnesseth, when he saith, *And the second is like unto it*, Matth. xxii. 39.

Verse 14. *For all the Law is fulfilled in one Word.*

As if he said: Why do ye burden yourselves with the Law? Why do ye toil and turmoil yourselves about the Ceremonies of the Law, about Meats, Days, Places, and such other Things; as how ye ought to eat, drink, keep your Feasts, Sacrifices, &c? Leave off these Follies, and hearken what I say: All the Law is fully comprehended in this one Saying; *Thou shalt love thy Neighbour as thyself*. God delighted not in the Observation of the Ceremonies of the Law, neither hath he any Need of them. The only Thing that he requireth at your Hands is this, that ye believe in Christ whom he hath sent; in whom ye are made perfect and have all Things. But if unto Faith, which is the most acceptable Service of God, ye will also add Laws, then assure yourselves that all Laws are comprehended in this short Commandment: *Thou shalt love thy Neighbour as thyself*. Endeavour yourselves to keep this Commandment; which being kept, ye have fulfilled all Laws.

Paul is a very good Expounder of God's Commandments: For he draweth all Moses's into a brief Sum, shewing that nothing else is contained in all his Laws (which are in a Manner infinite) but this short Sentence; *Thou shalt love thy Neighbour as thyself*. Natural Reason is offended at this Baseness and Shortness of Words; for it is soon said; *Believe in Christ*. And again; *Love thy Neighbour as thyself*. Therefore it despiseth both the Doctrine of Faith and true good Works. Notwith-

A brief Sum  
of all Moses's  
Laws, and A  
most short  
Doctrine of  
all true Chri-  
stianity.

standing, this base and vile Word of Faith (as Reason taketh it) *Believe in Christ*, is the Power of God to the Faithful, Rom. i. 16. whereby they overcome Sin, Death, the Devil, &c. whereby also they attain Salvation and eternal Life. Thus to serve one another thro' Love, that is to instruct him that goeth astray, to comfort him that is afflicted,

to raise up him that is weak, to help thy Neighbour by all Means possible, to bear with his Infirmities, to endure Troubles, Labours, Ingratitude and Contempt in the Church; and in civil Life and Conversation to obey the Magistrate, to give due Honour to thy Parents, to be patient at Home with a froward Wife and an unruly Family, &c. these (I say) are Works which Reason judgeth to be of no Value. But, indeed they are such Works, that the whole World is not able to comprehend the Excellency and Worthiness thereof (for it doth not measure Works or any Thing by the Word of God, but by the Judgment of wicked, blind and foolish Reason: ) Yea, it knoweth not the Value of any one of the best good Works that can be, which are true good Works indeed.

Therefore, when Men dream that they know well enough the Commandment of Charity, they are utterly deceived. Indeed they have it written in their Heart; for they naturally judge that a Man ought to do unto another, as he would another should do unto him. But it followeth not therefore that they understand it; for if they did, they would also perform it indeed, and would prefer Love and Charity before all their Works. They would not so highly esteem their own superstitious Toys, as to go with an heavy Countenance hanging down the Head, to live unmarried, to live with Bread and Water, to dwell in the Wilderness, to be poorly apparell'd, &c. These monstrous and superstitious Works, which they have devised and chosen unto themselves, God neither commanding nor approving the same, they esteem to be so holy and so excellent, that they surmount and darken Charity, which is as it were the Sun of all good Works. So great and incomprehensible is the Blindness of Man's Reason, that it is unable, not only to judge rightly of the Doctrine of Faith, but also of external Conversation and Works. Wherefore we must fight strongly, as well against the Opinions of our own Hearts, (to the which we are naturally more inclined in the Matter of Salvation then to the Word of God,) as also against the Counterfeit Vizard and holy Shew of our own Will works; that so we may learn to magnify the Works which every Man doth in his Vocation, altho' they seem outwardly never so base and contemptible, if they have the Warrant of God's Word; and contrariwise, to despise those Works which Reason chooseth without the Commandment of God, seem they never so excellent and holy.

Of this Commandment I have largely intreated in another Place, and therefore I will now but lightly over-run it. Indeed this is briefly spoken; *Love thy Neighbour as thyself*, but yet very aptly and to the Purpose. No Man can give a more certain, a better or a nearer Example then a Mans own self. Therefore, if thou wouldst know how thy Neighbour ought to be loved, and wouldst have a plain Example thereof, consider well how thou lovest thyself. If thou shouldst be in Necessity or Danger, thou wouldst be glad to have the Love and Friendship of all Men, to be helped with the Counsel, the Goods and the Strength of all Men and of all Creatures. Wherefore thou hast no need

any Book to instruct and to admonish thee how thou oughtest to love thy Neighbour; for thou hast an excellent Book of all Laws even in thy Heart. Thou needest no School-master in this Matter; ask Counsel only of thine own Heart, and that shall teach thee sufficiently that thou oughtest to love thy Neighbour as thyself. Moreover, Love or Charity is an excellent Vertue, which not only maketh a Man willing and ready to serve his Neighbour with Tongue, with Hand, with Money, and worldly Goods; but with his Body, and even with his Life also. And thus to do, it is not provoked by good Deserts or any Thing else, neither is it hindered thro' evil Deserts or Ingratitude. The Mother both therefore nourish and cherish her Child, because she loveth it.

Now, my Neighbour is every Man, especially which hath need of my Help, as Christ expoundeth it in *Luke x*. Who altho' he hath done me some wrong, or hurt me by any Manner of Way; yet notwithstanding he hath not put off the Nature of Man, or ceased to be Flesh and Blood, and the Creature of God most like unto myself; briefly, he ceaseth not to be my Neighbour. As long then as the Nature of Man remaineth in him, so long also remaineth the Commandment of Love, which requireth at my Hand, that I should not despise mine own Flesh, not render Evil for Evil, but overcome Evil with Good; for Life shall Love never be as *Paul* describeth, *1 Cor. xiii*.

*Paul* therefore commendeth Charity to the *Galatians*, and to all the Faithful (for they only love indeed,) and exhorteth them that thro' Charity one of them should serve another. As if he would say: Ye need not to burden yourselves with Circumcision, and with the Ceremonies of *Moses's* Law; but above all Things, continue in the Doctrine of Faith which ye have received of me. Afterwards, if ye will do good Works, I will in one Word shew you the chiefest and greatest Works, and how ye shall fulfil all Laws: *Serve ye one another thro' Love*. Ye shall not lack them to whom ye may do good, for the World is full of such as need the Help of others. This is a perfect and a sound Doctrine of Faith and Love; and also the shortest and the longest Divinity. The shortest as touching the Words and Sentences; but as touching the Use and Practice it is more large, more long, more profound, and more high then the whole World.

Verse 15. *But if ye bite and devour one another, take heed that ye be not consumed one of another.*

By these Words *Paul* witnesseth, that if the Foundation, that is to say, of Faith in Christ be overthrown by wicked Teachers, no Peace or Concord can remain in the Church either in Doctrine or Life; but there must needs be divers Opinions and Dissentions from Time to Time both in Doctrine and Life, whereby it cometh to pass that one biteth and devoureth another, that is to say, one judgeth and condemneth another, until at length they be consumed. Hereof not only the Scripture, but also the Examples of all Times bear witness. After that *Africk* was

pervverted by the *Manichees*, by and by followed the *Donatists*, who also disagreeing among themselves, were divided in to three sundry Sects. And how many Sects have we at this Day springing up one after another? One Sect bringeth forth another, and one condemneth another. Thus, when the Unity of the Spirit is broken, it is impossible that there should be any Concord either in Doctrine or Life, but daily new Errors must needs spring up without Measure and without End.

*Paul* therefore teacheth that such Occasions of Discord are to be avoided, and he sheweth how they may be avoided. This (saith he) is the Way to Unity and Concord: Let every Man do his Duty in that Kind of Life which God hath called him unto. Let him not lift up himself above others, nor find Fault at other Mens Works, and commend his own, but let every one serve another thro' Love. This is a true and simple Doctrine touching good Works. This do not they teach which have made Shipwrack of Faith, and have conceived fantastical Opinions concerning Faith and good Works: but disagreeing among themselves as touching the Doctrine of Faith and Works, they bite and devour, that is to say, they accuse and condemn one another, as *Paul* here saith of the *Galatians*; *If ye bite and devour one another, take heed that ye be not consumed one of another.* As if he would say; Do not accuse and condemn one another for Circumcision, for observing of holy Days or other Ceremonies, but rather give yourselves to serve and help one another thro' Charity; or else if ye continue in biting and devouring one another, take heed that ye be not consumed,

The End of  
the Authors  
of wicked  
Opinions.

that is to say, that ye perish not utterly, yea and that bodily, which commonly happeneth, especially to the Authors of Sects, as it did to *Arrius* and others, and to certain also in our Time. For he that hath laid his Foundation on the Sand, and buildeth Hay, Stubble, and such

like, must needs fall and be consumed; for all those Things are ordained for the Fire. I will not say that after such Bitings and Devourings, the Ruin and Destruction not of Cities, but of whole Countries and Kingdoms are wont to follow. Now the Apostle sheweth what it is to serve one another thro' Love.

It is a hard and a dangerous Matter to teach that we are made righteous by Faith without Works, and yet to require Works withal. Here, except the Ministers of Christ be faithful and wise Disposers of the Mysteries of God, rightly dividing the Word of Truth; Faith and Works are by and by confounded. How the Doctrine of Faith and of Works is to be taught. Both these Doctrines as well of Faith as of Works, must be diligently taught and urged; and yet so, that both may remain within their Bounds. Otherwise if they teach Works only (as they do in the Pope's Kingdom) then is Faith lost. If Faith only be taught, then carnal Men by and by dream that Works be not needful.

The Apostle began a little before to exhort Men to good Works, and to teach that the whole Law was fulfilled in one Word, namely; *Thou shalt love thy Neighbour as thyself*: Here will some Man say; *Paul* throughout his

his whole Epistle taketh away Righteousness from the Law: For saith he, *By the Works of the Law shall no Flesh be justified*, Gal. ii. 16. Also, *As many as are of the Works of the Law, are under the Curse*, Chap. iii. 10. But now when he saith that the whole Law is fulfilled in one Word, he seemeth to have forgotten the Matter whereof he hath intreated in all this Epistle, and to be of a quite contrary Opinion, to wit, that they which do the Works of Charity, fulfil the Law, and be righteous. To this Objection he answereth after this Manner:

*Verse 16. This I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the Lust of the Flesh.*

As if he should have said; I have not forgotten my former Discourse concerning Faith, neither do I now revoke the same in that I exhort you to mutual Love, saying; *that the whole Law is fulfilled thro' Love*, but I am still of the same Mind and Opinion that I was before. To the End therefore that ye may rightly understand me, I add this moreover, *Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the Lust of the Flesh.*

*A Confutation of the Argument of the School-men: Love is the fulfilling of the Law; therefore the Law justifieth.*

Altho' Paul speaketh here expressly and plainly enough, yet hath he little prevailed; for the School-men not understanding this Place of Paul, *Love is the fulfilling of the Law*, have gathered out of it after this Manner; If Love be the fulfilling of the Law, it followeth then that Love is Righteousness; therefore if we love, we be righteous. These profound Clarks do argue from the Word to the Work, from Doctrine or Precepts, to Life, after this Sort; The Law hath commanded Love, therefore the Work of Love followeth out of Hand. But this is a foolish Consequence, to draw an Argument from Precepts, and to ground the Conclusion upon Works.

True it is that we ought to fulfil the Law, and to be justified thro' the fulfilling thereof; but Sin hindreth us. Indeed the Law prescribeth and commandeth that we should love God with all our Heart, &c. and that we should love our Neighbour as ourselves; but it followeth not; This is written, therefore it is done; the Law commandeth Love, therefore we love. There is not one Man to be found upon the whole Earth, which so loveth God and his Neighbour, as the Law requireth. But in the Life to come, where we shall be thoroughly cleansed from all Vices and Sins, and shall be made as pure and as clear as the Sun, we shall love perfectly, and shall be righteous thro' perfect Love. But in this Life that Purity is hindred by the Flesh; for as long as we live, Sin remain-

An evil Consequence of the Sophisters: It is written, therefore it is done.

eth in our Flesh ; by Reason whereof, the corrupt Love of ourselves is so mighty, that it far surmounteth the Love of God and of our Neighbour. In the mean Time notwithstanding, that we may be righteous in this Life also, we have Christ the Mercy-seat and Throne of Grace, and because we believe in him, Sin is not imputed unto us. Faith therefore is our Righteousness in this Life. But in the Life to come when we shall be thoroughly cleansed and delivered from all Sins and Concupiscence, we shall have no more Need of Faith and Hope, but we shall then love perfectly.

It is a great Error therefore to attribute Justification, or Righteousness to Love, which is nothing ; or if it be any Thing, yet is it not so great that it can pacify God ; for Love even in the Faithful (as I have said) is imperfect and impure. But no unclean Thing shall enter into the Kingdom of God. Notwithstanding in the mean while this Trust and Confidence sustaineth us, that Christ, who alone committed no Sin, and in whose Mouth was never found any Guile, *Isa. liii.*

*9. 1 Pet. ii. 22.* doth overshadow us with his Righteousness. We being covered with this \* Cloud, and shrowded under this Shadow, this Heaven or Remission of Sins and Throne of Grace, do begin to love and to fulfil the Law. Yet for this fulfilling we are not justified nor accepted of God whilst we live here. But when Christ hath

delivered up the Kingdom to God his Father, and abolished all Principality, and God shall be All in All ; then shall Faith and Hope cease, and

Faith adorned with Charity, is the *Papists* Righteousness.

Love shall be perfect and everlasting, *1 Cor. xiii.* This Thing the Popish School-men understand not, and therefore when they hear that Love is the Sum of the whole Law, by and by they infer ; *Ergo*, the Law justifieth. Or contrariwise, when they read in *Paul* that Faith maketh a Man righteous ; yea, say they, Faith formed and furnished with Charity. But that is not the Meaning of *Paul*, as I have largely declared before.

If we were pure from all Sin, and were inflamed with perfect Love both towards God and our Neighbour, then should we indeed be righteous and holy thro' Love, and God could require no more of us. This is not done in this present Life, but is deferred until the Life to come, *Rom. viii. 23.* Indeed we receive here the Gift and first Fruits of the Spirit, so that we begin to love, howbeit very slenderly. But if we loved God truly and perfectly as the Law of God requireth, which saith ; *Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thine Heart, and with all thy Soul, and with all thy Might*, *Deut. vi. 5.* *Matth. xxii. 37.* Then shall we be as well contented with Poverty as with Wealth, with Pain as with Pleasure, and with Death as with Life. Yea, he that could love God truly and perfectly indeed, should not long continue in this Life, but should straightway be swallowed up by this Charity.

But now Man's Nature is so corrupt and drowned in Sin, that it cannot have any right Sense or Cogitation of God. It loveth not God, but hateth him deadly. Wherefore as *John* saith ; *Herein is Love ; not that*

we loved God, but that he loved us, and sent his Son to be the Propitiation for our Sins, 1 John iv. 10. And as Paul saith before in Chap. ii. 20, Christ hath loved me, and given himself for me. And in Gal. iv. 4, 5, But when the Fulness of the Time was come, God sent forth his Son made, of a Woman, made under the Law, to redeem them that were under the Law. We being redeemed and justified by the Son, begin to love; according to that Saying of Paul in Rom. viii. 3. 4. For what the Law could not do, in that it was weak thro' the Flesh, God sending his own Son, in the Likeness of sinful Flesh, and for Sin condemned Sin in the Flesh, That the Righteousness of the Law might be fulfilled in us, that is, might begin to be fulfilled. They are mere Dreams therefore which the Sophisters and School-men have taught concerning the fulfilling of the Law.

Wherefore Paul sheweth by these Words; *Walk in the Spirit*, how he would have that Sentence to be understood, where he said; *Serve ye one another thro' Love*. And again, *Love is the fulfilling of the Law*, &c. As if he should say; When I bid you Love one another, this is it that I require of you, that ye walk in the Spirit. For I know that ye shall not fulfil the Law, because Sin dwelleth in you as long as ye live, and therefore it is impossible that ye should fulfil the Law. Notwithstanding in the mean while endeavour yourselves diligently to walk in the Spirit, that is, wrestle in Spirit against the Flesh, and follow spiritual Motions, &c.

It appeareth then that he had not forgotten the Matter of Justification. For when he biddeth them to walk in the Spirit, he plainly denieth that Works do justify. As if he would say; When I speak of the fulfilling of the Law. I mean not that ye are justified by the Law; but this I mean, that there be two contrary Captains in you, the Spirit and the Flesh. God hath stirred up in your Bodies a Strife and a Battle; for the Spirit wrestleth against the Flesh, and the Flesh against the Spirit, Gal. v. 17. Here I require nothing else of you, but that ye follow the Spirit as your Captain and Guide, and that ye resist that Captain the Flesh; for that is all that ye be able to do: Obey the Spirit, and fight against the Flesh. Therefore when I teach you to observe the Law, and exhort you to love one another, think not that I go about to revoke that which I have taught concerning the Doctrine of Faith, and that now I attribute Justification to the Law or to Charity; but my Meaning is, that ye should walk in the Spirit, and that ye should not fulfil the Lusts of the Flesh.

Paul useth very fit Words and to the Purpose. As if he would say; We come not yet to the fulfilling of the Law; therefore we must walk in the Spirit and be exercised therein, that we may think, say, and do those Things which are of the Spirit, and resist those Things which are of the Flesh. Therefore he addeth;

Verse 16. *And ye shall not fulfil the Lust of the Flesh.*

Desires and  
Lusts of the  
Flesh even in  
the Godly.

As if he would say; The Desires or Lusts of the Flesh be not yet dead in us, but spring up again and fight against the Spirit. The Flesh of no faithful Man is so good, which being offended would not bite and devour, or at the least omit somewhat of that Commandment of Love. Yea, even at the first Brunt he cannot refrain himself, but is angry with his Neighbour, desireth to be revenged, and hateth him as an Enemy, or at the least loveth him not so much as he should do, and as this Commandment requireth. And this happeneth even to the Faithful.

Therefore the Apostle hath given this Rule for the Faithful, that they should serve one another thro' Love, that they should bear the Burdens and Infirmities one of another, and that they should forgive one another. And without this bearing and forbearing thro' Love, it is impossible that Peace and Concord should continue amongst Christians. For it cannot be but that thou must needs often offend, and be offended. Thou seest many Things in me which offend thee, and I again see many Things in thee which mislike me. Here if one bear not with another thro' Love, there shall be no End of Dissention, Discord, Envy, Hatred and Malice.

Wherefore *Paul* would have us to walk in the Spirit, lest we fulfil the Lusts of the Flesh. As if he should say; Altho' ye be moved with Wrath and Displeasure against your Brother, offending you, or doing any Thing hainously against you, yet notwithstanding resist and repress these violent Motions thro' the Spirit. Bear with his Weakness and love him according to that Commandment, *Thou shalt love thy Neighbour as thyself*. For thy Brother doth not therefore cease to be thy Neighbour, because he slippeth, or offendeth thee; but then hath he most Need that thou shouldst exercise and shew thy Charity towards him. And this Commandment; *Thou shalt love thy Neighbour as thyself*, requireth the self-same Thing; to wit, that thou shouldst not obey the Flesh; which when it is offended, hateth, biteth and devoureth. But wrestle against it in Spirit, and continue thro' the same in the Love of thy Neighbour, altho' thou find nothing in him worthy of Love.

The School-men take the Concupiscence of the Flesh for carnal Lust. Indeed it is true that even the Godly, especially the younger Sort are tempted with fleshly Lust. Yea, they also that be married (so corrupt and pestilent is Flesh) are not without such carnal Lust. Here let every one (I speak now to the Godly being married, both

What the  
Concupiscence or Lust  
of the Flesh  
is after *Paul*.

Man and Wife) diligently examine himself, and no doubt, many shall find this in themselves, that the Beauty and Conditions of another Man's Wife pleaseth him better then of his own; and so contrariwise, his own lawful Wife he loatheth or misliketh, and loveth her which is unlawful.

And this commonly is wont to happen, not in Marriage only, but in all other Matters. Men set Light by that which they have, and are in Love with that which they have not; as the Poet saith;

*Nitimur inpetitum semper cupimusque negata* : That is,  
Of Things most forbidden we always are fain ;  
And Things most denied we seek to obtain.

I do not deny therefore but that the Concupiscence of the Flesh comprehendeth carnal Lust, but not that only. For Concupiscence comprehendeth all other corrupt Affections, wherewith the very Faithful are infected, some more, some less ; as Pride, Hatred, Covetousness, Impatience and such like. Yea, *Paul* rehearseth afterwards among the Works of the Flesh, not only these gross Vices, but also Idolatry, Heresies and such other. It is plain therefore that he speaketh of the whole Concupiscence of the Flesh, and of the whole Dominion of Sin, which liveth even in the Godly who have received the first Fruits of the Spirit, against the Dominion of the Spirit. He speaketh therefore not only of carnal Lust, Pride, Covetousness, &c. but also of Incredulity, Distrust, Despair, Hatred and Contempt of God, Idolatry, Heresies and such other, when he saith ; *And ye shall not fulfil the Lust of the Flesh.* As if he should say ; I write unto you that you should love one another. This ye do not, neither can ye do it because of the Flesh, which is infected and corrupted with Concupiscence, and doth not only stir up Sin in you, but also is Sin itself. For if ye had perfect Charity, no Heaviness, no Adversity could be so great, which should be able to hurt or hinder that Charity ; for it would be spread throughout the whole Body. There should be no Wife were she never so hard-favoured, whom her Husband would not love entirely, loathing all other Women, though they were never so fair and beautiful. But this is not done, therefore it is impossible for us to be made righteous thro' Love.

Wherefore think me not to revoke and unsay that which I have taught concerning Faith ; for Faith and Hope must continue, that by the one we may be justified, and by the other we may be raised up in Adversities, and endure to the End. Moreover, we serve one another thro' Charity, because Faith is not idle ; but Charity is weak and little. Therefore when I bid you walk in the Spirit, I do sufficiently declare that ye are not justified thro' Charity.

And when I exhort you to walk in the Spirit, that ye fulfil not the Concupiscence of the Flesh ; I do not require of you that ye should utterly put off the Flesh or kill it, but that ye should bridle and subdue it ; for God will have Mankind to endure, even to the Last Day : And this cannot be done without Parents, which do beget and bring up Children. These Means continuing, it must needs be that Flesh also must continue, and consequently Sin, for Flesh is not without Sin. Therefore in respect of the Flesh we are Sinners ; but in respect of the Spirit we are righteous ; and so we are partly Sinners, and partly righteous. Notwithstanding our Righteousness is much more plentiful then our Sin, because the Holiness and Righteousness of Christ our Mediator doth far exceed the Sin of the whole World ; and the Forgiveness of Sins which we have thro' him is so great, so large, and so infinite, that it easily swalloweth up all Sins, so that we walk according to the Spirit, &c.

The

The *Papists* dreamed that this Commandment belongeth only to their Clergy-men, and that the Apostle exhorteth them to live chastly by subduing the Flesh with Watching, Fasting, Labour, &c. and then they should not fulfil the Concupiscence of the Flesh, that is to say, carnal Lust. As tho' the whole Concupiscence of the Flesh were overcome, when this fleshly Lust is subdued; which notwithstanding they were never able to suppress and keep under with any Yoke that they could lay upon their Flesh. Which Thing *Hierome* (I say nothing of other) who was a marvellous Lover and Defender of Chastity, doth plainly confess. Q (saith he) how often have I thought myself to be in the Midst of the vain Delights and Pleasures of *Rome*, even when I was in the wild Wildernels, which being burnt up with the Heat of the Sun, yieldeth an ouglisome Habitation to the *Monks*, &c. Again; I, who for fear of Hell had condemned myself to such a Prison, thought myself ostentimes to be dancing among yong Women, when I had no other Company but Scorpions and wild Beasts. My Face was pale with Fasting, but my Mind was inflamed with Desires in my cold Body, and altho' my Flesh was half dead already, yet the Flames of fleshly Lusts boiled within me, &c.

If *Hierome* felt in himself such Flames of fleshly Lust, who lived in the barren Wilderness with Bread and Water, What do our holy Belly-gods the Clergy-men feel (think ye,) who so stuff and stretch out themselves with all Kinds of dainty Fare, that it is marvel their Bellies break not? Wherefore these Things are written not to *Heremites* and *Monks* (as the *Papists* dream) nor to Sinners in the World only; but to the universal Church of Christ, and to all the Faithful; whom *Paul* exhorteth to walk in the Spirit, that they fulfil not the Lusts of the Flesh; that is to say, not only to bridle the gross Motions of the Flesh, as carnal Lusts, Wrath, Impatience, and such like; but also the spiritual Motions, as Doubting, Blasphemy, Idolatry, Contempt and Hatred of God, &c.

*Paul* (as I have said) doth not require of the Godly, that they should utterly put off or destroy the Flesh; but that they should so bridle it, that it might be subject to the Spirit. In *Ephes. v. 29.* he biddeth us cherish the Flesh. For as we may not be cruel to other Mens Bodies, nor vex them with unreasonable Labour; even so we may not be cruel to our own Bodies. Wherefore according to *Paul's* Precept, we must cherish our Flesh, that it may be able to endure the Labours both of the Mind and of the Body: but yet only for Necessity's Sake, and not to nourish the Lusts thereof. Therefore if the Flesh begin to wax wanton, repress it and bridle it by the Spirit. If it will not be, marry a Wife, for it is better to marry then to burn. Thus doing thou walkest in the Spirit; that is, thou followest God's Word and dost his Will.

**Verse 17.** *For the Flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the Flesh:*

When *Paul* saith that the Flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit

spirit against the Flesh, he admonisheth us that we must feel the Concupiscence of the Flesh, that is to say, not only carnal Lust, but also Pride, Wrath, Heaviness, Impatience, Incredulity, and such like. Notwithstanding he would have us so to feel them, that we consent not unto them, nor accomplish them, that is, that we neither think, speak, nor do those Things which the Flesh provoketh us unto, *Eph. iv. 29.* As if it move us to Anger, yet we should be angry in such wise (as we are taught in *Psal. iv. 4.*) that we sin not. As if *Paul* would thus say; I know that the Flesh will provoke you unto Wrath, Envy, Doubting, Incredulity and such like; but resist it by the spirit, that ye sin not. But if ye forsake the guiding of the Spirit, and follow the Flesh, ye shall fulfil the Lusts of the Flesh, and ye shall die, as *Paul* saith in *Rom. viii. 13.* So this Saying of the Apostle is to be understood, not of fleshly Lust only, but of the whole Kingdom of Sin.

*Verse 17. And these are contrary the one to the other : So that ye cannot do the Things that ye would.*

The two Captains or Leaders (saith he) the Flesh and the Spirit, are one against another in your Body, so that ye cannot do what ye would. And this Place witnesseth plainly, that *Paul* writeth these Things to the Faithful, that is, to the Church believing in Christ, baptized, justified, renewed, and having full Forgiveness of Sins. Yet notwithstanding he saith that she hath Flesh rebelling against the Spirit. After the same Manner he speaketh of himself in *Rom. vii. 14. 23. 24.* I (saith he) am carnal, sold under Sin. And again, I see another Law in my Members, warring against the Law of my Mind, and bringing me into Captivity to the Law of Sin, which is in my Members. Also, O wretched Man that I am, who shall deliver me from the Body of this Death! &c.

Here not only the School-men, but also some of the old Fathers are much troubled, seeking how they may excuse *Paul*. For it seemeth unto them absurd and unseemly to say, that the Elect Vessel of Christ should have Sin. But we credit *Paul's* own Words, wherein he plainly confesseth that he is sold under Sin, that he is led Captive of Sin, that he hath a Law in his Members rebelling against him, and that in the Flesh he serveth the Law of Sin. Here again they answer, that the Apostle speaketh in the Person of the Wicked. But the Wicked do not complain of the Rebellion of their Flesh, of any Battle or Conflict, or of the Captivity and Bondage of Sin; for Sin mightily reigneth in them. This is therefore the very Complaint of *Paul* and of all the Faithful. Wherefore they have done very wickedly, which have excused *Paul* and all the Faithful to have no Sin. For by this Perswasion (which proceedeth of Ignorance of the Doctrine of Faith) they have robbed the Church of a singular Consolation; they have abolished the Forgiveness of Sins, and made Christ of none Effect.

Where-

Wherefore when *Paul* saith; *I see another Law in my Members*, &c. he denieth not that he hath *Flesh*, and the Vices of the *Flesh* in him. It is likely therefore that he felt sometimes the Motions of carnal Lust. But yet (no doubt) these Motions were well suppressed in him by the great and grievous Afflictions and Temptations both of Mind and Body, wherewith he was in a Manner continually exercised and vexed, as his Epistles do declare. Or, if he at any Time being merry and strong, felt the Lust of the *Flesh*, Wrath, Impatience or such like; yet he resisted them by the Spirit, and suffered not those Motions to bear Rule in him. Therefore let us in no wise suffer such comfortable Places (whereby *Paul* describeth the Battle of the *Flesh* against the Spirit in his own Body) to be corrupted with such foolish Glosses. The Schoolmen, the *Monks*, and such other, never felt any spiritual Tensions, and therefore they fought only for the repressing and overcoming of fleshly Lusts and Lechery, and being proud of that Victory which they never yet obtained, they thought themselves far better and more holy then married Men. I will not say, that under this holy Pretence they nourished and maintained all Kinds of horrible Sins, as Dissention, Pride, Hatred, Disdain and despising of their Neighbours, Trust in their own Righteousness, Presumption, Contempt of all Godliness and of the Word of God, Infidelity, Blasphemy and such like. Against these Sins they never fought, nay rather they took them to be no Sins at all; they put Righteousness in the keeping of their foolish and wicked Vows, and Unrighteousness in the neglecting and contemning of the same.

But this must be our Ground and Anker-hold, that Christ is our only and perfect Righteousness. If we have nothing whereunto we may trust, yet these three Things (as *Paul* saith, *1 Cor. xiii. 13.*) Faith, Hope and Love do remain. Therefore we must always believe, and always hope; we must always take hold of Christ as the Head and Fountain of our Righteousness. *He that believeth in him, shall not be ashamed.* Moreover, we must labour to be outwardly righteous also; that is to say, not to consent to the *Flesh*, which always entiseth us to some evil, but to resist it by the Spirit. We must not be overcome with Impatience for the Unthankfulness and Contempt of the People, which abuseth the Christian Liberty; but thro' the Spirit we must overcome this and all other Temptations. Look then how much we strive against the *Flesh* by the Spirit, so much are we outwardly righteous. Albeit this Righteousness doth not commend us before God.

The Godly feeling the Corruptions of the *Flesh*, must not despair.

Let no Man therefore despair if he feel the *Flesh* oftentimes to stir up new Battles against the Spirit, or if he cannot by and by subdue the *Flesh*, and make it obedient unto the Spirit. I also do wish myself, to have a more valiant and constant Heart, which might be able, not only bodily to condemn the Threatnings of Tyrants, the Heresies, Offences and Tumults which Satan and his Soldiers the Enemies of the Gospel stir up; but also might by and by shake off the Vexation and Anguish of Spirit, and briefly, might not fear the Sharpness of Death, but receive and embrace it as a most friendly

riendly Guest. *But I find another Law in my Members, warring against the Law of my Mind, &c.* Some other do wrestle with inferior Temptations, as Poverty, Reproach, Impatiency and such like.

Let no Man marvel therefore to be dismayed when he seeleth in his body this Battle of the Flesh against the Spirit; but let him pluck up his Heart and comfort himself with these Words of *Paul*;

*The Flesh lusteth against the Spirit. Also; These are contrary the one to the other; so that ye cannot do the Things that ye would.* For by these Sentences he comforteth them that be tempted. As if he should say: It is impossible

The Battle of the Flesh and the Spirit in the Godly.

for you to follow the guiding of the Spirit in all Things without any Feeling or Hinderance of the Flesh: Nay, the Flesh will resist; and so resist and hinder you, that ye cannot do those Things which gladly you would. Here it shall be enough, if ye resist the Flesh and fulfill not the Lust thereof; that is to say, if ye follow the Spirit and not the Flesh, which easily is overthrown by Impatiency, coveteth to revenge, biteth, grudgeth, hateth God, is angry with him, despaireth, &c. Therefore when a Man seeleth this Battle of the Flesh, let him not be discouraged therewith, but let him resist in Spirit, and say; I am a Sinner, and I feel Sin in me; for I have not yet put off the Flesh, in which Sin dwelleth so long as it liveth.

But I will obey the Spirit and not the Flesh; that is, I will by Faith and Hope lay hold upon Christ, and by his Word I will raise up myself, and being so raised up, I will not fulfill the Lust of the Flesh.

To walk in the Spirit.

It is very profitable for the Godly to know this, and to bear it well in Mind; for it wonderfully comforteth them when they are tempted. When I was a *Monk*, I thought by and by that I was utterly cast away, if at any Time I felt the Lust of the Flesh; that is to say, if I felt any evil Motion, fleshly Lust, Wrath, Hatred or Envy against my Brother. I assayed many Works to help to quiet my Conscience, but it would not be: For the Concupiscence and Lust of my Flesh did always return, so that I could not rest, but was continually vexed with these Thoughts: This or that Sin thou hast committed; thou art infected with Envy, with Impatiency, and such other Sins; therefore thou art entred into this holy Order in vain, and all thy good Works are unprofitable. If then I had rightly understood these Sentences of *Paul*;

*The Flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the Flesh: And these are contrary the one to the other; so that ye cannot do the Things that ye would;* I should not have so miserably tormented myself, but should have thought and said to myself as now commonly I do: *Martin*, thou shalt not utterly be without Sin, for thou hast Flesh; thou shalt therefore feel the Battle thereof; according to that Saying of *Paul*; *The Flesh resisteth the Spirit.* Despair not therefore, but resist it strongly, and fulfill not the Lust thereof. Thus doing thou art not under the Law.

Let all troubled Consciences comfort themselves by this Example of *Martin Luther*, and say as he said.

I re-

† *Staupitius*  
a godly  
learned  
Man, of  
whom he  
made men-  
tion before.

What the  
Godly must  
do when  
they feel Sin.

I remember that † *Staupitius* was wont to say : I have vowed unto God above a thousand Times, that I would become a better Man ; but I never performed that which I vowed. Hereafter I will make no such Vow ; for I have now learned by Experience, that I am not able to perform it. Unless therefore God be favourable and merciful unto me for Christ's Sake, and grant unto me a blessed and a happy Hour when I shall depart out of this miserable Life, I shall not be able with all my Vows and all my good Deeds, to stand before him. This was not only a true but also a godly and an holy Desperation ; and this must they confess both with Mouth and Heart which will be saved. For the Godly trust not to their own Righteousness, but say with *David*, Enter not unto Judgment with thy Servant : For in thy Sight shall no Flesh be justified, Psal. cxliii. 2. Again ; If thou, Lord, shouldest mark Iniquities : O Lord, Who shall stand ? Psal. cxxx. 3. They look unto Christ their Reconciler, who gave his Life for their Sins. Moreover, they know that the Remnant of Sin which is in their Flesh is not laid to their Charge, but freely pardoned. Notwithstanding in the mean while they fight in Spirit against the Flesh, lest they should fulfil the Lusts thereof. And altho' they feel the Flesh to rage and rebel against the Spirit, and themselves also to fall sometimes into Sin thro' Infirmitie, yet are they not discouraged, nor think therefore that their State and Kind of Life, and the Works which are done according to their Calling, displease God ; but they raise up themselves by Faith.

The Con-  
flict and Bat-  
tle of the  
Flesh and the  
Spirit in the  
Children of  
God.

The Faithful therefore receive great Consolation by this Doctrine of *Paul*, in that they know themselves to have Part of the Flesh, and Part of the Spirit, but yet so notwithstanding that the Spirit ruleth, and the Flesh is subdued and kept under awe, that Righteousness reigneth, and Sin serveth. He that knoweth not this Doctrine, and thinketh that the Faithful ought to be without all Fault, and yet seeth the contrary in himself, must needs at the length be swallowed up by the Spirit of Heaviness, and fall into Desperation. But whoso knoweth this Doctrine well and useth it rightly, to him the Things that are evil, turn unto Good, *Rom. viii. 28*. For when the Flesh provoketh him to Sin, by Occasion thereof he is stirred up and enforced to seek Forgiveness of Sins by Christ, and to embrace the Righteousness of Faith, which else he would not so greatly esteem, nor seek for the same with so great Desire. Therefore it profiteth us very much to feel sometimes the Wickedness of our Nature and Corruption of our Flesh, that yet by this Means we may be waked and stirred up to Faith, and to call upon Christ. And by this Occasion a Christian becometh a mighty Work-man, and a wonderful Creator, which of Heaviness can make Joy, of Terror Comfort, of Sin Righteousness, and of Death Life, when he by this Means repressing and bridling the Flesh, maketh it subject to the Spirit.

Where.

Wherefore let not them which feel the Lust of the Flesh, despair of their Salvation. Let them feel it and all the Force thereof, so that they consent not to it. Let the Passions of Lust, Wrath and such other Vices take them, so that they do not overthrow them. Let Sin assail them, so that they do not accomplish it. Yea the more godly a Man is, the more doth he feel that Battle. And hereof come those lamentable Complaints of the Faithful in the *Psalms* and in the whole Scripture. Of this Battle the *Hermites*, the *Monks*, and the School-men, and all that seek Righteousness and Salvation by Works, know nothing at all.

But here may some Man say; that it is a dangerous Matter to teach that a Man is not condemned, if by and by he overcome not the Motions and Passions of the Flesh which he seeleth. For when this Doctrine is taught among the common People, it maketh them careless, negligent and slothful. This is it which I said a little before, that if we teach Faith, then carnal Men neglect and reject Works: If Works be required, then is Faith and Consolation of Conscience lost. Here no Man can be compelled, neither can there be any certain Rule prescribed. But let every Man diligently try himself to what Passion of the Flesh he is most subject, and when he findeth that, let him not be careless, nor flatter himself; but let him watch and wrestle in Spirit against it, that if he cannot altogether bridle it, yet at least he do not fulfil the Lust thereof.

This Battle of the Flesh against the Spirit, all the Children of God have had and felt: And the self same do we also feel and prove. He that searcheth his own Conscience, if he be not an Hypocrite, shall well perceive that to be true in himself which *Paul* here saith, that the Flesh lusteth against the Spirit. All the Faithful therefore do feel and confess that their Flesh resisteth against the Spirit, and that these two are so contrary the one to the other in themselves, that they do what they can, they are not able to perform that which they would do. Therefore the Flesh hindreth us that we cannot keep the Commandments of God, that we cannot love our Neighbours as ourselves, much less can we love God with all our Heart: Therefore it is impossible for us to become righteous by the Works of the Law. Indeed there is a Good-will in us, and so must there be (for it is the Spirit itself which resisteth the Flesh) which would gladly do good, fulfil the Law, love God and his Neighbour, and such like, but the Flesh obeyeth not this Good-will, but resisteth; and yet God imputeth not unto us this Sin: For he is merciful to those that believe, for Christ's Sake.

But it followeth not therefore that thou shouldst make a light Matter of Sin, because God doth not impute it. True it is that he doth not impute it: But to whom, and for what Cause? To such as repent and lay hold by Faith upon Christ the Mercy seat, for whose Sake, as all their sins are forgiven them; even so the Rempants of Sin which are in them, are not imputed unto them. They make not their Sin less then it is, but amplify it and set it out as it is indeed; for they know that it cannot be put away by Satisfaction, Works, or Righteousness, but only by the Death of Christ. And yet notwithstanding the Greatness and enormity of their Sin doth not cause them to despair, but they assure

themselves, that the same shall not be imputed unto them, or laid to their Charge.

This I say, lest any Man should think that after Faith is received, there is little Account to be made of Sin. Sin is truly Sin whether a Man commit it before he hath received the Knowledge of Christ, or after. And God always hateth Sin; yea all Sin is damnable as touching the Fact itself. But in that it is not damnable to him that believeth, it cometh of Christ, who by his Death hath taken away Sin. But to him that believeth not in Christ, not only all his Sins are damnable; but even his good Works also are Sin, according to that Saying; *Whatsoever is not of Faith is Sin*, Rom. xiv. 23. Therefore the Error of the School-men is most pernicious, which do distinguish Sins according to the Fact, and not according to the Person. He that believeth hath as great Sin as the Unbeliever. But to him that believeth, it is forgiven and not imputed; to the Unbeliever it is not pardoned, but imputed. To the Believer it is venial; to the Unbeliever it is mortal and damnable: Not for any Difference of Sins, or because the Sin of the Believer is less, and the Sin of the Unbeliever greater; but for the Difference of the Persons. For the Faithful assureth himself by Faith that his Sin is forgiven him, forasmuch as Christ hath given himself for it. Therefore altho' he have Sin in him and daily sinneth, yet he continueth godly; but contrariwise, the Unbeliever continueth wicked. And this is the true Wisdom and Consolation of the Godly, that altho' they have and commit Sins, yet they know that for Christ's Sake they are not imputed unto them.

This I say for the Comfort of the Godly. For they only feel indeed that they have and do commit Sins; that is to say, they feel that they do not love God so fervently as they should do; that they do not believe him so heartily as they would; but rather they oftentimes doubt whether God have a Care of them or no; they are impatient and are angry with God in Adversity. Hereof (as I have said) proceed the sorrowful Complaints of the Faithful in the Scriptures, and specially in the *Psalms*. And *Paul* himself complaineth that he is sold under Sin, Rom. vii. 14. And here he saith, that the Flesh resisteth and rebelleth against the Spirit. But because they mortify the Deeds of the Flesh by the Spirit (as he saith in another Place, and also in the End of this Chapter, *They crucify the Flesh with the Desires and Lusts thereof*;) therefore these Sins do not hurt them nor condemn them. But if they obey the Flesh in fulfilling the Lusts thereof, then do they lose Faith and the Holy Ghost. And if they do not abhor their Sin, and return unto Christ (who hath given Power to his Church, to receive and raise up those that be fallen, that so they may recover Faith and the Holy Ghost) they die in their Sins. Wherefore we speak not of them which dream that they have Faith, and yet continue still in their Sins. These Men have their Judgment already: *They that live after the Flesh shall die*, Rom. viii. 13. Also: *The Works of the Flesh are manifest, which are these, Adultery, Fornication, Uncleanneſs, Lasciviousneſs,*

*Idoltry, Witchcraft, Hatred, Variance, Emulations, Wrath, Seditions, Strife, Heresies, Envyings, Murders, Drunkenness, Revellings, and such like: Of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in Time past, that they which do such Things, shall not inherit the Kingdom of God.*

Hereby we may see who be the very Saints indeed. They be not stocks and Stones (as the Monks and School-men dream) so that they be never moved with any Thing, never feel any Lusts or Desires of the flesh; but as *Paul* saith, their flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and therefore they have Sin, and both can and do Sin. And the 32d Psalm witnesseth, that the Faithful do confess their Unrighteousness, and pray that the Wickedness of their Sin may be forgiven, where he saith: *Ver. 5. I will confess my Transgressions unto the Lord: and thou forgavest the Iniquity of my Sin. Ver. 6. Therefore shall every one that is godly, say unto thee, &c.* Moreover, the whole Church, which indeed is holy, prayeth that her Sins may be forgiven her, and it believeth the forgiveness of Sins. And in Psalm cxliii. 2. *David* prayeth; *O Lord, enter not into Judgment with thy Servant: For in thy Sight shall no Man living be justified.* And in Psalm cxxx. 3. 4. *If thou, Lord, shouldst mark Iniquities: O Lord, Who shall stand? But there is Forgiveness with thee, &c.* Thus do the chiefest Saints and Children of God speak and pray; as *David, Paul, &c.* All the Faithful therefore do speak and pray the same Thing, and with the same Spirit. The Popish *Sophisters* read not the Scriptures, or if they read them; they have a Vail before their Eyes; and therefore as they cannot judge rightly of any Thing, so can they not judge rightly either of Sin, or of Holiness.

*Verse 18. But if ye be led by the Spirit, ye are not under the Law.*

*Paul* cannot forget his Doctrine of Faith, but still repeateth it and teacheth it into their Heads; yea even when he treateth of good Works. Here some Man may object: How can it be that we should not be under the Law? And yet thou notwithstanding, *O Paul*, teacheth us, that we have flesh which lusteth against the Spirit, and fighteth against us, tormenteth and bringeth us into Bondage. And indeed we feel Sin, and cannot be delivered from the Feeling thereof, tho' we would never so fain. And what is this else, but to be under the Law? But saith he; let this nothing trouble you; only do your Endeavour that ye may be led by the Spirit, that is to say; shew yourselves willing to follow and obey that Will which resisteth the flesh, and doth not accomplish the lusts thereof. (for this is to be led and to be drawn by the Spirit;) then are ye under the Law. So *Paul* speaketh of himself, Rom. vii. 25. *My Mind I serve the Law of God;* that is to say, in Spirit I am not subject to any Sin; but yet in my flesh I serve the Law of Sin. The Faithful then are not under the Law, that is to say, in Spirit; for the Law cannot accuse them, nor pronounce Sentence of Death against them, altho' they feel Sin, and confess themselves to be Sinners; for

the Power and Strength of the Law is taken from it by Christ, *Who was made under the Law, that he might redeem them which were under the Law*, Gal. iv. 4, 5. Therefore the Law cannot accuse that for Sin in the Faithful, which is Sin indeed and committed against the Law.

So great then is the Power and Dominion of the Spirit, that the Law cannot accuse the Godly, tho' they commit that which is Sin indeed. For Christ is our Righteousness, whom we apprehend by Faith; he is without all Sin, and therefore the Law cannot accuse him.

**What it is to be led by the Spirit.** As long as we cleave fast unto him, we are led by the Spirit, and are free from the Law. And so the Apostle even when he teacheth good Works, forgetteth not his Doctrine concerning Justification; but always sheweth that it is impossible for us to be justified by Works. For the Remnants of Sin cleave fast in our Flesh, and therefore so long as our Flesh liveth, it ceaseth not to lust contrary to the Spirit. Notwithstanding there cometh no Danger unto us thereby; because we be free from the Law, so that we walk in the Spirit.

And with these Words; *If ye be led by the Spirit, ye are not under the Law*, thou mayest greatly comfort thyself and others that be grievously tempted. For it oftentimes cometh to pass, that a Man is so vehemently assailed with Wrath, Hatred, Impatience, carnal Desire, Terror and Anguish of Spirit, or some other Lust of the Flesh, that he cannot shake them off, tho' he would never so fain.

**How a troubled Mind is to be comforted.** What should he do in this Case? Should he despair? No, God forbid; but let him say thus with himself: *Thy Flesh fighteth and rageth against the Spirit. Let it rage as long as it listeth; only see thou that in any Case thou consent not to it, to fulfil the Lusts thereof, but walk wisely and follow the leading of the Spirit.* In so doing, thou art free from the Law. It accuseth and terrifieth thee (I grant) but altogether in vain. In this Conflict therefore of the Flesh against the Spirit, there is nothing better, then to have the Word of God before thine Eyes, and therein to seek the Comfort of the Spirit.

And let not him which suffereth this Temptation, be dismayed, in that the Devil can so aggravate Sin, that during the Conflict he thinketh himself to be utterly overthrown, and seeleth nothing else but the Wrath of God and Desperation. Here in any wise let him not follow his own Feeling and the Judgment of Reason, but let him take sure hold of this Saying of Paul; *If ye be led by the Spirit*, that is, to wit, if ye raise up and comfort yourselves thro' Faith in Christ, ye be not under the Law. So shall he have a strong Buckler wherewith he may beat back all the fiery Darts which the wicked Fiend assaileth him withal. How much soever then the Flesh doth boil and rage, yet cannot her

**How the Lusts of the Flesh must be overcome.** Motions and Rages hurt and condemn him, for as much as he, following the guiding of the Spirit, doth not consent unto the Flesh, nor fulfil the Lusts thereof. Therefore, when the Motions of the Flesh do rage, the only Remedy is to take to us the Sword of the Spirit; that is

to say, the Word of Salvation, (which is, *That God would not the Death of a Sinner, but that he convert and live*) and to fight against them : Which if we do, let us not doubt but we shall obtain the Victory, altho' so long as the Battle endureth, we feel the Pain contrary. But set the Word out of Sight, and there is no Counsel nor Help remaining. Of this that I say, I myself have good Experience. I have suffered many great Passions, and the same also very vehement and great. But so soon as I laid hold of any Place of Scripture, and stayed myself upon it as upon my chief Anker-hold, straightways my Tentations did vanish away ; which without the Word it had been impossible for me to endure any little Space, and much less to overcome them.

The Sum or Effect therefore of all that which *Paul* hath taught in this Disputation or Discourse concerning the Conflict or Battle between the Flesh and the Spirit, is this ; That the Saints and the Elect of God cannot perform that which the Spirit desireth. For the Spirit would gladly be altogether pure, but the Flesh being joined unto the Spirit will not suffer that. Notwithstanding they be saved by the Remission of Sins, which is in Christ Jesus. Moreover, because they walk in the Spirit, and are led by the Spirit, they be not under the Law ; that is to say, the Law cannot accuse or terrify them ; yea, altho' it go about never so much so to do, yet shall it never be able to drive them to Desperation.

*Verse 19. Now the Works of the Flesh are manifest, which are these, &c.*

This Place is not unlike to this Sentence of Christ ; *Ye shall know them by their Fruits : Do Men gather Grapes of Thorns, or Figs of Thistles ? Even so every good Tree bringeth forth good Fruit : But a corrupt Tree bringeth forth evil Fruit, &c.* Matth. vii. 16, 17. *Paul* teacheth the very same Thing which Christ taught, that is, to wit, that Works and Fruits do sufficiently testify whether the Trees be good or evil ; whether Men follow the guiding of the Flesh or of the Spirit. As if he should say ; Lest some of you might say for himself, that he understandeth me not now when I treat of the Battle between the Flesh and the Spirit, I will set before your Eyes first the Works of the Flesh, whereof many are known even to the Ungodly ; and then also the Works of the Spirit.

And this doth *Paul*, because there were many Hypocrites amongst the *Galatians*, (as there are also at this Day among us) which outwardly pretended to be godly Men, and boasted much of the Spirit, and as touching the Words, they understood the true Doctrine of the Gospel ; but they walked not according to the Spirit, but according to the Flesh, and performed the Works thereof. Whereby *Paul* manifestly convinceth them to be no such holy Men indeed as they boasted themselves to be. And lest they should despise this his Admonition, he pronounceth against them this dreadful Sentence, that they shall not be Inheritors of the Kingdom of Heaven, to the End, that being thus admonished, they might a-

inend. Every Age even in the Faithful, hath his peculiar Temptations; as fleshly Lusts assail a Man most of all in his Youth, in his middle Age Ambition and Vain-glory, and in his old Age Covetousness. There was never yet any of the Faithful, whom the Flesh hath not often in his Life-time provoked to Impatiency, Anger, Vain-glory, &c. *Paul* therefore speaking here of the Faithful, saith, that the Flesh lusteth in them against the Spirit, &c. therefore they shall never be without the Desires and Battles of the Flesh; notwithstanding they do not hurt them. But of this Matter we must thus judge, that it is one Thing to be provoked of the Flesh, and yet not willingly to yield to the Lusts and Desires thereof, but to walk after the leading of the Spirit, and to resist the Flesh; and another Thing to assent unto the Flesh, and without all Fear or Remorse to perform and fulfil the Works thereof and to continue therein, and yet notwithstanding to counterfeit Holiness, and to brag of the Spirit. The first he comforteth, when he saith, that they be led by the Spirit, and be not under the Law. The other he threatneth with everlasting Destruction.

Notwithstanding sometimes it happeneth, that the Saints also do fall and perform the Lusts of the Flesh: As *David* fell horribly into Adultery. Also, he was the Cause of the Slaughter of many Men, when he caused *Uriah* to be slain in the fore-front of the Battle; and thereby also he gave Occasion to the Enemies to glory and triumph over the People of God, to worship their Idols, and to blaspheme the God of *Israel*. *Peter* also fell most grievously and horribly when he denied Christ. But altho' these Sins were great and hainous, yet were they not committed upon any Contempt of God, or of a wilful and obstinate Mind, but thro' Infirmitie and Weakness. Again, when they were admonished, they did not obstinately continue in their Sins, but repented. Such he willeth afterwards in *Gal. vi. 1.* to be received, instructed and restored, saying; *If a Man be overtaken in a Fault, ye which are spiritual, restore such an one in the Spirit of Meekness; considering thyself, lest thou also be tempted.* To those therefore which sin and fall thro' Infirmitie, Pardon is not denied, so that they rise again and continue not in their Sin; for of all

Things Continuance in Sin is the worst. But if they repent not, but still obstinately continue in their Wickedness, and perform the Desires of the Flesh, it is a certain Token that there is || Deceit in their Spirit.

|| That is a secret Con-tempt of God, whereof *David* speaketh, *Psal. x 4.* Some are exercised with greater Temptations, and some with less.

No Man therefore shall be without Lusts and Desires so long as he liveth in the Flesh, and therefore no Man shall be free from Tentations. Notwithstanding some are tempted one Way, and some another, according to the Difference of the Persons. One Man is assailed with more vehement and grievous Motions, as with Bitterness and Anguish of Spirit, Blasphemy, Distrust and Desperation: Another, with more gross Temptations, as with fleshly Lusts, Wrath, Envy, Covetousness and such like. But in this

Case *Paul* requireth of us that we walk in the Spirit and resist the Flesh. But whoso obeyeth the Flesh, and continueth without the

the Fear of God or Remorse of Conscience in accomplishing the Desires and Lusts thereof; let him know that he pertaineth not unto Christ: And altho' he brag of the Name of a Christian never so much, yet doth he but deceive himself. For they which are of Christ, do crucify their Flesh with the Affections and Lusts thereof.

*Who be rightly called Saints, and be so indeed.*

This Place, (as I have also forewarned you by the Way) containeth in it a singular Consolation; for it teacheth us, that the Saints and most holy Men in this World live not without Concupiscence and Temptations of the Flesh, nor yet without Sins. It warneth us therefore to take heed that we do not as some did, of whom *Gerson* writeth, which laboured to attain to such Perfection, that they might be without all feeling of Temptations or Sins; that is to say, very Stocks and Stones.

The like Imagination the *Monks* and School-men had of their Saints, as tho' they had been very senseless Blocks and without all Affections. The Virgin *Mary* felt great Grief and Sorrow of Spirit when she missed her Son, *Luke* ii. *David* in the *Psalms* complaineth that he is almost swallowed up with excessive Sorrow for the Greatness of his Temptations and Sins. *Paul* also complaineth that he hath Battles without, and Terrors within, *2 Cor.* vii. 5. and that in his Flesh he serveth the Law of Sin. He saith that he is careful for all the Churches, *2 Cor.* xi. 38. and that God shewed great Mercies towards him, in that he delivered *Epaphroditus* being at the Point of Death, to Life again, lest he should have had Sorrow upon Sorrow. Therefore the Saints of the *Papists* are like to the *Stoicks*, who imagined such wise Men, as in all the World were never yet to be found. And by this foolish and devilish Perswasion which proceedeth of the Ignorance of this Doctrine of *Paul*, the School-men brought both themselves and others without Number, into horrible Desperation.

When I was a *Monk* I did oftentimes most heartily wish, that I might once be so happy, as to see the Conversation and Life of some Saint or holy Man. But in the mean Time, I imagined such a Saint as lived in the Wilderness, abstaining from Meat or Drink, and living only with Roots of Herbs and cold Water; and this Opinion of those monstrous Saints, I had learned not only out of the Books of the *Sophisters* and School-men, but also out of the Books of the Fathers. For thus writeth *Hierome* in a certain Place: As touching Meats and Drinks I say nothing, for as much as it is Excess, that even such as are weak and feeble should use cold Water, or eat any soddin Thing, &c. But now in the Light of the Gospel we plainly see who they are whom Christ and his Apostles call Saints: Not they which live a sole and a single Life, or straitly observe Days, Meats, Apparel and such other Things, or in outward Appearance do other great and monstrous Works, (as we read of many in the Lives of the Fathers;) but they which being called by the Sound of the Gospel and baptized, do believe that they be justified and cleansed by the Death of Christ. So *Paul* every where writing to

the Christians, calleth them holy, the Children and Heirs of God, &c. Whosoever then do believe in Christ, whether they be Men or Women, bond or free, are all Saints; not by their own Works, but by the Works of God, which they receive by Faith; as his Word, the Sacraments, the Passion of Christ, his Death, Resurrection, Victory, the sending of the Holy Ghost. To conclude, they are Saints thro' such a Holiness as they freely receive, not thro' such a Holiness as they themselves have gotten by their own Industry, good Works and Merits.

So the Ministers of the Word, the Magistrates of Common-weals, Parents, Children, Masters, Servants, &c. are true Saints, if *first* and before all Things, they assure themselves that Christ is their Wisdom, Righteousness, Sanctification and Redemption. *Secondly*, If every one do his Duty in his Vocation according to the Rule of God's Word, and obey not the Flesh, but repress the Lusts and Desires thereof by the Spirit. Now, whereas all be not of like Strength to resist Temptations, but many Infirmities and Offences are seen in the most Part of Men; this nothing hindreth their Holiness, so that their Sins proceed not of an obstinate Wilfulness, but only of Frailty and Infirmary. For (as I have said before) the Godly do feel the Desires and Lusts of the Flesh, but they resist them, to the End that they accomplish them not. Also, if they at any Time unadvisedly fall into Sin, yet notwithstanding they obtain Forgiveness thereof, if by Faith in Christ they be raised up again; who would not that we should drive away, but seek out and bring home the straying and lost Sheep, &c. Therefore God forbid that I should straightway judge those which are weak in Faith and Manners, to be prophane or unholy, if I see that they love and reverence the Word of God, come to the Supper of the Lord, &c. For these God hath received, and counteth them righteous thro' the Remission of Sins; to him they stand or fall, &c.

Wherefore with great rejoicing I give Thanks to God, for that he hath abundantly and above Measure granted that unto me, which I so earnestly desired of him when I was a *Monk*: For he hath given unto me the Grace to see, not one but many Saints, yea, an infinite Number of the true Saints; not such as the *Sophisters* have devised, but such as Christ himself and his Apostles do describe. Of the which Number I assure myself to be one. For I am baptized, and I do believe that Christ is my Lord, by his Death hath redeemed and delivered me from all my Sins, and hath given to me eternal Righteousness and Holiness. And let him be holden accursed, whosoever shall not give this Honour unto Christ, to believe that by his Death, his Word, &c. he is justified and sanctified.

Wherefore rejecting this foolish and wicked Opinion concerning the Name of Saints (which in the Time of Popery and Ignorance we thought to pertain only to the Saints which are in Heaven, and in Earth to the *Heremites* and *Monks*, which did certain great and strange Works;) let us now learn by the holy Scripture, that all they which faithfully believe in Christ are Saints. The World hath in great Admiration the Holiness of *Benedict*, *Gregory*, *Bernard*, *Francis* and such like, because

it heareth that they have done, in outward Appearance and in the Judgment of the World; certain great and excellent Works. Doubtless *Hillarie, Cyril, Athanasius, Ambrose, Augustine* and others were Saints also, which lived not so strait and severe a Life as they did, but were conversant amongst Men, and did eat common Meats, drink Wine, and used cleanly and comely Apparel, so that in a Manner there was no Difference between them and other honest Men as touching the common Custom, and the Use of Things necessary for this Life; and yet were they to be preferred far above the other. These Men taught the Doctrine and Faith of Christ sincerely and purely, without any Superstition; they resisted *Hereticks*, they purged the Church from innumerable Errors; their Company and Familiarity was comfortable to many, and especially to those which were afflicted and heavy-hearted, whom they raised up and comforted by the Word of God. For they did not withdraw themselves from the Company of Men, but they executed their Offices even where most Resort of People was. Contrariwise, the other not only taught many Things contrary to the Faith, but also were themselves the Authors and first Inventors of many Superstitions, Errors, abominable Ceremonies and wicked Worshippings. Therefore except at the Hour of Death they laid hold of Christ, and reposed their whole Trust in his Death and Victory, their strait and painful Life availed them nothing at all.

These Things do sufficiently declare who be the true Saints indeed, and which is to be called a holy Life: Not the Life of those which lurk in Caves and Dens, which make their Bodies lean with fasting, which wear Hair, and do other like Things with this Perswasion and Trust, that they shall have some singular Reward in Heaven above all other Christians; but of those which be baptized and believe in Christ, which put off the old Man with his Works, but not at once; for Concupiscence and Lust remaineth in them so long as they live; the feeling whereof doth hurt them nothing at all, if they suffer it not to reign in them, but subdue it to the Spirit.

This Doctrine bringeth great Consolation to godly Minds, that when they feel these Darts of the Flesh, wherewith Satan assaileth the Spirit, they should not despair; as it happeneth to many in the *Papacy*, which thought that they ought to feel no Concupiscence of the Flesh, whereas notwithstanding *Hiereme, Gregory, Benedict, Bernard* and others (whom the Monks set before them, as a perfect Example of Chastity and of all Christian Vertues) could never come so far as to feel no Concupiscence or Lust of the Flesh. Yea, they felt it, and that very strongly: Which Thing they acknowledge and plainly confesse in divers Places of their Books.

Therefore we rightly confesse in the Articles of our Belief, that we believe there is an holy Church. For it is invisible, dwelling in Spirit in a Place that none can attain unto, and therefore her Holiness cannot be seen: For God doth so hide her and cover her with Infirmities, with Sins, with Errors, with divers Forms of the Cross and Offences, that according to the Judgment of Reason it is no-where to be seen. They that

that are ignorant of this, when they see the Infirmities and Sins of those which are baptized, which have the Word and believe it; are by and by offended, and judge them not to pertain to the Church. And in the mean while, they dream that the *Heremites*, the *Monks*, and such other Shavellings are the Church, which honour God with their Lips, and worship him in vain, because they follow not the Word of God, but the Doctrines and Commandments of Men, and teach others to do the same, And because they do certain superstitious and monstrous Works, which carnal Reason magnifieth and highly esteemeth; therefore they judge them only to be Saints and to be the Church. And in so doing, they change and turn this Article of the Faith cleave contrary: *I believe that there is a holy Church, &c.* and in the Stead of this Word *I do not see,* [*I believe*] they put in [*I see.*] These Kinds of Righteousness and Holiness of Man's own devising, are nothing but spiritual Sorceries wherewith the Eyes and Minds of Men are blinded, and led from the Knowledge of true Holiness.

But thus teach we, that the Church hath no Spot nor Wrinkle, but is holy, and yet thro' Faith only in Christ Jesus: Again, that she is holy in Life and Conversation, by abstaining from the Lusts of the Flesh, and Exercise of spiritual Works; but yet not in such Sort that she is delivered from all evil Desires, or purged from all wicked Opinions and Errors. For the Church always confesseth her Sins, and prayeth that her Faults may be pardoned: Also she believeth the Forgiveness of Sins. The Saints therefore do sin, fall, and also err; but yet thro' Ignorance: For they would not willingly deny Christ, forsake the Gospel, &c. therefore they have Remission of Sins. And if thro' Ignorance they err also in Doctrine, yet is this pardoned; for in the End they acknowledge their Error, and rest only upon the Truth, and the Grace of God offered in Christ, as *Hierome*, *Gregory*, *Bernard* and others did. Let Christians then endeavour to avoid the Works of the Flesh; but the Desires or Lusts of the Flesh they cannot avoid.

It is very profitable therefore for them to feel the unclean Lusts of the Flesh, lest they should be puffed up with some vain and wicked Opinion of the Righteousness of their own Works, as tho' they were accepted before God for the same. The *Monks* being puffed up with this Opinion of their own Righteousness, thought themselves to be so holy, that they sold their Righteousness and Holiness to others, altho' they were convinced by the Testimonies of their own Hearts, that they were unclean. So pernicious and pestilent a Poison it is for a Man to trust in his own Righteousness, and to think himself to be clean. But the Godly, because they feel the Uncleaness of their own Hearts, therefore they cannot trust to their own Righteousness. This feeling so maketh them to stoop, and so humbleth them, that they cannot trust to their own good Works, but are constrained to fly unto Christ their Mercy-seat and only Succour; who hath not a corrupt and sinful, but a most pure and holy Flesh, which he hath given for the Life of the World, *John vi. 51.* in him they find a sound and perfect Righteousness. Thus they

they continue in Humility; not counterfeited and monkish, but true and unfeigned, because of the Uncleanneſs which yet remaineth in their Fleſh; for the which if God would ſtraitly judge them, they ſhould be found guilty of eternal Death. But becauſe they liſt not up themſelves proudly againſt God, but with a broken and a contrite Heart humbly acknowledging their Sins, and reſting wholly upon the Benefit of the Mediator Chriſt, they come forth into the Preſence of God, and pray that for his Sake their Sins may be forgiven them; God ſpreadeth over them an infinite Heaven of Grace, and doth not impute unto them their Sins for Chriſt's Sake.

This I ſay to the End that we may take heed of the pernicious Errors of the *Papiſts* touching the Holineſs of Life, wherein our Minds were ſo wrapped, that without great Difficulty we could not wind ourſelves out of them. Wherefore do you endeavour with Diligence, that ye may diſcern and rightly judge between true Righteouſneſs and Holineſs, and that which is hypocritical; then ſhall ye behold the Kingdom of Chriſt with other Eyes then carnal Reaſon doth, that is, with ſpiritual Eyes, and certainly judge thoſe to be true Saints indeed which are baptized and believe in Chriſt, and afterwards in the ſame Faith where- by they are juſtified, and their Sins both paſt and preſent are forgiven, ſo abſtain from the Deſires of the Fleſh. But from theſe Deſires they are not thoroughly cleaned; for the Fleſh luſteth againſt the Spirit. Notwithſtanding theſe unclean and rebellious Luſts do ſtill remain in them, to this End that they may be humbled, and being ſo humbled, they may feel the Sweetneſs of the Grace, and Benefit of Chriſt.

So theſe Remnants of unclean Luſts and Sins do nothing at all hinder, but greatly further the Godly; for the more they feel their Infirmities and Sins, ſo much the more they fly unto Chriſt the Throne of Grace, and more heartily crave his Aid and Succour; *to wit*, that he will cover them with his Righteouſneſs, that he will increaſe their Faith, that he will endue them with his holy Spirit, by whoſe gracious leading and guiding they may overcome the Luſts of the Fleſh, that they rule and reign not over them, but may be ſubject unto them. Thus true Chriſtians do continually wreſtle with Sin, and yet notwithſtanding in wreſtling they are not overcome, but obtain the Victory.

This have I ſaid, that ye may underſtand, not by Mens Dreams, but by the Word of God, who be true Saints indeed. We ſee then how greatly Chriſtian Doctrines helpeth to the raiſing up and comforting of weak Conſciences; which treateth not of Coals, Shavings, Shearings, Fraternities and ſuch like Toys, but of high and weighty Matters, as how we may overcome the Fleſh, Sin, Death and the Devil. This Doctrine as it is unknown to all *Juſticiaries* and ſuch as truſt to their own Works, ſo it is impoſſible for them to inſtruct or bring into the right Way one poor Conſcience wandering and going aſtray; or to pacify and comfort the ſame when it is in Heavineſs, Terror or Deſperation.

To the God-  
ly thoſe  
Things  
which are  
evil turn  
unto good.

**Verses 19, 20.** *Now the Works of the Flesh are manifest, which are these, Adultery, Fornication, Uncleanness, Lasciviousness, Idolatry, Witchcraft, &c.*

*Paul* doth not recite all the Works of the Flesh, but useth a certain Number for a Number uncerttain. First, He reckoneth up the Kinds of Lusts, as Adultery, Fornication, Uncleanness, Lasciviousness, &c. Now, not only carnal Lust is a Work of the Flesh, as the *Papists* dreamed, who called Marriage also a Work of the Flesh, (so chaste and holy are these Men) whereof God himself is the Author, which also they themselves reckoned among their Sacraments; but he numbeth also amongst the Works of the Flesh (as I have said before) Idolatry, Witchcraft, Hatred and such other, which hereafter follow. Wherefore this Place alone doth sufficiently shew what *Paul* meaneth by the Flesh. These

Words are so well known that they need no Interpretation.

*Idolatry.* All the highest Religions, the Holiness and most fervent Devotions of those which do reject Christ the Mediator, and worship God without his Word and Commandment, are nothing else but plain Idolatry. As in Popery it was counted a most holy and spiritual Act, when the *Monks* being shut up in their Selles did muse and meditate of God or of his Works, and when they being inflamed with most earnest Devotions, kneeled down, prayed, and were so ravished with the Contemplation of heavenly Things, that they wept for Joy. There was no thinking of Women or of any other Creature, but only of God the Creator, and of his wonderful Works; and yet this most spiritual Work (as Reason esteemeth it) is according to *Paul*, a Work of the Flesh and plain Idolatry. Wherefore all such Religion whereby God is worshipped without his Word and Commandment is Idolatry. And the more holy and spiritual it seemeth to be in outward Shew, so much the more dangerous and pernicious it is. For it turneth Men away from Faith in Christ, and causeth them to trust to their own Strength, Works and Righteousness. And such is the Religion of the *Anabaptists* at this Day; albeit they daily more and more bewray themselves to be possessed with the Devil, and to be seditious and bloody Men.

Therefore the fasting, the wearing of Hair, holy Works, strait Rule, and whole Life of the *Carthusians*, or Charter-house-Monks, whose Order notwithstanding is of all other the straitest and sharpest, be very Works of the Flesh, yea plain Idolatry. For they imagine themselves to be Saints, and to be saved, not by Christ (whom they fear as a severe and cruel Judge) but by observing of their Rules and Orders. Indeed they think of God, of Christ and of heavenly Things, but after their own Reason, and not after the Word of God; so wit, that their Apparel, their Manner of living, and their whole Conversation is holy and pleaseth Christ; whom not only they hope to pacify by this Straitness of Life, but also to be rewarded of him for their good Deeds and Righteousness. Therefore their most spiritual Thoughts (as they dream

of them) are not only most fleshly, but also most wicked; for they would wipe away their Sins, and obtain Grace and Life everlasting; by the Trust and Affiance they have in their own Righteousness, rejecting and despising the Word, Faith and Christ. All the Worshippings and Services of God therefore, and all Religions without Christ are Idolatry and Idol-service. In Christ alone the Father is well pleased; who so heareth him and doth that which he hath commanded, the same is beloved because of the Beloved. He commandeth us to believe his Word and to be baptized, &c. and not to devise any new Worshipping or Service of God.

The false and true Worshipping of God.

I have said before that the Works of the Flesh be manifest; as Adultery, Fornication, and such like, be manifestly known to all Men. But Idolatry hath such a goodly Shew and is so spiritual, that it is known but to very few, that is to the Faithful, to be a Work of the Flesh. For the Monk when he liveth chastly, fasteth, prayeth or saith *Mass*, is so far from thinking himself to be an Idolater, or that he fulfilleth any Work of the Flesh, that he is assuredly perswaded that he is led and governed by the Spirit, that he walketh according to the Spirit, that he thinketh, speaketh and doth nothing else but mere spiritual Things, and that he doth such Service unto God as is most acceptable unto him. No Man can at this Day perswade the *Papists* that their *Mass* is a great Blasphemy against God and Idolatry, yea and that so horrible as never was any in the Church since the Apostles Time. For they are blind and obstinate, and therefore they judge so perversly of God and of God's Matters, thinking Idolatry to be the true Service of God, and contrariwise, Faith to be Idolatry. But we which believe in Christ and know his Mind, are able to judge and to discern all Things, and cannot truly and before God be judged of any Man.

The *Mass* horrible Idolatry and Blasphemy against Christ.

Hereby it is plain that *Paul* calleth Flesh whatsoever is in Man, comprehending all the three Powers of the Soul, that is, the Will that lusteth, the Will that is inclined to Anger, and the Understanding. The Works of the Will that lusteth, are Adultery, Fornication, Uncleaness and such like. The Works of the Will inclined to Wrath, are Quarrellings, Contentions, Murder, and such other. The Works of Understanding or Reason, are Errors, false Religions, Superstitions, Idolatry, Heresies; that is to say, Sects and such like. It is very necessary for us to know these Things; for this Word [*Flesh*] is so darkned in the whole Kingdom of the Pope, that they have taken the Work of the Flesh to be nothing else but the accomplishing of the fleshly Lust or the Act of Lechery: Therefore it was not possible for them to understand *Paul*. But here we may plainly see, that *Paul* reckoneth Idolatry and Heresy amongst the Works of the Flesh, which two (as before we have said) Reason esteemeth to be most high and excellent Vertues, Wisdom, Religion, Holiness and Righteousness.

The Works of the Flesh as the *Papists* define them.

*Paul,*

*Paul, Col. ii.* calleth it the Religion of Angels. But altho' it seem to be never so holy and spiritual, yet it is nothing else but a Work of the Flesh, an Abomination and Idolatry against the Gospel, against Faith, and against the true Service of God. This do the Faithful see, for they have spiritual Eyes; but the *Justiciaries* judge the contrary: For a *Monk* cannot be perswaded that his Vows be Works of the Flesh. So the *Turk* believeth nothing less then that his *Alcoran*, his Washings, and other Ceremonies which he observeth, be Works of the Flesh.

*Witchcraft.* Of Witchcraft I have spoken before in *Chap. iii. 1.*

This Vice was very common in these our Days before the Light and Truth of the Gospel was revealed. When I was a Child there were many Witches and Sorcerers which bewitched both Cattle and Men, but specially Children, and did great Harm also otherwise. But now in the Light of the Gospel these Things be not so commonly heard of, for the Gospel thrusteth the Devil out of his Seat with all his Illusions. But now he bewitcheth Men much more horribly, namely, with spiritual Sorcery and Witchcraft.

*Paul* reckoneth Witchcraft among the Works of the Flesh, which notwithstanding, as all Men know, is not a Work of fleshly Lust or Lechery, but a Kind of Idolatry. For Witchcraft covenanteth with the Devil; Superstition or Idolatry covenanteth with God, albeit not with the true God, but with a counterfeit God. Wherefore Idolatry is indeed a spiritual Witchcraft; for as Witches do incant Cattle and Men; so Idolaters, that is to say, all *Justiciaries* or Justifiers of themselves, go about to bewitch God, and to make him such an one as they do imagine. Now, they imagine him to be such an one as will justify them, not of his mere Grace and Mercy, and thro' Faith in Christ, but in respect of their Will-worshipping and Works of their own choosing, and in recompence thereof will give them Righteousness and Life everlasting. But whiles they go about to bewitch God, they bewitch themselves. For if they continue in this wicked Opinion which they conceive of God, they shall die in their Idolatry and be damned. The Works of the Flesh are well known for the most Part, therefore they shall not need any further Declaration.

*Sects.*

By the Name of *Sects* *Paul* meaneth here, not those Divisions or Contentions which rise sometimes in the Government of Households or of Common weals for worldly and earthly Matters; but those which rise in the Church about Doctrine, Faith and Works. Heresies, that is to say, *Sects*, have always been in the Church, as we have said before in divers Places. Notwithstanding the Pope is an *Arch-heretick*, and the Head of all *Hereticks*, for he hath filled the World, as it were with an huge Flood of infinite *Sects* and Errors. What Concord and Unity was there in so great Diversity of the *Monks* and other religious Orders? No one Sort or *Sect* of them could agree with an other; for they measured their Holiness by the Sraintness of their Orders. Hereof it cometh that the *Carthusian* will needs be counted holier then the *Franciscans*, and so likewise the rest. Wherefore there is no Unity of the Spirit, nor Concord of Minds, but great Discord in the

he Papistical Church. There is no Conformity in their Doctrine, Faith, Religion or serving of God, but all Things are clean contrary. Contrariwise, amongst Christians, the Word, Faith, Religion, Sacraments, Service, Christ, God, Heart, Soul, Mind and Understanding, are all one and common to all; and as touching outward Conversation, the Diversity of States, Degrees and Conditions of Life, hindreth the spiritual Concord and Unity nothing at all, as before I have said. And they which have this Unity of the Spirit, can certainly judge of all Sects, which otherways no Man understandeth; as indeed no Divine in the *Papacy* understood, that *Paul* in this Place condemneth all the Worshippings, Religions, Continency, honest Conversation and holy Life in outward Appearance, of all the *Papists*, *Sectaries* and *Schismatics*; but they all thought that he speaketh of the gross Idolatry and Heresies of the *Gentiles* and *Turks*, which manifestly blaspheme the Name of Christ.

*Paul* doth not say, that to eat and drink be Works of Drunkenness, the Flesh, but to be drunken and to surfeit, which of all Gluttony. other Vices are most common at this Day. Whoso are given to this beastly Dissoluteness and Excess, let them know that they are not spiritual, how much soever they boast themselves so to be, but they follow the Flesh and perform the filthy Works thereof. Therefore is this horrible Sentence pronounced against them, that they shall not be Inheritors of the Kingdom of God. *Paul* would therefore that Christians should fly Drunkenness and Surfeiting, living soberly and moderately without all Excess, lest by pampering the Flesh, they should be provoked to Wantonness: As indeed after Surfeiting and Belly-Cheer, the Flesh is wont to wax wanton and to be inflamed with outrageous Lust. But it is not sufficient only to restrain this outrageous Wantonness and Lust of the Flesh which followeth Drunkenness and Surfeiting, or any Manner of Excess, but also the Flesh when it is most sober and in his best Temperance, must be subdued and repressed, lest it fulfil his Lusts and Desires. For it oftentimes cometh to pass, that even they which are most sober, are tempted most of all: As *Hierome* writeth of himself: My Face, saith he, was pale with fasting, and my Mind was inflamed with fleshly Desires in my cold Body, and altho' my Flesh was half dead already, yet the Flames of unclean Lust boiled within me. Hereof I myself also had Experience when I was a Monk. The Heat therefore of unclean Lusts is not quenched by fasting only, but we must be aided also by the Spirit, that is, by the Meditation of God's Word, Faith and Prayer: Indeed Fasting represseth the gross Assaults of fleshly Lusts, but the Desires of the Flesh are overcome by no Abstinence from Meats and Drinks, but only by the Meditation of the Word of God and Invocation of Christ.

How the  
burning  
Heat of  
Lusts may  
be quenched.

Verse 21. And such like:

For it is impossible to reckon up all the Works of the Flesh.

Verse

*Verse 21. Of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in Time past, that they which do such Things, shall not inherit the Kingdom of God.*

This is a very hard and terrible Saying, but yet very necessary against false Christians and careless Hypocrites, which brag of the Gospel, of Faith and of the Spirit, and yet in all Security they perform the Works of the Flesh. But chiefly the *Hereticks* being puffed up with Opinions of Spiritual Matters (as they dream) are possessed of the Devil, and altogether carnal; therefore they perform and fulfil the Desires of the Flesh, even with all the Powers of the Soul. Therefore most necessary it was, that so horrible and terrible a Sentence should be pronounced by the Apostle against such careless Contemners and obstinate Hypocrites, (namely, that all they which do such Works of the Flesh as *Paul* hath recited, shall not inherit the Kingdom of God) that yet some of them being terrified by this severe Sentence, may begin to fight against the Works of the Flesh by the Spirit, that they accomplish not the same.

*Verses 22, 23. But the Fruit of the Spirit is Love, Joy, Peace, Long-suffering, Gentleness, Goodness, Faith, Meekness, Temperance:*

The Apostle saith not, the Works of the Spirit, as he said, the Works of the Flesh, but he adorneth these Christian Vertues with a more honourable Name, calling them the Fruits of the Spirit: For they bring with them most excellent Fruits and Commodities; for they that have them give Glory to God, and with the same do allure and provoke others to embrace the Doctrine and Faith of Christ.

*Love.*

It had been enough to have said [*Love*] and no more; for Love extendeth itself unto all the Fruits of the Spirit. And in *1 Cor. xiii.* *Paul* attributeth to Love all the Fruits which are done in the Spirit, when he saith; *Love is patient, courteous, &c.* Notwithstanding he would set it here by itself amongst the rest of the Fruits of the Spirit, and in the first Place, thereby to admonish the Christians, that before all Things they should love one another, giving Honour one to another, every Man esteeming better of another than of himself, and serving one another, *Rom. xii. 10.* because they have Christ and the Holy Ghost dwelling in them, and because of the Word, Baptism, and other Gifts of God which Christians have.

*Joy.*

This is the Voice of the Bridegroom and of the Bride; that is to say, sweet Cogitations of Christ; wholesome Exhortations, pleasant Songs or Psalms, Praises and Thanksgiving, whereby the Godly do instruct, stir up and refresh themselves. Therefore God loveth not Heaviness and Doubtfulness of Spirit, he loveth

uncomfortable Doctrine, heavy and sorrowful Cogitations, and lowly cheerful Hearts. For therefore hath he sent his Son, not to oppress us with Heaviness and Sorrow, but to cheer up our Souls in him. For this Cause the Prophets, the Apostles, and Christ himself do exhort us, yet they command us to rejoice and be glad, *Zech. ix. 9.*

*Rejoice, greatly, O Daughter of Zion; shout, O Daughter of Jerusalem: Behold, thy King cometh unto thee.* And in the *Psalms* it is often said; *Be joyful in the Lord.* Paul saith; *Rejoice in the Lord always, &c.* And Christ saith; *Rejoice because your Names are written in Heaven.* Where this Joy of the Spirit is, there the Heart inwardly rejoiceth thro' Faith in Christ, with full Assurance that he is our Saviour and our Bishop, and outwardly it expresseth this Joy with Words and Gestures. Also, the Faithful rejoice when they see that the Gospel spreadeth abroad, that many be won to the Faith, and that the Kingdom of Christ is enlarged.

The Joy of the Spirit.

Both towards God and Men, that Christians may be peaceable and quiet; not contentious, nor hating one another, but one bearing anothers Burden thro' Long-suffering or Perseverance; without the which Peace cannot continue, and therefore putteth it next after Peace.

Peace.

Whereby a Man doth not only bear Adversities, Injuries, Reproaches and such like; but also with Patience waiteth for the Amendment of those which have done him any wrong. When the Devil cannot by Force overcome those which are tempted, then seeketh he to overcome them by long Continuance. For he knoweth that we be earthen Vessels which cannot long endure and hold out many Knocks and violent Strokes; therefore with long Continuance of Temptations he overcometh many. To vanquish these his continual Assaults, we must use Long suffering, which patiently looketh, not only for the Amendment of those which do us wrong; but also for the End of those Temptations which the Devil raiseth up against us.

Long-suffering or Perseverance.

Which is when a Man is gentle and tractable in his Conversation and in his whole Life. For such as will be true Followers of the Gospel, must not be sharp and bitter, but gentle, mild, courteous and fair spoken; which should encourage others to delight in their Company; which can wink at other Mens Faults, or at least expound them to the best; which will be well contented to yield and give Place to other, contented to bear with those which are stoward and intractable, as the very *Heathen* said; Thou must know the Manners of thy Friend, but thou must not hate them. Such an one was our Saviour Christ as every where is to be seen in the Gospel. It is written of *Peter* that he wept so often as he remembered the sweet Mildness of Christ which he used in his daily Conversation. It is an excellent Vertue and most necessary in every Kind of Life.

Gentleness.

The Gentleness and Mildness of Christ.

*Ex libro Clementis ad Jacobum fratrem Dominum.*

*Goodness.* Which is, when a Man willingly helpeth others in their Necessity by giving, lending and such other Means.

*Faith.* When *Paul* here reckoneth Faith amongst the Fruits of the Spirit it is manifest that he speaketh not of Faith which is in Christ, but of the Fidelity and Humanity of one Man towards another. Hereupon he saith in 1 *Cor.* xiii. 7. that *Charity believeth all Things.* Therefore he that hath this Faith is not suspicious, but mild, and taketh all Things to the best. And altho' he be deceived and findeth himself to be mocked, yet such is his Patience and Soffiness, that he letteth it pass; briefly, he is ready to believe all Men, but he trusteth not all. On the contrary, where this Vertue is lacking, there Men are suspicious, froward, wayward, dogged, and so neither will believe any Thing, nor give Place to any Body. They can suffer nothing, whatsoever a Man saith or doth never so well, they cavil and slander it, so that whoso serveth not their Humour, can never please them. Therefore it is impossible for them to keep Charity, Friendship, Concord and Peace with Men. But if these Vertues be taken away, What is this Life, but biting and devouring one of another? Faith therefore in this Place is, when one Man giveth Credit to another in Things pertaining to this present Life. For what Manner of Life should we lead in this World, if one Man should not credit another?

*Meekness.* Which is when a Man is not lightly moved or provoked to Anger. There be infinite Occasions in this Life which provoke Men to Anger, but the Godly overcome them by Meekness.

*Temperance, Chastity or Continency.* This is a Sobriety or Modesty in the whole Life of Man, which Vertue *Paul* setteth against the Works of the Flesh. He would therefore that Christians should live soberly and chastly, that they should be no Adulterers, no Fornicators, no Wantons; and if they cannot live chastly, he would have them to marry; also that they should not be contentious or Quarrellers, that they should not be given to Drunkenness or Surfeiting; but that they should abstain from all these Things. Chastity or Continency containeth all these. *Jerome* expoundeth it of Virginity only, as tho' they that be married could not be chaste; or as tho' the Apostle did write these Things only to Virgins. In the first and second Chapters to *Titus*, he warneth all Bishops, young Women, and married Folks, both Man and Wife, to be chaste and pure.

### Verse 23. Against such there is no Law.

The Law is abolished to the Believers in Christ. Indeed there is a Law, but not against such: As he saith also in another Place; *The Law is not made for a righteous Man.* For the Righteous liveth in such wise, that he hath no Need of any Law to admonish or to constrain him; but without Constraint of the Law, he willingly doth those Things which the Law requireth. Therefore the Law cannot accuse or condemn those that believe in Christ. Indeed the Law

subleth and terrifieth our Consciences: But Christ apprehended by  
 with, vanquisheth it with all his Terrors and Threatnings. To them  
 therefore the Law is utterly abolished, and hath no Power to accuse  
 them; for they do that of their own Accord, which the Law requireth.  
 They have received the Holy Ghost by Faith, who will not suffer them  
 to be idle: Altho' the Flesh resist, yet do they walk after the Spirit. So  
 Christian accomplisheth the Law inwardly by Faith (for Christ is the  
 perfection of the Law unto Righteousness to all that do believe) out-  
 wardly by Works and by Remission of Sins. But those which perform  
 the Works or Desires of the Flesh, the Law doth accuse and condemn  
 both civilly and spiritually.

verse 24. *And they that are Christs, have crucified the  
 Flesh, with the Affections and Lusts.*

This whole Place concerning Works, sheweth that the true Believers  
 are no Hypocrites. Therefore let no Man deceive himself. For who-  
 ever (saith he) pertain unto Christ, have crucified the Flesh with all  
 the Vices and Lusts thereof. For the Saints, in as much as they have  
 not yet utterly put off the corrupt and sinful Flesh, are inclined to Sin,  
 and do neither fear nor love God so perfectly as they ought to do. Al-  
 tho' they be provoked to Anger, to Envy, to Impatience, to unclean  
 lusts, and such like Motions, which notwithstanding they accomplish  
 not, for (as Paul here saith) they crucify the Flesh,  
 with all the Affections and Lusts thereof. Which Thing What it is  
 they do, not only when they repress the Wantonness of to crucify  
 the Flesh with fasting and other Exercises, but also (as the Flesh.  
 Paul said before) when they walk according to the Spi-  
 rit, that is, when they being admonished by the Threatnings of God,  
 whereby he sheweth that he will severely punish Sin, are afraid to com-  
 mit Sin: Also when they being armed with the Word of God, with  
 faith, and with Prayer, do not obey the Lusts of the Flesh.

When they resist the Flesh after this Manner, they nail it to the Cross  
 with the Lusts and Desires thereof, so that altho' the Flesh be yet alive,  
 it can it not perform that which it would do, for as much as it is bound  
 with Hand and Foot, and fast nailed to the Cross. The Faithful then  
 as long as they live here, do crucify the Flesh, that is to say, they feel  
 the Lusts thereof, but they obey them not; for they being furnished with  
 the Armour of God, that is, with Faith, Hope, and the Sword of the  
 Spirit, do resist the Flesh, and with these spiritual Nails they fasten the  
 same unto the Cross, so that it is constrained to be subject to the Spirit.  
 Afterwards when they die, they put it off wholly; and when they shall  
 rise again from Death to Life, they shall have a pure and uncorrupt Flesh  
 without all Affections and Lusts.

verse 25. *If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in  
 the Spirit.*

The Apostle reckoned before amongst the Works of the Flesh, Hesi-  
cies and Envy, and pronounced Sentence against those which are envi-  
ous, and which are Authors of Sects, that they should not inherit the  
Kingdom of God. And now, as if he had forgotten that which he said  
a little before, he again reproveth those which provoke and envy one an-  
other. Why doth he so? Was it not sufficient to have done it once?  
Indeed he doth it of Purpose; for he taketh Occasion here to inveigh a-  
gainst that execrable Vice of Vain-glory, which was the Cause of the  
Troubles that were in all the Churches of *Galatia*, and hath been al-  
ways most pernicious and hurtful to the whole Church of Christ. There-  
fore in his Epistle to *Titus*, he would not that a proud Man should be or-  
dained a Bishop, *Chap. i. 7.* For Pride (as *Augustine* truly saith) is  
the Mother of all Heresies, or rather the Head-spring of all Sin and Con-  
fusion; which Thing all Histories as well holy as prophane do wit-  
ness.

How great  
a Mischief  
Vain-glory  
is.

Now, Vain-glory or Arrogancy hath always been  
common Poison in the World, which the very *Heathen*  
Poets and Historiographers have always vehemently re-  
proved. There is no Village wherein there is not some  
one or other to be found, that would be counted wise  
and be more esteemed then all the rest. But they are chiefly infected  
with this Disease which stand upon their Reputation for Learning and  
Wisdom. In this Case no Man will yield to another, ac-  
*Ovid* *Horas.* cording to this Saying; *Ye shall not lightly find a Man that*  
*will yield unto others the Praise of Wit and Skill: For*  
*is a goodly Thing to see Men point at one, and say; This is he.* But  
is not so hurtful in private Persons, no nor in any Kind of Magistrat-  
as it is in them that have any Charge in the Church. Albeit in civil  
Government (especially if it be in great Personages) it is not only  
Cause of Troubles and Ruins of Common-weals, but also of the Trou-  
bles and Alterations of Kingdoms and Empires; which Thing the Hi-  
stories both of the Scripture and prophane Writers do witness.

But when this Poison creepeth into the Church or spiritual Kingdom  
it cannot be expressed how hurtful it is. For there is no Contention  
touching Learning, Wit, Beauty, Riches, Kingdoms, Empires and so  
like; but as touching Salvation or Damnation, eternal Life, or eternal  
Death. Therefore *Paul* earnestly exhorteth the Ministers of the Word  
to flee this Vice, saying; *If we live in the Spirit, &c.* As if he should  
say; If it be true that we live in the Spirit, let us also proceed and  
walk in the Spirit. For where the Spirit is, it reneweth Men, and work-  
eth in them new Motions; that is to say, whereas they were before  
vain-glorious, wrathful and envious, it maketh them now humble, gen-  
tle and patient. Such Men seek not their own Glory, but the Glo-  
ry of God; they do not provoke one another, or envy one another, but  
give Place one to another, and in giving Honour prevent one another.  
Contrariwise, they that be desirous of Glory, and envy one another, may  
boast that they have the Spirit, and live after the Spirit; but they be-  
ceive themselves, they follow the Flesh and do the Works thereof, and

they have their Judgment already, that they shall not inherit the Kingdom of God.

Now, as nothing is more dangerous to the Church then this execrable Vice, so is there nothing more common: For when God sendeth forth Labourers into the Harvest, by and by Satan raiseth up his Ministers also, who will in no Case be counted inferior to those that are rightly called. Here straightways riseth Dissention. The Wicked will not yield one Hairs-breadth to the Godly: For they dream that they surpass them in Wit, in Learning, in Godliness, in Spirit and other Virtues. Much less ought the Godly to yield to the Wicked, lest the Doctrine of Faith come in Danger. Moreover, such is the Nature of the Ministers of Satan, that they can make a goodly Shew that they are very charitable, humble, Lovers of Concord, and are endued with other Fruits of the Spirit; also they protest that they seek nothing else but the Glory of God and the Salvation of Mens Souls; and yet are they full of Vain-glory, doing all Things for none other End but to get Praise and Estimation among Men. To be short, they think that Gain is Godliness, 1 Tim. vi. 5. and that the Ministry of the Word is delivered unto them that they may get Fame and Estimation thereby. Wherefore they cannot but be Authors of Dissention and Sects.

Forasmuch as the Vain glory of the false Apostles was the Cause that the Churches of *Galatia* were troubled and forsook *Paul*, therefore in this Chapter, specially his Purpose was to suppress that execrable Vice; yea, this Mischief gave the Apostle Occasion to write this whole Epistle. And if he had not so done, all his Travel bestowed in Preaching of the Gospel among the *Galatians* had been spent in vain. For in his Absence the false Apostles, which were Men in outward Shew of great Authority, reigned in *Galatia*; who besides that they would seem to seek the Glory of Christ, and the Salvation of the *Galatians*, pretended also that they had been conversant with the Apostles, and that they followed their Footsteps, saying that *Paul* had not seen Christ in the Flesh, nor had been conversant with the rest of the Apostles, and therefore they made no Account of him, but rejected his Doctrine, and boasted their own to be true and sincere. Thus they troubled the *Galatians* and raised Sects among them, so that they provoked and envied one another; which was a sure Token, that neither the Teachers nor Hearers lived and walked after the Spirit, but followed the Flesh and fulfilled the Works thereof; and so consequently lost the true Doctrine, Faith, Christ, and all the Gifts of the Holy Ghost, and were now become worse then the Heathen.

Notwithstanding he doth not only inveigh against the false Apostles, which in his Time troubled the Churches of *Galatia*, but also he foresaw in Spirit, that there should be an infinite Number of such, even to the Worlds End, which being infected with this pernicious Vice, would thrust themselves into the Church, boasting of the Spirit and heavenly Doctrine, and under this Pretence should quite overthrow the true Doctrine and Faith. Many such have we also seen in these our Days, who have thrust themselves into the Kingdom of the Spirit, that is to say,

into the Ministry of the Word, and by this Hypocrisy they have purchased unto themselves Fame and Estimation that they were great Doctors and Pillars of the Gospel, and such as lived in the Spirit, and walked according to the same. But because

**The End of vain-glorious Teachers.** their Glory consisted in Mens Mouths and not in God, therefore it could not be firm and stable, but according

to *Paul's Prophecy*, it turned to their own Confusion, and their End was Destruction, *Phil. iii. 19. For the Wicked shall not stand in Judgment, but shall be taken away like Chaff, and scattered abroad with the Wind, Psal. i. 4.*

The same Judgment remaineth for all such as in Preaching the Gospel seek their own Profit and not the Glory of Jesus Christ. For the Gospel is not delivered unto us that we should thereby seek our own Praise and Glory, or that the People should honour and magnify us which are

the Ministers thereof; but to the End that the Benefit and Glory of Christ might be preached and published, and that the Father might be glorified in his Mercy offered

unto us in Christ his Son, whom he delivered for us all, and with him hath he given us all Things.

Wherefore the Gospel is a Doctrine wherein we ought to

seek nothing less then our own Glory. It setteth forth unto us heavenly and eternal Things; which are not our own, which we have neither done nor deserved; but it offereth the same unto us, to us (*I say*) which are unworthy, and that thro' the mere Goodness and Grace of God. Why should we then seek Praise and Glory thereby? He therefore that seeketh his own Glory in the Gospel, speaketh of himself, and he that speaketh of himself is a Liar, and there is Unrighteousness in him. Contrariwise, he that seeketh the Glory of him that sent him is true, and there is no Unrighteousness in him, *John vii. 18.*

**What it is to walk in the Spirit.** *Paul* therefore giveth earnest Charge to all the Ministers of the Word, saying; *If we live in the Spirit, let us walk in the Spirit*; that is to say, Let us abide in the

Doctrine of the Truth which hath been taught unto us in brotherly Love, and spiritual Concord; let us preach Christ and the Glory of God in Simplicity of Heart, and let us confess that we have received all Things of him; let us not think more of ourselves then of others; let us raise up no Sects. For this is not to walk rightly, but rather to range out of the Way, and to set up a new and a perverse Way of walking.

**Why God layeth the Cross upon the Preachers of the Gospel.** Hereby we may understand, that God of his special Grace maketh the Teachers of the Gospel subject to the Cross and to all Kinds of Afflictions for the Salvation of themselves and of the People; for otherways they could by no Means repress and beat down this Beast which is called Vain-glory. For if no Persecution, no Cross or Reproach followed the Doctrine of the Gospel, but only

Praise, Reputation and Glory amongst Men; then would all the Professors thereof be infected and perish thro' the Poison of Vain-Glory.

*Hierome* saith that he had seen many which could suffer great Inconveniencies in their Body and Goods, but none that could despise their own Praises. For it is almost impossible for a Man not to be puffed up when he heareth any Thing spoken in the Praise of his own Vertues. *Paul* notwithstanding that he had the Spirit of Christ, saith that there was given unto him the Messenger of Satan to buffet him, because he should not be exalted out of Measure thro' the Greatness of his Revelations. Therefore *Augustine* saith very well; If a Minister of the Word be praised, he is in Danger. If a Brother despise or dispraise him, he is also in Danger. He that heareth a Preacher of the Word, ought to reverence him for the Words Sake; but if he be proud thereof, he is in Danger. Contrariwise, if he be despised he is out of Danger; but so is not he which despiseth him.

Wherefore we must honour our great Benefit, that is, of the Preaching of the Word, and receiving of the Sacraments, *Rom. xiv. 16.* We must also reverence one another, according to that Saying; *In giving Honour one to another, &c. Rom. xii. 10.* But wheresoever this is done, by and by the Flesh is tickled with Vain-glory and waxeth proud. For there is none (no not among the Godly) which would not rather be praised than dispraised, except perhaps some be so well established in this Behalf, that he will be moved neither with Praises nor Reproaches: As the Woman said of *David*, *2 Sam. xiv. 17, My Lord the King is like an Angel of God, which will neither be moved with Blessing nor Cursing.* Likewise *Paul* saith; *By Honour and Dishonour, by evil Report and good Report, &c. 2 Cor. vi. 8.* Such Men as be neither puffed up with Praise, nor thrown down with Dispraise, but endeavour simply to set forth the Benefit and Glory of Christ, and to seek the Salvation of Soules, do walk orderly. Contrariwise, they which wax proud in hearing of their own Praises, not seeking the Glory of Christ but their own; also they which being moved with Reproaches and Slanders do forsake the Ministry of the Word, walk not orderly. Who walk in Order, and who do not.

Wherefore let every one see that he walk orderly, and specially such as boast of the Spirit. If thou be praised, know that it is not thou that is praised, but Christ, to whom all Praise and Honour is due. For in that thou teachest the Word purely, and livest godly, these are not thine own Gifts, but the Gifts of God; therefore thou art not praised but God in thee. When thou doest acknowledge this, thou wilt walk orderly, and not be puffed up with Vain-glory (*For what hast thou that thou hast not received? 1 Cor. iv. 7.*) but wilt confess that thou hast received the same of God, and wilt not be moved with Injuries, Reproaches or Persecution to forsake thy Calling.

God therefore of his special Grace at this Day covereth our Glory with Infamy, Reproach, mortal Hatred, cruel Persecution, Railing and Cursing of the whole World; also with the Contempt and Ingratitude even of those among whom we live, as well the common Sort as also the Citizens, Gentlemen and Noblemen (whose Enmity, Hatred and Persecution against the Gospel, like as it is privy and inward, so is more dangerous

dangerous then the Cruelty and outrageous Dealings of our open Enemies) that we should not wax proud of the Gifts of God in us. This Millstone must be hanged about our Neck, that we be not infected with that pestilent Poison of Vain-glory. Some there be of our Side which love and reverence us for the Ministry of the Word; but where there is one that reverenceth us, there be on the other Side an hundred that hate and persecute us. These spiteful Dealings therefore, and these Persecutions of our Enemies, this great Contempt and Ingratitude, this cruel and privy Hatred of them among whom we live, are such pleasant Sights, and make us so merry, that we easily forget Vain-glory.

Wherefore rejoicing in the Lord who is our Glory, we remain in Order. Those Gifts which we have, we acknowledge to be the Gifts of God and not our own, given for the edifying of the Body of Christ, *Eph. iv. 12.* Therefore we be not proud of them. For we know that more is required of them to whom much is committed, then of them which have received but little. Moreover, we know that there is no Respect of Persons before God, *Acts x. 34.* Therefore a poor Artificer faithfully using the Gift which God hath given him, pleaseth God no less then a Preacher of the Word, for he serveth God in the same Faith and with the same Spirit. Wherefore we ought no less to regard the meanest Christians then they regard us. And by this Means shall we continue free from the Poison of Vain-glory, and walk in the Spirit.

Contrariwise, the fantastical Spirits, which seek their own Glory, the Favour of Men, the Peace of the World, the Ease of the Flesh, and not the Glory of Christ, nor yet the Health of Mens Souls (altho' they profess that they seek nothing else) cannot choose but discover themselves in commending their own Doctrine and Industry, and dispraising of other Mens, and all to get them a Name and Praise. These vain-glorious Spirits do not rejoice and glory in the Lord; but then do they glory, when are they stout and hardy, when they are magnified of the People. Whose Hearts they win by wonderful Sights and Subtilties; for in their Words, Gestures and Writings they can counterfeit and dissemble all Things. But when they are not praised and commended of the People, then they be the most fearful Men in the World; for they hate and shun the Cross of Christ and Persecution. On the contrary, when they are praised and magnified (as I said) none are so stout, no *Herods*, no *Achilles* so bold and hardy as they.

Such a lie and crafty Beast therefore is Flesh, that for no other Cause it forsaketh his Function, corrupteth true Doctrine, and breaketh the Concord of the Church, than only upon this cursed Vain-glory. Therefore it is not without Cause that *Paul* so sharply enveigleth against it both here and in other Places, as before in Chapter iv. 17. *They zealously affect you, (saith he) but not well: Yea, they would exclude you, that you might affect them.* That is to say, they would discredit me that they themselves might be famous. They seek not Christ's Glory and your Salvation, but their own Glory, my Reproach, and your Bondage.

Verse 26. *Let us not be desirous of vain Glory,*

Which is to glory, not in God (as I have said) but in Lies, in the Opinion, Liking and Estimation of the People. Here is no right Foundation of true Glory, but a false Foundation, and therefore impossible long to stand. He that praiseth a Man as he is a Man, is a Liar; for there is nothing Praise-worthy in him, but all Things are worthy of Condemnation. Therefore as touching our Person, this is our Glory, that all Men have sined, and are guilty of everlasting Death before God. But the Case is otherways when our Ministry is praised. Wherefore we must not only wish, but also to the uttermost of our Power endeavour that Men may ingenuously it, and have it in due Reverence; for this shall turn to their Salvation. Paul warneth the Romans that they offend no Man; to the End, saith he, *That our good be not evil spoken of*, Rom. xiv. 16. And in another Place, *That the Ministry be not blamed*, 2 Cor. vi. 3. Therefore when our Ministry is praised, we be not praised for our Persons Sake, but (as the Psalm saith) we are praised in God and in his holy Name.

The Praise  
of the Person  
and of the  
Ministry.

Verse 26. *Provoking one another, envying one another.*

Here he describeth the Effect and Fruit of vain Glory. He that teacheth any Error, or is an Author of any new Doctrine, cannot but provoke others; and when they do not approve and receive his Doctrine, by and by he beginneth to hate them most bitterly. We see at this Day with what deadly Hatred the Sectaries are inflamed against us, because we will not give Place to them and approve their Errors. We did not first provoke them, nor spread abroad any wicked Opinion in the World; but rebuking certain Abuses in the Church, and faithfully teaching the Article of Justification, have walked in good Order. But they forsaking this Article, have taught many Things contrary to the Word of God. Here, because we would not lose the Truth of the Gospel, we have set ourselves against them, and have condemned their Errors; which Thing, because they could not abide, they did not only provoke us first without Cause, but also do still most spitefully hate us, and that upon no other Occasion but only upon vain Glory; for they would gladly deface us that they alone might rule and reign: For they imagine that it is a great Glory to profess the Gospel, whereas indeed there is no greater Ignominy in the Sight of the World.

CHAP.



## CHAP. VI.

*Verse 1. Brethren, if a Man be overtaken in a Fault, ye which are spiritual, restore such an one in the Spirit of Meekness,*

**W**HAT Offences are to be forgiven. **H**E that diligently weigheth the Words of the Apostles, may plainly perceive that he speaketh not of Errors and Offences against Doctrine, but of far lesser Sins, into the which a Man falleth not wilfully and of set Purpose but of Infirmary. And hereof it cometh that he useth so gentle and fatherly Words, not calling it Error or Sin, but a Fault. Again, to the Intent to diminish, and as it were to excuse the Sin, and to remove the whole Fault from Man, he addeth; *If any Man be overtaken*, that is to say, be beguiled of the Devil or of the Flesh. Yea, and this Term or Name of *Man* helpeth something also to diminish and qualify the Matter. As if he should say: What is so proper unto Man as to fall, to be deceived and to err? So saith *Moses* in *Levit. vi. 3. They are wont to sin like Men.* Wherefore this is a Sentence full of heavenly Comfort, which once in a terrible Conflict delivered me from Death. For as much then as the Saints in this Life do not only live in the Flesh, but now and then also thro' the Enticement of the Devil, fulfil the Lusts of the Flesh, that is to say, fall into Impatience, Envy, Wrath, Error, Doubting, Distrust and such like; for Satan assaileth both, that is, as well the Purity of Doctrine, which he laboureth to take away by Sects and Dissentions, as also the Soundness of Life, which he corrupteth with daily Offences. Therefore *Paul* teacheth how such Men that are fallen should be dealt withal, namely, that they which are strong, should raise up and restore them again with the Spirit of Meekness.

**How Pastors ought to deal with them that are fallen.** These Things it becometh them specially to know which are in the Ministry of the Word, lest whilst they go about to touch all Things to the quick, they forget the fatherly and motherly Affection which *Paul* here requirith of those that have Charge of Souls. And of this Precept he hath set forth an Example, a *Cor. ii. 6.* where

where he saith that it was sufficient that he which was excommunicate was rebuked of many; and that they ought now to forgive him and comfort him, lest he should be swallowed up with over much sorrow. Wherefore I beseech you (saith he) use Charity towards him. Therefore the Pastors and Ministers must indeed sharply rebuke those which are fallen, but when they see that they are sorrowful for their Offences, then let them begin to raise them up again, to comfort them, and to diminish and qualify their Faults as much as they can, but yet thro' Mercy only, which they must set against Sin, lest they that be fallen be swallowed up with overmuch Heaviness. As the Holy Ghost is precise in maintaining and defending the Doctrine of Faith, so he is mild and pitiful in forbearing and qualifying Mens Sins, if they which have committed them be sorrowful for the same.

But as for the Pope's Synagogue, like as in all other Matters it hath both taught and done clean contrary to the Commandment and Example of *Paul*, even so hath it done in this Thing also. The Pope with all his Bishops have been very Tyrants and Butchers of Mens Consciences. For they have burdened them from Time to Time with new Traditions, and for every light Matter have vexed them with their Excommunications; and that they might the more easily obey their vain Ferrors, they annexed thereunto these Sentences of Pope *Gregory*: It is the Part and Property of good Minds to be afraid of a Fault where no Fault is. And again; our Censures must be feared, yea tho' they be unjust and wrongful. By these Sayings (which were brought into the Church by the Devil) they stablished their Excommunication and this Majesty of the Papacy which is so terrible to the whole World. There is no need of such Humility and Goodness of Minds, to be afraid of a Fault where none is. O thou *Romish Satan*, Who gave thee this Power to terrify and condemn Mens Consciences that were terrified enough before with thy unjust and wrongful Sentences? Thou oughtest rather to have raised them up, to have delivered them from false Fears, and to have brought them from Lies and Errors to the Truth. This thou omittest, and according to thy Title and Name; to wit, the Man of Sin, and Child of Perdition, 2 *Thess.* ii. 3. thou imaginest a Fault where no Fault is. This is indeed the Craft and Deceit of *Antichrist*, whereby he hath most mightily established his Excommunication and Tyranny. For whosoever despised his unjust Sentences, was counted very obstinate and wicked: As some Princes did, howbeit against their Consciences; for in those Times of Darkness they did not understand that the Pope's Curses were vain.

Let them therefore to whom the Charge of Mens Consciences is committed, learn by this Commandment of *Paul*, how they ought to handle those that have offended. Brethren (saith he) if any Man be overtaken with Sin, do not trouble him or make him more sorrowful; be not bitter unto him, do not reject or condemn him, but amend him and raise him up again; and by the Spirit of Lenity and Mildness, restore that which is in him decayed by the Deceit of the Devil, or by the Weakness

How they  
that are fal-  
len ought to  
be intreated.

ness of the Flesh. For the Kingdom whereunto ye are called, is a Kingdom not of Terror or Heaviness, but of Boldness, Joy and Gladness. Therefore if ye see any Brother cast down and afflicted by Occasion of Sin which he hath committed, run unto him, and reaching out your Hand raise him up again, comfort him with sweet Words, and embrace him with motherly Arms. As for those which be hard-hearted and obstinate, which without Fear continue careless in their Sins, rebuke them sharply. But on the other Side (as I said) they that be overtaken with any Sin, and are heavy and sorrowful for their Fault which they have committed, must be raised up and admonished by you that are spiritual, and that in the Spirit of Meekness, and not in the Zeal of severe Justice; as some have done, who when they should have refreshed thirsty Consciences with some sweet Consolation, gave them Gall and Vinegar to drink, as the *Jews* did unto Christ hanging upon the Cross. *Ezekiel* saith of the Shepherds of *Israel*, that they ruled the Flock of God with Cruelty and Rigour, *Ezek. xxxiv. 4.* but a Brother ought to comfort his Brother that is fallen, with a loving and a meek Spirit. Again, let him that is fallen hear the Word of him that raiseth him up, and believe it. For God would not have those that are bruised to be cast away, but to be raised up, as the *Psalms* saith. For God hath bestowed more for them than we have done, that is to say, the Life and Blood of his own Son. Wherefore we ought also to receive, to aid and comfort such with all Mildness and Gentleness.

**Verse 1. Considering thyself, lest thou also be tempted.**

This is a very necessary Admonition to beat down the sharp Dealing of such Pastors as shew no Pity in raising up and restoring again them to which are fallen. There is no Sin (saith *Augustine*) which any Man hath done, but another Man may do the same. We stand on a slippery Ground; therefore if we wax proud and leave of our Duty, there is of nothing so easy unto us as to fall. It was well said therefore of one in the Book called, *The Lives of the Fathers*, when it was told him that one of his Brethren was fallen into Whoredom; He fell Yesterday (saith *Jerome*) and I may fall to Day. *Paul* therefore addeth this earnest Admonition that the Pastors should not be rigorous and unmerciful towards the Offenders, nor measure their own Holiness by other Mens Sins; but that they should bear a motherly Affection towards them, and think thus with themselves: This Man is fallen; it may be that I also shall fall more dangerously and more shamefully then he did. And if they which be so ready to judge and condemn other, would well consider their own Sins, they shall find the Sins of others which are fallen to be but Motes, and their own Sins to be great Beams, *Matth. vii. 3.* Let him therefore that standeth take heed lest he fall, *1. Cor. x. 12.* If *David* which was so holy a Man, full of Faith and the Spirit of God, which had such notable Promises of God, which also did so many and great Things for the Lord, did fall so grievously, and being now stricken in Years, was overthrown with youthful Lust after so many and di-

vers Temptations wherewith God had exercised him: Why should we presume of our own Constancy? And God by such Examples doth shew unto us, first our own Weakness, that we should not wax proud, but stand in Fear: Then he sheweth unto us his Judgment, that he can bear nothing less than Pride, either against himself or against our Brethren. Paul therefore saith not without Cause; *Considering thyself, lest thou also be tempted.* They that be exercised with Temptations, do know how necessary this Commandment is. On the other Side, they which be not tried therewith, do not understand Paul, and therefore are not touched with any Pity towards them that are fallen; as was to be seen in Popery, where nothing else reigned but Tyranny and Cruelty.

**Verse 2. Bear ye one anothers Burdens, and so fulfil the Law of Christ.**

This is a gentle Commandment; to the which he joineth a great Commendation. The Law of Christ is the Law of Love. Christ after he had redeemed us, renewed us, and made us his Church, gave us no other Law, but the Law of mutual Love, *John. xiii. 34. A new Commandment I give unto you, that ye love one another, &c.* And to love, is not (as the Popish Sophisters dream) to wish well one to another; but one to bear anothers Burden, that is, to bear those Things which be grievous unto thee, and which thou wouldst not willingly bear. Therefore Christians must have strong Shoulders and mighty Bones, that they may bear Flesh, that is, the Weakness of their Brethren; for Paul saith that they have Burdens and Troubles, *1 Cor. xiii. 12.* Love therefore is mild, courteous, patient, not in receiving but in giving. For it is constrained to wink at many Things and to bear them. Faithful Teachers do see in the Church many Errors and Offences which they are compelled to bear. In the Common-weal Subjects are never so obedient to the Laws of the Magistrates as they should be. Therefore unless the Magistrate can wink and dissemble in Time and Place, he shall never be meet to rule the Common-wealth. In household Affairs there be many Things done, which displease the Master of the House. But if we can bear and wink at our own Vices and Offences, which we daily commit; let us also bear other Mens Faults, according to this Saying; *Bear ye one anothers Burdens, &c.* Against *Thou shalt love thy Neighbour as thyself, Rom. xiii. 9.*

Seeing then there be Vices in every State of Life and in all Men, therefore Paul setteth forth the Law of Christ unto the Faithful, whereby he exhorteth them to bear one anothers Burden. They which do not so, do plainly witness that they understand not one jot of the Law of Christ, which is the Law of Love; (which as Paul saith, *1 Cor. xiii. 72* be- lieveth all Things, hopeth all Things; and beareth all the Burdens of the Brethren, yet always holding notwithstanding the first Commandment, wherein they that offend, do not transgress the Law of Christ, that is

to say, the Law of Charity, they do not hurt nor offend their Neighbour, but Christ and his Kingdom which he hath purchased with his own Blood. This Kingdom is not maintained by the Law of Charity, but by the Word of God, by Faith and by the Holy Ghost. This Commandment then of bearing one anothers Burden, belongeth not to them which deny Christ, and not only do not acknowledge their Sin, but also defend it; neither doth it belong unto those which continue still in their Sins (who also do partly deny Christ) but such must be forsaken lest we become Partakers of their evil Works, 2 Cor. vi. 17. On the contrary, they which willingly hear the Word of God and believe, and yet notwithstanding against their Will do fall into Sin, and after they be admonished, do not only receive such Admonition gladly, but also they detest their Sin, and endeavour to amend; I say, are they which be overtaken with Sin, and have the Burdens which *Paul* commandeth us to bear. In this Case let us not be rigorous and merciless; but after the Example of Christ, who beareth and forbeareth such, let us bear and forbear them also; for if he punish not such (which Thing notwithstanding he might justly do) much less ought we so to do.

**Verse 3.** *For if a Man think himself to be something, when he is nothing, he deceiveth himself.*

Here again he reprehendeth the Authors of Sects, and painteth them out in their right Colours; *to wit*, that they be hard-hearted, merciless and without Compassion, such as despise the Weak, and will not vouchsafe to bear their Burdens, but require all Things straitly and precisely (like way-ward Husbands and severe School-masters) whom nothing can please, but what they themselves do; who also will be always thy bitter Enemies, unless thou commend whatsoever they say or do; and in all Things frame thyself according to their Appetite. Of all Men therefore they are the proudest, and dare take upon them all Things. And this is that *Paul* saith here; they think themselves to be somewhat, that is to say, that they have the Holy Ghost, that they understand all the Mysteries of the Scriptures, that they cannot err, &c.

Wherefore *Paul* addeth very well, that they are nothing; but that they deceive themselves with the foolish Perswasions of their own Wisdom and Holiness. They understand nothing therefore either of Christ or of the Law of Christ: For if they did, they would say; Brother, thou art infected with such a Vice, and I am infected with another; God hath forgiven me ten thousand Talents, and I will forgive thee an hundred Pence, *Matth. xviii. 24-28*. But when they will require all Things so exactly and with such Perfection, and will in no wise bear the Burdens of the Weak, they offend many with this their Sharpness and Severity, who begin to despise, hate and shun them, and seek not Comfort or Counsel at their Hands, nor regard what or how they teach: Whereas contrariwise, Pastors ought so to behave themselves towards those

those over whom they have taken Charge, that they might love and reverence them, not for their Person, but for their Office and Christian Vertues, which especially ought to shine in them.

*Paul* therefore in this Place hath rightly painted out such severe and mercileſs Saints, when he ſaith; *They think themselves to be something*, that is to ſay, being puffed up with their own ſooliſh Opinions and vain Dreams, they have a marvellous Perſwaſion of their own Knowledge and Holineſs, and yet in very deed they are nothing, and do but deceive themſelves. For it is a manifeſt beguiling when a Man perſwadeth himſelf that he is ſomething, when indeed he is nothing. Such Men are well deſcribed in *Revel. iii. 17.* in theſe Words, *Thou ſayeſt, I am rich, and increaſed with Goods, and have Need of nothing; and knoweſt not that thou art wretched, and miſerable, and poor, and blind, and naked.*

**Verſe 4.** *But let every Man prove his own Work, and then he ſhall have rejoicing in himſelf alone, and not in another.*

He goeth forward in Painting out of thoſe proud and vain-glorious Fellows. For the Deſire of Vain glory is an odious and curſed Vice, it is the Occaſion of all Evils, and troubleth both Common-weals and Conſciences; and ſpecially in ſpiritual Matters it is ſuch an Evil as is incurable. And albeit that this Place may be underſtood of the Works of this Life or civil Converſation, yet principally the Apoſtle ſpeaketh of the Work of the Miniſtry, and enveigheth againſt thoſe vain-glorious Heads, which with their fantaſtical Opinions do trouble well-inſtructed Conſciences.

And this is the Property of thoſe which are infected with this Poiſon of Vain-glory, that they have no Regard whether their Works, that is to ſay, their Miniſtry be pure, ſimple and faithſul, or not; but this they only ſeek, that they may have the Praise of the People. So the falſe Apoſtles, when they ſaw that *Paul* preached the Goſpel purely to the *Galatians*, and that they could not bring any better Doctrine, they began to find Fault at thoſe Things which he had godly and faithſully taught, and to prefer their own Doctrine before the Doctrine of *Paul*, and by this Subtilty they won the Favour of the *Galatians*, and brought *Paul* into Hatred among them. Therefore the proud and vain glorious do join theſe three Vices together. *Fiſt*, They are greedy of Glory. *Secondly*, They are marvellous witty and wily in finding Fault with other Mens Doings and Sayings, thereby to purchaſe the Love, the well Liking and Praise of the People. And *thirdly*, When they have once gotten a Name (tho' it be by other Mens Travail) they become ſo ſtout and full of Stomack that they dare venture upon all Things. Therefore they are pernicious and peſtilent Fellows, whom I hate even with my very Heart; for they ſeek their own, and not that which is of Jeſus Chriſt, *Gal. Phil. ii. 21.*

Against such *Paul* speaketh here. As if he should say: Such vain glorious Spirits do their Work, that is to say, they teach the Gospel to this End that they may win Praise and Estimation among Men, that is that they may be counted excellent Doctors, with whom *Paul* and others might not be compared. And when they have gotten this Estimation, then begin they to reprehend the Sayings and Doings of other Men, and highly commend their own; and by this Subtilty they bewitch the Minds of the People, who because they have itching Ears, are not only delighted with new Opinions, but also rejoice to see those Teachers which they had afore, to be abased and defaced by these new Upstarts and glorious Heads, and all because they are come to a Fulness and lothing of the Word.

Thus it ought not to be (saith he) but let every Man be faithful in his Office; let him not seek his own Glory, nor depend upon the Praise and Commendation of the People, but let his only Care be to do his Work truly, that is, let him teach the Gospel purely. And if his Work be sincere and sound, let him assure himself that he shall lack no Praise either before God, or among the Godly. In the mean Space, if he be not commended of the unthankful World, let this nothing move him; for he knoweth that the End of his Ministry is, not that he, but that Christ should be glorified thereby. Wherefore being furnished with the Armour of Righteousness on the Right hand and on the Left, let him say: I began not to teach the Gospel to the End that the World should magnify me, and therefore I will not shrink from that which I have begun, if the World hate, slander or persecute me. He that is such an one, teacheth the Word, and attendeth upon his Office faithfully, without any worldly Respect, that is, without Regard of Glory or Gain, without the Strength, Wisdom or Authority of any Man. He leaneth not to the Praise of other Men, for he hath it in himself.

Wherefore he that truly and faithfully executeth his Office, careth not what the World speaks of him; he careth not whether the World praise or dispraise him, but he hath Praise in himself, which is the Testimony of his Conscience, and Praise or Glory in God. He may therefore say with *Paul*; This is our rejoicing, this is our Praise and Glory, even the Testimony of our Conscience, that in Simplicity and Sincerity before God, and not in fleshly Wisdom, but in the Grace of God we have had our Conversation in the World. This Glory is uncorrupt and stedfast; for it dependeth not on other Mens Judgments, but of our own Conscience, which beareth us witness that we have taught the Word purely, ministred the Sacraments rightly, and have done all Things well, and therefore it cannot be defaced or taken from us.

What is the Glory of Hereticks. The other Glory which these proud Spirits do seek, is uncertain and most perillous, for that they have it not in themselves, but it consisteth in the Mouth and Opinion of the People. Therefore can they not have the Testimony of their own Conscience, that they have done all Things with Simplicity and Sincerity for the advancing of the Glory of God only, and

and the Salvation of Souls. For this is it which they seek, that they may be counted famous thro' the Work and Labour of their Preaching, and be praised of Men. They have therefore a Glory, a Trust, and a Testimony, but before Men, not in themselves nor before God. The Godly do not desire Glory after this Manner: If *Paul* had had this Praise before Men, and not in himself, he should have been compelled to despair, when he saw many Cities, Countries, and all *Assa* fall from him; when he saw so many Offences or Slanders, and so many Heresies to follow his Preaching. Christ when he was alone, that is, when he was not only fought for by the *Jews* to be put to Death, but also was forsaken of his Disciples, was not yet alone, but the Father was with him, *John* vi. 32. for he had Glory and Rejoicing in himself.

So at this Day if our Trust, our Glory, and Rejoicing did depend upon the Judgment and Favour of Men, we should die with very Anguish and Sorrow of Heart. For so far off is it *Phil. iv. 4.* that the *Papists*, *Sectaries* and the whole World do judge The World is worthy of any Reverence or Praise, that they hate and dishonoureth us most bitterly; yea, they would gladly overthrow our Ministry, and root out our Doctrine for ever. the godly Ministers of the Word. We have therefore nothing before Men but Reproach; but we rejoice and we glory in the Lord, and therefore we attend upon our Office cheerfully and faithfully, which we know is acceptable to him. Thus doing we care not whether our Work do please or displease the Devil; whether the World love us or hate us. For we knowing our Work to be well done, and having a good Conscience before God, go forward by Honour and Dishonour, by evil Report and good Report, *2 Cor. vi. 8.* This saith *Paul*, is to have Rejoicing or Glory in thyself.

And this Admonition is very necessary against that execrable Vice of Vain-glory. The Gospel is a Doctrine which both of itself, and also by the Malice of the Devil bringeth with it the Cross and Persecution. Therefore *Paul* is wont to call it the Word of the Cross and of Offence, *1 Cor. i. 18.* It hath not always stedfast and constant Disciples. Many there be that to Day make Profession thereof and embrace it, which To morrow being offended with the Cross, will fall from it and deny it. They therefore that teach the Gospel, to the End that they may obtain the Favour and Praise of Men, must needs perish, and their Glory be turned unto Shame, when the People cease to reverence and magnify them. Wherefore let all Pastors and Ministers of the Word learn to have Glory and Rejoicing in themselves, and not in the Mouth of other Men. If there be any that praise them, as the Godly are wont to do, By evil Report and good Report, saith *Paul*) yet let them receive this Glory but as a Shadow of true Glory; and let them think the Substance of Glory to be indeed the Testimony of their own Conscience. He that so do so, proveth his own Work, that is, he regardeth not his own Glory, but his only Care is to do his Office faithfully, that is to say, to teach the Gospel purely, and to shew the true Use of the Sacraments.

What it is When he thus proveth his own Work, he hath Glory and for a Man to Rejoicing in himself, which no Man can take from him; prove his for he hath it surely planted and grounded in his own own Work. Heart, and not in other Mens Mouths, whom Satan can very easily turn away, and can make that Mouth and Tongue now full of Cursing, which a little before was full of Blessing.

Therefore (saith Paul) if ye be desirous of Glory, seek it where it should be sought, not in the Mouth of other Men, but in your own Heart, which ye then do when ye execute your Office truly and faithfully. So shall it come to pass that besides the Glory which ye have in yourselves, ye shall have Praise and Commendation also before Men. But if ye glory in other Men, and not in yourselves, that Shame and Confusion which ye have in yourselves, shall not be without Reproach and Confusion also before Men. This have we seen in certain fantastical Spirits in these our Days, which proved not their Work, that is, they did not only seek to preach the Gospel purely and simply, but misused it to gain Praise among Men, contrary to the second Commandment. Therefore after their inward Confusion, there followed also an outward Confusion and Shame among Men, according to that Saying: *The Lord will not hold him guiltless that taketh his Name in vain, Exod. xx. 7.* And again, *They that despise me, shall be lightly esteemed, 1 Sam. ii. 30.*

Contrariwise, if we seek first the Glory of God by the Ministry of the Word, then surely our Glory will follow, according to that Saying: *Him that honoureth me I will glorify.* To conclude, let every Man prove his Work, that is, let him do his Endeavour that his Ministry may be found faithful: for this above all Things is required in the Ministers of the Word, 1 Cor. iv. 2. As if he should say: Let every Man endeavour purely and faithfully to teach the Word, and let him have an Eye to nothing else but the Glory of God, and the Salvation of Souls, then shall his Work be faithful and sound, then shall he have Glory and Rejoicing in his own Conscience, so that he may boldly say: This my Doctrine and Ministry pleaseth God. And this is indeed an excellent Glory.

This Sentence may also be well applied to those Works which are done of the Faithful in every State of Life. As if a Magistrate, an Householder, a Servant, a School-master, a Schollar, abide in his Vocation, and do his Duty therein faithfully, not troubling himself with those Works which pertain not to his Vocation, he may glory and rejoice in himself; for he may say, I have done the Works of my Vocation appointed unto me by God, with such Faithfulness and Diligence as I was able. Therefore I know that this Work being done in Faith and Obedience to God, pleaseth God: If other speak evil of it, I pass little thereof; for there be always some which despise and slander the Doctrine and Life of the Godly; but God hath threatened to destroy all lying Lips and flattering Tongues. Therefore whilst such Men do greedily seek after Vain-glory, and with Lies and Slanders go about to deface the Godly, it happeneth to them as Paul saith; *Whose Glory is in their Shame, Rom.*

19. And in another Place; *Their Folly shall be manifest unto all Men,* Tim. iii. 9. By whom? Even by God the righteous Judge, who as will utter their false Accusations and Slanders, so will he reveal the righteousness of the Godly like the Noon-day, as it is said, *Psal.* cxvii. 6.

This Clause, *in himself*, (to touch this also by the Way) must so be understood that God be not excluded, that is, that every Man may know, in what godly State of Life soever he be, that his Work is a divine Work; for it is the Work of his Vocation having the Commandment of God.

**Verse 5. For every Man shall bear his own Burden.**

This is as it were the Reason or Confirmation of the former Sentence, that any Man should lean to other Mens Judgments in praising and commending of him. As if he said; It is extreme Madness for thee to seek glory in another, and not in thyself: For in the Agony of Death and the last Judgment it shall not profit thee that other Men have praised thee; for other Men shall not bear thy Burden, but thou shalt stand before the Judgment-seat of Christ, and shalt bear thy Burden alone. There thy Praisers shall nothing help thee: For when we die, these Praises shall cease. And in that Day when the Lord shall judge the Secrets of all hearts, the Witness of thine own Conscience shall stand either with thee against thee, *Rom. ii. 15.* Against thee if thou glory in other Men, with thee if thou have it in thyself, that is to say, if thy Conscience be thy Witness that thou hast done thy Duty in the Ministry of the Word, or otherwise according to thy Calling sincerely and faithfully, having Respect to the Glory of God only, and the Salvation of Souls, and these Words, *Every Man shall bear his own Judgment*, are very weighty, and ought so to testify us that we should not be desirous of vain-glory.

And this moreover is to be noted, that we are not here in the Matter of Justification, where nothing availeth but mere Grace and Forgiveness of Sins, which is received by Faith alone, where all our Works also, yea even our best Works, and such as are done according to God's Calling, have Need of Forgiveness of Sins. But this is another Case; He treateth not here of the Remission of Sins; but compareth true Works and hypocritical Works together. These Things therefore ought thus to be taken, that altho' the Work or Ministry of a godly Pastor is not so perfect but that he hath Need of Forgiveness of Sins, yet in itself it is good and perfect, in Comparison of the Ministry of the vain-glorious Man. So his Ministry is good and sound, because we seek thereby the Glory of God, and the Salvation of Souls. But the Ministry of the fantastical leaders is not so, for they seek their own Praise. Albeit therefore that our Works can quiet the Conscience before God, yet it is necessary that we should persuade ourselves that we have done our Work uprightly, duly, and according to God's Calling, that is, that we have not corrupted the Work of God, but have taught it purely and faithfully. This

Testimony of Conscience we have need of; that we have done our Duty uprightly in our Function and Calling, and led our Life accordingly. So far ought we then to glory as touching our Works, as we know them to be commanded of God, and that they please him. For every one in the last Judgment shall bear his own Burden, and therefore other Mens Praises shall there nothing help or profit him.

Hitherto he hath spoken against that most pestilent Vice of Vain glory, for the suppressing whereof no Man is so strong, but that he hath Need of continual Prayer. For what Man almost even among the Godly is not delighted with his own Praises? Only the Holy Ghost can preserve us that we be not infected with this Vice.

**Verse 6.** *Let him that is taught in the Word, communicate unto him that teacheth in all good Things.*

Here he preacheth to the Disciples or Hearers of the Word, commanding them to bestow all good Things upon those which have taught and instructed them in the Word. I have sometimes marvelled why the Apostles commanded the Churches so diligently to nourish their Teachers. For in Popery I saw that all Men gave abundantly to the building and maintaining of goodly Temples, to the increasing of the Revenues and Livings of those which were appointed to their idolatrous Service. Hereof it came that the Estimation and Riches of the Bishops, and the rest of the Clergy did so increase, that every where they had in Possession the best and most fruitful Grounds. Therefore thought I that Paul had commanded this in vain, seeing that all Manner of good Things were not only abundantly given to the Clergy, but also they overflowed in Wealth and Riches. Wherefore I thought that Men ought rather to be exhorted to withhold their Hands from giving, then encouraged to give any more; for I saw that by this excessive Liberality of Men the Covetousness of the Clergy did increase. But now I know the Cause why they had such Abundance of all good Things heretofore, and now see that the Pastors and Ministers of the Word do want.

The Ministers of Satan and wicked Doctrine, they had such Plenty of all Things, that of Peter's Patrimony (which denied that he had either Silver or Gold,) and of spiritual Goods (as they called them) the Pope was become an Emperor, the Cardinals and Bishops were made Kings and Princes of the World. But now since the Gospel hath been preached and published, the Professors thereof be as rich as some time Christ and his Apostles were. We find then by Experience, how well this Commandment of nourishing and maintaining the Pastors and Ministers of God's Word is observed, which Paul here and in other Places so diligently repeateth and beateth into the Heads of his Hearers. There is now no City which is known to us, that nourisheth and maintaineth her Pastors and Preachers; but they are all entertained

with those Goods which were given, not unto Christ, to whom no Man giveth any Thing. (for when he was born he was laid in a Manger instead of a Bed, because there was no Room for him in the Inn, *Luke ii. 7.* Afterwards being conversant among Men, he had not wherewith to lay his Head, *Matth. viii. 20.* And briefly, being spoiled of his Garments and hanging naked upon the Cross between two Thieves, *Matth. xxviii. 38.* he died most miserably;) but to the Pope for the Maintenance of his Abominations, and because he oppressing the Gospel, taught the Doctrines and Traditions of Men, and set up Idolatry.

And as oft as I read the Exhortation of *Paul*, whereby he perswadeth the Churches that they should either nourish their Pastors, or give somewhat to the Relief of the poor Saints in *Jerry*, I do greatly marvel and am ashamed that so great an Apostle should be constrained to use so many Words, for the obtaining of this Benefit of the Congregations. Writing to the *Corinthians*, he treateth of this Matter in two whole Chapters, *1 Cor. viii. and ix.* I would be loth to defame *Wittenburg*, which indeed is nothing to *Corinth*, as he defamed the *Corinthians* in begging so carefully for the Relief and Succour of the Poor. But this is the Lot of the Gospel when it is preached, that not only no Man is willing to give any Thing for the finding of Ministers and maintaining of Schollars, but Men begin to spoil, to rob and to steal, and with divers crafty Means one to beguile another. To be brief, Men seem suddenly to grow out of Kind, and to be transformed into cruel Beasts. Contrariwise, when the Doctrine of Devils was preached, then Men were prodigal, and offered all Things willingly to those that deceived them, *1 Tim. iv. 2.* The Prophets do reprove the same Sin in the *Jews*, which were loth to give any Things to the godly Priests and *Levites*, but gave all Things plentifully to the Wicked:

Now therefore we begin to understand how necessary this Commandment of *Paul* is, as touching the Maintenance of the Ministers of the Church: For Satan can abide nothing less then the Light of the Gospel. Therefore when he seeth that it beginneth to shine, then doth he rage and goeth about with all Main and Might to quench it. And this he attempteth two Manner of Ways. First, By lying Spirits and Force of Tyrants; and then by Poverty and Famine. But because he could not hitherto oppress the Gospel in this Country (praised be God) by Hereticks and Tyrants; therefore he attempteth to bring it to pass the other Way, that is, by withdrawing the Livings of the Ministers of the Word, to the End that they being oppressed with Poverty and Necessity, should forsake the Ministry, and so the miserable People being destitute of the Word of God, should become in Time as savage and wild Beasts. And Satan helpeth forward this horrible Enormity by ungodly Magistrates in the Cities, and also by Noblemen and Gentlemen in the Country, who take away the Church Goods whereby the Ministers of the Gospel should live, and turn them to wicked Uses. These Goods (saith the Prophet *Micah*) were gathered of the Hire of an Harlot; and they shall return to the Hire of an Harlot, *Chap. i. 7.*

These Goods are now in the City of *Wittenburg* and *Freiburg*; but they are all consumed.

Moreover, Satan turneth Men particularly also from the Gospel by overmuch Fulness. For when the Gospel is diligently and daily preached, many being gladdened therewith begin to loath it, and by little and little become negligent and untoward to all godly Exercises. Again, there is no Man that will now bring up his Children in good Learning, and much less in the Study of the Holy Scripture, but they employ them wholly to gainful Arts or Occupations. All these are Satans Practices, to no other End but that he may oppress the Gospel in this our Country with any Violence of Tyrants, or subtil Devices of Hereticks.

It is not without Cause therefore that Paul warneth the Hearers of the Gospel to make their Pastors and Teachers Partakers with them in all good Things. *If we (saith he to the Corinthians) have sown into you spiritual Things, Is it a great Thing if we shall reap your carnal Things?* 1 Cor. ix. 11. The Hearers therefore ought to minister carnal Things

to them of whom they have received spiritual Things. The World But both Husbandmen, Citizens and Gentlemen do at loadeth the this Day abuse our Doctrine, that under the Colour thereof Ministers of of they may enrich themselves. Heretofore when the Satan with Pope reigned, there was no Man which paid not somewhat all worldly yearly to the Priests for Masses, Dirges, Trentals and good Things. such Trash. The begging Friars had also their Part. The Merchandises of Rome likewise, and daily Offerings carried away somewhat. From these and from an infinite Number of such Exactions our Country-men are now delivered by the Gospel. But so far off is it that they are thankful unto God for this Liberty, that of prodigal Givers they are now become stark Thieves and Robbers, and will not bestow one Farthing on the Gospel or the Ministers thereof, nor give any Thing for the Relief and Succour of the poor Saints; which is a certain Token that they have lost both the Word and Faith, and that they have no spiritual Goodness in them. For it is impossible that such as are godly indeed, should suffer their Pastors to live in Necessity and Penury. But forasmuch as they laugh and rejoice when their Pastors suffer any Adversity, and withhold their Living, or give it not with such Faithfulness as they ought; it is a plain Token that they are worse than the Heathens.

But they shall feel it ere it be long what Calamities will follow this Unthankfulness. For they shall lose both temporal and spiritual Things. For this Sin must needs be grievously punished. And certainly I think that the Churches in Galatia, Corinth, and other Places were so troubled by the false Apostles, for no other Cause, but for that they little regarded their true Pastors and Preachers. For it is good Reason that he which refuseth to give a Penny to God, who offereth unto him all good Things, and Life everlasting, should give a Piece of Gold to the Devil, the Author of all Evils and Death everlasting. Who so will not serve God a little, and that to his own inestimable Benefit, let him serve the Devil in much to his extreme and utter Confusion. Now therefore since the Light of the Gospel beginneth to shine, we see what the Devil is, and what the World is.

In that he saith; *In all good Things*, it is not so to be taken, that all Men are bound to give all that they have to their Ministers, but that they should maintain them liberally, and give them that whereby they may be well able to live.

**Verse 7. Be not deceived, God is not mocked:**

The Apostle prosecuteth this Place of the nourishing and maintaining of Ministers so earnestly, that to his former Reprehension and Exhortation, he addeth now also a Threatning, saying; *God is not mocked.* And here he toucheth to the quick the Perverseness of our Country-men, which proudly despise our Ministry: For Gentlemen, they think it to be a Sport and a Game; and therefore Citizens and they go about (especially the Gentlemen) to make their Husband-Pastors subject unto them like Servants and Slaves. And men, Despisers of God's Truth, they had ere this Time driven us out of the Ministers-Country. When the Pastors ask their Duty or complain

that they suffer Penury, they cry out; the Priests be covetous, they would have Plenty, no Man is able to satisfy their unsatiable Covetousness; if they were true Gospellers, they should have nothing of their own, but as poor Men ought to follow poor Christ, and so suffer all Adversities, &c.

Paul horribly threatneth here such Tyrants and such Mockers of God, who so carelessly and proudly do scorn the miserable Preachers, and yet will seem to be Gospellers, and not to be Mockers of God, but to worship him very devoutly. *Be not deceived* (saith he) *God is not mocked*, that is to say, he doth not suffer himself to be mocked in his Ministers: For he saith; *He that despiseth you, despiseth me*, Luke 2. 16. Also he saith unto Samuel, *They have not rejected thee, but me*, 1 Sam. viii.

7. Therefore, O ye Mockers, altho' God defer his Punishment for a Season, yet when he seeth Time he will find you out, and will punish this Contempt of his Word and bitter Hatred which ye bear against his Ministers. Therefore ye deceive not God but yourselves, and ye shall not laugh at God, but he will laugh at you, *Psal. ii. 4.* But our proud Gentlemen, Citizens and Common-people are nothing at all moved with these dreadful Threatnings. Nevertheless they shall feel when Death approacheth, whither they have mocked themselves or us; nay rather not us, but God himself, as Paul saith here. In the mean Time, because they proudly despise our Admonitions with an insufferable Pride, we speak these Things to our Comfort, to the End we may know that it is better to suffer wrong then to do wrong; for Patience is ever innocent and harmless. Moreover, God will not suffer his Ministers to starve for Hunger, but even when the rich Men suffer Scarcity and Hunger, he will feed them, and in the Day of Famine they shall have enough, *Psal. xxxiv. 10.* and *xxxvii. 19.*

**Verse 7. For whatsoever a Man soweth, that shall he also reap.**

All these Things tend to this Purpose, that Ministers should be nourished and maintained. For my Part I do not gladly interpret such Sentences; for they seem to commend us, and so they do indeed. Moreover, if a Man stand much in repeating such Things to his Hearers, it hath some Shew of Covetousness. Notwithstanding Men must be admonished hereof, that they may know that they ought to yield unto their Pastors, both Reverence and a necessary Living. Our Saviour Christ teacheth the same Thing in Luke x. 7. *Eating and drinking such Things as they have: for the Labourer is worthy of his Hire.* And Paul saith in another Place; *Do ye not know that they which minister about holy Things, live of the Things of the Temple? And they which wait at the Altar, are Partakers with the Altar? Even so hath the Lord ordained, that they which preach the Gospel, should live of the Gospel,* 1 Cor. ix. 13, 14.

It is good that we also which are in the Ministry, should know these Things, lest for our Labour we might with evil Conscience receive the Stipend which is given unto us of the Pope's Goods. And altho' such Goods were heaped together by mere Fraud and Deceit, yet notwithstanding God spoiling the Egyptians, Exod. xii. 36, that is to say, the Papists of their Goods, turneth them here amongst us, to a good and holy Use; not when Noblemen and Gentlemen spoil them and abuse them, but when they which set forth God's Glory, and bring up Youth virtuously, are maintained therewith. Let us know then that we may with good Conscience (since God hath ordained and commanded that they which preach the Gospel should live of the Gospel) use those Things that are given us of the Church Goods, for the necessary Sustentation of our Life, to the End we may attend upon our Office the better. Let no Man therefore make any Scruple hereof, as tho' it were not lawful for him to use such Goods.

**Verse 8.** *For he that soweth to his Flesh, shall of the Flesh reap Corruption: But he that soweth to the Spirit, shall of the Spirit reap Life everlasting.*

He addeth a Similitude and an Allegory. And this general Sentence of Sowing he applieth to the particular Matter of nourishing and maintaining the Ministers of the Word, saying; *He that soweth to the Spirit,* that is to say, he that cherisheth the Teachers of God's Word, doth a spiritual Work, and shall reap everlasting Life. Here riseth a Question, Whether we deserve eternal Life by good Works? For so Paul teacheth us, avouch in this Place. As touching such Sentences which speak of Works and the Reward of them, we have treated very largely before in the 5th Chapter. And very necessary it is, after the Example of Paul, to exhort the Faithful to good Works, that is to say, to exercise their Faith by good Works. For if they follow not Faith, it is a manifest

manifest Token that their Faith is no true Faith. Therefore the Apostle saith: *He that soweth to his Flesh, shall of the Flesh reap Corruption*: That is to say, He that giveth nothing to the Ministers of God's Word, but only feedeth and careth for himself (which is the Counsel of the Flesh) that Man shall of the Flesh reap Corruption, not only in this present Life, but also in the Life to come. For the Goods of the Wicked shall waste away, and they themselves also at length shall shamefully perish. The Apostle would fain stir up his Hearers to be liberal and beneficial towards their Pastors and Preachers. But what a Misery is it, that the Perverseness and Ingratitude of Men should be so great, that the Churches should need this Admonition?

The *Encratites* abused this Place for the Confirmation of their wicked Opinion against Marriage, expounding it after this Manner: *He that soweth to his Flesh, shall of the Flesh reap Corruption*: That is to say, he that marryeth a Wife shall be damned: *Ergo*, a Wife is a damnable Thing, and Marriage is evil, forasmuch as there is in it a Sowing in the Flesh. These Beasts were so destitute of all Judgment, that they perceived not whereabout the Apostle went. I speak this, to the End ye may see how easily the Devil by his Ministers can turn away the Hearts of the Simple from the Truth. *Germany* shall shortly have an infinite Number of such Beasts, yea and already hath very many: For on the one Side it persecuteth and killeth the godly Ministers, and on the other Side, it neglecteth and despiseth them, and suffereth them to live in great Poverty. Let us warn ourselves against these and such like Errors, and let us learn to know the true Meaning of the Scriptures. For *Paul* speaketh not here of Marriage, but of nourishing the Ministers of the Church, which every Man that is endued but with the common Judgment of Reason may perceive. And altho' this Nourishment is but a corporal Thing, yet notwithstanding he calleth it a Sowing in the Spirit. Contrariwise, when Men greedily scrape together what they can, and seek only their own Gain, he calleth it a Sowing in the Flesh. He pronounceth those which sow in the Spirit to be blessed, both in this Life and in the Life to come; and the other which sow in the Flesh to be cursed, both in this Life and in the Life to come.

The *Heretics* called *Encratites*, whose Error the *Papists* have revived as touching Matrimony, and therefore they may truly be called new *Encratites*.

Verse 9. *And let us not be weary in well-doing: For in due Season we shall reap if we faint not.*

The Apostle intending to close up this Epistle, passeth from the particular to the general, and exhorteth generally to all good Works. As if he should say: Let us be liberal and bountiful, not only towards the Ministers of the Word, but also towards all other Men, and that without Weariness. For it is an easy Matter for a Man to do good once or twice; but to continue, and not to be discouraged thro' the Ingratitude and Perverseness of Men.

of those to whom he hath done good, that is very hard. Therefore he doth not only exhort us to do good, but also not to be weary in doing good. And to perswade us the more easily thereunto, he addeth, *For in due Season we shall reap if we faint not.* As if he said; Wait and look for the perpetual Harvest that is to come, and then shall no Ingratitude or perverse Dealing of Men be able to pluck you away from well-doing: For in the Harvest-time ye shall receive most plentiful Increase and Fruit of the Seed. Thus with most sweet Words he exhorteth the Faithful to be doing of good Works.

**Verse 10.** *As we have therefore Opportunity, let us do good unto all Men, especially unto them who are of the Household of Faith.*

This is the knitting up of his Exhortation for the liberal maintaining and nourishing of the Ministers of the Word, and giving of Alms to all such as have need. As if he had said; Let us do good while it is Day, for when Night cometh we can no longer work, *John ix. 4.* Indeed Men work many Things when the Light of the Truth is taken away, but all in vain; for they walk in Darkness and wot not whither they go, *John xii. 35.* and therefore all their Life, Works, Sufferings and Death are in vain. And by these Words he toucheth the *Galatians*: As if he should say; Except ye continue in the sound Doctrine which ye have received of me, your working of much Good, your Suffering of many Troubles, and such other Things profit you nothing; as he said before in the 3d Chapter; *Have ye suffered so many Things in vain?* And by a new Kind of Speech he termeth those the Household of Faith which are joined with us in the Fellowship of Faith, among whom the Ministers of the Word are the chiefest, and then all the rest of the Faithful.

**Verse 11.** *Ye see how large a Letter I have written unto you with mine own Hand.*

He closeth up his Epistle with an Exhortation to the Faithful, and with a sharp Rebuke or Invective against the false Apottles; *Ye see (saith he) how large a Letter I have written unto you with mine own Hand.* This he saith to move them, and to shew his motherly Affection towards them. As if he should say; I never wrote so long an Epistle with mine own Hand to any other Church as I have done to you. For as for his other Epistles, as he spake other wrote them, and afterwards he subscribed his Salutation and Name with his own Hand, as it is to be seen in the End of his Epistles. And in these Words (as I suppose) he hath Respect to the length of the Epistle. Other some take it other-ways.

Verse 12. *As many as desire to make a fair Shew in the Flesh, they constrain you to be circumcised; only lest they should suffer Persecution for the Cross of Christ.*

Before he cursed the false Apostles. Now as it were repeating the same Thing again, but with other Words, he accuseth them very sharply, to the End he may fear and turn away the *Galatians* from their Doctrine, notwithstanding the great Authority which they seemed to have. The Teachers which ye have (saith he) are such as first, Regard not the Glory of Christ and the Salvation of your Souls, but only seek their own Glory: Secondly, They flee the Cross: Thirdly, They understand not those Things which they teach.

Those false Teachers being accused of the Apostles for three such execrable Enormities, were worthy to be avoided of all Men. But yet all the *Galatians* obeyed not this Warning of *Paul*. And *Paul* doth the false Apostles no wrong, when he so vehemently inveigheth against them; but he justly condemneth them by his apostolick Authority. In like Manner when we call the Pope *Antichrist*, his Bishops and his Shavelings a cursed Generation, we slander them not, but by God's Authority we judge them to be accursed, according to that which is said in the 1st Chapter; But though we, or an Angel from Heaven, preach any other Gospel unto you, then that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed. For they hate, persecute and overthrow the Doctrine of Christ.

Your Teachers (saith he) are vain Heads, and not regarding the Glory of Christ and your Salvation, they seek only their own Glory. Again, because they are afraid of the Cross, they preach Circumcision and the Righteousness of the Flesh, lest they should provoke the Jews to hate and persecute them. Wherefore, altho' ye hear them never so gladly and never so long; yet shall ye hear but such as make their Belly their God, seek their own Glory, and shun the Cross, *Phil. iii. 19*. And here is to be noted a certain Vehemency in this Word *compel*. For Circumcision is nothing of itself; but to be compelled to Circumcision, and when a Man hath received it, to put Righteousness and Holiness therein, and if it be not received to make it a Sin, that is an Injury unto Christ. Of this Matter I have spoken largely enough heretofore.

Verse 13. *For neither they themselves who are circumcised, keep the Law; but desire to have you circumcised, that they may glory in your Flesh.*

Is not *Paul* here worthy to be called an Heretick? For he saith, that not only the false Apostles, but all the Nation of the Jews which were circumcised, keep not the Law, but rather that they which were circumcised,

circumcised, in fulfilling the Law fulfil it not. This is against *Moses*, who saith, that to be circumcised is to keep the Law, *Gen. xvii. 10.* and not to be circumcised, is to make the Covenant void, *Gen. xvii. 14.* And the *Jews* were circumcised for none other Cause but to keep the Law, which commanded that every male Child should be circumcised the eight Day. Hereof we have before intreated at large, and therefore we need not now to repeat the same again. Now, these Things serve to the condemning of the false Apostles, that the *Galatians* may be feared from hearing of them, as if he should say; Behold, I set before your Eyes what Manner of Teachers ye have. *First*, They are vain-glorious Men, which seek nothing but their own Profit, and care for nothing but their own Belly, *Phil. ii. 21.* *Secondly*, They see the Cross. And *finally*, they teach no Truth or Certainty, but all their Saying and Doings are counterfeit and full of Hypocrisy. Wherefore altho' they keep the Law outwardly, yet in keeping it they keep it not. For without the Holy Ghost, the Law cannot be kept. But the Holy Ghost cannot be received without Christ; and where the Holy Ghost dwelleth not, there dwelleth an unclean Spirit, that is to say, despising God, and seeking his own Gain and Glory. Therefore all that he doth as touching the Law, is mere Hypocrisy and double Sin. For an unclean Heart doth not fulfil the Law, but only maketh an outward Shew thereof, and so is it more confirmed in his Wickedness and Hypocrisy.

The Law is  
not accom-  
plished with  
outward  
Works.

And this Sentence is diligently to be marked, that they which are circumcised keep not the Law; that is to say, that they which are circumcised are not circumcised. It may also be applied unto other Works: He that worketh, prayeth, or suffereth without Christ, worketh, prayeth and suffereth in vain; for all that is not of Faith is Sin, *Rom. xiv. 23.* It profiteth a Man therefore nothing at all to be outwardly circumcised, to fast, to pray, or to do any other Work, if he be within a Despiser of Grace, of Forgiveness of Sins, of Faith, of Christ, &c. and be puffed up with the Opinion and Presumption of his own Righteousness, which are horrible Sins against the first Table; and afterward there follow also other Sins against the second Table, as Disobedience, Whoredom, Purpurness, Wrath, Hatred, and such other. Therefore he saith very well, that they which be circumcised keep not the Law, but only pretend that they keep it. But this counterfeiting, or rather Hypocrisy is double Wickedness before God.

The Peril  
that follow-  
eth Ambiti-  
on and  
Vain-glory.

What mean the false Apostles when they would have you to be circumcised? Not that ye might become righteous; altho' they so bear you in Hand, but that they may glory in your Flesh. Now, who would not detest this most pestilent Vice of Ambition and Desire of Glory, which is sought with so great Peril of Mens Souls? They are (saith he) deceitful, shameless and vain Spirits, which serve their own Belly, and hate the Cross. Again (which is worst of all) they

Compel

the Papistical Church. There is no Conformity in their Doctrine, Faith, Religion or serving of God, but all Things are clean contrary. Contrariwise, amongst Christians, the Word, Faith, Religion, Sacraments, Service, Christ, God, Heart, Soul, Mind and Understanding, are all one and common to all; and as touching outward Conversation, the Diversity of States, Degrees and Conditions of Life, hindreth the spiritual Concord and Unity nothing at all, as before I have said. And they which have this Unity of the Spirit, can certainly judge of all Sects, which otherways no Man understandeth; as indeed no Divine in the *Papacy* understood, that *Paul* in this Place condemneth all the Worshippings, Religions, Continency, honest Conversation and holy Life in outward Appearance, of all the *Papists*, *Sectaries* and *Schismatics*; but they all thought that he speaketh of the gross Idolatry and Heresies of the *Gentiles* and *Turks*, which manifestly blaspheme the Name of Christ.

*Paul* doth not say, that to eat and drink be Works of Drunkenness, the Flesh, but to be drunken and to surfeit, which of all Gluttony, other Vices are most common at this Day. Whoso are given to this beastly Dissoluteness and Excess, let them know that they are not spiritual, how much soever they boast themselves so to be, but they follow the Flesh and perform the filthy Works thereof. Therefore is this horrible Sentence pronounced against them, that they shall not be Inheritors of the Kingdom of God. *Paul* would therefore that Christians should fly Drunkenness and Surfeiting, living soberly and moderately without all Excess, lest by pampering the Flesh, they should be provoked to Wantonness: As indeed after Surfeiting and Belly-Cheer, the Flesh is wont to wax wanton and to be inflamed with outrageous Lust. But it is not sufficient only to restrain this outrageous Wantonness and Lust of the Flesh which followeth Drunkenness and Surfeiting, or any Manner of Excess, but also the Flesh when it is most sober and in his best Temperance, must be subdued and repressed, lest it fulfil his Lusts and Desires. For it oftentimes cometh to pass, that even they which are most sober, are tempted most of all: As *Hierome* writeth of himself: My Face, saith he, was pale with fasting, and my Mind was inflamed with fleshly Desires in my cold Body, and altho' my Flesh was half dead already, yet the Flames of unclean Lust boiled within me. Hereof I myself also had Experience when I was a Monk. The Heat therefore of unclean Lusts is not quenched by fasting only, but we must be aided also by the Spirit, that is, by the Meditation of God's Word, Faith and Prayer: Indeed Fasting represseth the gross Assaults of fleshly Lusts, but the Desires of the Flesh are overcome by no Abstinence from Meats and Drinks, but only by the Meditation of the Word of God and Invocation of Christ.

How the  
burning  
Heat of  
Lusts may  
be quenched.

Verse 21. And such like:

For it is impossible to reckon up all the Works of the Flesh.

Verse

glory in Tribulations and in the Cross of Christ, and are glad with the Apostles that they are counted worthy to suffer Rebuke for the Name of Christ, *Acts. v. 41.* So must we glory at this Day when the Pope and the whole World most cruelly persecute us, condemn us, and kill us, because we suffer these Things, not for our evil Deeds, as Thieves, Murderers, &c. but for Christ's Sake, our Lord and Saviour, whose Gospel we truly preach.

Now, our Glory is increased and confirmed principally by these two Things. *First*, Because we are certain that our Doctrine is sound and perfect. *Secondly*, Because our Cross and Suffering is the Suffering of Christ. Therefore when the World persecuteth and killeth us, we have no Cause to complain or lament, but we ought rather to rejoice and be glad. Indeed the World judgeth us to be unhappy and accursed; but on the other Side, Christ, who is greater then the World, and for whom we suffer, pronounceth us to be blessed, and willeth us to rejoice. *Blessed are ye* (saith he) *when Men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all Manner of Evil against you falsely for my Sake. Rejoice, and be exceeding glad.* *Matth. v. 11, 12.* Our Glory then is another Manner of Glory then the Glory of the World is, which rejoiceth not in Tribulation, Reproach, Persecution and Death, &c. but glorieth altogether in Power, in Riches, Peace, Honour, Wisdom, and his own Righteousness. But Mourning and Confusion is the End of this Glory.

Moreover, the Cross of Christ doth not signify that Piece of Wood which Christ did bear upon his Shoulders, and to the which he was afterward nailed, but generally it signifieth all the Afflictions of the Faithful, whose Sufferings are Christ's Sufferings, *2 Cor. i. 5.* The Sufferings of Christ abound in us. Again, *Now rejoice I in my Sufferings for you, and fill up that which is behind of the Afflictions of Christ in my Flesh, for his Bodies Sake, which is the Church, &c.* *Col. i. 24.* The Cross of Christ therefore generally signifieth all the Afflictions of the Church which is suffered for Christ, which he himself witnesseth, when he saith, *Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?* *Acts ix. 4.* Saul did no Violence to Christ, but to his Church. But he that toucheth it, toucheth the Apple of his Eye, *Zech. ii. 8.* There is a more lively Feeling in the Head then in the other Members of the Body. And this we know by Experience, for the little Toe, or the least Part of Man's Body being hurt, the Head forthwith sheweth itself by the Countenance to feel the Grief thereof. So Christ our Head maketh all our Afflictions his own, and suffereth also when we suffer which are his Body.

It is profitable for us to know these Things, lest we should be swallowed up with Sorrow, or fall to Despair when we see that our Adversaries do cruelly persecute, excommunicate and kill us. The Cross. But let us think with ourselves, after the Example of one of the Godly, *Paul*, that we must glory in the Cross which we bear, not as is sweet. *Rom.* for our own Sins, but for Christ's Sake. If we consider not only in ourselves the Sufferings which we endure, they are not only grievous, but intolerable; but when we may say, *Thy*

*Suffer*

*sufferings, O Christ, abound in us, 2 Cor. i. 5. or as is said in Psal. xlii. 22. 3*  
*For thy Sake are we killed all the Day long; then these Sufferings are not*  
*only easy, but also sweet, according to that Saying; My Yoke is easy, and*  
*my Burden is light, Matth. xi. 30.*

Now, it is well known that we at this Day do suffer the Hatred and  
 Persecution of our Adversaries for none other Cause, but for that we  
 preach Christ faithfully and purely. If we would deny him, and ap-  
 prove their pernicious Errors and wicked Religion, they would not only  
 cease to hate and persecute us, but would also offer unto us Honour,  
 Riches and many goodly Things. Because therefore we suffer these  
 Things for Christ's Sake, we may truly rejoyce and glory with *Paul*  
 in the Cross of our Lord Jesus Christ; that is to say, not in Riches, in  
 Power, in the Favour of Men, &c. but in Afflictions, Weakness, Sorrow,  
 Fightings in the Body, Terrors in the Spirit, Persecutions and all other E-  
 vils, *2 Cor. vii. 5.* Wherefore we trust it will shortly come to pass, that Christ  
 will say the same to us that *David* said to *Abiathar* the Priest; *I am*  
*this Cause of all your Deaths,* *1 Sam. xxii. 22.* Again, *He that toucheth*  
*you, toucheth the Apple of mine Eye,* *Zech. ii. 8.* As if he had said; *He that*  
*hurteth you hurteth me.* For if ye did not preach my Word and con-  
 fess me, ye should not suffer these Things. So saith he also in *John*  
*xv. 19.* *If ye were of the World, the World would love his own: But be-*  
*cause ye are not of the World, but I have chosen you out of the World, there-*  
*fore the World hateth you.* But these Things are treated of afore.

Verse 14. *By whom the World is crucified unto me, and*  
*I unto the World.*

This is *Paul's* Manner of speaking; The World is crucified to me,  
 that is, I judge the World to be damned. And I am crucified to the  
 World, that is, the World again judgeth me to be damned. Thus we  
 crucify and condemn one another. I abhor all the Doctrine, Righte-  
 ousness and Works of the World as the Poison of the Devil. The  
 World again detesteth my Doctrine and Deeds, and judgeth me to be  
 seditious, a pernicious, a pestilent Fellow, and an *Heretick*. So at this  
 Day the World is crucified to us, and we unto the World. We curse  
 and condemn all Man's Traditions concerning Mass, Orders, Vows,  
 Will-worshippings, Works, and all the Abominations of the Pope and  
 other *Hereticks* as the Dirt of the Devil. They again do persecute and  
 kill us as Destroyers of Religion, and Troublers of the publick Peace.

The *Monks* dreamed that the World was crucified to them, when  
 they entred into their Monasteries; but by this Means Christ is crucified  
 and not the World, yea the World is delivered from crucifying, and is  
 the more quickned by that Opinion of Holiness and Trust which they  
 had in their own Righteousness that entred into Religion. Most fool-  
 ishly and wickedly therefore was this Sentence of the Apostles wrested to  
 the entering into Monasteries. He speaketh here of an high Matter  
 and

The contrary Judgment of the Faithful and of the World as concerning true Doctrine.

and of great Importance; that is to say, that every faithful Man judgeth that to be the Wisdom, Righteousness and Power of God, which the World condemneth as the greatest Folly, Wickedness and Weakness. And contrariwise, that which the World judgeth to be the highest Religion and Service of God, the Faithful do know to be nothing else but execrable and horrible Blasphemy against God. So the Godly condemn the World, and again the World condemneth the Godly. But the Godly have the right Judgment on their Side; for the spiritual Man judgeth all Things, *1 Cor. ii. 15.*

Wherefore the Judgment of the World touching Religion and Righteousness before God, is contrary to the Judgment of the Godly, as God and the Devil are contrary the one to the other. For as God is crucified to the Devil, and the Devil to God; that is to say, as God condemneth the Doctrine and Works of the Devil (for the Son of God appeared, as *1 John iii. 8.* saith, to destroy the Works of the Devil; ) and contrariwise, the Devil condemneth the Word and the Works of God, for he is a Murderer and a Father of Lies, *1 John viii. 44.* so the World condemneth the Doctrine and Life of the Godly, calling them most pernicious *Hereticks* and Troublers of the publick Peace. And again, the Faithful call the World the Son of the Devil, which rightly followeth his Fathers Steps, that is to say, which is as great a Murderer and Liar as his Father is. This is *Paul's* Meaning when he saith; *Whereby the World is crucified unto me, and I unto the World.* Now, the World doth not only signify in the Scriptures ungodly and wicked Men, but the very best, the wisest and holiest Men that are of the World.

And here by the Way he covertly toucheth the false Apostles. As if he should say; I utterly hate and detest all Glory which is without the Cross of Christ, as a cursed Thing, *Psal. cxxxix. 21.* for the World with all the Glory thereof is crucified to me and I to the World. Wherefore accursed be all they which glory in their Flesh and not in the Cross of Christ. *Paul* therefore witnesseth by these Words that he hateth the World with a perfect Hatred of the Holy Ghost; and again, the World hateth him with a perfect Hatred of a wicked Spirit. As if he should say; It is impossible that there should be any Agreement between me and the World. What shall I then do? Shall I give Place and teach those Things which please the World? No, but with a stout Courage I will set myself against it, and will as well despise and crucify it, as it despiseth and crucieth me.

To conclude, *Paul* here teacheth how we should fight against Satan, (which not only tormenteth our Bodies with sundry Afflictions, but also woundeth our Hearts continually with his fiery Darts, that by this Continuance, when he can no otherways prevail, he may overthrow our Faith, and bring us from the Truth and from Christ.) namely, that like as we see *Paul* himself to have stoutly despised the World, so we also should despise the Devil the Prince thereof, with all his Force, Deceits and hellish Furies, and so trusting to the Aid and Help of Christ, should triumph against him after this Manner: O Satan, the more thou

harest

urtest and goest about to hurt me, the more proud and stout I am against thee, and laugh thee to scorn : The more thou terrifiest me, and seekst to bring me to Desperation, so much the more Boldness I take, and glory in the Midst of thy Furies and Malice ; not by mine own Power, but by the Power of my Lord and Saviour Christ, whose Strength is made perfect in my Weakness, 2 Cor. xii. 9. Therefore when I am weak then am I strong. On the contrary, when he seeth his Threatnings and Terrors to be feared, he rejoiceth, and then he terrifieth more and more such as are terrified already.

*Verse 15. For in Christ Jesus neither Circumcision availeth any Thing, nor Uncircumcision, but a new Creature.*

This is a wonderful Kind of Speech which *Paul* here useth when he saith ; *Neither Circumcision nor Uncircumcision availeth any Thing.* It may seem that he should rather have said ; Either Circumcision or Uncircumcision availeth somewhat, seeing these are two contrary Things. But now he denieth that either the one or the other do any Thing avail. As if he should have said : Ye must mount up higher ; for Circumcision and Uncircumcision are Things of no such Importance, that they are able to obtain Righteousness before God. True it is that they are contrary the one to the other ; but this is nothing as touching Christian Righteousness, which is not earthly but heavenly, and therefore it consisteth not in corporal Things. Therefore, whether thou be circumcised or uncircumcised, it is all one Thing ; for in Christ Jesus neither the one or the other availeth any Thing at all.

The *Jews* were greatly offended when they heard that Circumcision availed nothing. They easily granted that Uncircumcision availed nothing ; but they could not abide to hear that so much should be said of Circumcision, for they fought even unto Blood for the Defence of the Law and Circumcision. The *Papists* also at this Day do vehemently contend for the Maintenance of their Traditions as touching the eating of Flesh, single Life, Holy Days and such other ; and they excommunicate and curse us which teach that in Christ Jesus these Things do nothing avail. But *Paul* saith that we must have another Thing which is much more excellent and precious, whereby we may obtain Righteousness before God. In Christ Jesus (saith he) neither Circumcision nor Uncircumcision, neither single Life, nor Marriage, neither Meat nor Fasting do any whit avail. Meat maketh us not acceptable before God. We are neither the better by abstaining, nor the worse by eating. All these Things, yea the whole World with all the Laws and Righteousness thereof avail nothing to Justification.

Reason and the Wisdom of the Flesh do not understand this ; For it perceiveth not those Things which are of the Spirit of God, 1 Cor. ii. 14. Therefore it will needs have Righteousness to stand in outward Things. But we are taught out of the Word of God, that there is nothing under

Without the Sun which availeth unto Righteousness before God, Christ there but Christ only, (or as *Paul* saith here) a new Creature is no Salvation. Politick Laws, Mens Traditions, Ceremonies of the Church, yea and the Law of *Moses*, are such Things as are without Christ; therefore they avail not unto Righteousness before God. We may use these Things both good and necessary, but in their Place and Time. But if we talk of the Matter of Justification, they avail nothing but hurt very much.

And by these two Things; Circumcision and Uncircumcision, *Paul* rejecteth all other Things whatsoever, and denieth that they avail any Thing in Christ Jesus, that is, in the Cause of Faith and Salvation.

For he taketh here a Part for the whole, that is, by Uncircumcision he understandeth all the *Gentiles*, by Circumcision all the *Jews*, with all their Force and all their Glory. As if he said; Whatsoever the *Gentiles* can do with all their Wisdom, Righteousness, Laws, Power, Kingdoms, Empires, it availeth nothing in Christ Jesus. Also whatsoever the *Jews* are able to do with their *Moses*, their Law, their Circumcision, their Worshippings, their Temple, their Kingdom and Priest-hood, it nothing availeth.

Wherefore in Christ Jesus or in the Matter of Justification, we must not dispute of the Laws either of the *Gentiles* or of the *Jews*, but we must simply pronounce that neither Circumcision nor Uncircumcision availeth any Thing.

Are the Laws then of no Effect? Not so. They be good and profitable; albeit in their Place and Time, that is, in corporal and civil Things, which without Laws cannot be guided. Moreover, we use also in the Churches certain Ceremonies and Laws; not that the keeping of them availeth unto Righteousness, but for good Order, Example Quietness and Concord, according to that Saying; *Let all Things be done decently, and in order*, 1 Cor. xiv. 40. But if the Laws be so set forth and urged as tho' the keeping of them did justify a Man, or the breaking thereof did condemn him, they ought to be taken away and to be abolished; for then Christ loseth his Office and his Glory, who only justifieth us, and giveth unto us the Holy Ghost. The Apostle therefore by these Words plainly affirmeth, that neither Circumcision nor Uncircumcision availeth any Thing, but the new Creature, &c. Now, since that neither the Laws of the *Gentiles* nor of the *Jews* avail any Thing, the Pope hath done most wickedly, in that he hath constrained Men to keep his Laws with the Opinion of Righteousness.

Now, a new Creature whereby the Image of God is renewed, is not made by any Colour or Counterfeiting of good Works, (for in Christ Jesus neither Circumcision availeth any Thing, nor Uncircumcision) but by Christ, by whom it is created after the Image of God, in Righteousness and true Holiness, *Ephes.* iv. 24. When Works are done, they bring indeed a new Shew and outward Appearance wherewith the World and the Flesh are delighted, but not a new Creature; for the Heart remaineth wicked as it was before, full of the Contempt of God and Infidelity.

Therefore

Therefore a new Creature is the Work of the Holy Ghost, which cleanseth our Heart by Faith, *Acts. xv. 9.* and worketh the Fear of God, Love, Chastity and other Christian Vertues, and giveth Power to bridle the Flesh, and to reject the Righteousness and Wisdom of the World. There is no Colouring or new outward Shew, but a Thing done indeed. There is created another Sense and another Judgment, that is to say, altogether spiritual; which abhorreth those Things that before it greatly esteemed. The *Monkish* Life and Order did so bewitch us in Time past; that we thought there was no other Way to Salvation. But now we judge of it far otherwise. We are now ashamed of those Things which we adorned as most heavenly and holy, before we were regenerate into this new Creature.

Wherefore the changing of Garments and other outward Things, is not a new Creature (as the *Monks* dream) but it is the renewing of the Mind by the Holy Ghost, after the which followeth a Change of the Members and Senses of the whole Body. For when the Heart hath conceived a new Light, a new Judgment, and new Motions thro' the Gospel, it cometh to pass that the outward Senses are also renewed; for the Ears desire to hear the Word of God and not the Traditions and Dreams of Men. The Mouth and Tongue do not vaunt of their own Works, Righteousness and Rules; but they set forth the Mercy of God only offered unto us in Christ. These Changes consist not in Words, but are effectual, and bring a new Spirit, new Will, new Senses and new Operations of the Flesh, so that the Eyes, Ears, Mouth and Tongue do not only see, hear and speak otherwise then they did before, but the Mind also approveth, loveth and followeth another Thing then it did before. For before being blinded with Popish Errors and Darknes, it imagined God to be a Merchant, who would sell unto us his Grace for our Works and Merits. But now in the Light of the Gospel it assureth us, that we are accounted righteous by Faith only in Christ. Therefore it now rejecteth all Will-works, and accomplisheth the Works of Charity and of our Vocation commanded by God. It praiseeth and magnifieth God; it rejoiceth and glorieth in the only Trust and Confidence of God's Mercy thro' Jesus Christ. If it must suffer any Trouble or Affliction, it endureth the same cheerfully and gladly, altho' the Flesh repine and grudge thereat. This *Paul* calleth a new Creature.

The renewing of the Members of the Body, follow the renewing of the Mind.

The Mouth and Tongue do not vaunt of their own Works, Righteousness and Rules; but they set forth the Mercy of God only offered unto us in Christ. These Changes consist not in Words, but are effectual, and bring a new Spirit, new Will, new Senses and new Operations of the Flesh, so that the Eyes, Ears, Mouth and Tongue do not only see, hear and speak otherwise then they did before, but the Mind also approveth, loveth and followeth another Thing then it did before. For before being blinded with Popish Errors and Darknes, it imagined God to be a Merchant, who would sell unto us his Grace for our Works and Merits. But now in the Light of the Gospel it assureth us, that we are accounted righteous by Faith only in Christ. Therefore it now rejecteth all Will-works, and accomplisheth the Works of Charity and of our Vocation commanded by God. It praiseeth and magnifieth God; it rejoiceth and glorieth in the only Trust and Confidence of God's Mercy thro' Jesus Christ. If it must suffer any Trouble or Affliction, it endureth the same cheerfully and gladly, altho' the Flesh repine and grudge thereat. This *Paul* calleth a new Creature.

Verse 16. *And as many as walk according to this Rule,  
Peace be on them, and Mercy,*

This he addeth as a Conclusion. This is the only and true Rule wherein we ought to walk, namely, the new Creature, which is neither Circumcision nor Uncircumcision, but the new Man created unto the

Image of God, in Righteousness and true Holiness, *Eph. iv. 24.* which inwardly is righteous in the Spirit, and outwardly is holy and clean in the Flesh. The *Monks* have a Righteousness and Holiness, but it is hypocritical and wicked, because they hope not to be justified by only Faith in Christ, but by the keeping of their Rule. Moreover, altho' outwardly they counterfeit a Holiness, and refrain their Eyes, Hands, Tongue and other Members from Evil; yet they have an unclean Heart, full of filthy Lust, Envy, Wrath, Lechery, Idolatry, Contempt and Hatred of God, Blasphemy against Christ, &c. for they are most spiteful and cruel Enemies of the Truth. Wherefore the Rule and Religion of the *Monks* is most wicked, and accursed of God.

But this Rule, whereof *Paul* speaketh in this Place, is blessed, by the which we live in the Faith of Christ, and are made new Creatures, that is to say, righteous and holy indeed by the Holy Ghost, without any colouring or counterfeiting. To them which walk after this Rule belongeth Peace, that is, the Favour of God, Forgiveness of Sin, Quietness of Conscience, and Mercy; that is to say, Help in Afflictions, and Pardon of the Remnants of Sin which remain in our Flesh. Yea, altho' they which walk after this Rule be overtaken with any Sin, yet for that they are the Children of Grace and Peace, Mercy upholdeth them, so that their Sin and Fall shall not be laid to their Charge.

### Verse 16. *And upon the Israel of God.*

Here he toucheth the false Apostles and *Jews*, which gloried of their Fathers, bragged that they were the People of God, that they had the Law, &c. As if he said; They are the *Israel* of God, which with faithful *Abraham* believe the Promises of God offered already in Christ, whether they be *Jews* or *Gentiles*, and not they which are begotten of *Abraham*, *Isaac* and *Jacob*, after the Flesh. This Matter is largely handled before in the *third* Chapter.

### Verse 17. *From henceforth let no Man trouble me,*

He concludeth his Epistle with a certain Indignation. As if he said; I have faithfully taught the Gospel as I have received it by the Revelation of Jesus Christ; who so will not follow it, let him follow what he will, so that hereafter he trouble me no more. At a word, this is my Censure, that Christ which I have preached is the only High Priest and Saviour of the World. Therefore either let the World walk according to this Rule, of which I have spoken here and throughout all this Epistle, or else let it perish for ever.

### Verse 17. *For I bear in my Body the Marks of the Lord Jesus.*

This is the true Meaning of this Place; The Marks that be in my Body

Body do shew well enough whose Servant I am. If I sought to please Men, requiring Circumcision and the keeping of the Law as necessary to Salvation, and rejoicing in your Flesh as the false Apostles do, I need not to bear these Marks in my Body. But because I am the Servant of Jesus Christ, and walk after a true Rule, that is, I openly teach and confess that no Man can obtain the Favour of God, Righteousness and Salvation but by Christ alone, therefore it becometh me to bear the Badges of Christ my Lord; which be not Marks of mine own procuring, but are laid upon me against my Will by the World and the Devil, for none other Cause, but for that I preach Jesus to be Christ.

The Stripes and Sufferings therefore which he did bear in his Body, he calleth Marks; as also the Anguish and Terror of Spirit, he calleth the fiery Darts of the Devil. Of these Sufferings he maketh Mention every where in his Epistles: As Luke also doth in the Acts. *I think (saith he) that God hath set forth us the Apostles last, as it were appointed to Death. For we are made a Spectacle unto the World, and to Angels, and to Men, 1 Cor. iv. 9. Again, Unto this present Hour we both hunger and thirst, and are naked, and are buffeted, and have no certain dwelling Place. And labour, working with our own Hands: We are reviled, we are persecuted, we are defamed, we are made as the Filth of the World, the off-scouring of all Things unto this Day, 1 Cor. iv. 11, 12, 13. Also in another Place. In much Patience, in Afflictions, in Necessities, in Distresses, in Stripes, in Imprisonments, in Tumults, in Labours, in Watchings, in Fastings, &c. 2 Cor. vi. 4, 5, 6. And again, In Labours more abundant, in Stripes above Measure, in Prisons more frequent, in Deaths oft. Of the Jews five Times received I forty Stripes save one. Thrice was I beaten with Rods, once was I stoned, thrice I suffered Shipwreck: Night and a Day I have been in the Deep: In journeying often, in Perils of Waters, in Perils of Robbers, in Perils by mine own Country men, in Perils by the Heathen, in Perils in the City, in Perils in the Wilderness, in Perils in the Sea, in Perils among false Brethren, &c. 2 Cor. xi. 23, 24, 25, 26.*

These be the true Marks and imprinted Signs, of which the Apostle speaketh in this Place; the which we also at this Day by the Grace of God bear in our Bodies for Christ's Cause. For the World persecuteth and killeth us, false Brethren deadly hate us, Satan inwardly in our Heart with his fiery Darts terrifieth us, and for none other Cause, but for that we teach Christ to be our Righteousness and Life. These Marks we choose not of any Devotion, neither do we gladly suffer them; but because the World and the Devil do lay them upon us for Christ's Cause, we are compelled to suffer them, and we rejoice in Spirit with Paul (which is always willing, glorieth and rejoiceth) that we bear them in our Body; for they are a Seal and most sure Testimony of true Doctrine and Faith. These Things Paul spake (as I shewed afore) with a certain Displeasure and Indignation.

*Versè 18. Brethren, the Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ  
be with your Spirit. Amen.*

This is his last Farewel. He endeth the Epistle with the same Words wherewith he began. As if he said; I have taught you Christ purely. I have intreated you, I have chidden you, and I have let pass nothing which I thought profitable for you. I can say no more, but that I heartily pray that our Lord Jesus Christ would bless and increase my Labour, and govern you with his Holy Spirit for ever.

Thus have ye the Exposition of *Paul's Epistle to the Galatians*. The Lord Jesus Christ; our Justifier and Saviour, who gave unto me the Grace and Power to expound this Epistle, and to you likewise to hear it, preserve and stablish both you and me (which I most heartily desire) that we daily growing more and more in the Knowledge of his Grace and Faith unfeigned, may be found unblameable and without Fault in the Day of our Redemption. To whom with the Father and the Holy Ghost, be glory World without End. *Amen.*

*1 TIMOTHY i. 17.*

*Unto the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only wise  
G O D, be Honour and Glory for ever,  
and ever. Amen.*

**F I N I S.**





A

# S E R M O N;

Wherein is taught that we are saved freely by Grace,  
without Works and Merits of Men,

By Mr. MARTIN LUTHER

TITUS iii.

Ver. 4. But after that the Kindness and Love of God our Saviour toward Man appeared,

Ver. 5. Not by Works of Righteousness, which we have done, but according to his Mercy he saved us by the washing of Regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost:

Ver. 6. Which he shed on us abundantly, thro' Jesus Christ our Saviour.

Ver. 7. That being justified by his Grace, we should be made Heirs, according to the Hope of eternal Life.



**P**AUL having willed before that all should be put in Mind to be obedient to such as be in Authority, and ready to every good Work, to speak evil of no Man, to be no Fighters, but gentle, shewing all Meekness unto all Men, &c. these few Words being put between, that we ourselves were in Times past unwise, disobedient, deceived, serving divers Lusts and Voluptuousness, &c. he added those Words which we have already mentioned. As if he should say; Wherefore should it grieve us to deserve so well of all Men, when as God hath before dealt so bountifully, kindly and gently with us, with whom without Comparisen, we are less, and have less of him deserved, then any being compared to us can be, or can deserve of us? As therefore God hath with exceeding Bountifulness and Kindness most gently  
H h 4 behaved

behaved himself toward us, of his Mercy granting and giving unto us all Things : So ought we to do all Things with all Charity and Good-will toward our Neighbours, albeit they have otherwise deserved, forasmuch as we were like unto them, subject to all Sins and evil Desires. Here we see how the Apostle will have us to be affected towards Men : He will have us subject to them that be in Authority, kind unto others, and ready to do well unto them with all Gentleness, altho' they be evil, blind, and in Error, that we grudge not to bear these Things, and as much as lyeth in us, endeavour to do them good, taking all Things in good Part, considering that God hath so dealt with us, when we were evil and wicked, like unto them.

This Word, *appeared*, we have elsewhere declared to signify the Revelation of the Gospel, whereby Christ appeared in the World, *Tit. ii. 11.* Albeit the Unskilfulness of Ministers hath wrested it to the carnal Nativity of Christ. He useth not here the Word *Grace*, which he useth before, but hath set instead thereof two other Words, of marvellous Comfort, [*Kindness, and Love toward Men*] which he attributeth to our God. The first is called of the *Grecians Chrestotes*, and is that Kindness, Gentleness and Sweetness of Conditions, wherewith they that be endued, with them all of us are with Pleasure conversant, and marvellously delighted with their Company, so that they do with this their Gentleness and Kindness allure, and greatly provoke all Men to love them : For such can suffer all without Grief ; they condemn no Man ; they repel or put none from them with bitter, hard, and disordered Conditions ; Access unto them is not hard, but they are so open, and ready for all, that every one dare resort unto them, and desire their Help. And to conclude, they are such Men as the Gospels describe Christ unto us, whom they declare to be gentle to all, a Despiser of none, which denieth no Benefit to any, pliant, prepared and ready to do good to all. So God also by the Gospel is preached and offered unto us wholly good, bountiful and Sweet, open to all, rejecting none, bearing all our Sins and Offences, repelling no Man from him with excessive Severity. For we read and hear nothing to be declared in the Gospel but mere Grace, and mere Goodness, whereby he doth most mercifully bear us, and most gently handle us, and not any Man according to his Deserts. This is the Time of Grace, wherein it is granted to all to go with great Boldness unto the Throne of Grace, as it is written *Heb. iv. 16.* and *Psal. xxxiv. 5.* *They looked unto him, and were lightened : And their Faces were not ashamed,* that is, he will not suffer you to pray and come in vain, neither to return with Confusion being frustrate.

The other Word is *Philanthropia*, Love of Men, as Covetousness may be called Love of Money, as *David 2 Sam. i. 26.* calleth the Desire of Women, the Love of Women. And the Philosophers call certain living Creatures *Philanthropa*, that is, loving toward Men, as are Horses, Dogs, Dolphins. For these Creatures are by Nature delighted with Man, they desire his Company, and do willingly serve him, as tho' they were moved with some Reason and Sense of Humanity. This Name, and such Love the Apostle here attributeth to our God, which

Moses also did before him, *Deut. xxxiii. 2, 3.* where he speaketh thus of God: *The Lord appeared having in his Right-hand a Law of Fire, and loved the People.* The Meaning therefore of the Apostle is this; Our God hath in the Gospel shewed himself unto us, not only bountiful, kind, gentle and sweet, which can bear, and will receive all; but also he sheweth us, that of his own Accord he adjoineth himself unto us, seeketh to have to do with us, voluntarily sheweth and offereth his Grace and Kindness unto us, and most gently embraceth as many as only do not refuse his Grace and Love, and desire to draw nigh unto him. What should he do more? Who cannot see hereby, why we count the Gospel a Preaching, joyful and full of all Consolation of God in Christ? For what can be spoken more lovingly and sweetly to a sinful and afflicted Conscience, then these Words? O lamentable Case, How miserably hath Satan by the Laws of his Pope oppressed and obscured this sovereign Sincerity of the Word of God.

Now let no Man restrain these two Words [*Kindness, and Love toward Men*] to the Persons, for God is plainly without Respect of Persons bountiful to all, and a Lover of all, otherwise if we should here make a Difference between Men, we should acknowledge that something is received thro' our Merits, and not all Things thro' his Mercy. Where it must be well marked, that God is said to be a Lover of Men, not of this or that Nature only, not held with Love of the Person, and therefore these two, *Kindness and Love toward Men*, must be taken after a general Sort, that in all Things the chief Praise may be attributed to his Mercy, that no Man trust in his own Merits, neither be terrified with Sins, but that altogether do trust to his Grace, which he voluntarily offereth unto us with so great Kindness and Love toward us. For if any Respect of Person might be had here, it should surely be had of them, which are rich in the Works of Righteousness, but *Paul* expressly rejecteth these, saying; *Not by Works of Righteousness, which we have done.* How much less then shall this Kindness and Love of our God toward Men appear because of any Man's Wisdom, Power, Nobility, Riches or any such Thing, whereas no Respect is had of Works of Righteousness? Great is the Grace of God toward us which appeareth in the Gospel, yea and nothing but Grace, which admitteth no Merit at all of ours, utterly taketh away all boasting and glorying, and setteth forth the Glory of God alone, who freely giveth it unto us being unworthy. So in this Text these two, Faith and Love, are taught to receive Benefits of God, and bestow them on our Neighbours, which the Scripture doth very often repeat, so that even the Doctrine of Salvation consisteth wholly in them, neither can one be separated from the other. For he that doth not firmly trust in the divine Grace, cannot but be remiss and slow to do well to his Neighbour, and so witness the Faintness and Weakness of Faith, which is the Fountain of all Duties and Benefits. As contrariwise, the stronger Faith that one is endued with, so much more dutifully and with readier Mind he endeavoureth to deserve well of his Neighbours.

All both Doctrine and Life worthy of Christ, (that all Things may be declared most briefly, manifestly and sufficiently) consist of these two, Faith and Love; whereby Man is made as it were a Mean between God and his Neighbour, that he may receive of God from above, and may give to his Neighbours beneath, and be as it were a conduit Pipe, thro' which the Fountain of the divine Goodness doth continually flow to his Neighbours. And such Men are like unto God, which in Christ receive of God whatsoever he hath, and do again by their good Deeds declare themselves as it were the gods of other, and fulfil the Prophecy of the Prophet, *Psal. lxxxii. 6. I have said, ye are gods: And all of you are Children of the most High.* We are Children of the most High by Faith, whereby of nothing we are made the Heirs of God. And we are gods by Love, which maketh us beneficial to our Neighbour; forasmuch as the Nature of God is nothing but Kindness, and *Paul* here saith; The Kindness and Love of God toward Men, which he doth with incomparable Plenty, daily pour forth upon every one, as we see. We must only endeavour, that every one do nothing doubt that these Things are spoken to him, that the Kindness and Love of God to Man-ward is revealed and offered to every one, that by these Words he may establish, exercise and strengthen his Faith, being certain that they are most true, and that God both undoubtedly is, and always will be bountiful and loving toward him. If thou canst believe this, it will assuredly so come unto thee; thou mayest then with a full Confidence pray and desire of him whatsoever thou wilt, and complain unto him of whatsoever doth grieve thee or other. But if thou want this Faith, it had been better for thee never to have heard any Thing hereof, for that by thy Infidelity thou reprovest of Falseness these Words so precious and full of Consolation and Grace, making so light Account of them, as not believing that they be true. Which surely is a great Contempt and Dishonour of God, that scarce a more grievous Sin can be committed of thee. Contrariwise, if thou be endued with this Faith, it cannot be, but that thy Heart being thereby cheered, should even as it were laugh and leap for holy Joy in God, being void of all Care and Trouble, and be made above Measure confident. For how can any Discouragement, any Whit of Sorrow remain in that Heart which doubteth not that God is gracious and bountiful unto it, and beareth a singular Affection of Love toward it, that it is a Delight and Pleasure unto him to do it good, and enjoy it as a Friend? Surely the Heart is necessarily delighted with this Spiritual Joy and Pleasure, or undoubtedly it wanteth Faith. *Paul* in the Epistle to the *Galatians* calleth this, to receive the Holy Ghost by the Gospel. For the Gospel is so pleasant a Preaching of the Grace and Goodness of God, that while it is preached and heard, it bringeth the Holy Ghost with it, no otherwise then the Beams of the Sun do naturally bring Heat with them.

How could the Apostle use more pleasant and sweet Words? I dare say that I have in the whole Scripture read none more pleasant, and so sweet Words of the Grace of God, as these two, *Christotes* and *Philanthropia*, that is, *Kindness and Love toward Men*, in which the Grace of

God is so described, as whereby he doth not only forgive our Sins, but doth also desire to be conversant with us, and is ready to do the Part of every Friend toward us, voluntarily offering himself to help us in all Things, also to bestow more Benefits upon us then we can desire or ask, that we may presume of him no otherwise then of a most near and familiar Friend, of whom we may obtain all Things, in whose Eyes we are most dear, and even delightful. Think in thy Mind of a most perfect Friend, which hath fulfilled all the Parts of Friendship toward thee, and thou shalt have after a Sort a Form, altho' yet far unlike, of the divine Goodness and Kindness, which is here attributed to our God, by the Name of Kindness and Love toward Men. But when thou hast a sound Faith in this Kindness and Love to Man-ward, and thereby dost live in thy God, so bountiful, gracious and gentle to thee, rejoicest, and art full of all good Things, being certain of his continual Grace, What shouldst thou do any longer in Earth? What in this Life?

Thou canst not in this Case be idle, as surely that Love of God and Pleasure which thou enjoyest in him will not suffer thee to be idle. Thou shalt be enflamed with a marvellous Study and Desire to do what Things soever thou canst know will be an Honour unto thy God, so loving and bountiful unto thee, and will turn to Praise, Glory and Thanksgiving unto him. Thou shalt have no Choice of Works, thou shalt pass for no Precept, thou shalt feel no Compulsion of the Law, having a most ready Will and Pleasure to do, whatsoever Things thou shalt know to be acceptable unto God, whether they be contemptible or noble, small or great, thou shalt count them alike. But first of all, it shall be thy Desire, that this blessed Knowledge of God may be common also to the rest, whereupon by and by thy Love will here shew itself, and will essay all Means, to make this Truth of Salvation manifest unto all, it will publish and repeat it, wheresoever it shall be able, receiving and condemning whatsoever other either teach or say, that agreeth not with this Truth. Whereby it will come to pass, that Satan and the World, which hear nothing so unwillingly as this Truth, and cannot abide that their Things should be condemned, will rise against thee with all their Might, will by and by trouble thee, all the great, learned, rich and mighty of the World will condemn thee of Heresy and Madness, and will leave no Mean unattempted until if they be able they have dispatched thee of thy Life. Thus with Christ thy Lord thou shalt be persecuted, and suffer extreme Ignominy, thy Body, Life, Goods, Name, Friends and all Things, being brought into Peril, until they have thrust thee from them out of this Life into the eternal and blessed Life: In the mean Season thou must suffer all these Things with a patient Mind, and take them in good Part, losing none of the spiritual Joy, which thou hast of Christ in thy God, and for thy Part shewing to thy Persecutors all Kindness and Love, being always mindful that thou a little before was not much unlike them before God. All which Things thou shalt do thro' Faith and Love, albeit they exceed the Strength of Nature. And this indeed is a true Christian Life, wherein thou dost endeavour to do so to other, as God hath done to thee.

*Not by Works of Righteousness, which we have done.* In these Words the Apostle signifieth that which we have now said, and proveth it as it were by rendering a Reason. For if the Kindness and Love of God to Man-ward hath appeared, and he hath saved us of his Mercy, and not because of our own Righteousness, yea we being by all Means unworthy, and subject to innumerable Sins, it is meet that we also do good to them that have not deserved so much of us, and are unworthy thereof. For we which are become the Sons of God, must resemble God our Father, and bestow Benefits according to our Ability as well upon our Enemies and Persecutors, as upon our Friends and them that do good unto us. Whereof Christ also hath admonished us, *Matth. v. 44, 45, 46. Love your Enemies, that ye may be the Children of your Father which is in Heaven: Who maketh his Sun to rise on the evil, and on the good: And sendeth Rain on the just, and on the unjust. For if ye love them which love you, What Reward have ye? Do not even the Publicans the same?* Now the Apostle doth not only expressly condemn us for evil Works, but saith; *Not by Works of Righteousness, or, which we have done in Righteousness.* Where he also rejecteth those Works which we counted righteous, and were thought both of us and others to have been done in Righteousness, when as they were so far from being righteous, that they made us more unworthy of the Grace of God, and more unfit to receive it, for they are deceitful Works, whereunto we add this Sin, that we think them righteous; and trust in them, whereby God is provoked to Anger more then can be said, even as our Enemies are wont to move us to Anger, when as they will avouch those Things to be just, wherein they sin and do unjustly. But even as God, when we being unwise, by Error moved him to Anger, counting our Sins Works of Righteousness, did not therefore reject us, but of his mere Mercy delivered us from this Error and Sin; so we neglecting the Foolishness and Dotage of our Adversaries, whereby they contend that Sins are to be counted for Righteousness, ought nevertheless of mere Love, having no Respect of evil or good Deserts, to be beneficial unto them, and endeavour to do them good in all Things, looking for Fruit of our Benefits not of them, but of God alone. Let these Things suffice to have been spoken for a compendious and general Exposition of this Text.

Now let us also briefly weigh the Words, wherein he setteth forth and commendeth the Grace of God. *First*, He so greatly extolleth it, that in respect of it he condemneth all our good Works and Righteousness; neither doth he condemn a small Thing, when he condemneth our Righteousness or righteous Works, the most excellent Thing that Man can have in Earth. For if all Men with all their Might should labour and endeavour to attain to most exact Prudence, Wisdom and Liberty of Mind and Will, which we read that some Philosophers and Princes have done, as *Socrates, Traianus* and many other, whose Fame the whole World hath long since spread abroad both by Words and Writings; nevertheless all such Wisdom, and all such Vertues are nothing but Sins before God, forasmuch as they be not done in and by the Grace of God. Poets of such Vertues are ignorant of God, and therefore they cannot honour

honour him by their Studies and Endeavours, they think they have all Things of themselves, when as no Man can have any good Thing at all, but of this Grace alone, which the Gospel preacheth. So *Paul* gloryeth, that he, before he knew Christ, lived a blameless Life, and was more zealous toward the Law then those of his Age, that he also thought, that he did a Thing acceptable to God by persecuting the Christians, which condemned that blameless Life which he led, but afterward when he had learned Christ, he saith, that he counteth that Righteousness to be but Dung, that he might be found not in such Righteousness, but in Christ by Faith, *Phil. iii. 9.* The same Thing he witnesseth and entreateth of at large in the Epistles to the *Galatians* and *Colossians*. Here therefore is condemned all boasting of Free-will, Man's Strength, Righteousness and good Works, and it is concluded, that they are all nothing but Sins, and certain Destruction, altho' they have a fair Shew; that they are saved by the only Grace of God, as many of us as believe, and call for it, with acknowledging of our own Vanity and Perdition.

Now we must accustom ourselves to the Scripture, which maketh Mention of two Sorts of Righteousness, one humane, which *Paul* here and in many other Places hath mentioned, the other divine, even that Grace of Salvation, which justifieth us by Faith, whereof he speaketh in the End of this Text; *That being justified by his Grace, we should be Heirs of eternal Life.* Here thou seest plainly that the Grace of God is our true Righteousness, whereby we are justified, which is therefore called the Righteousness of God, for that it is given unto us of God, and is made ours, when we are made Partakers thereof by Faith. Of this he speaketh also, *Rom. i. 17.* *In the Gospel is revealed the Righteousness of God from Faith to Faith: As it is written, The Just shall live by Faith.* And *Gen. xv. 6.* *Abraham believed, and it was counted to him for Righteousness.* Whereupon the Scripture concludeth, that no Man is counted righteous before God, but he that believeth, as the Apostle testifieth, where he reciteth that Saying of *Habakkuk*, *The Just shall live by Faith.* So it appeareth that Faith, Grace, Mercy, Truth, Righteousness, that all these are that same which God worketh in us by Christ and the Gospel. Whereupon it is said *Psal. xxv. 10.* *All the Paths of the Lord are Mercy and Truth.* For those are the Ways of the Lord in which we observing his Commandments, do walk, and he again in us, now those Ways most be directed by his Mercy and Truth alone, not by our Strength and Industry, forasmuch as our Ways being ordered hereby, are nothing but Vanity before God, and do deserve his Wrath. According to that which the Lord saith, *Isa. lv. 9.* *As the Heavens are higher than the Earth, so are my Ways higher than your Ways.* As if he should say; Your Righteousness is earthly and of no Value, wherefore ye must bid it farewell and walk in mine, if ye hope for Salvation.

But according to his Mercy he saved us. It is a marvel how the Credit of these Words can stand, wherein the Apostle affirmeth that we are already saved, altho' living yet in Earth, and therefore in continual misery. But he did so speak, that he might more fully express the Power of the divine Grace, and the Nature of Faith against Hypocrites,

tho' Salvation were yet far off, do in vain endeavour to get and obtain it by their Works. For Christ hath already saved us; he hath performed all Things which are required hereunto, that we may be saved; he hath overcome and subdued Sin, Death, Hell, &c. so that he hath left nothing, for any Man to care for, he hath also given all these Things unto us in Baptism, that whosoever believeth in Christ, that he hath performed them, hath them together in the same Moment, so that he hath Need of nothing more unto Salvation, but Faith alone, that he may firmly believe that these Things are so performed. But mark how incomparable Riches of his Grace God hath poured upon us in Baptism, who hath delivered us even from those Works, whereby those foolish holy ones go about to merit Heaven, and to be saved. For we must have Heaven, and be saved before we can do any good Works, for that Works cannot merit Heaven, but Heaven being before given of mere Grace, causeth us to do good Works, and that for no Hope of Merit or Reward, but only to the Commodity of our Neighbours, and the Glory of God, until this Body also be delivered from Sin and Death.

Wherefore all the Life of a Christian after Baptism is nothing else, but an Expectation of Salvation and Felicity to be revealed, which they that believe in Christ do now possess, altho' hidden. They have all Things now certainly, but they are yet hid in Faith, which when as it is changed, Knowledge being revealed, all Things as they now have them, shall appear, which shall come to pass, when pleasant and wished Death cometh, according to that Saying of *John*; *Beloved, now are we the Sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be: But we know, that when he shall appear, we shall be like him. And every Man that hath this Hope in him, purifieth himself, even as he is pure.* 1 *John* iii. 2, 3. Wherefore suffer not thyself to be deceived, and to be seduced from this Truth by those Hypocrites, which contemning Faith, do falsely affirm that Salvation is far from thee, and teach thee to endeavour in vain to attain unto it by thy Works. It is in thyself, if thou believe that all Things are performed by Christ, even as he himself witnesseth; *The Kingdom of God is within you*, *Luke* xvii. 21. So that all our Life after Baptism ought to be nothing else but an Expectation that that should be revealed which is already in us, and that we may comprehend, as we are comprehended, as *Paul* saith, *Phil.* iii. 12. *I follow after, if that I may apprehend that for which also I am apprehended of Christ Jesus*, that is, that I may at length see those Things which are given me, being as yet in the shut Closet of Faith. He coveteth, and burneth with Desire to see the Treasure which by Faith he received both given and sealed in Baptism. Whereupon he addeth in the same Place; *Our Conversation is in Heaven, from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ: Who shall change our vile Body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious Body.* Herewith also agreeth that which he saith, *Gal.* iv. 9. *Ye have known God*, and by and by he doth as it were correct that which he had said, *Ye have known God*, rather *are known of God*, both which are true, altho' not after the like Sort: We are now known of God, so that he comprehendeth us, and we indeed know God, but we do not yet com-

prehend, for that our Knowledge is as yet hidden and closed up in Faith. He saith moreover, *Rom. viii. 24. We are saved by Hope*, that is, we are saved, altho' we yet see it not, for that which one seeth, he hopeth not for, but if we hope for those Things which we see not, we do with Patience abide for them. Christ confirmeth this, *Luke xii. 35, 36. Let your Loins be girded about, and your Light burning; and ye yourselves like unto Men that wait for their Lord, when he will return from the Wedding, that when he cometh and knocketh, they may open unto him immediately.* In which Words he only biddeth them that be his to be ready to look for him the Bridegroom, as which are already saved being admitted into the Number of his Ministers. Hereunto also pertaineth that which the Apostle saith, *Tit. ii. 12, 13. Let us live soberly, righteously, and godly in this present World; looking for that blessed Hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God, and our Saviour Jesus Christ.* In these and such like Places whereof thou mayest read many here and there in the holy Scriptures, he witnesseth that we are already saved, and that it doth not behove, that a Christian Man should first seek to attain to Salvation by his Works. This Opinion and devilish Doctrine blindeth the Eyes of Christians, extinguisheth the Knowledge of Faith, and carrieth Men from the Way of Truth and Salvation. We must cleave unto that which the Apostle here saith, *He hath saved us according to his Mercy*, and that which he addeth in the End of this Text, *that we are Heirs, according to the Hope of eternal Life.* We are now Heirs, but that is hidden in Faith, but we look with a certain Hope, that hereafter it shall be revealed. And God will have us so to look for the Revelation of this Inheritance, and to live a certain Time after Baptism, that he may chastise our Body by our Ministry, and declare the Power of his Grace in fight against the Flesh, the World and the Devil, but especially for this Cause, that by us he may help our Neighbours, and both by Doctrine, and also by our Life which he liveth in us, may bring them to the Communion of Faith. And albeit he can do this by Angels, yet it pleaseth him rather that it should be done by us Men, that both the Manner of Faith may be the better known, and that all Things may be done sweetly and lovingly. For if Angels should always have to do with us, there should not be so much Faith, neither should it be so pleasant, as when we are taught and guided by them that are Partakers of our Nature, whom we do better know, and with whom we do more familiarly associate ourselves. And so, that there may be some, by whom other also may be converted both by Doctrine, and good Examples, it is not meet that we should by and by after Baptism be taken into Heaven, wherein notwithstanding we are already admitted Citizens.

Hereupon if one weigh all Things rightly, it cannot be doubted, that it is a Practice and Miracle of Satan and *Antichrist*, that so much is spent for Purgatories Sake, such Faith as this being put quite out of Mens Minds. For Men are taught by their Works to save themselves from Purgatory, or at the least to deliver themselves out from thence, as tho' Salvation were not yet given us, and it were necessary to come unto it by other Means then by Faith alone, which how it disagreeeth with the

Scripture and a Christian Life, there is no Man that doth not see, but he that seeth nothing in the Scripture. For thus the holy Scripture do teach every where, that whosoever doth not receive Salvation by mere Grace, thro' Faith before all Works, he shall never be Partaker thereof. And that whosoever refer their good Works, not to the Profit of their Neighbours, but to their own Commodity, being more careful of their own Salvation then of their Neighbours, have no good Works at all. All the Works of these are void of Faith, and infected with pernicious Error. It had been greatly to be wished that Purgatory had never been invented, and never Mention made thereof in the Pulpit, for it hath been such Cause of Hindrance to Christian Verity and sincere Truth, as cannot be recovered. For we see it now brought to pass by the Means of Satan, that almost all Prayers are directed to only Purgatory, with this ungodly and pestilent Opinion, whereby miserable Men think that they shall be redeemed from thence, and obtain Salvation by the Works of Men. Whereby the Riches of Baptism and Faith are had in no Reputation, and they at the last of Christians become *Heathen*. O most pernicious Abomination! Christians should be taught as Christ and *Paul* teach them, that after Baptism and Absolution from Sin they should so live, that they should be ready every Hour to receive Death, with Desire looking for the Revelation of Salvation already received. Now by the Opinion of Purgatory they are made secure and slothful, so that they defer the Study of Godliness even to their Death, and think by Contrition and Confession they shall amend all Things, as tho' there were some Sins remaining for which they must go into Purgatory, they hope that by Masses for the departed, and other Bequests that they are perswaded to make in their Testaments or Last-Wills, they shall be redeemed out of Purgatory, but these miserable Men are in these Things utterly deceived, and shall at length try them to be far otherwise.

*By the Washing of Regeneration.* He setteth forth the Grace of God given to us in Baptism, with Words very full of Praise and Commendation. He calleth Baptism a Washing, whereby not the Feet and Hands, but the whole Man is at once washed, purified and saved, so that to the Sum and Inheritance of Salvation there is Need of nothing but only Faith in this Grace of God, that it may remain and be acknowledged the Work of Grace alone, that we are saved without all our Works and Merits, and so also there may remain in us pure Love, Praise, giving of Thanks, and Glory of the divine Mercy, without all Glory, and pleasing of ourselves in our own Strength and Endeavour, as it hath been already said often and at large. Humane Righteousness is also a Washing, but not whereby the whole Man is so washed, but that Pharisaical Washing, whereby only the Apparel and Vessels which are outward, are made clean, whetcof it is spoken, *Matth. xxiii. 26*. Whereby it cometh to pass that Men seem unto themselves pure, but inwardly nevertheless they remain full of Filthiness. Therefore he called Baptism not a corporal or outward Washing, but the Washing of Regeneration or new Birth, by which not those Things that are outward, are washed, and only the outward Man made clean, but the whole Nature of Man is at-

tered and changed into an other Nature, that is, the carnal Nativity is thereby destroyed, with all the Inheritance of Sins and Perdition. Whereby he again witnesseth, that our Salvation is given us at once; so that it is not to be gotten by Works. For not one or two Members are wont to be born, as the Hands or Feet, but the whole Man, which cannot work this that he may be born a Man, but is first born that he may work: Likewise our Works do not purify or save us, but when as before we are pure, justified and saved, we work freely those Things which may be Profit to our Neighbour, and Honour to God: And this is the simple and pure Knowledge of the divine Grace, whereby a Man learneth to know both God and himself, to praise God alone, to humble and cast down himself, to trust in God, to despair of himself. This Doctrine of Salvation they marvellously hinder, which urge Men with Laws, Precepts and Works, and teach them to seek thereby to be saved.

*And the renewing,* That this washing and new Birth may be more fully understood, he hath added, *the renewing*, that thou mayst understand, that he that is truly baptized, is become a new Man, and a new Creature, endued with a new Disposition, which now is far otherwise affected, loveth, liveth, speaketh and doth far otherwise then he was wont or could before. So the Apostle saith, *Gal. vi. 15. In Christ Jesus neither Circumcision availed any Thing, nor Uncircumcision*, that is, no Works of the Law are of any Value or Importance, *but a new Creature*. As if he should say; Salvation cannot be perfected by joining together certain good Works, but the whole Man must be at once renewed, and his Nature changed, whereupon true good Works will follow of themselves, not by Piece-meale, but together with great Plenty. Of this new Birth, whereby the whole Man is renewed, Christ speaketh *John iii. 3. He that is not born again, cannot see the Kingdom of God*. Here again it manifestly appeareth, that nothing is here done by our Works, but that it behoveth, that Man, how great soever he be, must die, and be changed into another, which is done in Baptism, if we believe. The condemned also shall be born again in the Last Day, but they shall not be renewed, they shall remain unclean, as they were here, and as they were born of *Adam*. Therefore that he might speak rightly of Baptism, he calleth it the Washing of the new Birth, whereby they that are born again are also renewed. Of this new Birth many Things are to be found here and there in the Scripture, because of which God calleth his Word and Gospel a Womb and Matrix, as *Isa. xlii. 3. Hearken all ye that remain of the House of Israel, whom I have born in my Womb, as Mothers are wont to speak of their Children*. He therefore that believeth the Gospel, is as it were conceived in the Womb of God, and from thence born a new Man, and like unto God: Whereof we will in another Place speak more. Now it shall be sufficient, to have learned by these Words, how our Works are nothing in fulfilling the Commandments of God, and that it is a mad Thing to attribute here never so little to our own Strength, seeing that it is Faith alone, whereby Man is at once born again, and renewed. Wherefore understand this, that good

Works must follow a new Creature, but to attain unto Righteousness, and that new Creature they are able to help nothing at all.

No otherwise is the Grace of God wont to renew Man, then as if God should turn some dry and withered Block into a new, green and flourishing Tree, which may afterward bring forth Fruit plentifully. For the Grace of God is a great, strong, very mighty, and marvellous, effectual Thing, it lieth not in the Mind, as the School men dreamed, it sleepeth not, or is born, as a painted Table beareth a Picture; itself beareth, guideth, urgeth, draweth, changeth and worketh all Things in Men, so that every one may feel and have Experience of it: Itself indeed is hid, but the Works of it cannot be hid, but do witness of it, as the Leaves and Fruits do of the Tree, of what Nature it is. Wherefore the Schoolmen *Thomas* and *Scotus* do ungodly detract from it, who attribute no more unto it, then that it doth adorn the Works of Nature, and is a Help that they be brought to Perfection. For it doth not adorn or help only, but it alone worketh those Things that be good, neither doth it work them only, but doth rather change and renew the Person. For it exhibiteth the Washing of the new Birth, and of renewing, not of Works only, but much rather of the whole Man. He that shall preach these Things of Grace, shall truly and fully commend it; which *Paul* endeavoured to do when he said; *He hath saved us by the Washing of Regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost*. Nothing can be done here by joining of Works together, the Nature must needs be changed, whereupon it cometh to pass, that they that Truly believe must suffer many Things; for Grace worketh in them, and declareth itself present. Hereupon pertaineth that Saying of *Psal. cxii. 2. The Works of the Lord are great: sought out of all them that have Pleasure therein*. What are these Works? We are they, by Grace in Baptism made the great, new and regenerate Works of God. Is it not a great Thing for a Man by and by to be saved, and delivered from Sins, Death and Hell? Therefore he saith *sought out of all them that have Pleasure therein*. For by this new Birth God hath found out, and done whatsoever Men can desire, For what else do Men covet and desire, but to obtain Salvation, to be delivered from Sin, Death and Hell?

*Of the Holy Ghost*. Lastly, That he may the more express the Greatness and Virtue of Grace, he attributeth this Washing of Regeneration, and renewing, to the Holy Ghost. For this Washing, is so great, and of so weighty Importance, that no Creature but the Holy Ghost alone is able to perform it. But how much, most excellent *Paul*, dost thou condemn Free-will, the great good Works of the proud holy Ones, that is, the Merits of Hypocrites? In how high a Place dost thou set our Salvation? And again, How dost thou bring it down to us, and placest it near us, yea even within us? How purely and sincerely dost thou set forth Grace in these Words? Wherefore work whatsoever and how much soever thou wilt, it is impossible for a Man to be renewed, and the Person changed (without which no Works acceptable to God can be done) but by the Washing of Regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost. That we may plainly see in those hypocritical Counterfeiters of Works.

For thou shalt find none harder, none prouder, none so rash and hasty Spirits. For they are broken, and not renewed, indurate, obstinate, confirmed by Continuance, covering indeed, and somewhat adorning that old Adam by those their counterfeit good Works, but in the mean Season there doth not any whit appear any Change of Nature in them, they continue still in the Oldness of their corrupt Flesh. O what a pestilent People is this, and in how great Indignation of God are they, when as in the mean Time they think that they sit in God's Lap? Now whereas the Apostle attributeth this Washing of Regeneration, and renewing to the Holy Ghost, he saith the same which Christ doth *John iii. 5.* where he saith; *Except a Man be born of Water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the Kingdom of God.* For that which Christ signified by Water, the Apostle calleth the Washing, so both made Mention of Regeneration, and of the Holy Ghost. And we must mark that that which is spoken here of the Holy Ghost both by Christ and the Apostle, must not be referred to that Papistical Confirmation, as they call it, for both of them referred to Baptism, that which is here mentioned concerning the Holy Ghost, who when the Body is washed with Water doth himself work the new Birth, and renewing by Faith, which Christ called, to be born again of the Spirit. We read in the *Acts* of the Apostles; that the Apostles did oftentimes lay their Hands on them that were baptized, and that so the Holy Ghost came upon them by a visible Sign, which the *Papists* also snatch to their Confirmation. But as that was done, that the Believers might by a visible Sign be endued with the Holy Ghost, to preach the Gospel in divers Languages, so it continued only the Time thereof, until the Doctrine of the Gospel was commended to the World by sufficient Signs, wherefore it is now long since worn out of use; but that a certain Ceremony hath come from thence even unto us, of laying Hands on them, which are ordained Ministers or Preachers, which is now brought into an ungodly and pernicious Use; but of these Things in another Place.

*Which be shed on us abundantly.* See how notably the Apostle setteth forth Grace, he saith not that the Holy Ghost was given, but shed, and not that only, but shed abundantly. For he cannot sufficiently extol and magnify Grace, and the Work thereof, and we, alas, count it so vile in respect of our Works. It were a Dishonour to God and to his Holy Spirit, if when he hath plentifully shed it upon us, there should as yet be something wanting necessary to Righteousness and Salvation, which we are able to perform, as tho' the Works of so incomparable Grace could not be sufficient. And *Paul* surely might be reproved of lying, which had not spoken all Things whereby we must be justified and saved, when he affirmeth that he doth it. But as he writeth, so it is; no Man can attribute so great Things to this Washing and Regeneration, no Man can so much presume of them, but greater Things may be attributed unto them, and thou oughtest to promise to thyself more Things of them, no Man shall believe so great Things, but he shall receive greater. Forasmuch as those good Things which God hath given, are so great and so unspeakable, he would have them here come unto us

being included and hid in his Words and Faith, for the Nature of our present Life cannot bear them being manifest, and therefore it must perish, when they begin to be revealed, that Man may by these inestimable Riches, which he now possesseth by Faith, be as it were swallowed up, and vanish away. We are already abundantly justified by Faith, without all our own Merit, therefore Christ saith, *John iii. 16. God so loved the World, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him, should not perish, but have everlasting Life.* Behold, they that believe, have already everlasting Life, and therefore undoubtedly are justified and holy without all their own Labour or Means, that thou mayst see, that nothing but Grace and Mercy is plentifully poured upon us, and that our Works could avail nothing hereunto.

Thou wilt perhaps say; Thou canst not preach sufficiently, that the Grace and Mercy of God doth work all Things in us, and that no Respect is to be had of our Works, to the attaining of Salvation, But how cometh it to pass then, that the Scripture so often witnesseth that they shall be saved which have wrought good Works? As *John v. 29. They shall come forth, they that have done good, unto the Resurrection of Life, and they that have done evil, unto the Resurrection of Damnation.* And *Rom. ii. 9, 10. Honour and Glory to them that do well, Wrath and Indignation to them that do ill.* We read many Sentences here and there in the Scripture like unto these. I answer, As the Words sound, so take them without all Gless, for it is even so, they that do well shall be saved, they that do otherwise shall be condemned. But herein many err from the Truth of the Scripture, in that they judge Works according to the outward Appearance, contrary to the Scripture, which teacheth that no Man can do good, who is not himself good before, and by Works no Man can become good, but Works take their Goodness of the Worker, and he becometh good by the Washing of Regeneration, and by nothing else. This Christ meant *Matth. vii. 18. saying; A good Tree cannot bring forth evil Fruit, neither can a corrupt Tree bring forth good Fruit.* Wherefore make the Tree either good or evil, and it will bring forth like Fruits. Hypocrites oftentimes do Works like to the Works of the Godly, yea sometime having a goodlier Shew, for they diligently pray, fast, give Alms, and pretend a marvellous Holiness, but Christ calleth these Sheeps Clothing, wherewith most hurtful Wolves are clothed and hidden. For none of them is of a true humble, meek and bountiful Heart, which they chiefly declare when they are rebuked, when their Holiness is reproved; for then bring they forth their natural Fruits, whereby they are known. Those are rash Judgments, Impatience, Stubbornness, Obstinacy, Slandering and such like. It is true therefore, he that doth well, shall be saved, that is, his Salvation shall be manifest, but he can do no good at all if he be not before regenerate by the Washing of Regeneration. For what good Works can one work in the Oldness of the Flesh, and by the Strength proceeded from Adam, they are the good Works which Paul here condemneth, saying; *Not by Works of Righteousness, which we have done.* They are indeed good Works done in Righteousness, but not before God, who first hath Respect to the Per-

on, and then to the Works, as we read *Gen. iv. 4.* that he had Respect first to *Abel*, then to his Sacrifice, as he first turneth himself from *Cain*, and then from his Sacrifice, altho' according to the outward Appearance it was as good a Sacrifice and Work, as the Sacrifice of *Abel*.

*Through Jesus Christ our Saviour.* This he added that he may keep us under the Wings of Christ, as Chickens are wont to be preserved under the Wings of the Hen; for thus Christ saith *Matth. xxiii. 37. Jerusalem, Jerusalem, how often would I have gathered thy Children together, & been as a Hen gathereth her Chickens under her Wings, and ye would not?* And hereby the Nature of a true and right Faith is taught. For it is nothing which some say; I believe in God Almighty, as the *Jews* and many other are wont, and do therefore receive corporal Benefits of God. It is a true and lively Faith, whereby thou believest in God, howbeit by Jesus Christ. First, That thou doubt not that God is become a merciful Father unto thee, which hath pardoned all thy Sins, and in Baptism hath adopted thee for his Son and Heir, that thou mayst certainly know that thou art saved. Again, thou must also know this, that that was not done freely, neither without Satisfaction made to the divine Justice. For there can be no Place in thee for the divine Grace and Mercy to work Salvation, and to give thee eternal good Things, unless the Justice of God be before most fully satisfied. For Christ saith *Matth. v. 18. One jot, or one Tittle shall in no wise pass from the Law, till all be fulfilled.* That which is spoken of the Grace and Goodness of God, cannot come but to them which do most purely and exactly observe his Commandments, according to that Saying, *Micah ii.* when as the *Jews* did presume of the Goodness of God toward them, and did always promise unto themselves Peace, saying; How can God be always angry, is the Spirit of the Lord shortned? It is answered them; Are not my Words good unto him that walketh uprightly? Wherefore it shall be lawful for none to attain unto the Abundance of Grace, unless he hath before most exactly satisfied the Commandments of God. Now it hath been spoken at large, that our Works are nothing before God, whereby we cannot fulfil so much as the least Commandment of God, How much less shall we be able so to satisfy the Justice of God, that we may become worthy of his Grace? Moreover, if we were able to fulfil all the Commandments of God, and in all Things to satisfy his Justice, notwithstanding we had not as yet deserved Grace and Salvation, neither should he therefore owe it unto us, for that he may by the right of Creation require as due Service, all those Things of us his Creatures, created to live unto him. Wherefore it should yet come of Grace and Mercy, whatsoever should come from him to us. This Christ declared very well *Luke xvii. 7, 8, 9, 10.* speaking in a Parable; Which of you having a Servant plowing, or seeding Cattle, will say unto him by and by, when he is come from the Field, Go, and sit down to Meat? And will not rather say unto him, Make ready wherewith I may sup, and gird thyself, and serve me, till I have eaten and drunken: And afterward thou shalt eat and drink. Doth he thank that Servant, because he did the Things that were commanded him? I trow not. So likewise ye, when ye shall have done

*all these Things which are commanded you, say, We are unprofitable Sinners; we have done that which was our Duty to do.*

Seeing then that Heaven is given of Grace, and for no Merit, even unto those, if there were any such, which have done all these Things that were commanded them, according to that Promise: *If thou wilt enter into Life, keep the Commandments*; What shall we boast of our good Works, which altho' they were most absolute, yet should they be unworthy of Heaven, but inasmuch as it is given us by the free and merciful Promise? Hereupon (for that we must so satisfy the divine Justice, and yet notwithstanding our Works are not able to attain thereunto, whereunto if they should attain, yet should they deserve no Grace or Salvation, for that they are before due) God first gave unto us a Man, which should satisfy the divine Justice for us in all Things. Again, he hath by the same Man bestowed this Grace and Bountifulness upon us, that albeit we without our own Merit and Worthiness, yea having evil deserved and being unworthy, to receive Grace, yet it cometh not unto us altogether freely and without all Merit, for we have it thro' the Merit and Satisfaction of Christ. Whereupon Paul saith, *Rom. v. 18. For as by the Offence of one, Judgment came upon all Men to Condemnation: Even so by the Righteousness of one, that is, of Jesus Christ, the free Gift came upon all Men unto Justification of Life.* That is: As without all our Merit, and own Work we fell into Sin, being born Sinners, so again without all our Merit and Means, we are redeemed from Sins, by the washing of the Spirit born again the Sons of God, Partakers of Grace and Salvation. And this is the Cause why the Apostle where he speaketh of Faith and Grace, is wont to add, by Jesus Christ; whereby surely he would give us to understand, that none should count it sufficient, if he say, I believe in God, Christ being neglected. He that truly believeth, must acknowledge, that his Faith can not be acceptable to God, yea that it can be no Faith at all, if all the Commandments of God be not before fulfilled, which seeing it is above thy Ability, (and if it were not, yet notwithstanding thou hast performed nothing, but that thou oughtest, and hadst as yet merited nothing, having fulfilled even all the Commandments of God) thou hast need of an other, which in all Things may satisfy the divine Justice for thee, and may also merit Heaven for thee. Now this other is our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, who hath for thee fulfilled the whole Law, and merited for thee, that God now according to his Justice cannot but give Heaven unto thee, and in all Things acknowledge thee for his Son and Heir. And this is a true and sound Faith, which trusteth in God by Christ, and is certain that by his Merit it hath already received of God Salvation, which shortly after shall be revealed with blessed Abundance of Felicity.

Neither can any other be called Christian Faith, but that, whereby it is believed, that by Christ do come unto us both Satisfaction, which we owe to the Justice of God, and the Gift of Salvation, which we ourselves by no Means, if the Law could even be fulfilled of us, can merit. Whereupon Paul saith, *Rom. iv. 25. Christ was delivered for our Offences,*

and was raised again for our Justification. That is, by Christ we have received, not only Remission of our Sins, but moreover also, that before God we are accounted righteous, and the Sons of his Grace. To the same Effect also tendeth that which he saith, *Rom. iii. 25. Whom God hath set forth to be a Propitiation, through Faith in his Blood.* Where again we learn, that it is true Faith, which trusteth in the Blood of Christ, and believeth that thereby it shall obtain Grace. Whereas thou believest that he hath shed his Blood for thee, thou receivest Satisfaction; it that thou acknowledgest him the Reconciliation, thou confessest that by his Merit the divine Grace and Salvation do come unto thee. We have all Things without our own Merit and Means, but not without the Merit and Means of Christ, who hath for this Cause shed his Blood. Wherefore that we may allude unto the Parable of Christ, we must contain ourselves under his Wings, and not upon Trust in ourselves flee out and contend to come unto God; otherwise we shall be a Prey to the hellish Kite. For as it hath been oft said, our Righteousness, our Merits, yea and our Faith shall prevail nothing, without this our Mediator Christ. And therefore he saith, *John xiv. 6. No Man cometh unto the Father but by me.* And in the whole Gospel what other Thing doth he, but endeavour to take us out of ourselves, and to transfer us to himself under his Wings, that we may trust only in his Satisfaction and Merit? The same Apostle also teacheth in the Words following:

*That we being justified by his Grace should be made Heirs according to the Hope of eternal Life.* He saith that we are justified, not by our own Works, but by the Grace of the same Jesus Christ. That is, we are therefore justified, for that Christ hath the Grace of the Father, having fulfilled his Will in all Things, and thereby merited eternal Life. For seeing that he hath no need of this Merit, he giveth it unto us which do believe in him, that before God all his Things may be imputed to us, and by them we may receive Salvation. See, how rich a Thing sound Faith is, and how great good Things it bringeth with it. See also how precious a Thing the Gospel is, and how great a Treasure it is to have it purely preached; and contrariwise, how great a Discommodity there is, where it is not preached, or not rightly preached, the Inventions of Men being mingled with it, or thrust in Stead of it. Take heed therefore of such Deceivers, and of their counterfeit Faith, rest not in thyself, but get thee under the Wings of Christ, keep thyself under his Protection, trust that thou art Heir of eternal Life, not by thy own Righteousness, or Grace which thou hast received, but whereby he is righteous and acceptable before God. Hereunto pertaineth this Saying *Psal. xci. 4. He shall cover thee with his Feathers, and under his Wings shalt thou trust.* And in the Song of Solomon it is said, *My Spouse is a Dove, building her Nest in the Caves of the Rocks, and in the Holes of the Wall,* that is, in the Wounds of Christ. And this indeed is true Christian Faith, which resteth not in itself as the Schoolmen dreamed, but reposeth itself wholly in Christ, and as it trusteth in him, so it resteth in him, having received eternal Salvation. Whereas he saith that we

are made Heirs of eternal Life according to Hope, beside that he proveth, that we without all our own Merits, by only Hope of Grace are born again Heirs of eternal Life, and do not become Heirs by Working, whereof we have already spoken at large, he also teacheth this, that our Salvation and eternal Life is as yet hid, altho', if we believe, ye do verily possess it, and this Body being put off, and the Kingdom of Christ revealed, all Things shall appear manifestly.

*The Weapons of this Text.*

This Text fighteth most mightily, and with most plain Word: against all Righteousness and good Works of Man's Reason, and free Will. For the Words are plain; *Not by the Works of Righteousness, which we had done, but according to his Mercy he hath saved us, by the washing, &c.* All which Words do utterly overthrow our Righteousness, attributing all Things to the washing of the new Birth, and the renewing of the Holy Ghost, to Christ and his Grace. How can there now withstanding any Presumption as yet remain in us? Wherefore let all sacred and prophane Laws have a fair Shew; let all Sacrificing Priests, Monks, and Nuns boast of themselves; let all religious and honest Men and Women seem goodly in outward Appearance; let them even raise the dead; if Faith in Christ be absent, whereof we have now spoken so much, all these Things are to no Purpose. These most false Shews do as yet deceive the whole World, and seduce almost every one; they make the Gospel obscure, and extinguish the Faith of Christ: All their Works and Orders, altho' they appear goodly, and they think them to have merited never so much, do avail no more unto Salvation, then the Works of Beasts, or of Artificers, whereby they do maintain themselves and theirs, yea they do most hurtfully hinder it. Therefore that I may conclude, take heed as much as thou art able, of these Wolves, which under a fair Pretence counterseit themselves Sheep, and learn and accustom thyself with a sound Faith to cleave unto Christ alone.

S E R M O N II.

Teaching that Salvation cometh by Christ alone.

JOHN vi.

Ver. 44. *No Man can come unto me, except the Father which hath sent me, draw him: And I will raise him up at the last Day.*

Ver. 45. *It is written in the Prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every Man therefore that hath heard and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me.*

Ver.

Ver. 46. *Not that any Man hath seen the Father, save he which is of God, he hath seen the Father.*

Ver. 47. *Verily, verily I say unto you, He that believeth on me, hath everlasting Life.*

Ver. 48. *I am that Bread of Life.*

Ver. 49. *Your Fathers did eat Manna in the Wilderness, and are dead.*

Ver. 50. *This is the Bread which cometh down from Heaven, that a Man may eat thereof, and not die.*

Ver. 51. *I am the living Bread which came down from Heaven: If any Man eat of this Bread, he shall live for ever: And the Bread that I will give, is my Flesh, which I will give for the Life of the World.*

### The Sum of this Text.

1. **C**H R I S T is known of none, but of him whom the Father draweth, that is, except the Father teach us that Knowledge inwardly in the Heart. Therefore Christ saith to Peter, Matth. xvi. 17. *Flesh and Blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in Heaven.*

2. *Christ is the Wisdom of God, which is of more Price then precious Stones, and whatsoever can be wished, is not to be compared unto it, as Solomon saith in Prov. viii. 11.*

3. *The old heavenly Bread, that is, the Righteousness of the Law doth not justify: But Christ, if we believe in him, justifieth for ever.*

### The Exposition of the Text.



**T**HIS Text teacheth us nothing else but Christian Faith, and stirreth it up in us, as surely John thro' his Gospel, doth almost no other Thing but instruct us, how we must believe in the Lord Christ. And such a Faith as is grounded on the true Promise of God made unto us in Christ, shall save us, as this Text plainly declareth. Also they are here all proved Fools, which have taught us any other Way and Means to obtain Righteousness. Whatsoever Man's Mind can invent, altho' it be holy, altho' it have a fair Shew before Men, it must needs utterly fall, if that he will have Salvation to come thereby. For albeit that Man is exercised with the Duties of Godliness, he shall not be able to attain unto Heaven, unless God prevent him with his Word, which may offer his divine Grace unto him, and lighten his Heart, that he may walk in the right Way. Now this Way is the Lord Jesus Christ, he that will seek another Way, as the most Part of Men with their outward Works commonly do, hath now erred from the right and high Way. For Paul saith Gal. ii. 21. *If Righteousness come by the Law, that is, by the Works of the Law, then Christ is dead in vain.* Therefore I say, that a Man must by the Gospel be as it were bruised and broken, and humbled even from the Bottom of his Heart, as being frail and weak, which can move neither Hands nor Feet, but only

only lyeth prostrate and crieth; Help me O omnipotent God, merciful Father, I am not able to help myself: Help O Lord Christ, mine own Help is nothing. That so against this Corner-stone which is Christ all may be broken, as he saith of himself in *Luke xx. 17.* when he asked the *Pharisees and Scribes*; *Luke xx. 17, 18. What meaneth this then that is written: The Stone that the Builders refused, that is made the Head of the Corner? Whosoever shall fall upon that Stone, shall be broken: and on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to Powder.* Wherefore either let us fall upon it by our Imbecillity and Weakness, by denying ourselves, and so be broken, or else he will break us for ever in his Strait Judgment. But it is better that we fall upon it, then that it fall upon us. Upon this Foundation Christ saith here in this Text,

*No Man can come unto me, except the Father which hath sent me, draw him, and I will raise him up at the last Day.* Now he whom the Father draweth not, shall surely perish. It is also concluded that he which cometh not to this Son, shall be damned for ever, he is the only Son given unto us, which may save us, without him there is no Salvation; if he help not, our Case is most miserable: Of him *Peter* also speaketh, to the same Effect in the *Acts* of the Apostles, Chap. iv. 11, 12. *This is the Stone which was set at naught of you Builders, which is become the Head of the Corner. Neither is there Salvation in any other: For there is none other Name under Heaven given among Men, whereby we must be saved.* Whither would our Divines and School-men turn themselves here, which have taught us that by many Works we must attain unto Righteousness? Here is that high Master *Aristotle* confounded, who hath taught us that Reason endeavoureth to do the best Things and is always ready to the better. But this Christ doth here deny; for unless the Father possess and draw us we shall perish for ever. Here all Men must confess their Imbecillity and Slowness to good Things. If so be that any perswade himself that he is able to do any good Thing by his own Strength, truly he hath reprov'd Christ of Falshood, and with great Arrogancy presumeth to come to Heaven, albeit he is not drawn of the Father. Wherefore where the Word of God is in his Course, and soundly preached, whatsoever Things are high and great, it casteth them down, it maketh all Mountains even with the Vallies, and overthroweth all Hills, as the Prophet *Isaiah* saith, that all Hearts hearing the Word may despair of themselves, otherwise they cannot come unto Christ. The Works of God are such, that while they kill, they make alive, while they condemn, they save; as *Hanna* the Mother of *Samuel* singeth of the Lord, *1 Sam. ii. 6, 7. The Lord killeth, and maketh alive: he bringeth down to the Grave and bringeth up. The Lord maketh poor, and maketh rich: he bringeth low, and lifteth up.* Wherefore if a Man be this Stricken of God in his Heart, that he acknowledgeth himself such a one as ought for his Sins to be condemned, he surely is even that very Man, whom God by his Word hath Stricken, and by this Stroke hath fastned upon him the Bond of his divine Grace, whereby he draweth him, that he may provide for his Soul, and have care of him. He could first find with himself no Help or Counsel, neither did he wish for any.

but now he hath found the special Consolation and Promise of God, which is after this Sort : *He that asketh receiveth, he that seeketh findeth, and to him that knocketh it is opened.* By such a Promise Man is more and more lifted up in Mind, and conceiveth a greater Trust and Confidence in God. For as soon as he heareth that this is the Work of God alone, he desireth of God, as at the Hand of his merciful Father, that he will vouchsafe to draw him. If so be that he be drawn of God unto Christ, undoubtedly that also shall come unto him, whereof the Lord maketh Mention here, namely, that he will raise him up at the last Day. For he layeth hold on the Word of God, and trusteth in God, whereby he hath a certain Testimony, that he is he whom God hath drawn : As *John* saith in his first Epistle, Chap. v. 10. *He that believeth on the Son of God, hath the Witness in himself.* Hereupon it must needs follow, that he is taught of God, and in Verity now knoweth God to be no other, but a Helper, a Comforter, and a Saviour. Hereby is it now manifest, that if we believe, God will be no other toward us but a Saviour, Helper, and Giver of all Felicity, who requireth and asketh nothing of us, but will only give and offer unto us as he himself saith unto *Israel*, *Psal. lxxxix. 10. I am the Lord thy God, which brought thee out of the Land of Egypt : Open thy Mouth wide, and I will fill it.* Who would not love such a God, which sheweth himself gentle and loving unto us, and offereth so readily his Grace and Goodness ?

They shall not be able to escape the severe and eternal Judgment of God, which do unadvisedly neglect so great Grace, as the Epistle to the *Hebrews* saith ; If they that transgressed the Law of *Moses*, escaped not unpunished, but died without Mercy, How much more grievously shall God punish them, which count the Blood of the Testament as an unholy Thing, and tread under Foot the Son of God ? O how diligent is *Paul* in all his Epistles to teach how the Knowledge of God may rightly be conceived ! O how often doth he wish Increase in the Knowledge of God ! As if he would say : If ye only knew and understood what God is, ye should then be safe. Then ye would love him, and do all Things that are approved of him. Thus he saith *Coloss. i. 9, 10, 11, 12. We do not cease to pray for you, and to desire that ye might be filled with the Knowledge of his Will, in all Wisdom, and spiritual Understanding : That ye might walk worthy of the Lord unto all pleasing, being fruitful in every good Work, and increasing in the Knowledge of God : Strengthened with all Might according to his glorious Power, unto all Patience and Long-suffering with Joyfulness : Giving Thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be Partakers of the Inheritance of the Saints in Light : And Psal. cxix. 34. David saith, Give me Understanding, and I shall keep thy Law ; yea, I shall observe it with my whole Heart.* And thus ye have out of the first Sentence of this Text, that the Knowledge of God doth come from the Father. It is needful that he lay the first Stone in our Building, otherways we shall labour in vain ; But that is done thus, God sendeth unto us Preachers whom he hath taught, and provideth that his Will be preached unto us. First that all our Life and Condition, altho<sup>ugh</sup> it have a fair Shew and be holy outwardly, is of no Esti-

Estimation before him, yea is abhorred and lothed of him. And this is called the Preaching of the Law. Afterward he maketh Grace to be preached unto us, *to wit*, that he will not have us utterly condemned and cast off, but that he will receive us in his beloved Son, and not simply receive us, but also make us Heirs in his Kingdom, yea and Lords over all Things which are in Heaven and Earth. This now is called the Preaching of Grace or of the Gospel. And all this is of God, which raiseth up and sendeth forth Preachers. This St. Paul signifieth when he saith thus *Rom. x. 17. Faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the Word of God.* This also the Words of the Lord mean here in the Gospel, when he saith;

*It is written in the Prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every Man therefore that hath heard and hath learned of the Father cometh unto me: Not that any Man hath seen the Father, save he which is of God, he hath seen the Father.* When as we hear the first Preaching, that is, the Preaching of the Law, how we are condemned with all our Works, then Man sigheth unto God and knoweth not what to do, his Conscience is evil and fearful, and except Help should come in Time, he should despair for ever. Wherefore the other Preaching must not be long differred, the Gospel must be preached unto him, and the Way unto Christ must be shewed, whom God hath given unto us a Mediator, that thro' him alone we may be saved, by mere Grace and Mercy, without all our own Works and Merits. Then the Heart is made joyful, and hasteth unto such Grace, as the thirsty Hart runneth unto the Water. David had a notable Feeling hereof, when he said thus, *Psal. xlii. 1, 2. As the Hart panteth after the Water-brooks, so panteth my Soul after thee, O God. My Soul thirsteth for God, for the living God.* When therefore a Man cometh to Christ, thro' the Gospel, then heareth he the Voice of the Lord Christ, which strengtheneth the Knowledge that God hath taught him; *to wit*, that God is nothing else but a Saviour abounding with Grace, who will be favourable and merciful to all them, which call upon him in his Son. Therefore the Lord saith moreover:

*Verily, verily I say unto you, He that believeth on me, hath everlasting Life. I am that Bread of Life. Your Fathers did eat Manna in the Wilderness, and are dead. This is the Bread which cometh down from Heaven, that a Man may eat thereof, and not die. I am the living Bread which came down from Heaven: If any Man eat of this Bread, he shall live for ever: And the Bread that I will give, is my Flesh, which I will give for the Life of the World.* In these Words the Soul findeth a Table daintily furnished, whereby it may slake all Hunger. For it knoweth assuredly that he that speaketh these Words cannot ly. Wherefore if it commit itself confidently unto him, and cleave to the Word, it resteth upon him, and so departeth not from this goodly Table. This is that Supper, to the preparing whereof the heavenly Father killed his Oxen and Fatlings, and hath bidden us all unto it. The living Bread whereof the Lord here maketh mention, is Christ himself, whereby we are so fed. If we lay hold but of a Morsel of this Bread,

In our Hearts, and keep it, we shall be satisfied for ever, neither can we ever be plucked from God. Moreover such an eating is nothing else, but to believe in the Lord Christ, that he is made unto us of God, as *Paul* saith, *1 Cor. ii. 30.* Wisdom, Righteousness, Sanctification, and Redemption. He that eateth this Meat, liveth for ever. Wherefore by and by after this Text, when the *Jews* were at Contention about these his Words, he saith: *Verily, verily I say unto you, Except ye eat the Flesh of the Son of Man, and drink his Blood, ye have no Life in you. Whosoever eateth my Flesh, and drinketh my Blood, hath eternal Life, and I will raise him up at the last Day.* Manna which the Fathers did eat in the Desert (as Christ here saith) could not save from Death; but this Bread maketh us immortal. If we believe in Christ, Death shall not hurt us any Thing at all, yea there is no more Death. This the Lord meaneth by these Words in an other Place, where he saith to the *Jews*, *John viii. 15.* *Verily, verily I say unto you, If a Man keep my Saying, he shall never see Death;* where it is certain that he speaketh of the Word of Faith, and of the Gospel.

But some Man may say that the Holy die notwithstanding, for *Abraham* and the holy Prophets are dead, as the *Jews* said unto him. I answer: The Death of Christians is only a Sleep, as the Scripture also commonly calleth it: For a Christian tasteth and seeth no Death, that is, he hath the Feeling of no Death. For this Saviour Christ Jesus, in whom he believeth, hath overcome Death, that afterwards he should not feel or taste it, but Death is unto him only a Passage and Gate to Life, as Christ himself witnesseth, *John v. 24.* *Verily, verily I say unto you, He that heareth my Word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting Life, and shall not come into Condemnation; but is passed from Death unto Life.* Wherefore the Life of a Christian is Merry, and on every Side replenished with Joy, and the Yoke of Christ is easy and sweet. But that it seemeth heavy and grievous unto us, this is the Cause, for that the Father hath not yet drawn us; hereupon it cometh to pass that we take no Pleasure thereof, neither is the Gospel comfortable unto us. If so be that we would lay up the Words of Christ well in our Heart, they would be unto us an exceeding Comfort. And thus ye have heard how we must feed on this Bread which came down from Heaven, that is, on the Lord Christ, to wit, by Faith, which we then do, when we believe in him, that he is our Saviour.

The whole Chapter out of which this Text is taken, commendeth unto us nothing else but spiritual Meat. For when the Multitude followed Christ, that they might again eat and drink, which the Lord himself signifieth, he taketh Occasion of the corporal Meat which they sought, and almost thro' the whole Chapter speaketh of spiritual Meat, as he said; *The Words which I speak, are Spirit and Life.* Whereby he would signify, that he therefore fed them, that they should believe in him; and as they did eat the bodily Meat, so they ought also to feed of the spiritual. Here let us weigh and mark this, that the Lord doth so gently and graciously apply himself to us, and offer himself in such gentle Words, that it ought worthily to move our Hearts to believe in him,

him, *to wit*, that that Bread, was therefore given for us, inasmuch as it was beseemful that he should taste Death and suffer belivish Pains: Also should bear Sins which he never had committed, as tho' he had committed them, and had been his own; and he did also the same willingly for our Sakes, and took us as Brethren and Sisters. This if we believe, we do the Will of the heavenly Father, which is nothing else but to believe in his Son, and so be saved. As Christ himself saith a little before; *This is the Will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting Life.* It now therefore appeareth that he that hath Faith doth the Will of God, and eateth of this heavenly Bread. As *Augustine* saith; What dost thou prepare thy Mouth? Believe, and thou hast eaten. Of this spiritual Supper the whole New Testament speaketh, but especially in this Place of *John*. The Sacrament of Christ's Body and Blood is a certain Testimony and Pledge of this true Supper, whereby we ought to strengthen our Faith, and to be assured, that this Body and this Blood, whereof we feed in the Sacrament, delivereth us from Sin, Death, Satan, and all Evil.

But how may a Man perceive and know, that he also doth pertain to this heavenly Bread, and is called to this spiritual Supper? Let him consider the Case in his own Heart, which if he find so affected, that he doth as it were feel a Sweetness in the Promise of God, and is undoubtedly perswaded, that he is of the Company of them which pertain to this Supper, he is assuredly such a one indeed. For as we believe, so cometh it unto us. Such a Man hath also by and by a Regard of his Neighbour, and helpeth him as his Brother, careth for him, giveth unto him, lendeth him, comforteth him, briefly doth no otherwise to him then he desireth to be done unto himself. And all this proceedeth from hence, for that the Bountiffulness and Goodness of Christ hath replebished his Heart with Sweetness and Love, that it is a Pleasure and Joy unto him to do good to his Neighbour, yea and he is grieved if there be none toward whom he may be serviceable. And beside all this, he is tractable and lowly towards all Men, he doth not esteem the temporal Pleasure and Pride of Life, he judgeth no Man, he desameth no Man, he interpreteth all Things in the better Part. When as he seeth that the Matter goeth not well with his Neighbour, as that he fainteth in Faith, waxeth cold in Love, and that his Life is not on every Side approvable, he prayeth for him, and is sore grieved if any commit any Thing against God and his Neighbour. In a Sum, the Root and Sap are sound, for they are in a flourishing Vine, *to wit*, Christ, and therefore such Fruits come forth. But if any be void of Faith, and not taught of God, such a one doth not feed on this heavenly Bread, neither bringeth forth these Fruits; for where a right Faith is not, there such Fruits are always wanting. And therefore *St. Peter* teacheth us to make our Calling unto Salvation, sure by good Works, where he speaketh properly of the Works of Love, namely, that we do good to our Neighbour, and be affected toward him, as toward our own Flesh and Blood. Thus much shall suffice concerning this Text. Let us call to God for his Grace.

# S E R M O N III.

Concerning the bidding of Guests to the great Supper.

LUKE xiv.

- Ver. 16. *A certain Man made a great Supper, and bade many :*  
 Ver. 17. *And sent his Servant at Supper-time, to say to them that were bidden, Come, for all Things are now ready.*  
 Ver. 18. *And they all with one Consent began to make excuse : The first said unto him, I have bought a Piece of Ground, and I must needs go and see it : I pray thee have me excused.*  
 Ver. 19. *And another said, I have bought five Yoke of Oxen, and I go to prove them : I pray thee have me excused.*  
 Ver. 20. *And another said, I have married a Wife, and therefore I cannot come.*  
 Ver. 21. *So that Servant came, and shewed his Lord these Things. Then the Master of the House being angry, said to his Servant, Go out quickly into the Streets and Lanes of the City, and bring in hither the Poor, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blind.*  
 Ver. 22. *And the Servant said, Lord, it is done as thou hast commanded, and yet there is Room.*  
 Ver. 23. *And the Lord said unto the Servant, Go out into the High-ways and Hedges, and compel them to come in, that my House may be filled.*  
 Ver. 24. *For I say unto you, that none of those Men which were bidden, shall taste of my Supper.*



**A**S in the whole Scripture, so in this Text also we must endeavour, that according to our Ability (as ye have oftentimes heard heretofore) we may understand the true and simple Meaning, and thereupon settle our Heart and Conscience. For he that shall encounter with Satan, must not waver and stagger this Way and that Way, but must be certain of his Cause, and instructed with manifest Places of Scripture, otherwise when the Devil shall by an uncertain Place of Scripture draw him to his Fork, he will toss him this Way and that Way, as the Wind doth a dry Leaf. Wherefore out of this Text we must gather a certain Meaning, whereby we may persist and stand sure. Nowbeit it is not to be understood of the reverend Eucharist, or the bread of the Lord's Table, altho' our Papists have miserably wrested it, as they have done many other Authorities of Scripture. But this is the scope, this is the Sum of this Text ; that the Gospel is preached and pub-

published thro' the whole World, but few receive and embrace it. And it is therefore here called a Supper, for that the Gospel must be the last Word, which shall continue to the End of the World. Wherefore the Supper here is nothing else, but a very rich and sumptuous Feast, which God hath made thro' Christ by the Gospel, which setteth before us great good Things and rich Treasures. And he sent his Servant to bid Men to this sumptuous Supper. That is, The Apostles were altogether sent with one Word unto the whole World, that they might bid and call Men to this Supper, with one Voice, with one Gospel, with one Ambassage; after such Sort, that if St. Peter had come, and preached the Gospel of God in that Place where Paul had preached it before, yet had it been one Word, and the same Preaching, that the Hearers should have been compelled to say; Behold he preacheth the same that we heard before of the other, they wholly consent and agree, and the Thing that they publish is all one. That the Evangelist might insinuate this Consent and Agreement in Preaching, he saith; *He sent his Servant*, he saith not, his Servants, as of many. Now this Message the Servant must do to the bidden Guests; *Come, for all Things are now ready*. For Christ had suffered Death, and in his Death hath slain Sin and Death, also was risen again from Death, the Holy Ghost was given: And briefly, all Things were prepared which pertained unto that great Supper. All Things were ready without all our Cost. For the Father by Christ hath paid the Price of all Things, that without all our Merit and Labour we might enjoy his Goodness, and be nourished and enriched. He sendeth his Servant therefore first to the Jews, to bid them to this great Supper, unto whom the Promise was made of God. For the Law and all the Prophets were directed hereunto, that they might prepare the People of God. As the Angel Gabriel declared of John the Baptist to his Father Zacharias, Luke i. 15, 16, 17. *He shall be filled with the Holy Ghost, even from his Mother's Womb. And many of the Children of Israel shall be turn to the Lord their God. And he shall go before him in the Spirit and Power of Elias, to turn the Hearts of the Fathers to the Children, and the Disobedient to the Wisdom of the Just, to make ready a People prepared for the Lord.* But what did the Guests answer to the Message of the Servant? The Text following declareth:

*And they all with one Consent began to make excuse. This is that whereof the Lord speaketh, Matth. x. 37, 38. He that loveth Father or Mother more than me, is not worthy of me: And he that loveth Son or Daughter more than me, is not worthy of me: And he that taketh not his Cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me.* For he that will be Partaker of this Supper, must put all Things into Danger for the Gospel's Sake, Body, Goods, Wife, Children, Friends, &c. Moreover he must leave all Things whatsoever they be, that separate him from the Gospel, albeit they seem good, just, right and holy. Neither think ye that these Men which here excuse themselves, were guilty of grievous Sins, or occupied about unjust Matters and Works. For it is not unjust to buy, to use Trade of Merchandise, to maintain himself honestly, to marry a Wife, to be joined in Matrimony. But therefore can they not come to this

is Supper, for that they will not forsake these Things, but will rather give to them in their Heart. How they must be utterly forsaken and left, when the Gospel so requireth. Thou wilt perhaps say; I would indeed willingly follow the Gospel, I would cleave unto it, and do all other Things whatsoever, but to forsake Goods, Houses, Family, Wife, Children, &c. surely this is a hard Matter. God hath commanded me to labour, to maintain my Wife and Children, &c. Behold therefore this is the Scope and Sum, that the Gospel is the Word of Faith and Promise, because of which every faithful Man doth bear Offence willingly.

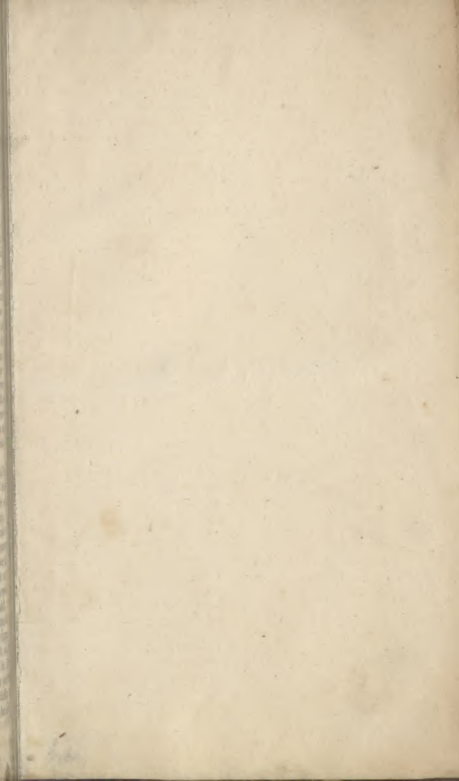
Indeed God hath willed thee to do these Things, howbeit he hath also commanded, that thou prefer him before all Creatures, and love him above all Things, and think him higher then all Things which thou canst know, even as the chief and greatest Commandment giveth thee to understand; *Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thine Heart, and with all thy Soul, and with all thy Might*, Deut. vi. 5. Wherefore thou must forsake all Things before thou suffer thyself to be plucked away from the Love of him, or his Word; altho' indeed he loseth nothing, which forsaketh any Thing for the Gospel's Sake. If for the Gospel's sake thou lose this temporal Life, God will give thee another far better, *eternal Life*, as Christ saith *Matth. x. 39. He that findeth his life, shall lose it: And he that loseth his Life for my Sake, shall find it.* Thou be compelled to forsake thy Wife together with thy Children, remember that God hath a Care of them, he will be a better Father unto them then thyself, which undoubtedly cometh to pass, if so be thou believe. For we have very great and rich Promises that he will not suffer us to fail, but will always fulfil it, if we can freely and confidently trust in him, and commit ourselves wholly to him. Christ saith of this Sort, *Matth. xix. 29. Whosoever shall forsake Houses, or Brethren, or Sisters, or Father, or Mother, or Wife, or Children, or Lands, for my Names Sake, shall receive an hundred Fold, and shall inherit everlasting Life.* We have here his Words and Promise; What would we have more, or what can we desire more? Wherein therefore do we fail? Only in our Faith. Wherefore no Man cometh to this Supper, but he that bringeth with him a sincere Faith, which God preferreth and loveth above all Creatures. But how doth the Lord recompense them which excused themselves that they could not come to the Supper? The text itself declareth.

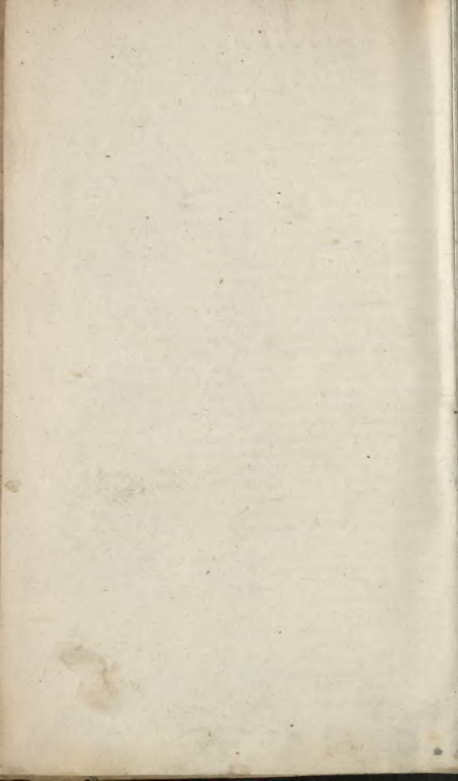
*Then the Master of the House being angry, said to his Servant, Go quickly into the Streets and Lanes of the City, and bring in hither the poor, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blind. Go into the Streets and Lanes is nothing else, but that whereas the Jews made themselves worthy of the Gospel, and did refuse it, the Disciples turned to the Gentiles. For it was enjoined them of Christ, that they should not turn themselves to the Gentiles, nor preach the Kingdom of God in the Cities of the Samaritans, but should go only to the Sheep of the House of Israel, and should feed them only, as they did. Now the Jews striving against this Word, and by no Means receiving it, the Disciples said,* *Isa. xlii. 46, 47. It was necessary that the Word of God should first have*

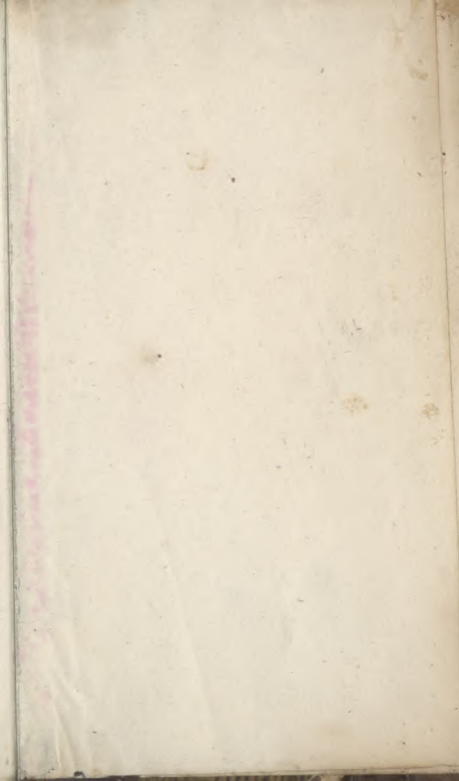
been spoken to you : But seeing ye put it from you, and judge yourselves unworthy of everlasting Life ; so, we turn to the Gentiles. For so hath the Lord commanded us, saying, I have set thee to be a Light of the Gentiles, that thou shouldest be for Salvation unto the Ends of the Earth. But what meaneth that which he saith moreover to the Servant ?

*Go out into the High-ways and Hedges, and compel them to come in, that my House may be filled.* This is to be understood of desperate and weak Consciences, which also pertain unto this Supper, and are compelled unto it, but this Compulsion is not outward, but inward and spiritual, and is done after this Sort. When the Law is preached, Sin is set before our Eyes and revealed, that a Man may come to Knowledge of himself, so that to compel, to enter or come in, doth rightly signify, to drive Sin into the Conscience, whereby a Man may know that he is no thing, that all his Works are Sins, and subject to Damnation, and suddenly his Conscience, may become desperate, and his Heart faint and terrified, that all that Confidence and Opinion of Help may depart and Man himself be able no where to comfort himself in any Thing, and at the last be driven to despair of himself. If so be that one be once after this Sort compelled, then do not long delay to let him come in but deliver the Man out of Desperation. That cometh to pass, when thou comfortest him by the Gospel, and declarest that he is delivered from his Sins, saying ; Believe in Christ, that he hath made thee free from thy Sins, then shalt thou be delivered and free from Sin. And this is the Meaning of that which he saith ; *Compel them to come in.* It is not to be understood of outward Compulsion, as some interpret it, that wicked and ungodly ones should be violently driven to the Supper, for this prevailteth nothing, neither is it so meant in this Place. Wherefore it is to be referred only to the Conscience, and is inward and spiritual. Now he goeth on to speak to the Servant and the rest ;

*For I say unto you, that none of those Men which were bidden, shall taste of my Supper.* This is the Conclusion, that they which think themselves most certain that they shall come to the Supper, and taste of it shall not taste of it. The Reason ye have heard. Now briefly, the Guests that are bidden and do not come, are they, which think that they shall obtain the Supper by their own Works, very much wearying themselves, thinking assuredly, that they shall taste of it. But the Lord mightily concludeth and saith ; Not one of these Men shall taste of my Supper. Wherefore most gentle Lord ! They have committed no wicked Thing, neither have been occupied about unjust Matters. Behold, this is the Reason, for that they have forsaken Faith and have not confessed it freely before every one, neither have preferred that rich and sumptuous Supper before all Creatures. For seeing it is sumptuous, it requireth those Men that do judge it to be so, and do put any Thing in Danger, whatsoever it be, that they may be Partakers of it. Thus ye have the compendious Meaning of this Text, which I have only briefly repeated, if any will expound it more at large, I am well content he should









x

20-11-87

